

**BOSTON  
PUBLIC  
LIBRARY**









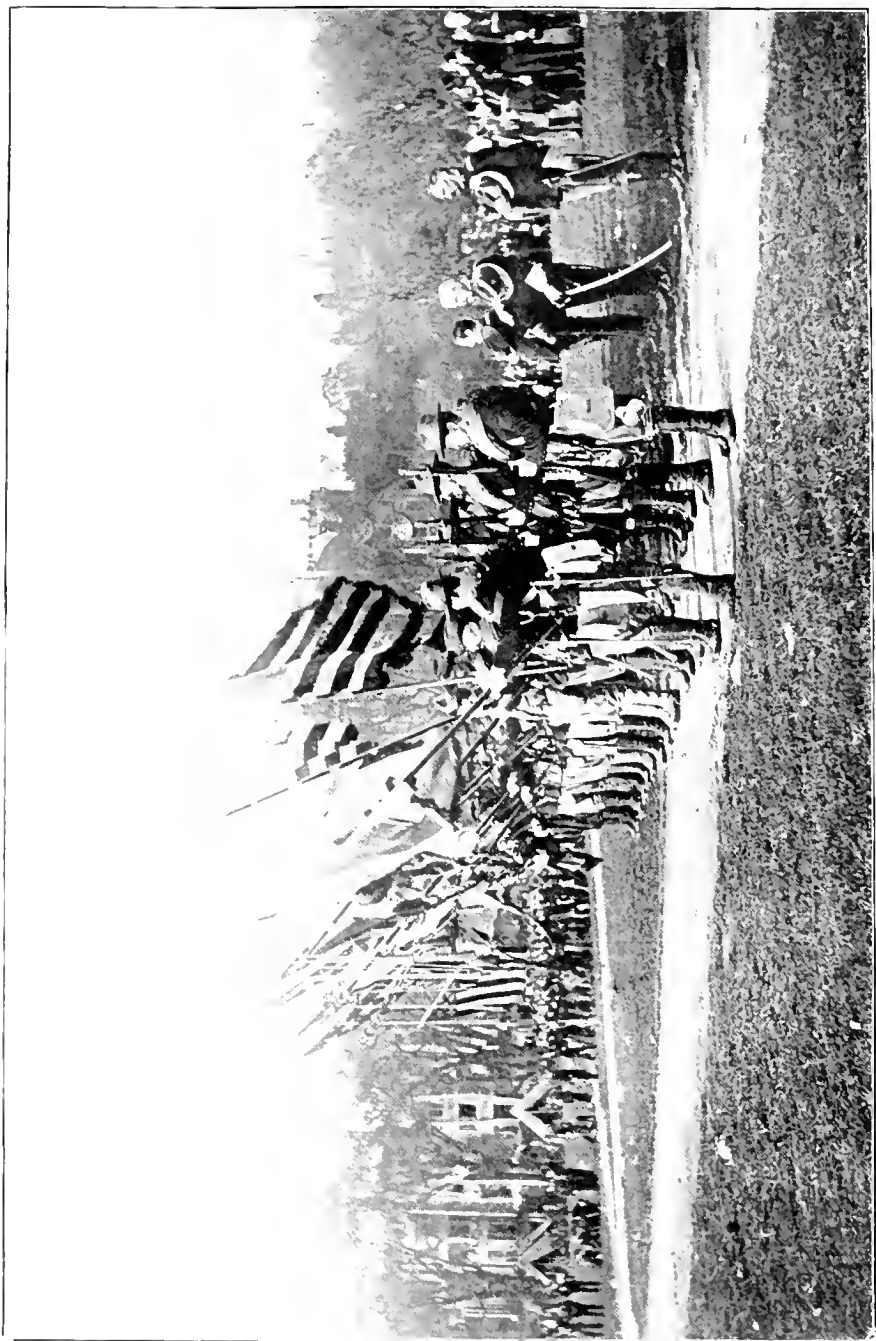




Loren - June







SURRENDER OF THE WAR FLAGS TO THE STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS AT THE CLOSE OF THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR,  
(DEWEY DAY ) OCTOBER 13, 1899



# REGIMENTS AND ARMORIES OF MASSACHUSETTS

AN HISTORICAL NARRATION OF THE

## Massachusetts Volunteer Militia

WITH PORTRAITS AND BIOGRAPHIES OF OFFICERS PAST AND PRESENT

CHARLES WINSLOW HALL, EDITOR-IN-CHIEF.

*(43d Regiment, M. V. M.)*

AND THE FOLLOWING DISTINGUISHED CORPS OF CONTRIBUTORS:

SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M.

BRIG.-GEN. CHARLES COFFIN FRY (deceased)

EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY

MAJ.-GEN. BENJ. F. PLACH

MAJ.-GEN. A. HUN BERRY

NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY

LIEUT.-COL. JOHN R. FARRELL

LIEUT.-COL. WM. H. DEVINE and others

BATTERY A, LIGHT ARTILLERY

CAPT. NATHAN APPLETON

SECOND CORPS CADETS

LIEUT.-COL. J. FRANK DALTON

NAVAL BRIGADE

WINTHROP PACKARD and others

DEPARTMENT OF RIFLE PRACTICE

COL. JAMES A. FRYE

SURGICAL AND MEDICAL HISTORY

SURG.-GEN. ROBERT ALLEN BLOOD

HOOVER GUARDS and ROXBURY CITY GUARDS

CAPT. ISAAC P. GRAGG

COMMISSARIAT OF 1900

MAJ.-GEN. FRED W. WELLINGTON

---

IN TWO VOLUMES—VOL. II.

---

W. W. POTTER COMPANY

91 Bedford Street

BOSTON

Copyright, 1901,  
by  
W. W. POTTER COMPANY

*ALH250*  
*. H2*  
*Vol. 2*

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY

*To the Godly and Brave Founders of Boston and Plymouth, and the Massachusetts Militia: To the Myriads of Brave Men who from Generation to Generation have Mustered with the Battalions of Massachusetts in Peace and carried her Stainless Banner to Honorable Victory or Defeat in War: And to every son of the Old Bay State who believes that Freedom, Justice and Home are Best Defended by those who Most Prize these Blessings, This History of Patriots, Heroes and Martyrs*

***IS DEDICATED***



# CONTENTS.

## VOLUME II.

I. THE SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M. . . . .	13
II. THE FIFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, M. V. M. . . . .	21
III. THE EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, M. V. M., . . . .	37
IV. THE NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, M. V. M. . . . .	65
V. BATTERY A. LIGHT ARTILLERY, M. V. M. . . . .	95
VI. THE FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, M. V. M. . . . .	141
VII. FIRST CORPS CADETS, M. V. M. . . . .	169
VIII. SECOND CORPS CADETS, M. V. M. . . . .	189
IX. THE NAVAL BRIGADE, M. V. M. . . . .	208
X. THE DEPARTMENT OF RIFLE PRACTICE . . . . .	225
XI. THE SURGICAL AND MEDICAL HISTORY, M. V. M. . . .	243
XII. THE SIGNAL SERVICE, M. V. M. . . . .	291
XIII. ENLISTMENT, PROMOTION AND DISCHARGE . . . . .	310
XIV. THE PROVISIONAL MILITIA OF 1898 . . . . .	330
XV. THE HOOKER GUARDS . . . . .	344
XVI. THE MILITARY COMPANY OF MASSACHUSETTS, OTHER- WISE KNOWN AS THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY . . . . .	353
XVII. THE COMMISSARIAT IN 1900 . . . . .	451
XVIII. THE WORCESTER CITY GUARDS . . . . .	464
XIX. THE WORCESTER CONTINENTALS . . . . .	481
XX. THE ROXBURY CITY GUARDS . . . . .	468
XXI. BIOGRAPHIES OFFICERS OF THE M. V. M., PAST AND PRESENT . . . . .	504
APPENDIX . . . . .	

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

## VOLUME II.

Surrender of the War Flags to the State of Massachusetts, at the Close of the Spanish-American War, "Dewey Day", October 14, 1899 . . . . .	Frontispiece
Governor W. Murray Crane, Commander-in-Chief and Staff, Reviewing the Second Brigade, M. V. M., 1900. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	facing 12
Brigadier-General Benj. F. Peach, Second Brigade, M. V. M., and Staff, 1897 . . . . .	facing 14
Brigadier-General Charles C. Fry (retired) . . . . .	15
Brigadier-General William A. Bancroft, Second Brigade, M. V. M., and Staff, in Fatigue Uniform, August 6, 1899 . . . . .	facing 16
Brigadier-General William A. Bancroft, Second Brigade, M. V. M., and Staff, 1900. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	facing 18
Detachment of Troops A and D, First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M., State Camp, South Framingham, April, 1898 . . . . .	19
Colonel Jophanus H. Whitney . . . . .	21
Fifth Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., Camp Wetherell, Greenville, S. C. Regiment in Column, Company Front. <i>Photo loaned by Elwin L. House, Chaplain</i> . . . . .	facing 22
Headquarters Guard, Camp Wetherell, S. C., After the February Gale, 1899 . . . . .	facing 24
Ambulance Duty, Camp Meade, Pa., Fifth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., 1898-99 . . . . .	facing 24
Regimental Guard and Bath Houses, Camp Wetherell . . . . .	facing 32
Mule Corral, Camp Wetherell, Fifth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., 1898-99 . . . . .	facing 32
Fifth Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., Camp Wetherell, Greenville, S. C., Funeral services, Chaplain Elwin L. House officiating . . . . .	facing 34
The Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., 1900. Review Second Brigade, M. V. M., South Framingham. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	facing 36
Major-General Benjamin F. Peach . . . . .	39
Departure of the Lynn Light Infantry (Company D, Eighth Regiment, M. V. M.) For the Defense of Washington, April 16, 1861 . . . . .	facing 40
Major-General A. Hun Berry . . . . .	41
Eighth Regiment, M. V. M., Near Fort Totten, Newbern, N. C., 1863. <i>Drawn by C. W. Reed from Crayon by E. Brick, 1863</i> . . . . .	facing 46
The Buglers of the Eighth, Chickamauga, Ga. . . . .	facing 52
Marching Through Georgia, Camp Gilman, Americus, Ga. . . . .	facing 52
Officers' Street, Matanzas, Cuba . . . . .	facing 56
Camp Eighth Regiment Infantry, U. S. V., Lexington, Ky. . . . .	facing 56
Camp Eighth Regiment, Line Officers' Street, Americus, Ga. . . . .	facing 58
Review Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., at Matanzas, Cuba, 1899. Inspected by Major-General Breckenridge and Generals Wilson and Sanger . . . . .	facing 58
Scenes in the Service of the Eighth Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., Headquarters, Americus, Ga. Ten Miles from Chickamauga. Company Street, Chickamauga. General Gomez at the Rifle Range, Matanzas, Cuba . . . . .	facing 60
Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., Passing the State House, April 9, 1899. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	facing 62
Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V. The Last Evening Parade, Boston Common, April 18, 1899. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	facing 64
Lieutenant-Colonel John R. Farrell . . . . .	65
Ninth Regiment, M. V. M., on Review, 1900, Encampment Second Brigade, M. V. M., South Framingham, Mass. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	67
Statue of Colonel Thomas Cass, Ninth Regiment Infantry, Massachusetts Volunteers, 1861-62, Public Gardens, Boston, Mass., 1900. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	71
The Night March . . . . .	74
Headquarters at Siboney . . . . .	75

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Generals Garcia and Castillo of the Cuban Army . . . . .	77
At the Fords . . . . .	78
In the Trenches . . . . .	79
"Borrowes' Pet," the Dynamite Gun. Graves of Rough Riders, Las Guasimas . . . . .	81
Cuban Infantry at Santiago . . . . .	83
Rapid-Fire Gun Before Santiago . . . . .	84
Coast Line Railroad, Santiago . . . . .	85
Leaving for Home, Santiago . . . . .	87
Ancient Spanish Cannon, Santiago . . . . .	87
"Spain Warred on the Defenceless; America Gave Her Best and Bravest That These Might Live." . . . .	92
Headquarters Battery A, Captain Nathan Appleton Commanding, 1877-79 . . . . .	93
Captain Nathan Appleton . . . . .	95
Battery A, Left Platoon in Battery, Swampscott, 1898 . . . . .	99
The Guidon Bearer . . . . .	101
Battery A, Guard Detail . . . . .	102
Battery A, "Leading Out" . . . . .	103
Battery A, State Camp, South Framingham, August, 1899 . . . . .	105
Battery A, After Ammunition . . . . .	107
Massachusetts Artillery at Gettysburg, July 2, 1763. Bigelow's Ninth Battery and Phillips' Fifth Battery at the Peach Orchard. <i>Drawing by C. W. Reed</i> . . . . .	109
Battery A, "Aim" . . . . .	112
Battery A, "Fire" . . . . .	115
First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M., 1892. Company A in Front, Company D Marching in the Rear. <i>Photo by W. H. Partridge</i> . . . . . facing	140
National Lancers, Annual Parade, Boston Common, 1851 . . . . .	143
Boston National Lancers, Boston Common, 1881. <i>By Permission Holland &amp; Roberts</i> . . . . .	145
National Lancers, Company A, First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M., Encampment Second Brigade, M. V. M., South Framingham, Mass., 1900. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	149
The Roxbury Horse Guards in Dress Uniform. <i>Photo by W. H. Partridge</i> . . . . . facing	154
Roxbury Horse Guards (Company D, First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M.) Annual Encampment Second Brigade, M. V. M., South Framingham, Mass., 1900. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . .	159
U. S. Volunteers in the Philippines. Ancient Forts on the River. Uti-Uti Village, San Rafael Village and San Anton Village, Manila . . . . .	163
John Hancock, Colonel of the Cadets, Receiving General Gage, Long Wharf, Boston, May 13, 1774. <i>Painting by Copeland</i> . . . . .	167
Arms of the First Corps Cadets . . . . .	169
Cadet, Full Dress Uniform . . . . .	170
Cadet, with Overcoat . . . . .	171
Cadet, Undress Uniform . . . . .	173
Cadet, Service Uniform . . . . .	174
Armory First Corps Cadets, Columbus Avenue, Boston, Mass. . . . . facing	174
Seal of the First Corps Cadets . . . . .	175
Camp of First Corps Cadets, Hingham, Mass. . . . .	177
First Corps Cadets, Camp Guard . . . . .	181
First Corps Cadets, Firing Points at Hingham . . . . .	185
Second Corps Cadets, Battalion Headquarters . . . . .	189
Colonel J. Frank Dalton . . . . .	191
Armory Second Corps Cadets, Salem, Mass. . . . . facing	192
Six Corps Cadet Commanders. Second Corps Cadets, Boxford, Mass. . . . . facing	194
Banquet Hall, Salem Cadets Armory . . . . .	196
Second Corps Cadets, M. V. M., Camp Ground, Boxford, Mass. On Parade. "Parade Rest" . . . . . facing	202
Second Corps Cadets, M. V. M., Camp Ground, Boxford, Mass. . . . . facing	204
Lieutenant-Colonel Walter F. Peck . . . . .	205
Second Corps Cadets, Fort Miller, Marblehead, Mass. At the Tents, Off Duty. At the Mess Tables . . . . . facing	206
Winthrop Packard, Naval Brigade, M. V. M. . . . .	208
The Naval Brigade, Captain John W. Weeks Commanding, Boston Common, (Dewey Day) October 14, 1899 . . . . .	209
Camp of the Naval Brigade, Lovell's Island, Boston Harbor . . . . .	211

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Naval Brigade. At the Main Battery . . . . .	212
State Armory, Springfield, Mass., Quarters of Company H, Naval Brigade, M. V. M. . . . . facing	212
Naval Brigade. Boat Practice . . . . .	213
Captain John A. Weeks . . . . .	214
The Naval Brigade. U. S. S. "Columbia" . . . . .	215
The Naval Brigade. Gunnery Practice . . . . .	215
Naval Brigade at Mess . . . . .	216
Gunnery Practice 12-inch Dahlgren Pivot-Gun, Old Style . . . . .	217
The Naval Brigade. Recreation . . . . .	219
A Big Steamer in Trouble . . . . .	220
The Torpedo Boat "Cushing", U. S. N. . . . .	221
U. S. S. "Prairie" on the Cuban Blockade, 1898 . . . . . facing	222
U. S. S. Monitor "Jason", 1898 . . . . . facing	224
U. S. S. "Aileen", 1898 . . . . . facing	224
The Wimbledon Cup . . . . .	225
At the Walnut Hill Range, 1899 . . . . .	227
Walnut Hill Range, Off Hand, "Hip Rest" . . . . .	228
Walnut Hill Range, Off Hand, "Full Arm" . . . . .	229
Walnut Hill Range, Long Distance, Regular Prone Position . . . . .	232
The Hilton Trophy, Won by the Massachusetts Militia, 1886-87-8-9 . . . . .	233
Walnut Hill Range, Long Distance, "Texas Grip" . . . . .	235
Bronze Statue, "The Soldier of Marathon," Interstate Trophy, Won by the Massachusetts Militia, 1886-87-88-89 . . . . .	242
Brigadier-General Robert A. Blood, Surgeon-General M. V. M., 1896-1900 . . . . .	243
Field Hospital and Ambulance Corps, 1900. Field Manoœuvres, 1st Brigade, M. V. M., South Framingham, Mass. . . . . facing	244
A Field Hospital at Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775. From the Cyclorama of Bunker Hill . . . . .	257
Portraits Surgeon-General William J. Dale, Assistant Surgeon-General Anson P. Hooker, Assistant Surgeon-General Joshua B. Treadwell . . . . . facing	260
Surgeon-General Orran G. Cilley . . . . .	279
Surgeon-General Alfred F. Holt . . . . .	280
Ambulance Corps Exhibit, Emergency Splints for Leg . . . . . facing	280
Surgeon-General Thomas J. Kittredge . . . . .	281
Surgeon-General Herbert L. Burrell . . . . .	282
Surgeon-General Edward J. Forster . . . . .	283
Ambulance Corps Exhibit, Emergency Splints for Arm . . . . . facing	284
Office of Surgeon-General Blood . . . . . facing	288
Signal Corps, 1st Brigade, M. V. M. Flag Station on Stand-Pipe at Arlington Heights, Mass. . . . .	301
Signal Corps, 1st Brigade, M. V. M., 1895. Flag Station at Reservoir, Lincoln, Mass. . . . .	303
Signal Corps, 1st Brigade, M. V. M., 1895. Flag Station, Granary Hill, Oak Mount, Lexington, Mass. . . . .	305
Signal Corps, 1st Brigade, M. V. M. Flag Station, Prospect Hill, Waltham Mass. . . . .	307
The Field Telephone, 1898-1899 . . . . .	308
Private Jones, B. L. I., 1861 . . . . .	310
Certificate of membership . . . . .	313
Captain's Commission, 1698 . . . . .	314
Captain's Commission, 1734 . . . . .	315
Washington Before the Battle of Monmouth. <i>Painting by Chappel</i> . . . . .	317
Enlisted on the Quota of Massachusetts, 1863-65. Contraband of War. In the United States Volunteers. <i>Painted by Wood</i> . . . . . facing	324
Map of the Philippines . . . . . facing	328
Village of Corregidor, Manila Bay . . . . . facing	332
La Escolta, the Principal Street of Manila . . . . . facing	332
Filipinos Awaiting a Charge . . . . . facing	336
Filipino Prisoners Brought into Camp . . . . . facing	336
Volunteers and their Chinese Carriers . . . . . facing	340
Battery Knoll, Manila. Memorial Day, 1899 . . . . . facing	340
Caloocan, Where the War with the Fillipinos Began . . . . .	343



# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Major-General Joseph Hooker . . . . .	344
Executive Committee of the Hooker Guards Committee . . . . . facing	344
Executive Committee of the Hooker Guards Committee . . . . . facing	348
Captains of Companies, Hooker Guards Brigade . . . . . facing	350
General Officer, 1610-1690 . . . . . facing	353
Match-lock and Wheel-lock . . . . .	354
262d Anniversary Parade, Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, 1900	
Governor's Reception Parade, Beacon Hill . . . . . facing	354
French Pikemen, 1594-1690 . . . . .	355
Arquebusier in Armor, With Sword and Wheel-lock . . . . .	356
French Musketeers, 1494-1690 . . . . .	357
Cannon and Pateraros, 1600 . . . . .	358
Battalion of Musketeers and Pikemen, 1592-1690 . . . . .	361
Advance at the Battle of Dreux, 1562 . . . . .	363
A Carbineer, 1600-1690 . . . . .	365
Bayonets, 1562, 1688, 1700, 1800-1900 . . . . .	369
The Storming of the Narragansett Swamp Fort, December 19, 1675. <i>From a</i>	
<i>Painting by C. W. Reed</i> . . . . . facing	376
Under General Pepperell at Louisburg, 1745. <i>Painted by Wageman</i> . . . . . facing	384
With General Wayne at Stony Point, July 15, 1779. <i>Painting by Chappel</i> . . . . . facing	388
Governor W. Murray Crane Commissioning the Officers Elect, 262d Anniversary Ancient and Honorable Artillery, 1900 . . . . . facing	394
Grenadier, 1804-1820 . . . . .	399
With Taylor in Mexico. <i>Painting by Chappel</i> . . . . .	403
"For the Builders, Every One Had His Sword by His Side and so Buildded." <i>Drawn by Whorf</i> . . . . .	405
The Eighth Regiment, M. V. M., on the March to Washington, 1861 . . . . .	407
The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts, Windsor Castle, England, July, 1896. <i>Photo loaned by Colonel J. Payson Bradley</i> facing	410
Uniforms of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, 1876. <i>By Permission of Lieutenant-Colonel J. R. Farrell</i> . . . . .	417
The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts. Presentation to Her Majesty Queen Victoria at Windsor Castle. <i>Photo loaned by Colonel J. Payson Bradley</i> . . . . . facing	432
H. R. H. Prince Arthur, Duke of Connaught, Under the Stars and Stripes. Taken at His Special Request at Aldershot, England, July, 1896. <i>Photo loaned by J. Payson Bradley</i> . . . . . facing	436
Massachusetts Infantry and Artillery, 1900. Company D, Second Corps Cadets, Captain F. P. Packard. First Battalion, Light Artillery, Field Manoeuvres, 1st Brigade. <i>Photo by Marr</i> . . . . . facing	446
Portrait Brigadier-General Fred W. Wellington, Commissary-General, Massachusetts . . . . . facing	450
Bill of Fare, 2d Brigade, M. V. M. . . . .	454
The Open Market at Beaufort, S. C., 1862-1863. Federal Foragers Raiding the Sea Islands. From Old-Time War Sketches . . . . . facing	454
Daily Company Ration Return . . . . .	455
Daily Consolidated Regimental Return . . . . .	457
Commissariat, Eighth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., 1898. "Fall in for Dinner," Americus, Ga. The Crack Team at Chickamauga . . . . . facing	458
In the Philippines. Yankee Foragers. The Commissariat Guard . . . . .	463
Captain J. Levi Newton, Worcester City Guards . . . . .	464
Worcester City Guards, First Parade, 1840 . . . . . facing	464
Company Street, Worcester City Guards. Camp Fifth Regiment, M. V. M., Leominster, Mass., 1860 . . . . .	467
Headquarters Worcester City Guards. Camp of Fifth Brigade, M. V. M., Leominster, Mass., 1860 . . . . .	468
Worcester City Guards, Parade in White Uniform, 1851 . . . . . facing	468
Field and Staff, 5th Brigade, M. V. M. Camp at Leominster, Mass., 1860 facing	469
The Old Worcester City Guards . . . . .	475
Encampment Second Regiment Infantry. Field Manoeuvres, First Brigade, M. V. M., 1900 . . . . .	480

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Officers Worcester Continentals . . . . .	482
Roxbury City Guards' Seal, Vignette . . . . .	486
Portrait Major John Jones Spooner . . . . .	486
Original Charter, Roxbury City Guards . . . . .	487
Infantry Cap, 1855, Company D, Second Regiment Infantry . . . . .	488
Infantry Cap, 1859, Company D, Second Regiment Infantry . . . . .	488
Artillery Caps, Roxbury Artillery Train and City Guards . . . . .	489
Portrait Capt. Ebenezer W. Stone . . . . .	492
D Company Street, First Massachusetts Volunteers, Brandy Station, Va., 1863-64. <i>Drawing by Captain Isaac P. Gagg</i> . . . . .	494
Encampment First Brigade, M. V. M., Neponset, Dorchester, Brigadier-Gen- eral B. F. Edmands Commanding, August 8-9, 1849 . . . . .	495
Portrait, Brigadier-General Isaac S. Burrell . . . . .	497
Fort Pickering, Salem, 1898 . . . . .	498
Battery D, Headquarters, 1898 . . . . .	498
The Peabody Trophy, Presented by the Providence Tool Company . . . . .	499
Battery D, Company Street, 1898 . . . . .	499
Officers Battery D, First Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., 1901 . . . . .	501



*Photo by Barr*

GOVERNOR W. MURRAY CHASE, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, AND STAFF, REVIEWING THE SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1900.



## CHAPTER I.

### THE SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M.

By Brigadier-General Charles C. Fry (Retired).

AT the close of the War of the Rebellion, in 1865, the Massachusetts Militia, every organization of which had at different times during the war served with credit to themselves and to the Commonwealth, was without organization. Some of the regiments had preserved their organization, but there being no brigade or division formation, the legislature of 1866 provided that the militia should be organized as a division, and by General Orders No. 11, A. G. O., dated May 18, 1866, the following named organizations were assigned to constitute the Second Brigade:

#### SECOND BRIGADE, 1866.

Fifth Regiment Infantry, Colonel George H. Pierson.  
Sixth Regiment Infantry, Lieutenant-Colonel Melvin Beal.  
Eighth Regiment Infantry, Colonel Benjamin F. Peach.  
Third Battery, Light Artillery, Captain James B. Ayer.  
Fourth Battery Light Artillery, Captain Henry M. McIntire.  
Company F, Cavalry, Captain Christopher Roby.

With the exception of the consolidation of the Third and Fourth Batteries, July 29, 1873, as the Second Battalion, Light Artillery, under command of Major George S. Merrill, the brigade remained as above organized until April 29, 1876, when by Act of Legislature, approved April 28, 1876, "to reduce the expenses and increase the efficiency of the Militia," "the commissions of all general and field officers with their respective staffs with the exception of the staff of the Commander-in-Chief," expired, and the militia, with the exception of the two corps of Cadets, was reorganized into brigades, and by General Orders No. 21, A. G. O., dated July 14, 1876, the following named organizations were assigned to constitute the Second Brigade:

#### SECOND BRIGADE, 1876.

First Battalion Infantry, 6 companies, Lieutenant-Colonel Nathaniel Wales.  
Fifth Regiment Infantry, 8 companies, Colonel Ezra J. Trull.  
Seventh Battalion Infantry, 2 companies, Major Charles C. Fry.  
Eighth Regiment Infantry, 8 companies, Colonel Benjamin F. Peach, Jr.  
Ninth Battalion Infantry, 6 companies, Lieutenant-Colonel Wm. M. Strachan.  
First Battalion Cavalry, 2 companies, Major Dexter H. Follett.  
Battery A, Light Artillery, Captain Edwin C. Langley.

The next change in the formation of the brigade occurred in 1878, when, in accordance with Chapter 265 of the Acts of 1878, and General Orders No. 7, A. G. O., dated Dec. 3, the brigade was constituted as follows:

SECOND BRIGADE, 1878.

Fifth Regiment Infantry, 8 companies, Colonel Ezra J. Trull.  
Eighth Regiment Infantry, 12 companies, Colonel Benjamin F. Peach, Jr.  
Ninth Regiment Infantry, 8 companies, Colonel William M. Strachan.  
First Battalion Light Artillery, 2 companies, Major George S. Merrill.  
First Battalion Cavalry, 2 companies, Major Dexter H. Follett.

In 1885, the brigade was increased by the addition of a Signal and of an Ambulance Corps; in 1887 by the addition of three companies to the Fifth Regiment; and in 1888, by the addition of one company to the Fifth Regiment and four companies to the Ninth Regiment, making each regiment to consist of twelve companies.

In accordance with General Orders No. 9, A. G. O., dated May 18, 1891, "for the purpose of equalizing the brigades," the First Battalion Light Artillery, with the exception of Battery A, was transferred to the 1st Brigade, and in 1894, in accordance with General Orders No. 9, A. G. O., April 14, the brigade was further reduced by the consolidation of the ambulance corps of both brigades, as an independent corps directly under the authority of the commander-in-chief.

The brigade at the end of the year 1899 was constituted as follows:

SECOND BRIGADE, 1899.

Fifth Regiment Infantry, 12 companies, Colonel Jophanus H. Whitney.  
Eighth Regiment Infantry, 11 companies, Colonel William A. Pew.  
Ninth Regiment Infantry, 12 companies, Colonel William H. Donovan.  
Battery A. Light Artillery, Captain Samuel D. Parker.  
First Battalion Cavalry, 2 companies, Major William A. Perrins.  
Signal Corps, Lieutenant Henry W. Sprague.

The first commander of the brigade, Colonel George H. Pierson, was commissioned brigadier-general July 26, 1866, being succeeded in the command of the Fifth Regiment by Colonel William T. Grammer. General Pierson remained in command of the brigade until the reorganization of the militia in 1876, being succeeded by Lieutenant-Colonel Eben Sutton, who was commissioned brigadier-general August 12, 1876. The decision of the Supreme Court announced in General Orders No. 2, A. G. O., dated January 11, 1882, having vacated the commission of General Sutton, he was succeeded by Colonel Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., who was commissioned brigadier-general February 18, 1882, and remained in command of the brigade until July 24, 1897, when, by Act of the Legislature, "relative to the term of office of brigadier-general," approved May 26, 1897, and by General Orders No. 12, A. G. O., dated July 24, 1897,



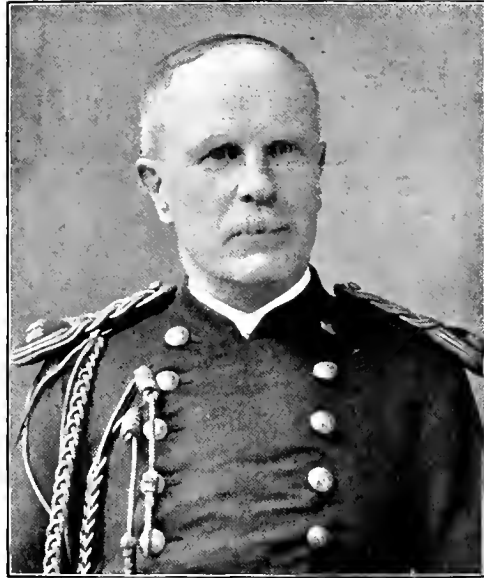
BRIGADIER-GENERAL BENJAMIN F. PEACH, SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., AND STAFF, 1897.





he was placed upon the retired list with the rank of major-general, being succeeded by Colonel William A. Bancroft, commissioned brigadier-general July 30, 1897, who now commands the brigade. A brief notice of the several brigade commanders seems desirable at this point :

The first commander, Brigadier-General Pierson, had long and honorably served his state and country. Enlisting in 1834 in the Seventh Regiment, he retained his connection with it until 1853, when he was commissioned paymaster in the Sixth Regiment. In 1855 he was commissioned third lieutenant in Company B, Seventh Regiment; first lieutenant in 1856, and made captain in 1857. He entered the service of the United States in the three months' campaign of 1861, as captain of Company A, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M., and on July 1, 1861, was elected lieutenant-colonel of the regiment. He was elected colonel, June 26, 1862, and on October 8, 1862, again entered the service of the United States and served with his regiment with distinction in and about Newbern, N. C., during the nine months' campaign of 1862 and 1863. Under his command the brigade made encourag-



BRIGADIER-GENERAL CHARLES C. FRY (Retired).

ing and satisfactory progress, its membership gradually changing from the traditional grumbling soldier who, having served well his country in its time of peril, looked almost with disdain upon what he called "playing soldier," to a body of earnest and intelligent militia; ready again, if need there should be, to offer their services at their country's call.

The second commander of the brigade, Brigadier-General Sutton, also brought to the service of the state an experience acquired by long and honorable service. Previous to the War of the Rebellion he had served as fourth lieutenant in the Salem Cadets, and as major on the staff of the 2d Division; and had occupied upon the staff of General Pierson the positions of engineer, assistant inspector-general and assistant adjutant-general. Following in the footsteps of his predecessor, the brigade, under his command, ably maintained the high standard which had characterized it under its first commander.

The third commander of the brigade, Brigadier-General Peach, also entered upon the duties of his office after many years of active

service in war and peace. He first enlisted in the Massachusetts militia in Company C, Sixth Regiment, afterward the Eighth Regiment, in 1854, at the age of fourteen years; was appointed sergeant in 1857 and first sergeant in 1858, in which position he entered the service of the United States, April 30, 1861 and served during the three months' campaign.

In March, 1862, he was elected first lieutenant, was appointed adjutant of the Eighth Regiment in September, 1862, and in that position again entered the service of the United States November 7, 1862, and served in and about Newbern, N. C., and with the army of the Potomac in Maryland and Virginia, during the nine months' campaign of 1862 and 1863. He was elected colonel of the Eighth Regiment, July 22, 1864, and four days later, for the third time, entered the service of the United States, serving as colonel of the Eighth Regiment in and about Baltimore, Md., during the one hundred days' campaign of 1864. With the exception of short intervals caused by legislative action in 1878, and the Supreme Court decision in 1882, he retained his connection with the Eighth Regiment as its commander until his election as brigadier-general in 1882. During his long service in the Massachusetts militia great changes had been wrought in the discipline, efficiency and conduct in camp of its members, and he entered upon his duties with a thorough knowledge of the requirements and responsibilities of his command; and during the many years of his continuance in office he received the strong and active support of his subordinate officers. The last day of his active service in the Massachusetts militia, July 24, 1897, was marked by evidences of the love and esteem not only of the officers but of the enlisted men of his command, and when for the last time, as commander of the 2d Brigade, he stood with uncovered head, amid his staff, and saw that flag lowered which had for many years denoted his military authority, he must have thought, as did others, that the new rank which for the balance of his life was his, was fairly and honestly earned by a lifetime of sacrifice and devotion to the best interests of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.

The following order which he issued upon his retirement expresses the sentiments existing between him and the members of his command:

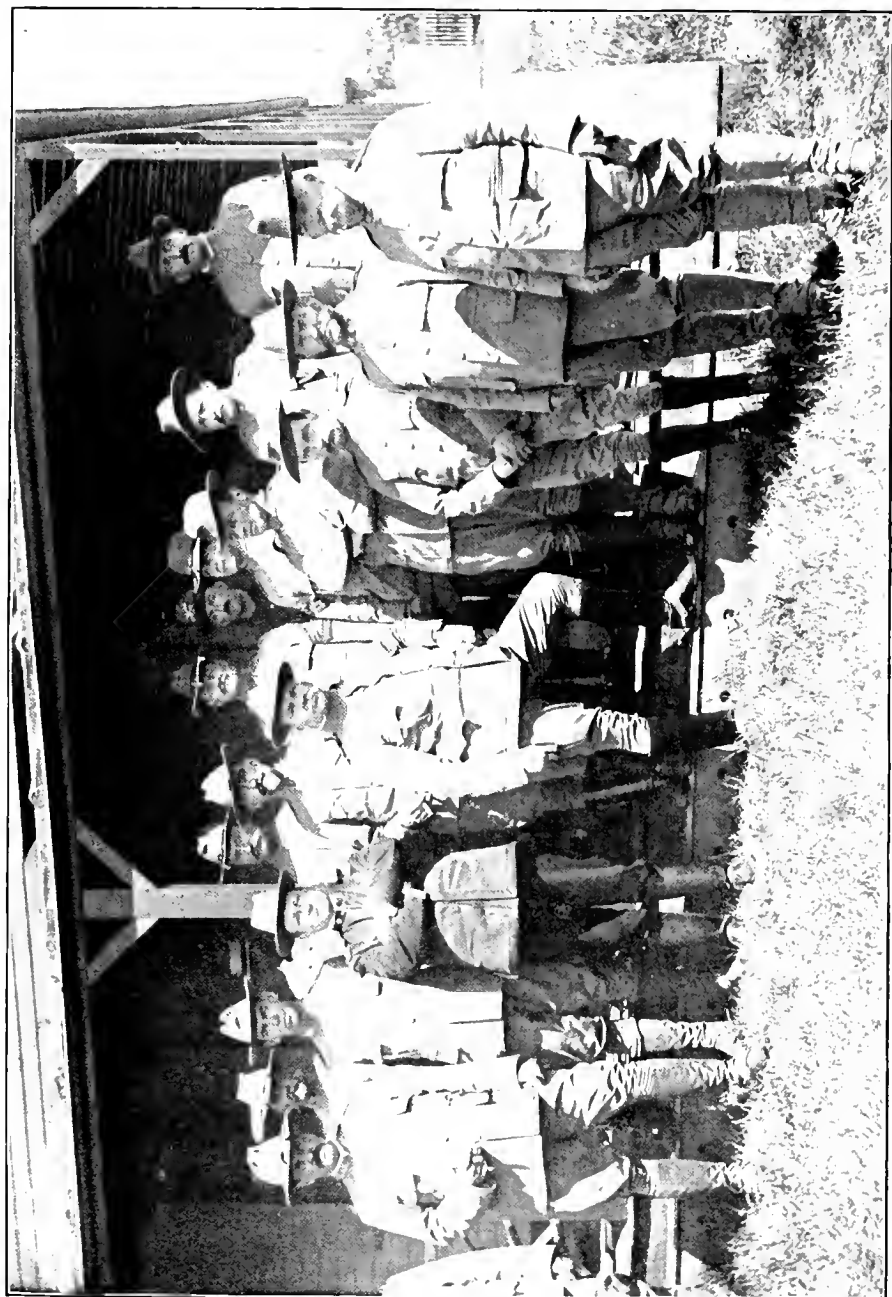
#### HEADQUARTERS SECOND BRIGADE.

##### MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER MILITIA.

Camp at Framingham, July 24, 1897.

General Orders, No. 4.

Upon retiring from the active militia of this Commonwealth, the Brigade Commander desires to express to the members of his command his deep appreciation of the efforts of every officer and enlisted man of the 2d Brigade to make this, their commander's last tour of duty, the most successful encampment in the history of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. Deeply sensible of the personal sacrifices which must in many cases have been made in order that the attendance might be of phenomenal



*Photo by Marr.*

BRIGADIER-GENERAL WILLIAM A. BANCROFT, SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., AND STAFF, IN FATIGUE UNIFORM, AUGUST 6, 1899.



strength, and impressed with the evidences of the esteem and love of all, who by their exertions have contributed towards the remarkable success of the tour of duty now drawing to a close, he thanks most sincerely every member of his command, hoping and believing that, although he may no longer participate in the active duties of the volunteer militia, he may often meet in the fraternal manner which has been so characteristic of the past, the many officers with whom he has been so long associated, and the enlisted men upon whom the safety of our Commonwealth depends. Foremost as does now stand the militia of this state, he sincerely hopes that with a new commander there may be greater progress, and that to him, as commander of the 2d Brigade, may be extended that active, strong and intelligent support which it has been his privilege and honor to receive for a period of more than fifteen years.

May God bless and preserve the militia of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

By command of

BRIGADIER-GENERAL PEACH.

CHARLES C. FRY, Assistant Adjutant-General.

The present commander, Brigadier-General Bancroft, also entered upon his duties eminently fitted by nature, education and experience to perform them. He enlisted in Company K, Fifth Regiment, in 1875; was appointed corporal in 1876, and sergeant in Company B, in 1877; commissioned second lieutenant in the same company April 16, 1877, first lieutenant, September 2, 1878, and captain March 31, 1879; and was elected colonel of the Fifth Regiment, February 7, 1882, remaining in that position until his election as brigadier-general in 1897. During the Spanish-American war in 1898, he was appointed brigadier-general of United States volunteers and served from May 27 until August 17. During his absence the brigade was commanded by Colonel J. H. Whitney and Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Oakes. The brigade is well officered and equipped, and under its present commander will undoubtedly make that progress which is so essentially necessary for the welfare of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.

The parades of the brigade, outside the state camp grounds, have been as follows: At the reception of President Grant at Boston, June 16, 1869; at the celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill at Boston, June 17, 1875; at the reception of President Hayes at Boston, June 26, 1877; on the occasion of the dedication of the Army and Navy Monument at Boston, September 17, 1877; as a portion of the escort of the procession of "societies and trades" at the celebration of the 250th anniversary of the settlement of Boston, September 17, 1880; at the reception of President Arthur at Boston, October 11, 1882; at Boston, October 3, 1888, as a portion of the entire state militia; at Lynn, October 3, 1889, when the brigade exemplified street riot work; at the mobilization of the entire militia of the state at Boston, October 9, 1894; the brigade then being in command of Colonel Bancroft, the division being under command of General Peach. On that occasion the brigade assembled in

Somerville, and marched into Boston through Cambridge and over Harvard Bridge, and after a short march passed in review before the commander-in-chief.

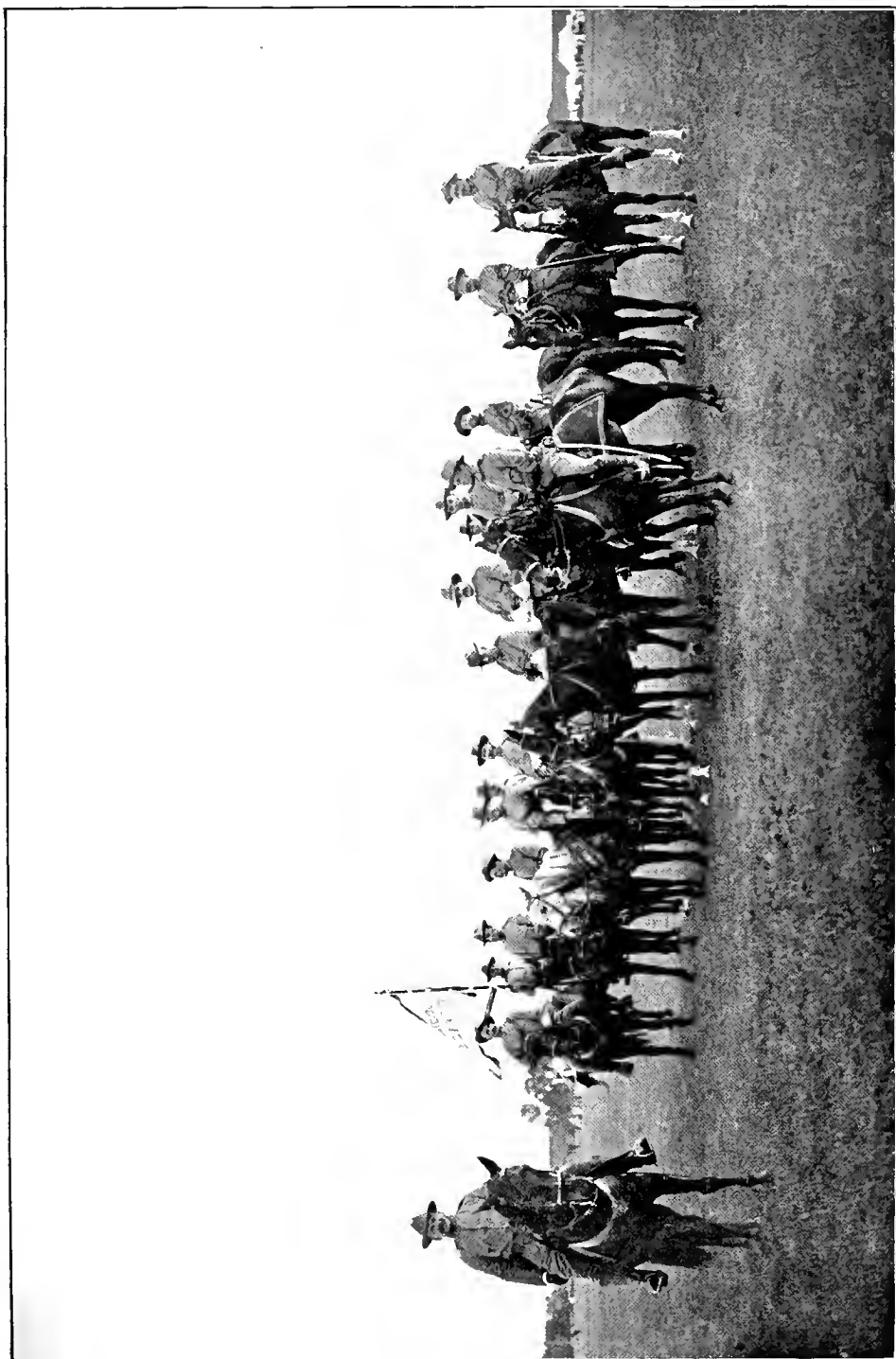
The first encampment of the brigade occurred on September 18, 19, 20, 1866, at North Andover, followed in 1867 by an encampment of five days at Swampscott; in 1868 at Newburyport; in 1869 at Boxford; and in 1870 (division encampment) at Concord. In 1871 and 1872, the several organizations encamped separately, but in 1873 the full brigade encamped for the first time on the state camp ground at South Framingham, and has since, with the following exceptions, performed the annual tour of duty as a brigade and upon the state camp ground:

In 1876, the Eighth Regiment and Seventh Battalion encamped at Fairmount Park, Philadelphia. In 1881, the Ninth Regiment encamped at Yorktown, Virginia. In 1898, the Fifth, Eighth and Ninth Regiments being in the service of the United States, no brigade encampment was held.

The members of the staffs of the several commanders of the brigade have been conspicuous for pre-eminence in their respective offices; and of late years, the commissioned and non-commissioned staff of the Second Brigade has been a recruiting ground for filling many higher or more important stations, and in no case has the judgment of the selection been at fault.

The following named persons have held commissions on the staff of the commanders of the second brigade. The years, with the exception of 1900, denote the date of commission and discharge:

Harcourt Amory, captain and engineer, 1881-1882; Robert Amory, lieutenant-colonel and medical director, 1876-81; Hugh Bancroft, captain and engineer, 1897-1900; Francis R. Bangs, captain and judge advocate, 1895-1900; Frederick P. Barnes, captain and brigade quartermaster, 1897-1900; George H. Benyon, lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, 1897-1900; Hugh Cochrane, captain and engineer, 1873-76; also major and assistant inspector-general, 1876-79; Harry E. Converse, captain and brigade quartermaster, 1888-93; Charles Currier, captain and brigade quartermaster, 1866; Edward E. Currier, captain and engineer, 1882-83; Robert S. Daniels, major and brigade inspector, 1866, also lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, 1867-1873; William H. Devine, lieutenant-colonel and medical director, 1897-1900; Gordon Dexter, captain and provost marshal, 1893-97; Robert B. Edes, major and assistant inspector-general of rifle practice, 1897-1900; A. Lawrence Edmands, captain and aide-de-camp, 1876-80; Edward N. Fenno, captain and aide-de-camp, 1876-79, also major and assistant inspector-general, 1880; Charles C. Fry, lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, 1882-1897; James P. Frost, major and assistant inspector-general of rifle practice, 1887-93; George P. Gardner, captain and aide-de-camp, 1881-82; Elijah George, captain and judge advocate, 1882-94, also major and assistant inspector-general of rifle practice, 1894-97; William H. Goff, major and assistant inspector-general, 1897-1900; Wendell Goodwin, captain and provost marshal, 1881-82; Aaron A. Hall, captain and provost marshal, 1882-91, also



BRIGADIER-GENERAL WILLIAM A. BANCROFT, SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., AND STAFF, 1900.





major and assistant inspector-general, 1891-97; Freeman C. Hersey, lieutenant-colonel and medical director, 1891-97; John W. Hudson, captain and judge advocate, 1868-71; Joseph A. Ingalls, captain and quartermaster, 1867-68, aide-de-camp, 1869-73, major and assistant inspector-general, 1873-76 and 1882-91; William Ingalls, lieutenant-colonel and medical director, 1867 to 1876; Edward J. Jones, captain and judge advocate, 1876; George A. Keeler, captain and aide-de-camp, 1889; John Kent, captain and aide-de-camp, 1866-69 and 1875; Thomas Kittredge, lieutenant-colonel and medical director, 1882-90; Charles W. Knapp, captain and brigade quartermaster, 1882-85; William T. Lambert, captain and engineer, 1884-91; also aide-de-camp, 1891-97; Abbott Lawrence, Jr., captain and engineer, 1876-77; also aide-de-camp, 1880-82; Daniel W. Lawrence, captain and quartermaster, 1869-72, and 1873-82; Francis W. Lawrence, captain and provost marshal, 1876-80, lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, 1881-82; Lester Leland, captain and provost-marshal, 1898-1900; Arthur Lincoln, captain and judge advocate, 1877-82; Philip Little, captain



DETACHMENT OF TROOP A AND D, FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, M. V. M.,  
STATE CAMP, SOUTH FRAMINGHAM, APRIL, 1898.

and engineer, 1891-94, aide-de-camp, 1894-96; David W. Low, captain and provost marshal, 1874-76; Winthrop M. Merrill, captain and engineer, 1896-97; Loring W. Muzzey, captain and engineer, 1868-73, aide-de-camp, 1873-76; Francis S. Parker, captain and engineer, 1894-96, aide-de-camp, 1896-97; J. Brooks Parker, captain and aide-de-camp, 1887-88; George A. Pierce, captain and provost-marshal, 1891-93; George W. Preston, captain and brigade quartermaster, 1885-88; Augustus N. Rantoul, captain and brigade quartermaster, 1893-1900; Henry N. Richards, captain and provost marshal, 1897-98; Augustus N. Sampson, captain and aide-de-camp, 1882-87; Horace Binney Sargent, Jr., captain and engineer, 1877-80, assistant inspector-general, 1881-82; Robert G. Shaw, lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, 1876-81; Eben Sutton, captain and engineer, 1866, major and assistant inspector-general, 1867-73; lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general, 1873-76; Newell A. Thompson, captain and aide-de-camp, 1886-94; Ezra J. Trull, captain and aide-de-camp, 1882-86; Charles H. Williams, lieutenant-colonel and medical director, 1881-82.

The non-commissioned staff has also comprised among its members many who have been and are now ably filling positions of great honor and responsibility in the Massachusetts militia.

To one who has been associated with the Second Brigade during nearly all the years since its organization in 1866, the name is hallowed by blessed memories. The first camp at South Andover, upon which, during the three days' tour of duty, the sun never shone, is still fresh in the mind with all its discomforts and pleasures. The war just closed had eliminated from the mind of the real soldier all but the absolute necessities; and what at that time were considered comforts, and even luxuries, would seem to the modern militiaman hardships far exceeding the discomforts of actual service. During succeeding encampments, great progress has been made in ensuring the health and comfort of the troops, so that the camps of to-day combine in a large degree not only great opportunities for learning the tactical duties of the soldier, but also, what is of equal benefit, every provision for the preservation of his health.

Step by step, always forward, has moved the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, and in the front rank has stood, equal at least with others, the Second Brigade. Through its many changes in organization, arms and drill, and under its several commanders, its discipline, morale and efficiency have never suffered; and it stands to-day, as in the past, a fitting representative of that perfection of organization which can result only from a careful, intelligent and honest endeavor to apply to the service of the Commonwealth the best talents and efforts of its members.

## CHAPTER II.

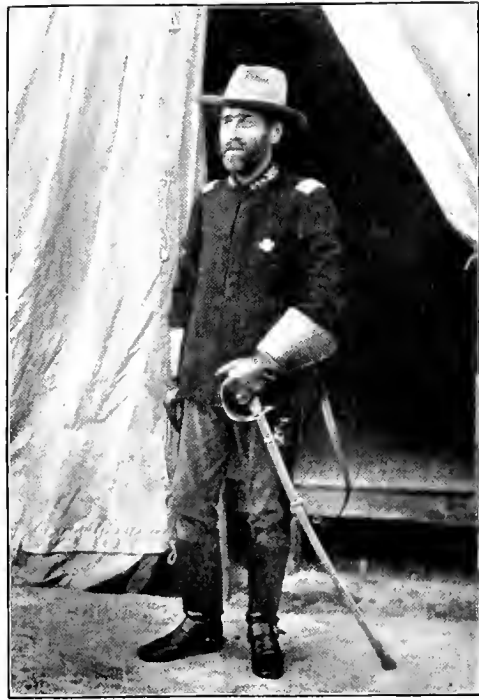
### FIFTH REGIMENT OF INFANTRY.

(Approved by a Committee of Officers of the Fifth.)

THE records of the State of Massachusetts show that as early as 1800 there was a regiment in the State known as the Fifth Regiment of Light Infantry, and that the companies came from practically the same localities as those which recruited the regiment at the time of the beginning of the Civil War. In 1840 the militia was re-organized, and the number of the regiment was changed, it being known as the Fourth Regiment of Light Infantry, and the new Fifth was raised in the towns and cities around Lowell. In 1846 there was another re-organization, and four companies of the Fourth were disbanded "on account of reduction in numbers and inefficient condition." These four were companies E of Malden, B and C of Charlestown, and H of South Reading. In 1855 a movement was made to repeal all the then-existing militia laws, but it was defeated in the Legislature after a hard battle. It resulted, however, in disbanding the Fourth and Fifth, and in the organization of a new Fifth from the cities of Charlestown, Cambridge, Somerville, Woburn, Winchester, Waltham and Concord. J.

Durrell Green, who was colonel from 1851 to 1855, was elected colonel of the new regiment, but he refused to qualify, and Charles B. Rogers was elected, and received his commission July 7, 1855.

The commanding officers of the Fourth, from 1841 to 1855, were as follows: Charles Carter, from August, 1841, to September, 1844. Royal Douglass, from October, 1844, to May, 1847. Samuel Blanchard, from July to September, 1848. Moses F. Winn, from September 1848, to May, 1850. J. Durrell Green, from January, 1851, to February, 1855.



COLONEL JOPHANUS H. WHITNEY.

When Colonel Rogers took command, the companies of the regiment were enlisted from the following towns: Company A, Concord, Captain Thomas Heald; Company B, Somerville, Captain G. O. Brastow; Company C, Waltham; Company D, Charlestown, Captain J. M. Robertson; Company E, Winchester, Captain F. O. Prince; Company F, Cambridge, Captain J. D. Green; Company G, Woburn, Captain S. B. White; Company H, Charlestown, Captain G. P. Sanger.

When the first call for troops in the Civil War was issued, the Fifth Massachusetts Regiment was not among those who went out. A meeting of the regiment was held on the 15th of April, 1861, and the services of the command were tendered to the government; and on the 17th, when the first troops left for the front, the Fifth was ordered to hold itself in readiness. On the 19th, after the attack upon the Sixth Regiment in Baltimore, the Fifth was ordered to report for duty. The regiment was mobilized in Boston, and headquarters were established in Faneuil Hall until the morning of the 21st, when it started for Washington.

The roster of the regiment was as follows:—

*Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Samuel C. Lawrence of Medford; lieutenant-colonel, J. Durrell Green of Cambridge; major, Hamlin W. Keyes of Boston; adjutant, Thomas O. Barri of Cambridge; quartermaster, Joseph E. Billings of Boston; surgeon, Samuel H. Hurd of Charlestown; assistant surgeon, Henry W. Mitchell of East Bridgewater; chaplain, Benjamin F. De Costa of Charlestown; paymaster, George F. Hodges of Roxbury.

*Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergeant-major, Henry A. Quincy; quartermaster sergeant, Samuel C. Hunt of Charlestown; hospital steward, Nathan D. Parker of Reading; drum major, Charles Foster of Charlestown.

*Line Officers.*

Company A, (Mechanic Light Infantry of Salem)—Captain, George H. Peirson; first lieutenant, Edward H. Staten; second lieutenant, Lewis E. Wentworth.

Company B, (Richardson Light Guard of Reading)—Captain, John W. Locke; first lieutenant, Charles H. Shepard; second lieutenant, James D. Draper.

Company C, (Charlestown Artillery)—Captain, William R. Swan of Chelsea; first lieutenant, Phineas H. Tibbetts of Charlestown; second lieutenant, John W. Rose of Boston; third lieutenant, Hannibal D. Norton of Chelsea; fourth lieutenant, George H. Marden, Jr., of Charlestown.

Company D, (Haverhill Light Infantry)—Captain, Carlos P. Messer; first lieutenant, George J. Dean; second lieutenant, Daniel F. Smith; third lieutenant, Charles H. P. Palmer; fourth lieutenant, Thomas F. Salter.

Company E, (Lawrence Light Guard of Medford)—Captain, John Hutchins; first lieutenant, John G. Chambers; second lieutenant, Perry Colman; third lieutenant, William H. Pattee of West Cambridge.

Company F, (Wardwell Tigers)—Captain, David K. Wardwell; first lieutenant, Jacob H. Sleeper of Boston; second lieutenant, George G. Stoddard of Brookline; third lieutenant, Horace P. Williams of Brookline; fourth lieutenant, Horatio N. Holbrook of Boston.

Company G, (Concord Artillery)—Captain, George L. Prescott; first lieutenant, Joseph Derby, Jr.; second lieutenant, Humphrey H. Buttrick; third lieutenant, Charles Bowers.

Company H, (Salem City Guards)—Captain, Henry F. Danforth of Salem; first lieutenant, Kirk Stark; second lieutenant, William F. Sumner; third lieutenant, George H. Wiley; fourth lieutenant, John E. Stone; all of South Danvers.



FIFTH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. A., CAMP WETHERILL, GREENVILLE, N. C. REGIMENT IN COLUMN, COMPANY FRONT.



Company I, (Somerville Light Infantry)—Captain, George O. Brastow; first lieutenant, William E. Robinson; second lieutenant, Frederick R. Kingsley.

Company K, (Charlestown City Guard) — Captain, John T. Boyd; first lieutenant, John B. Norton; second lieutenant, Caleb Drew; third lieutenant, Walter Everett.

Of the ten companies in the regiment, one was taken from the First and four from the Seventh regiment, to make up the complement of the Fifth. The regiment arrived in New York on the evening of the 21st and embarked on the steamers *De Soto* and *Ariel* for Annapolis, arriving there on the morning of the 24th. The next day it started for Washington, four companies going by rail from Annapolis, and the others marching to Annapolis Junction. At Washington, the regiment was quartered in the treasury building, and on May 1 the command was mustered into the United States service. For some time the regiment remained in Washington, and May 25, received marching orders and crossed the Long Bridge into Virginia, going into camp a short distance from Alexandria. The camp was near Shuter's Hill, and was named Camp Andrew in honor of the governor of Massachusetts.

On June 25, Lieutenant-Colonel Green, Major Keyes and Adjutant Barri were transferred to the regular army, and their places were filled by other officers of the regiment. Captain Pierson was promoted to be lieutenant-colonel, Captain Boyd became major, and Lieutenant Chambers, adjutant. The Fifth took no active part in the war until the battle of Bull Run. At that time it was a part of the First Brigade, Third Division, of General McDowell's command. In the brigade with the Fifth were the Eleventh Massachusetts, Fourth Pennsylvania and First Minnesota regiments, and Rickett's Battery I of the First U. S. Artillery. The division was commanded by Colonel Heintzelman, and the brigade by Colonel W. B. Franklin.

On July 16, the brigade broke camp and marched toward Centerville, arriving at Sangster's Station on the Orange and Alexandria R. R. on the 17th. Here it remained until the night of the 20th, when the march was resumed to the battlefield. The battle was well under way when the brigade arrived, and it at once went into action. Rickett's battery was engaged, and for some time kept up a long range fire, supported by the infantry, but was soon ordered to an advanced position, where the enemy's fire was so severe that the six guns had to be abandoned. Several efforts were made to recapture them, but all were unsuccessful, and the Union forces were obliged to retreat in confusion. The Fifth suffered considerable loss, having had nine killed, two wounded, one of whom was Colonel Lawrence, and twenty-two prisoners taken. The prisoners were sent south and were not exchanged until ten months later. The regiment retreated to Centerville and from thence to Washington. Its time of service had expired and it returned to Massachusetts, and on July 29, was mustered out of the United States service.

## AS A NINE MONTHS REGIMENT.

On August 14, 1862, after the call for troops for nine months' service had been made, the Fifth again offered its services to the government, and the offer was accepted. Only five of the old companies came into the new regiment, and companies A, C, E, G, and I were recruited to raise the command to the maximum strength. This, of course, necessitated some change in the roster, and a new colonel, George H. Pierson of Salem, who was captain and afterward lieutenant-colonel in the old organization, was placed in command. The other members of the field and staff were as follows: Lieutenant-Colonel John T. Boyd of Charlestown; major, William E. C. Worcester of Marlboro; adjutant, William T. Eustis, 3d, of Charlestown; quartermaster, George A. Norton of Boston; surgeon, Wm. Ingalls of Winchester; assistant surgeon, Dixie C. Hoyt of Milford; chaplain, William F. Snow of Somerville.

While the regiment was being recruited, it was in camp at Camp Lander, Wenham, and on October 3 orders were received, notifying it to be ready for service in North Carolina, under General Foster. On the 22d the command sailed on the Mississippi for Beaufort, arriving there on the 26th. The next day it landed and took the train for Newbern, where it went into camp, and was attached to the brigade, commanded by Colonel Horace C. Lee. The brigade was made up of the Fifth, Twenty-seventh, and Forty-sixth Massachusetts Regiments, and the Ninth New Jersey, which was exchanged later in the year for the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts, making an entire Massachusetts brigade.

On December 1 the brigade broke camp and joined what was called the "Goldsboro expedition." The Fifth had the left of the line, and acted as guard to the wagon train. On the 14th the battle of Kingston was fought, and the Fifth was split up into small detachments and ordered to guard the roads on the flanks and rear. The next morning the command marched twenty-three miles to Whitehall, where an engagement was fought, and the Fifth had three men wounded.

The brigade camped that night near Goldsboro, and the next day marched to the Neuse river, destroying the bridge, and also the railroad tracks and telegraph wires. During this time Company D was on the skirmish line, and Company H guarded the working parties.

After the work of destruction had been completed, the retreat began, Lee's brigade being the rear guard. When a short distance from the river, the rear guard was attacked by a force of the enemy in close column by division, massed, and composed of at least two regiments.

Morrison's Battery opened at once. Belger's Battery was ordered into position, and the Fifth was ordered to support it. The rebels advanced rapidly, and when within 500 yards, Belger's battery opened fire, checking the advance. A second time they came on, and



when within 300 yards a heavy cross fire from the batteries and infantry caused them to fall back again in disorder, and seek shelter behind a rail fence. From the fence they retreated to the woods, where they attempted to form for a third charge, but the rear guard kept up such a heavy fire that they were obliged to retire. Just before the final repulse of the enemy, a rebel battery opened fire from the woods on the left, the fire being mainly directed against the Fifth. For two hours the regiment stood the fire without flinching, until the battery was silenced. After the engagement, the brigade continued its march to Newbern, reaching there on the 21st, having marched about 180 miles and taken part in three engagements during its absence. In the three engagements the Fifth had eight wounded: three at Whitehall—W. W. Anderson, of Company B; Peter Conlin, of Company D; and William Eldridge, of Company E; and five at Goldsboro, G. W. Burroughs and G. W. Barnes, of Company B; W. A. Hardy and D. O. Williams, of Company D; and H. O. Babcock, of Company I.

In general orders, dated January 15, 1863, the regiments and batteries which accompanied the expedition were directed to inscribe on their banners the names and dates of the three engagements: Kingston, December 14, 1862; Whitehall, December 16, 1862; Goldsboro, December 17, 1862.

During January, 1863, the regiment was ordered to fortify its camp, and in two weeks an earthwork was thrown up, which was called Fort Pierson, in honor of the colonel of the Fifth who had had charge of the work. On February 21, Company H was detailed as a garrison for Forts Hatteras and Clark, at Clark's Inlet, where it remained until the regiment returned home. Company D was at the same time ordered to Plymouth as a garrison, and remained there until the early part of May.

With the exception of a skirmish at Deep Gully, near Newbern on March 14, the regiment remained inactive until April 4, when it went on board transports, as a part of an expedition for the relief of General Foster, who was besieged at Little Washington; but the Confederate intrenchments at Hill's Point were so strong that the force was compelled to return to Newbern, arriving on the 7th. On the 8th the regiment joined an overland expedition bound for the same place under command of General Spinola, but encountered the enemy entrenched beyond Blount's Creek, and, as on the first expedition, the Confederate position was so strong that it was thought best to retire, and the command returned to camp on the 10th. The third attempt to reach Little Washington was successful, and on the 20th the column entered the town, the enemy retiring to Greenville. The Fifth only remained a day in the town, however, and on the 22nd was at Fort Peirson again.

On the 27th, the regiment formed part of another column under

General Palmer, which started for Kinston. The command went to Batchelder's Creek by train, and marched twelve miles further to Core Creek, where the Fifth remained for two days on picket duty. Colonel Pierson was ordered to reconnoitre the enemy's position on Mosely Creek, and while performing this duty, the regiment had a sharp skirmish with the Confederate outposts, whom they drove back.

The next day the command returned to Newbern, and three weeks later, the brigade with three troops of cavalry and three guns, started to capture the works which Colonel Pierson had located on Mosely Creek. The command was divided, and the attack made from the front and rear at the same time. The Confederates, finding themselves in a tight place, fled, leaving 200 prisoners and all their arms and camp equipage. The fortifications were destroyed and the column started to return. On the return march the command was attacked by a strong party of the enemy, but succeeded in beating them off, and reached camp on May 24.

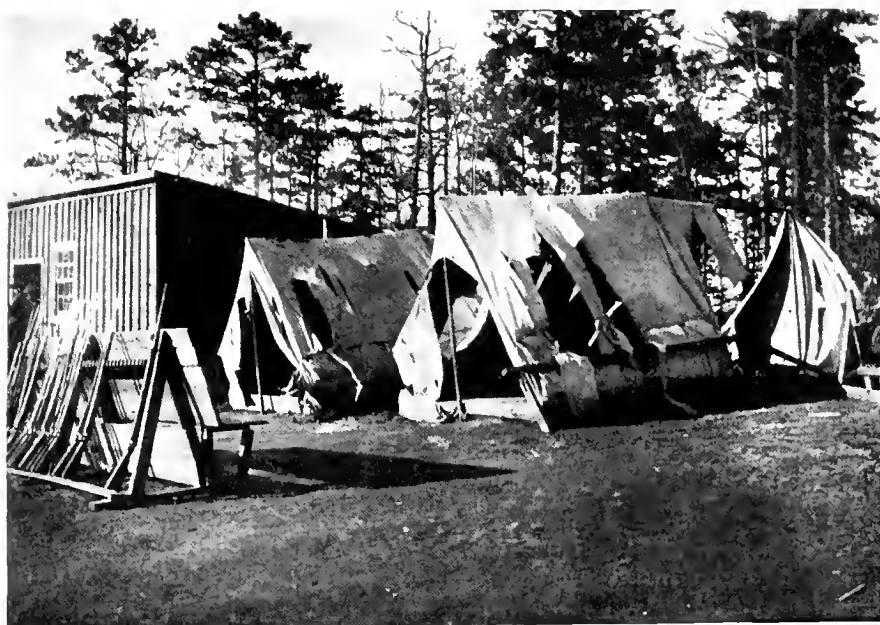
On June 20, orders were received to start for Boston, and on the 22nd, the regiment left camp and took the train to Morehead City, where it embarked on the steamer Guide. The regiment reached Boston late on the 25th, and debarked the next day at Battery wharf, and on July 2 was mustered out at Camp Lander.

#### THE HUNDRED DAYS' CALL.

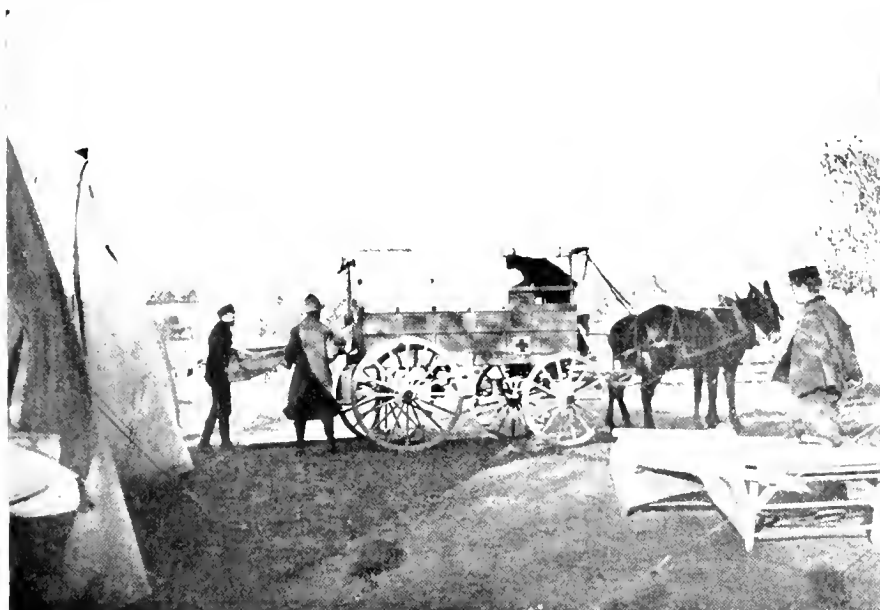
When, in the fall of 1864, the call was issued for men to take the field for 100 days, the Fifth for the third time responded. Many changes had taken place in the regiment, Colonel Pierson being the only officer of the field or staff retaining his rank, and several of the companies were entirely different. The last company of the regiment was mustered in July 28, and it started the same day for Washington, 938 strong.

The first camp was made four miles from Baltimore; but the command was soon ordered to Fort McHenry, which was then commanded by General Morris. Colonel Pierson, with three companies for a garrison, were ordered to Fort Marshall, and Lieutenant-Colonel Worcester was stationed at Federal Hill, in Baltimore. Other companies and detachments did duty at various points, and guarded the polls at the autumn elections when trouble was feared. The regiment returned to Massachusetts early in November, and were mustered out at Readville, November 16, 1864.

The final roster of the field and staff was as follows: Colonel, George H. Pierson; Lieutenant-Colonel, William E. C. Worcester; major, William T. Grammer; adjutant, Edwin F. Wyer; quartermaster, Charles Currier; surgeon, Joshua B. Treadwell; assistant-surgeon, George H. Jones; sergeant-major, William H. Hurd; quartermaster-sergeant, Daniel W. Lawrence; commissary-sergeant, Thomas T. Ferguson; hospital steward, M. Augustus Fuller.



HEADQUARTERS GUARD, CAMP WETHERELL, S. C., AFTER THE FEBRUARY GALE, 1898.



AMBULANCE DUTY, CAMP MEADE, PA.



Company A, Boston:—Captain, George H. Homer; first lieutenant, Charles J. Craibe, Jr.; second lieutenant, Edward P. Jackson.

Company B, Somerville:—Captain, John N. Coffin; first lieutenant, Charles T. Robinson; second lieutenant, Granville W. Daniels.

Company C, —Captain, George F. Barnes; first lieutenant, William L. Thompson; second lieutenant, Benjamin F. Southwick.

Company D, Charlestown:—Captain, George H. Marden Jr.; first lieutenant, Charles P. Whittle; second lieutenant, George W. Kilham.

Company E, Marlboro:—Captain, David L. Brown; first lieutenant, George L. Crosby; second lieutenant, William B. Rice.

Company F, Boston:—Captain, Philip J. Cootey; first lieutenant, William C. Goff; second lieutenant, Walter S. Fowler.

Company G, Woburn:—Captain, Charles S. Converse; first lieutenant, Charles E. Fuller; second lieutenant, Montessor Seeley.

Company H, Charlestown:—Captain, Daniel W. Davis; first lieutenant, William Spaulding; second lieutenant, Andrew J. Bailey.

Company I, —Captain, Andrew W. Powers; first lieutenant, William S. Frost; second lieutenant, Luther H. Farnsworth.

Company K, Stoneham:—Captain, Francis M. Sweetser; first lieutenant, Marshall P. Sweetser; second lieutenant, Moses Downs, Jr.

In May, 1866, the regiments of the state were again re-organized, and the number of men in each company was reduced from 101 to 60. There were many changes in the Fifth, some of the officers resigning or receiving promotion, and their places being filled by new men. Colonel Pierson was promoted to be brigadier-general, and William T. Grammer was chosen colonel in his place. The other officers were as follows: Lieutenant-Colonel, George A. Meacham; major, George H. Marden, Jr.; adjutant, Walter Everett; quartermaster, D. W. Lawrence.

The companies were from the following towns and cities: Company A, Charlestown, Captain George F. Chapin; Company B, Somerville, Captain G. W. Daniels. Company C, Cambridge. Company D, Charlestown. Company E, Medford, Captain Isaac F. R. Hosea. Company F, Medford, Captain Godfrey Ryder, Jr. Company G, Woburn, Captain Cyrus Tay. Company H, Charlestown, Captain D. W. Davis. Company I, Marlboro, Captain A. A. Powers. Company K, Cambridge, Captain C. F. Harrington. Companies C, E, F, and K, which had only been raised for the 100 days service, were disbanded.

From 1866 until 1878, there were several more re-organizations, and finally, in 1878, the sixty companies in the state were formed into six regiments, the Fifth being in the 2nd Brigade. Up to the time of the breaking out of the Spanish-American war, there were several changes in the roster of the command. Colonel Grammer remained in command until 1868, when George A. Meacham was chosen to succeed him. In 1871, Walter Everett became colonel, and in 1875 he was succeeded by Ezra J. Trull. In 1882, William A. Bancroft took command of the regiment and held it for fifteen years. On his promotion in 1897, Jophanus H. Whitney, of Medford, was chosen to succeed him, and had command of the regiment all through the late war.

## IN THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR.

The Fifth Massachusetts regiment went into camp at South Framingham on the second call for troops in the spring of 1898, the different companies assembling in Post Office Square, Boston, on June 30, and leaving the same day for the camp. On July 2 the regiment was mustered into the United States volunteer service by Lieutenant Weaver, who later became the lieutenant-colonel of the Fifth. The regiment remained at the state camp grounds for a little more than two months, most of the time being spent in perfecting it in the various duties required, particularly in extended order drill.

## ROSTER OF THE FIFTH REGIMENT, JUNE, 1898.

*Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Jophanus H. Whitney; Lieutenant-Colonel, William H. Oakes; Majors, Harry P. Ballard, Walter E. Morrison, Murray D. Clement; Adjutant, Elmore E. Locke; Quartermaster, James M. Ramsay; Surgeon, Charles C. Foster; Assistant Surgeon, H. Lincoln Chase; Paymaster, Albert C. Warren; Inspector Rifle Practice, Herbert A. Clark; Chaplain, Elwin Lincoln House.

*Line Officers.*

Company A, Charlestown—Captain, Willis W. Stover; First Lieutenant, William S. Tolman; Second Lieutenant, Rowland W. Bray.

Company B, Cambridge—Captain, Edward E. Mason; First Lieutenant, Charles W. Facey.

Company C, Newton—Captain, Ernest R. Springer; First Lieutenant, Harry B. Inman; Second Lieutenant, Robert W. Dailey.

Company D, Plymouth—Captain, Willard C. Butler; First Lieutenant, Arthur E. Lewis; Second Lieutenant, Edwin A. Dunton.

Company E, Medford—Captain, James C. D. Clark; First Lieutenant, Otto J. C. Neilson; Second Lieutenant, Orville J. Whitney.

Company F, Waltham—Captain, Louis R. Gindrat; First Lieutenant, Clifford E. Hamilton; Second Lieutenant, Charles E. Stearns.

Company G, Woburn—Captain, Linwood E. Hanson; First Lieutenant, Thomas McCarthy; Second Lieutenant, George S. Cutler.

Company H, Charlestown—Captain, Francis Meredith, Jr.; First Lieutenant, Fred McDonald; Second Lieutenant, Henry Y. Gilson.

Company I, Attleboro—Captain, George H. Sykes; First Lieutenant, Charles A. Richardson; Second Lieutenant, Edward P. Coleman.

Company K, Braintree—Captain, Harry L. Kincaide; First Lieutenant, William H. Whitney; Second Lieutenant, Charles F. Spear.

Company L, Malden—Captain, Frank F. Cutting; First Lieutenant, James H. Mann; Second Lieutenant, Clarence A. Perkins.

Company M, Hudson—Captain, James P. Clare; First Lieutenant, Henry B. Whitcomb; Second Lieutenant, Frank Taylor.

When peace was declared, the regiment had its choice as to whether it would remain in the service or not, and an unofficial canvass among the men, showed that seventy per cent of them were willing and even anxious to remain. On August 11, the Fifth Regiment paraded as escort at the funeral of Colonel Bogan, of the Ninth Regiment, and on August 29, the first battalion furnished the escort for the funerals of Majors Grady and O'Connor of the same regiment.

Orders having been received to proceed to Camp Meade, at Middletown, Penn., the regiment broke camp on September 11, and went by rail to that place, arriving on the 12th, and was assigned by

Major-General Graham, who commanded the Second Army Corps, to the second brigade of the second division.

The regimental camp of the Fifth was one of the best at Camp Meade, and the men worked hard to keep it looking well. The spot was a beautiful one, overlooking the Susquehanna river, the ground was high, and there was usually a good breeze from the river. The health of the command at this time was excellent, there being but very few sick in the regiment, and none seriously.

During the early part of the stay of the Fifth at Camp Meade, there was a great deal of talk about the scarcity of food, and Colonel Whitney wrote to the newspapers at home, emphatically denying the statement. Surgeon General Robert A. Blood was sent in October to investigate these charges, and at that date found the following conditions to exist.

"I consulted the officers and men as to the food furnished them. They all agreed that the rations were of good quality and sufficient in quantity, and I heard no complaint from any one that they were not well supplied with food. In fact, the quality of the food, especially the meats, was most excellent, and I saw no reason to criticize, except perhaps the cooking. The cooks were detailed men and not experts; therefore the food was not as palatable as it would have been had it been prepared by thoroughly trained cooks." He added very sensibly, and the advice should be heeded in the regular service as well. "This was the thing that could have been improved upon. I believe this to be one of the principal faults to be found in the training of our Massachusetts militia. Each company should be taught to prepare its own food in a satisfactory manner."

There is little doubt, however, that in the early part of the war, supplies were furnished by contractors, which were inferior in quality, although purchased at prices which would have insured any grocer, first class goods. It is by no means improbable that the complaints made by the men of the Fifth were to some extent justified.

Some of the men, who did not like the way they were being treated, deserted in September, and started for home. They were soon caught and taken back to camp, however, and were made to realize that desertion from the United States service was quite a different thing from remaining away from a militia camp in the state.

The men, as a rule, passed the time at Camp Meade pleasantly enough. The regimental band, which had become quite proficient, gave frequent concerts, and glee clubs were organized in the different companies. The regiment had an enviable reputation at Camp Meade for being one of the neatest and best-appearing commands in camp, and in drill and discipline they were second to none.

On September 29, Lieutenant-Colonel Weaver visited the regiment,

but he was not allowed to remain long, as the government needed his services elsewhere, and he did not join permanently until about December. In common with all regiments, which were at any of the different camps in the South during the summer of 1898, the Fifth heard many rumors about moving. One day the regiment was to be ordered to another camp further South, and the next it was to go to Cuba as a garrison for some town. At Camp Meade it remained, however, for over two months, and camp life became more and more monotonous every day. The men had many ways of enjoying themselves when not doing camp duty. Baseball and football teams were organized, the canal and a creek were handy for swimming, and all kinds of games were started.

On October 27 there was a review of the whole 2nd Corps by General Graham and Governor Hastings of Pennsylvania, and the Fifth again carried off the honors of the day for marching and general appearance, being highly complimented after the review.

About the middle of October, Chaplain House tendered his resignation; but owing to the request of Colonel Whitney, and the strong pressure brought to bear in other quarters, it was not accepted by the War Department, and the chaplain remained with the command. He was one of the most popular officers in the regiment, and every member of it was pleased when it was known that he would not leave.

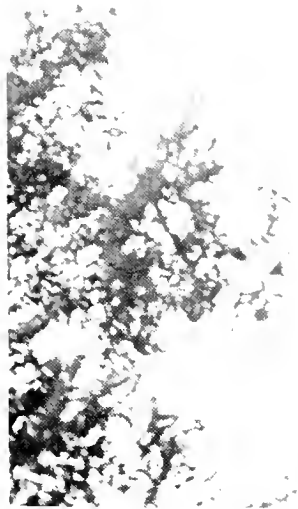
On October 24 death took its first victim from the ranks of the Fifth. Private Emile J. Pickard, of Company D, died at the Women's Hospital in Philadelphia, of typhoid fever, and the death saddened the entire command.

The next day the 3rd Battalion was ordered to leave for Philadelphia, to take part in the jubilee celebration there. The men did excellent work, and the battalion was highly complimented upon its return to camp.

On November 1 twelve commissioned officers and seventy-two non-commissioned officers and privates left Camp Meade for Greenville, S. C., to prepare the new camp for the Fifth; and the time of departure was eagerly awaited by the men, who were by this time heartily sick of Camp Meade. The troops began to leave for the South during the early part of November, and on the 16th the Fifth broke camp and boarded the train for Greenville, arriving there on the night of the 17th. The regiment received a hearty welcome from the citizens and officials of the town, and passed in review before the mayor and city officials on the morning after it arrived.

The regiment then marched out to the camp, which was about two miles from the town, and soon had tents pitched, and everything in good order. The new camp was a very pleasant one, and the warm weather and bright sun, which the men enjoyed for the first few days, made them feel contented again. Considering the large number of rainy days that





GRAND REVIEW, CAMP MEADE, PA., OCTOBER, 1919.



the command had experienced during the latter part of its stay at Camp Meade, the health of the men was wonderfully good, only nine men being in the hospital on the 1st of December.

Later, during the early part of December, the weather was very bad, rain falling almost every day, and the nights were cold and damp. The camp was then a perfect mudhole, the men being obliged to wade through several inches of mud in getting around the camp, and when going into the city. At night roaring fires were kept up, and two or three blankets were necessary for comfort. To make matters worse, rations became insufficient, and finally the men appealed to the officers. A meeting of the officers was held, and an imperative demand for full rations for the command made upon the commissary department. The men were worked hard, building mess houses, digging trenches and banking up the tents, in order to make the camp more comfortable, because, although it was rumored almost every day that the regiment was to go to Cuba, very few of the men believed it, and the majority expected to stay at Greenville until spring.

The residents of Greenville were most hospitable to the soldiers at the camp, and many were the entertainments given for their amusement. Any and all of the officers, and many of the men, were welcome at the homes of the citizens, and there was nothing that the residents would not do for the comfort of the members of the Fifth.

While the command was at Greenville, a good many of the officers and men applied for their discharges, as they thought that the Fifth would not see any active service, and they wished to return to their homes and business. In the majority of cases, these applications were refused, and only when there was very good reason for the discharge, was it granted. On December 20, Major Clement was honorably discharged on the ground of ill-health, as he was not able to perform his duties with the regiment. Several others in the regiment were discharged about the same time, all on account of poor health.

Christmas Day was a holiday all over the camp. A long program of athletic sports had been arranged, and there was a football game between teams from the Fifth Massachusetts and the Fourth Missouri, which resulted in a tie. Many boxes of good things were received from home, and one or two of the companies had Christmas trees in their quarters. At the celebration in the evening, a good deal of excitement was created by the contest for the colors, which were nailed on a pole about fifteen feet high. Eleven companies sent eight men each to contest for the colors, and at a signal from the colonel, the rush commenced. For fifteen minutes the mass of men surged back and forth around the pole, none being able to gain any advantage. As one of the officers said: "It looked like the exercises at the tree at Harvard, only on a smaller scale. Final-

ly, by a concerted movement, the men of Company B carried off the prize, and then there was almost a free fight; the men becoming so excited that the officers were obliged to take a hand, and Colonel Whitney interfered to prevent any of the men getting hurt.

An entertainment was given in the tent of the Christian Army Commission in the evening, all the talent being provided by the men. Several of the companies held banquets, and the band held one of their own at the Mansion House in Greenville. All in all, it was as pleasant and cheerful a Christmas as the men could have spent anywhere, away from home and friends, and every man in the regiment thoroughly enjoyed the day.

New Year's Day found the regiment in excellent health and spirits. There were the same old rumors of orders expected every day for the command to start for some point in Cuba, probably Havana, to form part of the garrison there; but day after day passed and no orders came. The weather during the early part of January was most depressing. Almost every day there was a cold, northeast storm, making drill impossible, so that schools of instruction were held in the tents and mess houses. On January 12 the first battalion under Major Morrison marched to Greenville to do provost duty for ten days, while the other two battalions remained at camp and tried to get satisfaction by expressing their opinions about the weather, the administration, and various other matters which did not suit them; for the men of the Fifth had, by this time, learned one of the privileges of a regular soldier—the right to grumble when things did not suit them, and to find in their grumbling a sensible relief.

On January 18 several promotions were announced in the regiment; Captain Hanson, of Company G, was promoted to be major, and Lieutenant Gow of Medford promoted to be first lieutenant of Company B; Second Lieutenant Spear to be first lieutenant of Company M, and Sergeants Wheeler, Williams and Gustafson received notice of their appointments as second lieutenants.

About the last of January the boys saw the first snow they had seen that winter, and had a glorious time with it while it lasted, which was not very long. A day or two after the snow storm, came the ball of the non-coms of the second battalion, which was a great success; many of the leading society people of Greenville being present. The music was furnished by the band of the regiment, which also gave a concert before the dancing commenced.

Early in February, Lieutenant-Colonel Weaver rejoined the regiment, and the men welcomed him heartily. At this time all drills had been suspended on account of the cold weather, and many of the men were complaining, although the general health of the command was still very good. The surgeons were indefatigable in their efforts to keep the



REGIMENTAL GUARD AND BATH HOUSE, CAMP WETHERELL, S. C.



MULE CORRAL, CAMP WETHERELL, S. C.



boys feeling well, and practice marches of five or six miles were taken every day or two, to provide plenty of exercise for them. On February 12 about five inches of snow fell. The weather was very cold, and the men were obliged to keep moving to keep themselves warm. The night of the 11th was the coldest of the winter, the mercury dropping to four below zero, and large fires were kept up all night. Guard mount and all drills were omitted, and the men huddled around the fires wrapped in their blankets, and wondered who invented the name of "Sunny South" for the country around Greenville. The men on guard suffered the most, and the colonel cut down the number of posts and the hours of duty, so that a man was on guard one hour, and off five hours. This reduced the hardships of guard duty and was much appreciated by the men.

On February 21 the Fifth received the news that all the regular volunteer regiments in the southern camps were to be mustered out of the service, and there was great rejoicing at the tidings. The men were perfectly willing to stay in the service, if the government would send them to Cuba or Porto Rico; but the long siege of camp life had become wearisome, and if there was no foreign service to be performed, they wanted to go to their homes. A few days later the muster-out blanks were received, and orders were issued that no furloughs or leaves of absence would be granted.

The health of the command was rapidly growing worse, and it was found necessary to open an annex to the regimental hospital to properly accommodate the sick men. The weather was warmer, but it seemed that the warmth only brought to the surface the effects of the suffering and exposure during the stormy season. The surgeons were kept very busy attending to the increasing number reporting at sick call, and the nurses and hospital stewards worked day and night for the comfort of the men.

Early in March the regiment learned that the muster-out would take place on March 31. The epidemic of sickness seemed to have passed, and all the men in the hospitals were improving rapidly. In spite of all that could be done, ten men had died in as many days. Then, as if the regiment had not suffered enough, measles broke out in the camp, and for several days the surgeons were much disturbed for fear that there would be an epidemic. Colonel Whitney was quite ill with fever, and his condition was such that it was thought best to remove him from the camp to some place where he could have better care. The camp of the Fifth was practically in quarantine on account of the measles, although no orders were issued to that effect. The Christian commission tent was closed; no visitors were allowed in the camp; and the regiment was split up, the 3rd Battalion being moved to the old camp-ground of the Fourth Missouri, to prevent the spread of the disease. This state of affairs lasted

only a few days, however, as the progress of the disease was soon checked, and the quarantine was removed.

During the latter part of March the men were busy packing up, preparatory to their return home. The work of mustering out was practically completed, so far as the officers and clerks were concerned, and the regiment was only waiting for the rolls to be returned by the paymasters.

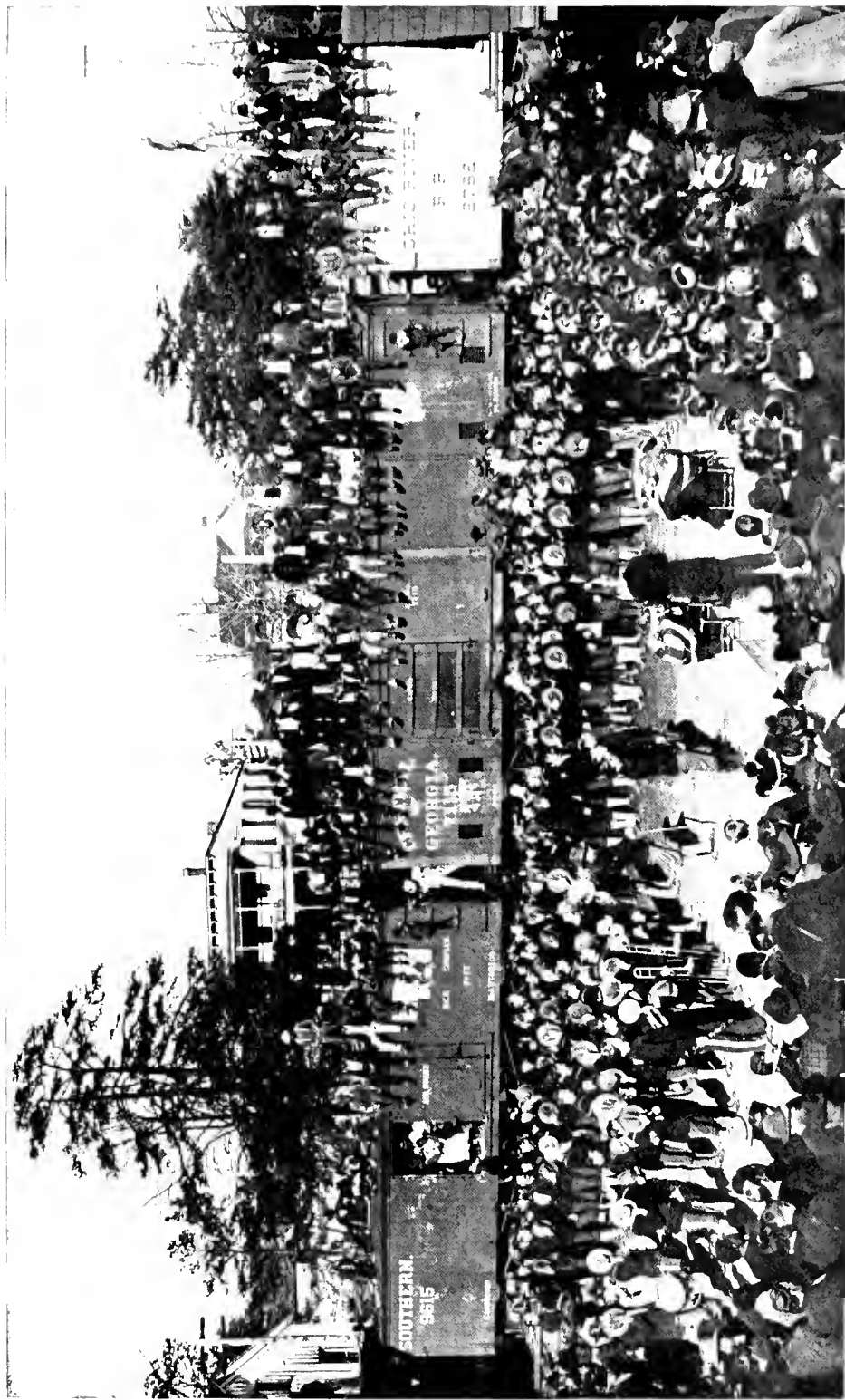
On March 27, the last dress parade of the regiment was held, and the men, knowing it to be their last appearance as United States volunteers, did their best, so that the parade and exercises were excellent. The rifles were turned over to the government, and orders were issued that no more drills of any kind would be held. The quartermaster turned over his supplies, and the final statements of the officers were handed in to the mustering officer, Captain Beckurts. The tents were all turned in, the men sleeping in the mess houses, and all useless impedimenta was burnt in the company streets.

Early on the morning of the 31st, the work of mustering out and paying off was begun, and by noon every man had received his money and his discharge. The citizens of the town were very sorry to have the regiment leave, as it had gained a warm place in their hearts by the good behavior and gentlemanly conduct of the men. On the morning of the muster-out, the Greenville Daily News printed a highly complimentary editorial on the regiment, saying that it was a credit to the state from which it came, and expressing the regret which the people of the town felt at its departure.

Although the men were not subject to orders from their officers after the muster-out, it was decided that the entire command should return to Massachusetts as a regiment. The trains which were to take the men north, left Greenville about three o'clock on the afternoon of the 31st, and the next morning arrived at Danville, Virginia. Washington was reached the same evening, and the men remained there until midnight. They arrived in New York the next morning, and left that evening on the steamer for Fall River. The trains left Fall River early on the morning of April 3, arriving in Boston shortly after 9 o'clock.

At the South Station, the regiment fell into line, and started on its march across the city. An immense crowd was in waiting at the station, and the men were wildly cheered as they appeared. Dewey Square was black with people. They crowded the entire space between the buildings, crowded in the windows and stood on top of the cabs and hacks which were in the square. One feature of the reception given to the regiment, was the offer of the British Guards Band—playing in Boston at the time—to meet the regiment at the station and escort it on its march across the city. Frequently along the line of march, delegations from the towns





FIFTH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. A., CAMP WETHERELL, GREENVILLE, S. C. FUNERAL SERVICES, CHAPLAIN ELWIN T. ROUSE, OFFICIATING



from which the companies came, fell in behind the boys and marched over the route with them. Governor Wolcott was waiting for the command in front of the State House, and the regiment halted there while the colors were delivered, and the Governor congratulated the men on their return. Then the regiment marched to the Common to break ranks.

During the campaign of the Fifth, it lost thirteen men by death from various causes, as follows:—

Emile C. Pickard, of Plymouth, private, Company D, October 24, 1898.  
Edward Billingsly, of Woburn, private, Company G, November 10, 1898.  
N. A. Kiley, of West Medford, wagoner, Company E, December 9, 1898.  
W. A. Smith, of Medford, corporal, Company A, February 4, 1899.  
John Denning, of Newtonville, private, Company C, February 25, 1899.  
John D. Penderghast, of Nonantum, private, Company C, February 25, 1899.  
Thomas Burnett, of Newton Lower Falls, private, Company C, Feb. 26, 1899.  
Charles H. Roberts, of Jefferson, N. H., private, Company H, Feb. 27, 1899.  
John A. Chisholm, of Revere, private, Company A, February 28, 1899.  
Leslie F. Hunting, of Lowell, hospital steward, March 6, 1899.  
Horace Tinkham, private, Company D, March 7, 1899.  
Michael Murphy, of Charlestown, private, Company C, March 18, 1899.  
Charles Homer, of Plymouth, private, Company D, March 22, 1899.

When the Fifth left the state in September, 1898, it had 1327 officers and men. With deaths, discharges and sick leaves, the command numbered 1083 men and 46 officers when it was mustered out, and about 1000 returned to Boston with the regiment. It was in the service 271 days. Two of the deaths occurred at Camp Meade, and the others during the siege of bad weather which the command underwent at Greenville. The following are the important dates in the service of the regiment:

June 30, 1898. Arrived at Camp Dalton, South Framingham.

July 2. Mustered into the United States service.

September 11. Left Camp Dalton for Camp Meade.

October 28. Furnished detail at Peace Jubilee parade in Philadelphia.

November 16. Left Camp Meade for Greenville, S. C.

November 17. Arrived at Greenville.

March 1, 1899. Order issued for muster-out.

March 31. Regiment mustered out of United States service.

April 3. Regiment arrived in Boston.

#### ROSTER OF OFFICERS, FIFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEERS.

June 30, 1898, to March 31, 1899.

Colonel, Jophanus H. Whitney, Medford; lieutenant-colonel, Erasmus M. Weaver, U.S.A.; majors: Walter E. Morrison, Braintree; Murray B. Clement, Waltham; (resigned Nov. 29, 1898) Linwood E. Hanson, Woburn, (from Jan. 7, 1899); adjutants, rank first lieutenant, Hugh Bancroft, Cambridge, (resigned Aug. 26, 1898); Fred T. Austin, Boston, (from Sept. 25, 1898); quartermasters, rank first lieutenant: Herbert A. Clark, Attleborough, (resigned Sept. 8, 1898); Charles B. Cabot, Cambridgeport, (from Sept. 22, 1898, assigned to Co. D as first lieutenant, Oct. 18, 1898); George P. Buechner, Worcester, (from Oct. 14, 1898); Surgeons, rank of major: Charles C. Foster, Cambridge, (resigned Oct. 3, 1898); Frederic W. Pearl, Boston, (from Oct. 6, 1898); assistant surgeons, rank of lieutenant: Frank E. Bateman, Charlestown, (resigned Sept.

23, 1898); Frederic W. Pearl, Boston, (promoted major and surgeon, Oct. 6, 1898); Wm. E. McPherson, Charlestown, (from Oct. 6, 1898); Charles N. Barney, Boston, from Oct. 14, 1898); Chaplain, Elwin L. House, Attleborough.

*Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Willis W. Stover, Charlestown; first lieutenants, William S. Tolman, Charlestown, (resigned Jan. 24, 1899); Rowland W. Bray, Charlestown; second lieutenants: Rowland W. Bray, (promoted first lieutenant, March 2, 1899); Maurice A. Colbert, South Braintree, (from March 3, 1899).

Company B—Captain, Charles W. Facey, Cambridge; first lieutenant, Fred T. Austin, Boston, (appointed adjutant, Sept. 25, 1898); Charles R. Gow, Medford, (from January 7, 1899); second lieutenant, Patrick J. McNamara, Cambridge.

Company C—Captain, Ernest R. Springer, Newton; first lieutenant, Robert W. Daley, Newton; second lieutenant, Lester Leland, Malden, (resigned Aug. 20, 1898); Sheldon L. Howard, Taunton, (Sept. 22, 1898).

Company D—Captain, Willard C. Butler, Plymouth; first lieutenant, Arthur E. Lewis, Plymouth, (resigned Sept. 12, 1898); Charles B. Cabot, Cambridgeport, (from Oct. 8, 1898); second lieutenant, Edwin A. Dunton, Plymouth, (resigned January 25, 1898); Garrett E. Barry, Medford, (from March 3, 1899).

Company E—Captain, James C. D. Clark, Medford; first lieutenant, Otto J. C. Neilson, Medford, (promoted captain Co. K, Oct. 16, 1898); Orville J. Whitney, Medford, (from Oct. 14, 1898); second lieutenant, Orville J. Whitney, (promoted); Eldridge L. Sweetser, Everett, (from Oct. 14, 1898).

Company F—Captain, Louis R. Gindrat, Waltham; first lieutenant, Clifford E. Hamilton, Waltham; second lieutenant, Charles E. Stearns, Waltham, (resigned Oct. 12, 1898); Joseph H. Williams, Attleborough, (from Jan. 7, 1899.)

Company G—Captain, Linwood E. Hanson, Woburn, (promoted major Jan. 7, 1899); Thomas McCarthy, Stoneham, (from March 3, 1899); first lieutenant, Thomas McCarthy, (promoted); Homer B. Grant, Woburn, (from March 3, 1899); second lieutenant, Homer B. Grant, (promoted); Charles H. Robbins, Plymouth, (from March 3, 1899).

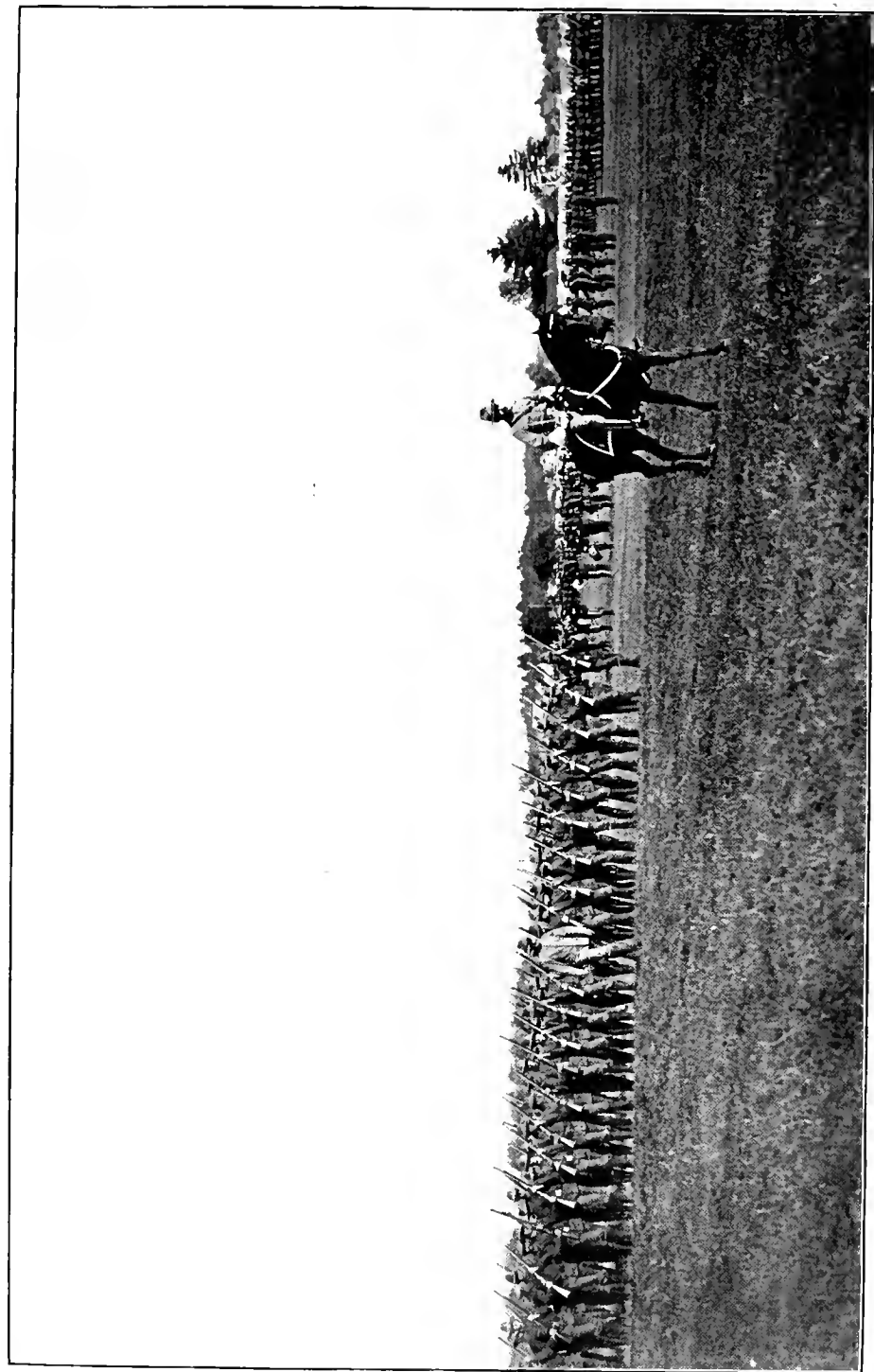
Company H—Captain, Fred McDonald, Charlestown; first lieutenant, Henry Y. Gilson, Somerville; second lieutenant, Charles R. Gow, Medford, (July 9-25, 1898); Francis S. Parker, Boston, (resigned August 20, 1898); George P. Buechner, (appointed quartermaster, Oct. 18, 1898); Charles J. Kindler, Cambridge, (from Oct. 14, 1898).

Company I, Attleborough:—Captain, George H. Sykes, Attleborough; first lieutenant, Charles A. Richardson, Attleborough; second lieutenant, Edward P. Coleman, Taunton.

Company K—Captain, Henry L. Kincaide, Quincy, (resigned Sept. 9, 1898); Otto J. C. Neilson, (from Oct. 14, 1898); first lieutenant, William H. Whitney, Quincy; second lieutenant, Charles F. Spear, (promoted first lieutenant); Adolphus G. Gustafson, Cambridge; (from January 7, 1899).

Company L—Captain, Frank F. Cutting, Malden; first lieutenant, James H. Mann, Malden; second lieutenant, Clarence A. Perkins, Malden.

Company M—Captain, James P. Clare, Hudson; first lieutenants, Morland Carter, Brookline; Charles F. Spear, Weymouth, (from January 7, 1899); second lieutenant, Charles R. Gow, Medford, (July 25, 1898, to Jan. 7, 1899); Benjamin Wheeler, Attleborough, (from January 7, 1899).



*Photo by Marr.*

THE EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, M. V. M., 1900. REVIEW SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., SOUTH FRAMINGHAM.



## CHAPTER III.

### EIGHTH REGIMENT OF INFANTRY, M. V. M.

By Major-General Benjamin F. Peach (retired), and Major-General A. Hun Berry.

**B**Y General Orders, No. 4, dated February 26, 1855, the companies of the Militia of the Commonwealth which had been known as artillery, infantry and light infantry, were re-organized as infantry, and the following companies were assigned as the Eighth Regiment, 4th Brigade and 2d Division, M. V. M.

Company A, Newburyport, organized 1775; Company B, Marblehead, organized 1825; Company C, Marblehead, organized 1809; Company D, Lynn, organized 1852; Company E, Beverly, organized 1814; Company F, Lynn, organized 1852; Company G, Gloucester, organized 1852; Company H, Marblehead, organized 1852.

#### *Regimental Roster, Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Frederick J. Coffin, Newburyport; lieutenant-colonel, Roland G. Usher, Lynn; major, John F. Brown, Marblehead; adjutant, Nehemiah Flanders, Newburyport; quartermaster, Samuel T. Payson, Newburyport; surgeon, John Renton, Lynn; surgeon's mate, William F. Buckley, Lynn; Paymaster, Francis Foster, Lynn.

#### *Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, John E. Remick; first lieutenant, John G. Johnson; second lieutenant, Daniel C. Bachelder; third lieutenant, Albert W. Bartlett; fourth lieutenant, George H. Lyford, all of Newburyport.

Company B—Captain, Simon A. Stone, Marblehead; first lieutenant, Thomas Brown, Jr., Danvers; second lieutenant, Daniel L. Preston, Danvers; third lieutenant, Franklin Knight, and fourth lieutenant, George R. Church, of Marblehead.

Company C—Captain, Knott V. Martin; first lieutenant, Richard Bessom; second lieutenant, Lewis R. Cruff; third lieutenant, Benjamin G. Doliber; fourth lieutenant, John Stevens, 2d, all of Marblehead.

Company D—Captain, Timothy Monroe; first lieutenant, William A. Fraser; second lieutenant, George Winn; third lieutenant, Jaazaniah C. Pierce; fourth lieutenant, Elliot C. Pierce, all of Lynn.

Company E—Captain, Israel W. Wallis; first lieutenant, Joseph T. Haskell; second lieutenant, Francis E. Porter; third lieutenant, John W. Raymond; fourth lieutenant, George H. Hildreth, all of Beverly.

Company F—Captain, Thomas Herbert; first lieutenant, Peter F. Cox; second lieutenant, A. Augustus Oliver; third lieutenant, William G. Brown; fourth lieutenant, Joseph F. Hay, all of Lynn.

Company G—Captain, Jeremiah R. Cook; first lieutenant, Andrew Elwell; second lieutenant, Charles Gardner; third lieutenant, Charles Swift; fourth lieutenant, Robert R. Fears, all of Gloucester.

Company H—Captain, John M. Anderson; first lieutenant, Francis Boardman; second lieutenant, John I. Center; third lieutenant, Henry M. Osborne; fourth lieutenant, George W. Homans, all of Marblehead.

The rank and file of each company consisted of one first sergeant, four sergeants, four corporals, four musicians and sixty-four privates.

which organization continued without much change until 1861. Officers and men provided their own uniforms, and each company was allowed its choice as to the color and style, with the result that no two companies in the regiment were uniformed alike.

An act of the legislature passed May 27, 1858, provided, that companies found upon inspection to be below a proper standard of efficiency should be disbanded, and thirty-eight companies were found below such standard. Every company of the Eighth successfully passed the ordeal;—it was the only regiment in the state that did not lose a company.

The regular tours of duty at this time were performed in six days, distributed through the year as follows: On the last Wednesday in May the companies were required to assemble in their armories for inspection. Three days in autumn the troops went into camp and performed the duties incident to camp life. Between May inspection and the fall encampment, two days were set apart for the instruction of commissioned and non-commissioned officers, and known as "elementary drills."

These tours of duty were always creditably performed by the regiment and were well attended. It is especially noted in the adjutant-general's reports, that at the fall encampments of 1855-56-57-58, the Eighth paraded with a larger number of men than any other organization.

When the attack upon Fort Sumter precipitated the great conflict so long impending; and on April 15, 1861, Governor Andrew received from President Lincoln a requisition for twenty companies of infantry for the protection of the Capital; he immediately issued orders for four regiments to assemble at Boston the next day.

All the latent patriotism at once burst forth, and the promulgation of the order for troops, which was generally transmitted, by messengers, caused the most intense excitement among the people. There was a great emulation among the Volunteer Militia and their friends to respond promptly and efficiently to the requisition, and the historic remark of Captain Knott V. Martin of Company C, Marblehead, inviting the pig which he had just killed to cut itself up and deposit itself in the brine, as he was going to war; together with the telegram of Captain Hudson of Company F, of Lynn: "We have more men than uniforms, what shall we do?" give some idea of the excitement and enthusiasm under which all labored.

April 16, opened with a violent storm of sleet and snow, yet the companies of the Eighth rallied with great promptness, and reported at Faneuil Hall, Boston, in the following order:

Company C, of Marblehead, Captain Knott V. Martin; Company H, of Marblehead, Captain Francis Boardman; Company B, of Marblehead, Captain Richard Phillips; Company D, of Lynn, Captain George T. Newhall; Company F, of Lynn, Captain James Hudson, Jr.; Company A, of Newburyport, Captain Albert W.



Bartlett; Company E, of Beverly, Captain, Francis E. Porter, and Company G, of Gloucester, Captain Addison Center.

Company C, of Marblehead was the first company, not only of the regiment, but of the entire state militia, to report for duty under the orders. The regiment expected to leave Boston the same day, but Colonel Coffin had sometime previously resigned, although his discharge had not yet been received by him, and an election on the 17th resulted in the election of Captain Timothy Munroe of Company D, as colonel.

The wise forethought of Governor Andrew had induced the Legislature to provide overcoats, and they were scarcely ready when urgently needed. Their issue caused additional delay, but on the 18th the men were furnished with overcoats, and partially with knapsacks and haversacks; Governor Andrew, with an impressive speech, presented the regimental colors, and the regiment the same day left for Washington.

To complete the organization of the regiment ten companies were required by the regular United States Army standard, and Company A, Seventh Regiment of Infantry, of Salem, Captain Arthur F. Devereux, organized in 1805, and Company A, First Battalion of Infantry, Pittsfield, Captain Henry S. Briggs, organized in 1860, were assigned, and designated as Companies J and K, respectively. The latter company joined the regiment at Springfield, on the way to Washington.



MAJOR-GENERAL BENJAMIN F. PEACH.

The completed regimental organization was officered as follows:

*Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Timothy Monroe, Lynn; lieutenant-colonel, Edward W. Hinks, Lynn; major, Andrew Elwell, Gloucester; adjutant, George Creasey, Newburyport; quartermaster, Ephraim A. Ingalls, Lynn; paymaster, Roland G. Usher, Lynn; surgeon, Bowman B. Breed, Lynn; assistant-surgeon, Warren Tapley, Lynn; chaplain, Gilbert Haven, Jr., Malden.

*Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Albert W. Bartlett, Newburyport; first lieutenant, George Barker; second lieutenant, Gamaliel Hodges; third lieutenant, Nathan W. Collins; fourth lieutenant, Edward L. Noyes, all of Newburyport.

Company B—Captain, Richard Phillips; first lieutenant, Abiel S. Roads; second lieutenant, William S. Roads; third lieutenant, William Cash, all of Marblehead.

Company C—Captain Knott V. Martin; first lieutenant, Samuel C. Graves;

second lieutenant, Lorenzo F. Linnell; third lieutenant, John H. Haskell, all of Marblehead.

Company D—Captain, George T. Newhall; first lieutenant, Thomas H. Berry; second lieutenant, Elbridge Z. Saunderson; fourth lieutenant, Charles M. Merritt, all of Lynn.

Company E—Captain, Francis E. Porter; first lieutenant, John W. Raymond; second lieutenant, Eleazer Giles; third lieutenant, Albert Wallis; fourth lieutenant, Moses S. Herrick, all of Beverly.

Company F—Captain, James Hudson, Jr.; first lieutenant, Edward A. Chandler; second lieutenant, Henry Stone; third lieutenant, Matthias N. Snow, all of Lynn.

Company G—Captain, Addison Center; first lieutenant, David W. Low; second lieutenant, Edward A. Story; third lieutenant, Harry Clark, all of Gloucester.

Company H—Captain, Francis Boardman; first lieutenant, Thomas Russell; second lieutenant, Nicholas Bowden; third lieutenant, Joseph S. Caswell, all of Marblehead.

Company J—Captain, Arthur F. Devereux; first lieutenant, George F. Austin, second lieutenant, Nathan A. P. Brewster; third lieutenant, George D. Putnam, all of Salem.

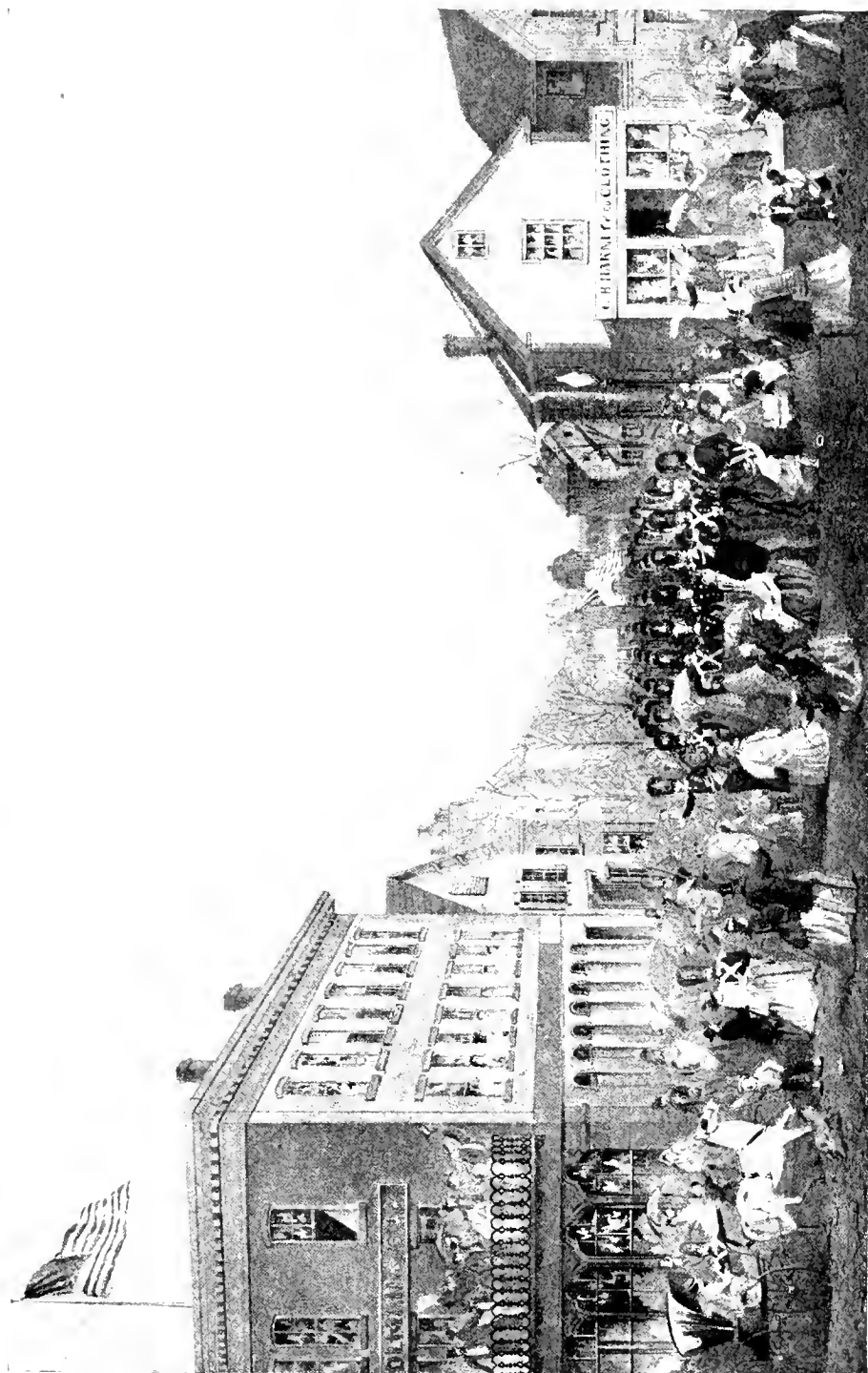
Company K—Captain, Henry S. Briggs; first lieutenant, Henry H. Richardson; second lieutenant, Robert Bache, all of Pittsfield.

From the arrival of the companies in Boston to their departure from Philadelphia, the excitement and enthusiasm of the people along the entire route was intense. At the depot in Boston, thousands of people congregated to see them off, crowding every avenue to its approach. At Worcester, a great multitude assembled to welcome the regiment, and to encourage with their cheers and shouts the officers and men in the performance of this patriotic duty. At Springfield they received a grand ovation. Fully five thousand people had assembled, including military and fire companies. Although it was quite late in the evening when the train arrived, the regiment was ushered into the city amid the ringing of bells, the blazing of bonfires, firing of cannon and the inspiring music of bands.

New York was reached at 6 a. m., and after breakfast at the Astor and the La Farge House, the Eighth, attended by immense throngs, proceeded to Jersey City, where A. W. Griswold, Esq., a former resident of Boston, presented it with a magnificent silk American flag mounted on a massive hickory staff. The passage through New Jersey was but a repetition of what had been witnessed since leaving home; but on arriving at Philadelphia on the evening of April 19, the news that the Sixth Massachusetts had been attacked in Baltimore, and compelled to fight its way through the city, gave new energy and enthusiasm to the men, and made them more eager to reach their destination.

The reception of the troops here was more exciting than any they had yet experienced. The crowds were so dense that the regiment could scarcely march through the broad streets. Supper was furnished at the Continental Hotel, and quarters at the Girard House; and active preparations were made for pushing on to Baltimore.

A corps of sappers and miners was organized under Lieutenant



DEPARTURE OF THE LYNN LIGHT INFANTRY (COMPANY D, EIGHTH REGIMENT, M. V. M.) FOR THE DEFENCE OF WASHINGTON, APRIL 16, 1861.



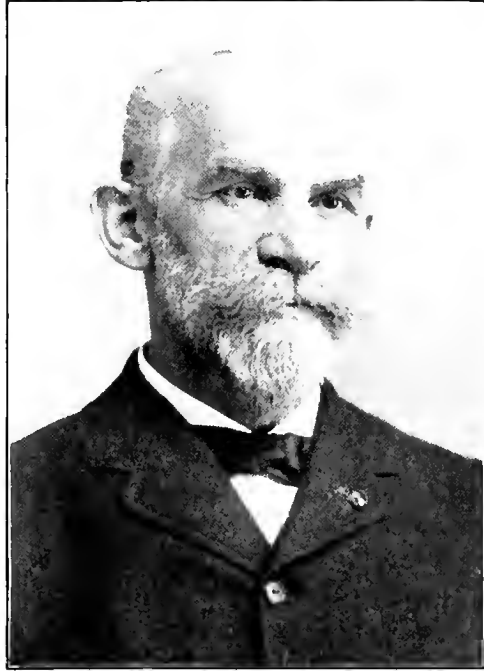
Thomas H. Berry, of Company D, and the detail for this duty was as follows: William H. Berry, O. H. Clement, J. Foye, E. O. Hixon, Alonzo W. Bartlett, D. Lambert, A. D. Remick, F. M. Smith, L. Tuttle, and Henry Williams, of Company D, of Lynn; P. A. Babson, George C. Carleton, William F. Carleton, Edward Cookson, C. A. Hall, J. Hinsch, M. M. Jennison, J. W. Johnson, C. S. Littlefield, J. W. Lovejoy, J. P. Ober, C. H. Orr, C. S. Stevens, F. Stokes, Henry Walker, J. W. Witham, and Harry Clark, of Company G, of Gloucester; Charles Davenport, George Campbell, C. O. Harridan, M. Kimball, J. E. Ellis, M. Luscomb, J. W. Murray, and Alexander Norris, of Company F, of Lynn; and B. F. Herrick, of Company E, of Beverly.

They were picked men, and supplied with axes, picks, crowbars, shovels, etc., for the purpose of removing barricades or other obstructions in the streets.

It was supposed that the Seventh Regiment of New York, which had arrived during the night, would accompany the Eighth Massachusetts, in an attempt to get through Baltimore, but its colonel declined. At first the Eighth proposed to try it alone; but at the earnest solicitation of Samuel M. Felton, Esquire, president of the Philadelphia and Baltimore Railway, the project was abandoned, and it was decided to proceed to Washington via Annapolis.

About noon, the regiment took the cars, as was supposed, for Baltimore, but when a short distance from Perryville it disembarked. Companies J and K, with the sappers and miners, under Lieutenant Berry, took the advance supported by the regiment. All had been supplied with ten rounds of ammunition, expecting to meet with resistance in taking possession of the Maryland, a large ferry-boat used to convey railroad trains across the Susquehanna river, and it was reported that 1,600 men from Baltimore were ready to dispute the passage of the regiment, as they had that of a brigade of Pennsylvania troops under General Small the day before.

At Perryville, a large crowd had assembled, but without firing a shot, the Eighth seized the Maryland and started down the river, arriving off Annapolis before daybreak Sunday, April 21st.



MAJOR-GENERAL A. HUN BERRY.

The sappers and miners, with other details from the regiment, were ordered on board the frigate *Constitution*, the most famous ship in the navy, then serving as a school-ship, and lying at anchor near the Naval Academy. They remained on board, and, as many were sailors, assisted in getting the ship ready for sea, while Companies J and K were detailed to protect the ship from attack; for it was hourly expected that an attempt would be made to capture her. April 22, Company K was released from duty on the *Constitution*, but Company J remained with her until she reached New York, and with the sappers and miners rejoined the regiment at Washington in May.

Captain Blake, her commander, not having a sufficient crew to work or defend the *Constitution*, had made preparations to blow her up, if unable to prevent her falling into the hands of the enemy. A sailor was stationed at the magazine, which contained sixty thousand pounds of powder, with a slow match, ready to apply it at a moment's notice. The arrival of the Eighth at Annapolis, without doubt saved the *Constitution* from capture or destruction.

While endeavoring to leave the harbor, both the *Constitution* and the Maryland got aground. Cars were run overboard from the Maryland, and heavy guns were transferred to her from the *Constitution*; but the Eighth did not land until Tuesday morning, and then in spite of the pathetic and threatening protests of Governor Hicks and the mayor of Annapolis.

Neither vessel floated until Tuesday morning, when the S. S. *Boston*, which had brought the New York Seventh from Philadelphia, towed the *Constitution* into the stream. After spending two days in bending sails and making ready for sea, "Old Ironsides" sailed for New York, where she arrived April 28.

Upon leaving the ship at New York, the following letter was given to Lieutenant Berry, commanding the sappers and miners:

U. S. Frigate *Constitution*.

Brooklyn Navy Yard, May 1, 1861.

Captain Berry, Commander.

Dear Sir: I perceive by a letter, which appears in the New York Herald of this date, speaking of the services rendered this ship in her late passage from Annapolis to New York by Massachusetts Volunteers, that your company and that of the Allen Guard are quite ignored. As the executive officer of the ship, I am unwilling that such injustice should be done those, who, perhaps from the nature of their previous calling, were able to render the most efficient service.

The officers commanding the gun divisions spoke with great praise of the willingness and efficiency of your men, and I have occasion myself to notice them aloft in reefing, etc., etc. Indeed, any distinction made between the different companies which were asked for by the navy authorities at Annapolis, would be invidious in the extreme.

With much respect,

I am your Obedt. Servt.

(Signed) J. H. UPSHUR, Lieutenant U. S. Navy.

The grounding of the *Maryland* was then attributed to the treachery of the engineers or pilots, but probably it was accidental. To guard against further possible treachery, men were detailed from the Eighth to assist and watch the engineers of the boat, and a call for engineers resulted in twenty reporting for this duty, from whom those needed were selected. Later, it was clearly demonstrated that when anything was needed in the way of skill or handicraft, it was only necessary to make known what was wanted and scores would respond, as there were men of all trades and professions in the regiment.

On Monday, April 22, Company K, Captain Briggs, was sent on a tug to reinforce the small garrison of Fort McHenry, Baltimore Harbor, as fears of an attack were entertained. When within a few miles of the fort, they were informed that a small government steamer had been seized by the Secessionists in the neighborhood. They proceeded, and finding the U. S. S. *Alleghany* at her moorings, without a sufficient crew to prevent capture, took possession, placed her under the guns of Fort McHenry, and remained at the fort until May 16, when they rejoined the regiment.

Immediately after the landing at Annapolis, Companies C, Captain Martin and D, Captain Newhall, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Hinks, were ordered forward to seize the station and rolling stock of the Annapolis & Elk Ridge Railroad, which was effected with some opposition, but without much trouble. An inventory of the property seized was at once made, and forwarded to General Butler. The only locomotive at the station was found to be disabled, and details were immediately made to repair it. One of the men detailed—Charles Homans, of Company E—discovered that he had assisted in building it. He had but little difficulty in putting the engine in running order before night, and was installed as engineer, with a guard to protect him and his engine.

Company C advanced on the railroad several miles and found the track torn up in several places; falling back at dark to a corn-field within about a mile of the station, where they remained all night, resuming the advance the next day. The situation, both here and at the railroad station at Annapolis during the night, was most exciting, and little sleep could be had at either place. Although no attack was made, occasional reports of guns were heard, which kept the troops constantly on the alert. In the afternoon or early evening, the garrison at the station was reinforced by a detail under command of Lieutenant Low, of Company G.

Next morning, Wednesday, April 24, the regiment left Annapolis for the "Junction." Their progress was slow, and delayed by halts to repair and relay the track, which had been torn up, and to rebuild bridges, destroyed to prevent the passage of the troops. This was accomplished with much difficulty, for while there were men in the regiment who understood the work, rails had been carried away or secreted to make the work

of destruction complete. One rail, an odd length, had been thrown into a creek, and Private Frank Pierce, of Company C, who found it by diving, made a rope fast to it, by which it was recovered.

All this labor was performed on the 24th, on an intensely hot day, with nothing to eat from early morning until nearly dark, when the Seventh New York Regiment kindly shared what little they had in the way of eatables with their less fortunate brothers of the Eighth Massachusetts.

Meanwhile the anxiety in Washington was intense; the necessity for troops was great, as an attack was momentarily expected. Communication with the North was cut off, and while the Eighth was expected via Annapolis, the cause of the delay was not known.

The troops pushed on during the night, and reached the never-to-be-forgotten "Annapolis Junction" at dawn of the 25th. Here the men dropped down to sleep as if they had been shot, awaking to find themselves suffering terribly with hunger, but without food. But few people inhabited this rough region, and these had fled at the approach of the troops, and sufficient food for only a small portion of the command could be obtained.

At Annapolis most of the people were in sympathy with the South, and the few Union men there were overawed and dejected. A complete reign of terror dominated the little city. Many of the citizens had fled, and those who remained, even when loyal, locked up their sympathies as well as their stores, and refused to give or sell anything; although at best there could not have been much of a supply in the place. It seems almost incredible that such difficulties could be encountered within twenty miles of the capital of the nation.

About noon, Friday, April 26, the Eighth reached Washington, and after passing in review before President Lincoln, proceeded to their quarters in the rotunda and House of Representatives at the Capitol.

We quote from the "National Intelligencer" of the next day: "We doubt whether any other single regiment in the country could furnish such a ready contingent to reconstruct a steam engine, lay a rail-track and bend the sails of a man-of-war."

Before leaving Philadelphia, what was considered a sufficient supply of food to last until the regiment should arrive at Washington was taken. Three days, however, elapsed before it landed at Annapolis, and nearly four days more before it reached Washington, eight days after leaving Boston. Even after arriving at Washington the commissary department was found to be inefficient, and the men were on short allowance for a number of days.

The supply of food was finally made ample, but not until the New York Seventh Regiment—then quartered in another part of the building



—had again shown their generosity by providing a bounteous repast at their private expense—which act of unexpected hospitality was appropriately acknowledged by the Eighth.

On April 27, the attention of President Lincoln was called to the condition of the uniforms of the regiment, which the rough usage of the few days past had rendered unfit for further service, with the request that the men be supplied with fatigue uniforms similar to those worn by the regular army.

Answer was immediately received as follows:

Executive Mansion, April 27, 1861.

Colonel Timothy Munroe, commanding Eighth Regiment, M. V. M.

Sir: Yours of this day in regard to fatigue dress for your command has been received and sent to the war department with the expression of my wish that your request be complied with.

Allow me now to express to you, and through you to the officers and men under your command, my sincere thanks for your zeal, energy, and gallantry, and especially for the great efficiency in opening up the communication between the North and this city, displayed by you and them.

Yours truly,

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

The uniforms, which consisted of blue blouses, trousers and forage caps, were issued to the men within a few days.

On Tuesday, May 14, the Eighth was ordered to the Relay House, about nine miles from Baltimore. Here the B. & O. R. R., then the only direct northern communication with Washington branches, passed over a massive stone viaduct, the destruction of which, in the absence of a vigilant guard, might easily have been accomplished, and have proved a serious inconvenience to the government. While the regiment remained here, scarcely a day passed but from 3,000 to 5,000 troops were carried over the road to Washington. Night alarms were frequent at this point, but the Eighth was always ready for duty, and very prompt in getting into line at the summons of the "long roll."

On May 16, 1861, Colonel Munroe having resigned on account of disability, Lieutenant-Colonel Hinks was promoted colonel; Major Elwell was promoted lieutenant-colonel, and Major Ben Perley Poore was chosen major. On June 20, the Eighth received a magnificent silk flag from the lady friends of the New York Seventh, and on June 27, the right wing of the regiment was ordered to Baltimore, the left wing doing double guard and picket duty.

On July 2, the right wing went to the eastern shore of Maryland, to arrest Captain Tilghman, a noted secessionist, and commander of a mixed battalion of cavalry and infantry. The expedition was successful, and the captain was placed in confinement at Fort McHenry. The left wing was ordered to Baltimore July 3, encamped at Stewart's Wood, in the westerly suburbs of the city, and was joined by the right wing the same evening. On July 4 the Manchester Cornet Band joined the regiment, the

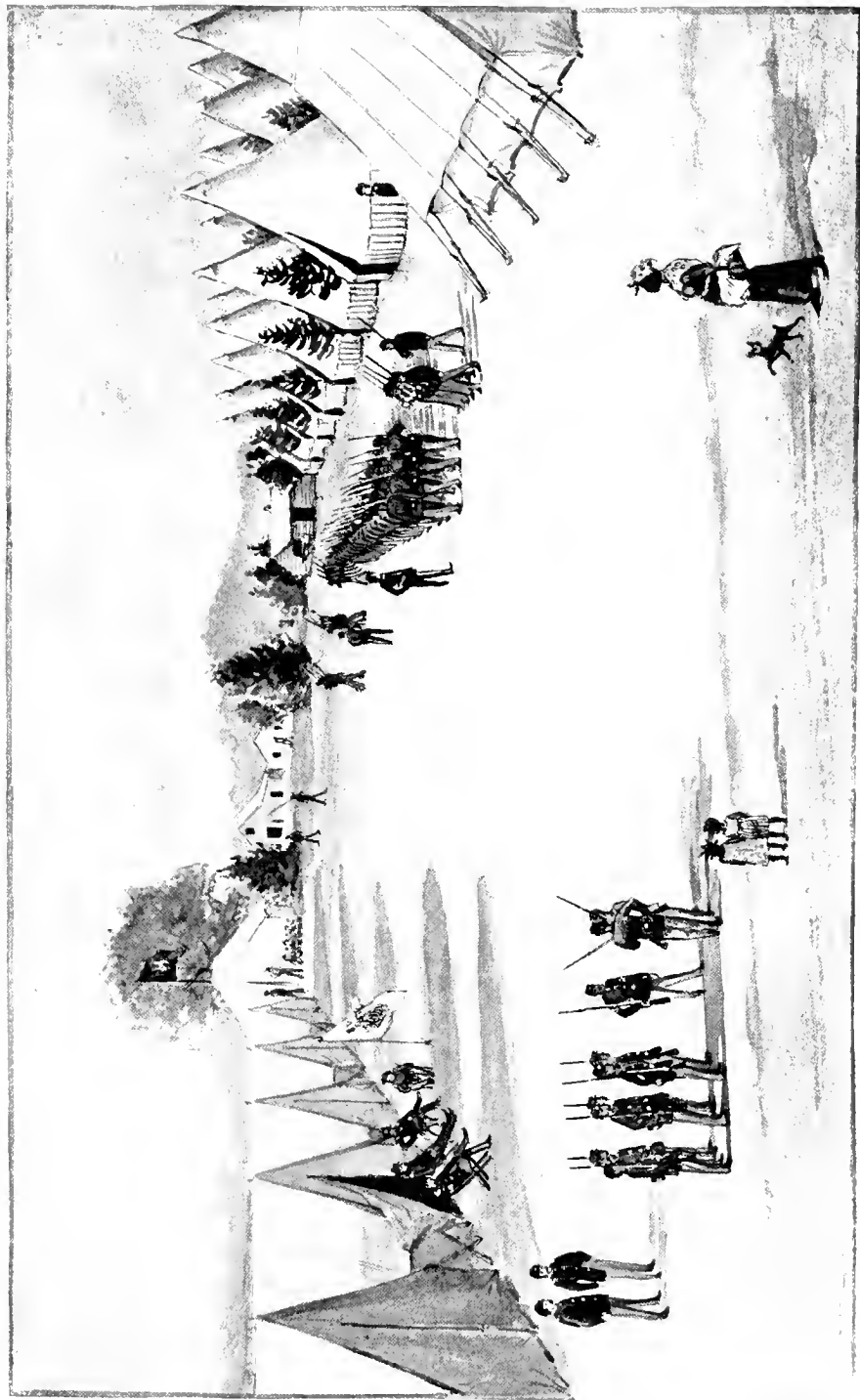
expense of its services being borne by the officers and men. On July 5, a garrison flag, from the ladies of Lynn, was presented to the regiment, and later in July, another handsome flag was presented by the loyal citizens of Baltimore, making the fourth flag presented since starting from Boston. Company F, of Lynn, was also the recipient of a silk American flag from some of its friends in that city.

The regiment was stationed at Baltimore July 21, the day of the defeat of our forces at the first battle of Bull Run, and at once offered to remain in service after the expiration of its term of enlistment, in case the Government desired it. This was not desired, and on Monday, July 29, the tents were struck and at about midnight the regiment was in line of march, homeward bound, and was cordially saluted by the people as it marched from its late camp to the cars.

Arriving at Jersey City about midnight, Tuesday, July 30, it remained in the depot until about 7 a. m., seeking what repose could be got on the "soft side of pine planks." Arriving at New York, it was met at Cortlandt street by a committee of the "Sons of Massachusetts," and escorted to the Park Barracks, where a substantial repast was provided, after which, under escort of the New York Seventh Regiment, the First Chasseurs and the Sons of Massachusetts, it marched up Broadway to Madison Square. There it was once more hospitably taken charge of by the Seventh, after which the march was resumed for the East River, where amid the hearty adieus of the companions of their march to Annapolis Junction, and the cheers of the crowd, it embarked on the steamer Bay State for Fall River, arriving at that city the next morning. There it enjoyed a substantial breakfast, which the generous thoughtfulness of the citizens had provided, and left for Boston, where it arrived about noon, Thursday, August 1.

At the depot the congratulations of the friends gathered at the station to welcome their return caused quite a delay in the formation, and made the military reception which awaited them seem of little importance. Escorted by the Second Battalion of Infantry, the Eighth proceeded to the Common, amid the cheering of the crowds that thronged the line of march. After partaking of a lunch provided by the city, the regiment executed various battalion movements, which were enthusiastically applauded by the assembled thousands. Having passed in review before Mayor Wightman, the regiment formed square and listened to the farewell address of its commander, and a few appropriate remarks from the mayor, after which it was mustered out of service, and the companies departed for their homes; where, in every town and city, amid the ringing of bells and the firing of cannon, each was heartily welcomed.

In addition to the great service rendered the country in opening up the route to Washington via Annapolis, the Eighth Regiment acquired great



*Drawn by C. W. Reed from crayon by E. Brick, 1863.*

EIGHTH REGIMENT, M. V. M., NEAR FORT TOTTEN, NEWBERN, N. C., 1863.



proficiency in drill; furnished instructors for other organizations; did much guard and picket duty, and was the means of preventing large amounts of stores, supplies and ammunition, from being sent into the south from Baltimore. It is only justice to say that these services were of inestimable value to the Union.

The men had, almost at a moment's warning, left their families unprovided for and their affairs unarranged; trusting to the patriotic humanity of their fellow citizens and of the State, to make all needful provisions for any immediate or final contingency. They had started in the midst of a pelting storm for the first rendezvous, not even properly clad; and thence, not fully equipped, had pushed forward on their perilous errand.

It is true they did not have, as they expected, an opportunity of meeting the enemy, although they evinced every disposition to do so; but in the faithful performance of many active and responsible duties required of them, they rendered the cause most efficient service, and are worthy of an honorable page in their country's history.

Congress has not been unmindful of their services. On July 30, the following resolution, offered by Mr. Lovejoy, of Illinois, unanimously passed the House of Representatives:

*"Resolved:* That the thanks of this House are hereby presented to the Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia for their alacrity in responding to the call of the President, and for the energy and patriotism displayed by them in surmounting obstacles, upon sea or land, which traitors had interposed to impede their progress to the defence of the National Capital."

The Massachusetts men of April, '75, rushed to Lexington to dispute the progress of the invader, and, if possible, to drive him from their soil. The Massachusetts men of April, '61, poorly equipped, left that soil and rushed forward, through a hostile state, to the relief of the distant, threatened and beleaguered capital, and the work of the men of '61 saved it when shadows, clouds and darkness hung over it.

To other Massachusetts regiments, is due the honor of having sealed with their blood their devotion to their country, during their three months' term of service at the outbreak of the Rebellion; but while it was not the fortune of the Eighth to be thus honored, to it will ever be ascribed the honor of having opened a route and provided a way for other troops to respond promptly to the call of the President, securing the safety of the national capital, and allaying the fears of the government, besides saving from possible loss, the frigate *Constitution*, the "Old Ironsides" of the War of 1812.

Many of the officers and men immediately re-entered the service, and a large number became officers of high rank.

Notwithstanding the depletion of the regiment, by officers and men

constantly leaving for the field, the organization of the regiment was kept intact. Colonel E. W. Hinks having been commissioned colonel of the Nineteenth Regiment, M. V.; Lieutenant-Colonel Andrew Elwell, as major of the Twenty-Third, and Major Ben. Perley Poore having resigned, the regiment for the time was commanded by its senior captain, Francis Boardman, of Company H, of Marblehead.

On May 19, 1862, Captain Boardman issued orders for a meeting of officers, at Salem, on the 29th, for the election of field officers, but the morning papers of the 29th contained the following:

#### PROCLAMATION.

Headquarters, Boston, May 26, 1862.

"Men of Massachusetts, the wily and barbarous horde of traitors to the People, the Government, to our Country and Liberty, menace the National Capital.

"They have advanced and routed Major-General Banks, and are advancing on Harper's Ferry and are marching on to Washington.

"The President calls on Massachusetts to rise once more for its rescue and defence. The whole active militia will be summoned by a general order issued from the office of the Adjutant-General to report on Boston Common to-morrow.

"They will march to relieve and avenge their brethren and friends, to oppose with fiery zeal and courageous patriotism the progress of the foe.

"May God encourage their hearts and strengthen their arms, and may He inspire the Government and all the people.

"Given at headquarters in Boston at 11 o'clock of this Sunday evening, May 25, A. D. 1862.

JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

General Orders No. 4.

"Commanders of regiments, battalions of infantry, and riflemen of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, are hereby ordered to report with their commands to Major-General Andrews on Boston Common forthwith for active service in pursuance of orders from the President of the United States.

This order will be executed without waiting for the usual forms of transmission.  
By command of His Excellency,

JOHN A. ANDREW, Governor and Commander-in-Chief  
WILLIAM B. BROWN, Asst.-Adjt. Genl."

Although without field officers the men responded promptly, and with more officers and men than any other organization, as follows:

Company A, Newburyport, Captain A. W. Bartlett, 105 men.  
Company B, Marblehead, Lieutenant B. Mitchell, 49 men.  
Company C, Marblehead, Captain S. C. Graves, 78 men.  
Company D, Lynn, Captain G. T. Newhall, 89 men.  
Company E, Beverly, Captain F. E. Porter, 75 men.  
Company F, Lynn, Captain James Hudson, Jr., 87 men.  
Company G, Gloucester, Captain D. W. Low, 59 men.  
Company H, Marblehead, Lieutenant Thomas Cloon, 51 men.  
Company I, Lynn, Captain Thomas Herbert, 96 men.  
Total, 686 officers and men.

The regiment remained two nights in Boston, when the election of field officers, ordered for the 29th, took place. Colonel Frederick J. Coffin

fin, of Newburyport; Lieutenant-Colonel Ben. Perley Poore, of Newbury, and Major Israel Wallis, of Beverly, were elected. Later a telegram was received from the War Department, stating that "concentrations of our forces having been effected will render the employment of the militia unnecessary." The troops which, in response to the Governor's order, had assembled in Boston, to the number of 4,000, were relieved from duty, and they returned to their homes.

The annual elementary drills of the officers and non-commissioned officers took place at Ipswich on July 9, 14 and 15, 1862. In the meanwhile, the governor directed careful examination of the company rolls to the end that those not ready to respond to any call for duty in the service of the Government might be discharged, and their places filled by men ready for service, and that the companies be recruited to the maximum. The difficulties in the way were not many but were serious. These companies were schools of recruits for the army, and a company hardly reached the maximum ere its best men were enlisted in some three years' regiment, and a new enrollment had to be made.

On August 13, in obedience to orders, Colonel Coffin issued orders for the usual three days of camp duty, to commence September 4. On the same day the Governor issued an order that "any corps of the State militia in progress of recruitment, preparatory to entering the service of the United States, may be excused from participating in any brigade or regiment encampment." Another order announced that "The Volunteer Militia will be accepted for nine months' service if seasonably offered, filled to the maximum of the United States regulations." This same day also the officers of the regiment met at Ipswich, and voted that "the Colonel offer the service of the regiment to the Governor for nine months' service."

On August 15, the Colonel stated in orders, that he had "reported the regiment ready for service, but the Governor had stated that it could only be accepted when recruited to the United States standard." The order goes on to state that "The regiment is now fuller than it was when mustered into service in April, 1861, or when it responded to His Excellency's order in May last; but officers and men have been and are almost daily being enlisted from it to fill the three years' regiments, and active exertions will be necessary to raise every company to the regulation standard." Company H was disbanded; two companies formerly assigned to the regiment had ceased to be a portion of the command, and but seven were left of those in the three months' service in 1861. These, with Company I, of Lynn, organized as a drill club in August, 1860, and assigned to the regiment in April, 1862, comprised the eight companies of the regiment.

Recruiting progressed favorably. The first company reported at camp in Boxford, September 10; the second company on the 11th, and

on the 15th the companies began to be mustered into service. Company K, recruited in Danvers, was assigned to the regiment while in camp; but considerable delay was experienced in securing a tenth company. Meanwhile the Eighth was ordered to Camp Lander, at Wenham, and marched thither from Boxford. The last Company, H, having been assigned, the field and staff officers were mustered into service November 7, 1862, completing the organization of the regiment, which numbered forty-five officers and 939 men, a total of 984.

*Roster, Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Frederick J. Coffin, Newburyport; lieutenant-colonel, James Hudson, Jr., Lynn; major, Israel W. Wallis, Beverly; adjutant, Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., Marblehead; quartermaster, Ephraim A. Ingalls, Lynn; surgeon, Charles Haddock, Beverly; assistant-surgeon, John L. Robinson, Wenham; chaplain, John C. Kimball, Beverly.

*Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Stephen D. Gardiner; first lieutenant, Joseph L. Johnson; second lieutenant, Eben P. Cutter, all of Newburyport.

Company B—Captain, Richard Phillips; first lieutenant, Benjamin Mitchell; second lieutenant, Stuart F. McClearn, all of Marblehead.

Company C—Captain, Samuel C. Graves, first lieutenant, Lorenzo F. Linnell; second lieutenant, Samuel Roads, all of Marblehead.

Company D—Captain, George T. Newhall; first lieutenant, Thomas H. Berry; second lieutenant, William H. Merritt, all of Lynn.

Company E—Captain, Francis E. Porter; first lieutenant, Hugh J. Munsey; second lieutenant, Eleazer Giles, all of Beverly.

Company F—Captain, Henry Stone; first lieutenant, Matthias N. Snow; second lieutenant, George Watts, all of Lynn.

Company G—Captain, David W. Low; first lieutenant, Edward L. Rowe; second lieutenant, Samuel Fears, all of Gloucester.

Company H—Captain, George R. Davis; first lieutenant, William J. Landon; second lieutenant, Christopher J. Plaisted, all of Springfield.

Company I—Captain, Thomas Herbert; first lieutenant, Charles B. Saunderson; second lieutenant, Jeremiah C. Bacheller, all of Lynn.

Company K—Captain, Albert C. Allen; first lieutenant, Edwin Bailey; second lieutenant, Benjamin E. Newhall, all of Danvers.

On Thursday, November 8, marching orders were received, the destination being New Berne, N. C. Final orders came for leaving on the 25th, and early on that morning preparations were made for breaking camp. About 3.30 p. m. the regiment arrived in Boston, and marching directly to the wharf, embarked on the transport Mississippi. Thursday was Thanksgiving Day in Massachusetts, but was passed by the regiment in mid ocean, and on soldier's fare—"salt beef and hard tack"—washed down with coffee, minus sweetening. The passage was stormy, but on the 29th the Mississippi anchored off Beaufort, waiting for a favorable tide over the bar.

The regiment disembarked at Morehead City, N. C., November 30, and on a train of platform cars, started for New Berne, forty miles distant. Here the Eighth occupied the former camp of the Tenth Connecticut, north of the city, near the Neuse River, and was assigned to the



2d Brigade 1st Division, 18th Army Corps. Colonel Thomas G. Stevenson commanded the brigade which included his own regiment, the Twenty-Fourth Massachusetts, with the Tenth Connecticut, Forty-Fourth Massachusetts, and Fifth Rhode Island.

On December 4, Companies A and E were detached for duty at Roanoke Island, and were absent from the regiment until they rejoined it at Maryland Heights, July 12, 1863. On the 9th, on the eve of the Goldsboro campaign, the Eighth was detailed for garrison duty in New Berne, and Colonel Coffin was assigned to the command of the post. On the 28th the regiment, previously transferred to Colonel Amory's brigade, composed of the Seventeenth, Forty-Third, Forty-Fifth, and Forty-Sixth Regiments, M. V. M., was again transferred; this time to the 1st Brigade, 2d Division, under Brigadier-General Heckman, comprising the Ninth New Jersey, and the Third and Twenty-Third Massachusetts Regiments. On December 31, the regiment was mustered and inspected by Captain Abell, A. A. G., of General Heckman's brigade. The arms were condemned and the regiment detached. In parting with the Eighth, General Heckman sent to Colonel Coffin the following letter:

Headquarters, 1st Brigade, Naglee's Division.

New Berne, January 12, 1863.

Colonel: In the report of my assistant-adjutant general, who inspected and mustered your regiment last muster, the arms you now have were condemned. I have made every effort since to have them changed, to retain you in my brigade, but time would not permit.

Another regiment has been assigned. Accept my regrets that your regiment was not in a position to remain as regard equipments.

The soldierly appearance and conduct of your officers and men have made a favorable impression, and I part from you with reluctance.

Very respectfully yours,

C. A. HECKMAN, Brigadier-General.

Colonel Coffin had at the start objected to the Austrian rifles with which the regiment was armed, but being told at the State House that they were the best to be had, replied that "the regiment would go with clubs, if it was ordered to;" and little better than clubs did they prove to be in service. Fully one-third of them would miss fire the first time, and many failed at the fourth and fifth trials.

On Jan. 11, the regiment found itself in the 3d Brigade, 5th Division, Colonel James Jourdan, 158th New York Volunteers, commanding, the other regiments being the 132d and the 158th New York, and the Third Massachusetts. January 25, the regiment changed camps, from the north to the west side of the city, in rear of Fort Totten and a short distance from the Trent River. The fort was the largest of the defenses of New Berne; covered about three acres of ground, mounted twenty-five guns, and commanded the approaches to the westerly side of the city. Companies G and K were detailed in the fort for garrison duty. On Feb-

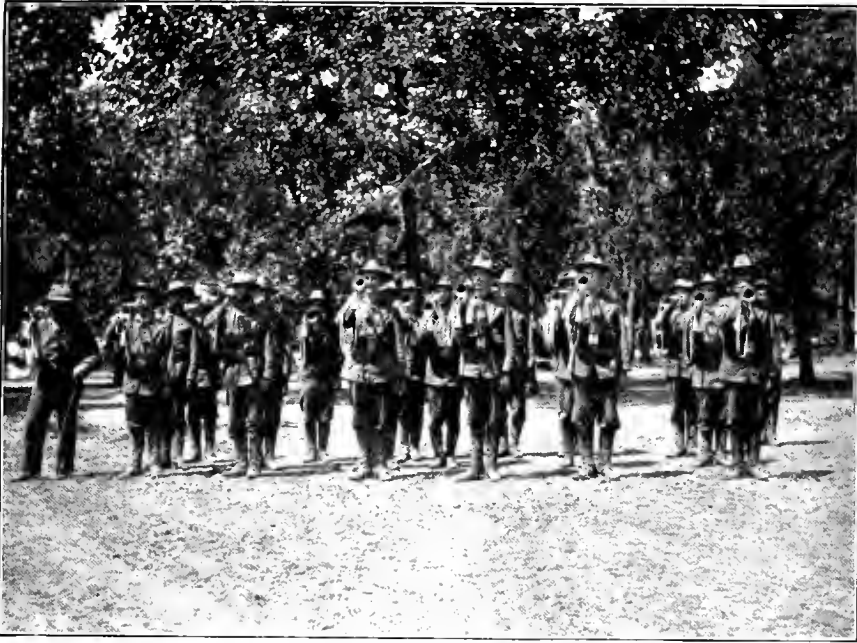
ruary 2, Companies A and E, with two days' rations, proceeded from Roanoke Island, on the steamer Halifax, up Currituck Sound, for the purpose of destroying salt works and capturing guerillas. Getting fast in the ice, they were delayed several days and suffered much for want of rations. They returned on the 8th, having accomplished the object of the expedition, with the loss of but two men wounded.

On February 7, Companies B and F, under Major Wallis, were ordered to Roanoke Island to reinforce the garrison there. One of the many rumors current in New Berne, was that the rebels had threatened to retake the city before the anniversary of the battle by which they had lost it (March 14, 1862), and the expected attack under the rebel general, D. H. Hill, began on the west of the city on the 13th, the rebels having driven in the pickets on that side. Early on the morning of the 15th, an attack was made on a small, unfinished fort, called Fort Anderson, on the north side of the city, at Barrington's Ferry, but, with the assistance of the gunboats, the enemy was repulsed. On the 15th, the regiment with others comprising the 5th Division, under General Prince, moved out on the Trent road as far as Pollocksville. General Prince, in his report of the 16th, says, "satisfied that the enemy was beyond reach, and that no troops were left in that vicinity, I marched my command back to its quarters at New Berne." March 17, Colonel Coffin was ordered to the command of the brigade, and Lieutenant-Colonel Hudson assumed command of the regiment.

On April 8, the Eighth marched with a force, attempting the relief of General Foster, commanding the Department of North Carolina, who with parts of the Twenty-Seventh and Forty-Fourth Massachusetts, two companies of North Carolina troops, a company of cavalry and one of artillery, was besieged in Washington, N. C. The relief expedition under command of General Spinola, proceeded as far as Ruff's Mills on Blount's Creek, where it encountered the enemy, strongly fortified. After an artillery duel of about an hour's duration, a retreat was ordered, and the troops returned to New Berne. The distance marched on the day of action was estimated to be thirty miles.

On April 16, the Eighth joined a force under General Prince, to reconnoiter in the vicinity of the enemy's outpost near Core Creek; they were absent six days, and captured many prisoners. This, combined with the operations of another column north of the Neuse River, and the reinforcements received by General Foster, caused the rebels to evacuate their works in front of Washington, N. C., releasing General Foster and his garrison from their uncomfortable position.

Four companies were on picket the first ten days of May; after that a period of quietness prevailed, and on the 18th the regiment again removed from Fort Totten to the former camp of the Forty-Sixth Massa-



THE BUGLES OF THE EIGHTH, CHICKAMAUGA, GA.



MARCHING THROUGH GEORGIA. CAMP GILMAN, AMERICUS, GA.

EIGHTH REGIMENT, MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. A., 1898.

chusetts, nearer New Berne, where it was occupied in constructing and strengthening intrenchments on the western side of the city.

On May 23, orders were received to remove down the Neuse River, about seven miles below the city, and to reconstruct and occupy Fort Thompson, formerly built by the enemy to command the river and the approaches to New Berne. On arriving there, the orders for reconstruction seem to have been countermanded, but the regiment remained until June 12, when it returned to the city, and occupied the camp of the Third Massachusetts, which had just left for home, to be mustered out of service.

The advance of Lee's army into the States of Maryland and Pennsylvania, which later led to the battle of Gettysburg, had begun, and troops were hurried forward to interpose between the enemy and Washington. On June 20, General Foster wrote to General Halleck, chief of staff at Washington, that he had learned from newspapers of the 18th of Lee's advance towards Pennsylvania, and could send ten regiments of nine months' men, whose terms of service had nearly expired, either to Baltimore or Fortress Munroe. "Six of the regiments," he says, "are from Massachusetts, well drilled, and all good fighting men." He was at once ordered to send the troops to Fortress Munroe, to report for further orders. Orders to move came on the 24th, and in the afternoon the Eighth embarked and dropped down the river. On the 27th it reached Fortress Munroe, and received orders to report to General Dix, at the "White House" on the Pamunkey River.

Rumors as to its final destination were various; but after lying two days off the fort the regiment sailed for Baltimore, where it remained doing guard duty in the city until July 6, when, in light marching order, it reported to Brigadier-General Henry S. Briggs, who in April, 1861, had commanded Company K, and to whose brigade it was now assigned. It proceeded over the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad to Monocacy Junction, where it was detached, and ordered to march to Frederick and report to General French. Reporting there, it was ordered to march back and rejoin the brigade, which then had orders to proceed to Sandy Hook, Md., and occupy and hold Maryland Heights. Stirring events had taken place since the regiment left New Berne. The Army of the Potomac, under Hooker, was following the Army of Northern Virginia under Lee.

Suddenly a change of commanders in the Army of the Potomac was ordered by the President. Hooker being relieved by Meade, the latter ordered what the former had vainly asked permission to do, that the troops garrisoning Maryland Heights should join the Army of the Potomac, then following after Lee, who was well into Pennsylvania, and threatened Harrisburg. Gettysburg followed, and as the defeated troops of Lee hurried across the Potomac, the government at Washington tried

its best to rush troops forward to Meade to effect the capture of the enemy. Point after point, which had been abandoned by the Union troops were being re-occupied, and the Eighth was selected to lead the advance of the brigade sent to re-occupy Maryland Heights. The night of July 7, 1863, was one long to be remembered. Rain began to fall before the regiment left Sandy Hook, and as the darkness came on the storm increased in severity. Leading the brigade, the regiment started on its weary march up the Heights, over a dirt road. In the muddy ruts the water ran in torrents; on the ridges between, the men vainly endeavored to walk, fearful of falling over the precipitous side of the road, and landing they knew not where.

With skirmishers ahead, the regiment toiled up the rugged way, to find whether the heights were occupied by the enemy. Pushing on, the summit was gained, and among the empty ammunition boxes and other abandoned ordnance stores in Fort Duncan, the regiment was permitted to get what rest was possible, with the rain still beating down on the shelterless troops.

At earliest daybreak, some of the restless spirits to be found in all companies apprised their captains that there were barracks not far away; these were soon occupied, and proved a welcome shelter to the regiment; whose "light marching orders," being misunderstood, had been only too literally obeyed, for now, at the beginning of its most important and longest campaign, many of the men were without blankets, and, in some cases, lacked haversacks and canteens also.

A week of guard and picket duty now followed, when orders came to join the Army of the Potomac. Starting Sunday afternoon, as the sun was sinking behind the summits of the Blue Ridge, the regiment marched, passing through to Boonsboro, where it took the Hagerstown turnpike, and reached Funkstown Monday, about 3 o'clock p. m.; having halted but an hour or two for breakfast, and to refresh the horses of the cavalry and artillery accompanying the brigade. Distance marched, about thirty miles. At Funkstown, the brigade comprising the Thirty-Ninth, M. V., and Eighth, Forty-Sixth and Fifty-First Regiments, M. V. M., was assigned to the 2d Division of the 1st Army Corps, General John Newton commanding.

Being without tents, the bivouac was rather primitive, but the few who possessed rubber blankets stretched them on poles or guns, and made a partial shelter from the rain which fell in smart showers through the night. At noon the 2d Division was under way, and marched under an intensely hot sun to Williamsport. On the 15th, Lee having crossed the Potomac, the army again began its march toward Virginia, and the Eighth marched on toward Berlin, on the northern side of the Potomac, where it was to cross into Virginia, passing through Keedysville and

Crampton's Gap, where it encamped for the night, and thence next day advanced through Brukittsville to Berlin.

The 17th was passed in bivouac, the rain coming down in torrents all day. Many of the men thought when they left New Berne, that the shoes they had would last to the end of their term of service, but the hard marching since leaving Baltimore told on the footwear, and many were barefooted; even the officers suffered. The pontoon bridges being laid, the army began to cross the Potomac; and, just as the regiment was about to cross the bridge, it saw the Forty-Sixth Massachusetts wheel out of column and halt, preparatory to going home. The Fifty-first Massachusetts had left the brigade for home the day before, leaving only the Thirty-Ninth and Eighth. Some regrets were expressed, but the discipline of the regiment had always been good, and the hope of more active service lent its aid to stifle envy.

A march of twelve miles into Virginia brought the Eighth to Waterford. Sunday, the 19th, found the regiment by 10 o'clock at Hamilton, where it spent the rest of the day in camp. By 5 o'clock a. m., July 20, the regiment was on its way, and marched twenty miles to bivouac at Middleburg, where it went on picket duty July 21.

Orders for the 1st Corps to "move to White Plains, prepared to move to the support of the 3d or 5th Corps," necessitated a night march on the 22nd. White Plains was reached, after a tramp of twelve miles, at 3 a. m., July 23, when the regiment marched ten miles more to Warrenton, and was ordered to support a battery two miles outside the town.

"Nine miles to the junction"—an old cry of the regiment in 1861—was brought forcibly to mind, when the march to Warrenton Junction, nine miles distant, was taken up, and a halt made there at 1 p. m.

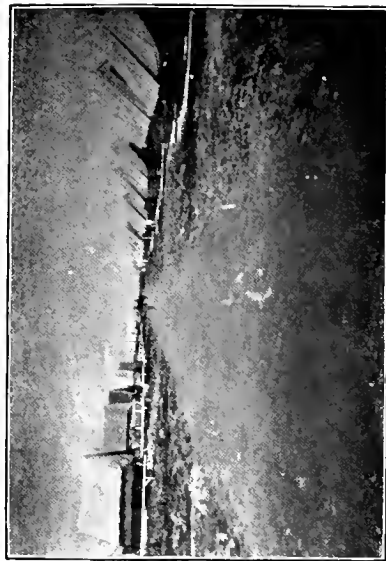
At 7 o'clock p. m. the Eighth marched for Bealton, distant ten miles. This proved to be the worst march of all, and was a fitting close to this campaign of the Eighth. Soon after starting, one of those southern showers set in, and midway to Bealton, thunder and lightning lent their accompaniment to the rain. Plunging in the darkness, through the mud, which the artillery preceding the regiment had stirred up nearly knee deep, Bealton was reached about midnight; a detail for picket was made, which went to the Rappahannock a few miles in advance, while those not detailed sought what rest could be obtained on the wet ground with the clouds for a covering. But Sunday morning, July 24, broke warm and cloudless, and orders were received for the Eighth to proceed to Boston to be mustered out of service. Amid much rejoicing, preparations were made for the homeward march, which began at 1 p. m.

Cars were taken at Warrenton Junction, and the train started at 10 o'clock p. m. Baltimore was reached late in the afternoon of the 27th, the regiment having been for three weeks away from its baggage without

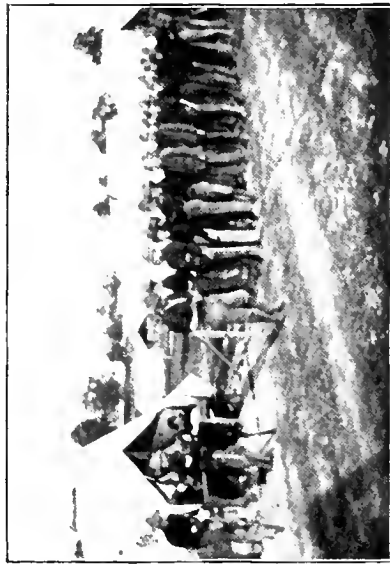


Before Grading.

OFFICERS' STREET, MATANZAS, CUBA. "DOG-TOOTH" CORAL.



After Grading.



Pay Day.

CAMP EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, U. S. V., LEXINGTON, KY.  
Corrosive Sublimite Cleansing.







a change of clothing, or blankets, and in many cases without haversacks or canteens; although these articles had been, in a great measure, supplied on the route from those cast away by tired and footsore soldiers of other regiments in the hot and dusty days from Funkstown onward. Ragged and almost shoeless, the regiment presented anything but a soldierly appearance.

Its forlorn-looking condition can best be summarized in the words of a dirty urchin in Baltimore, who, trotting beside the captain who most prided himself on his neat appearance exclaimed: "Say, mister, where'd you git so dirty at?" The captain and his look of disgust have passed into history.

Stopping at Washington, Baltimore, Philadelphia, and New York; where the regiment was conducted to those "Soldiers Retreats" which were so generously supported by citizens to supply food to the hungry soldiers passing through; it reached Boston July 29, and was dismissed to meet at the old camp at Wenham on August 7, to be mustered out of service. In addition to the various expeditions in which it took part, the Eighth performed its full share of outpost and picket duty, and construction of works, and furnished many men for detached service, who received the commendation of superiors for duty faithfully performed.

On July 6, 1864, the Secretary of War again called for the services of the state militia.

Company A, of Newburyport, had been assigned to the Sixtieth Regiment; Company B had been disbanded; Companies E and I detached for service on coast defences, and Companies H and K of the nine months' service, had been disbanded. To the Eighth were assigned two companies from Springfield, one from Adams, one from South Reading, one from Boston, and one company from Pittsfield.

The regiment was fully organized by the muster into service of the field and staff July 26, 1864, and on the same day left camp at Readville with orders to report at Washington, D. C., officered as follows:

*Roster, Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., Marblehead; lieutenant-colonel, Christopher T. Hanley, Boston; major, David W. Low, Gloucester; adjutant, A. Hun Berry, Lynn; quartermaster, Joseph A. Ingalls, Swampscott; surgeon, John L. Robinson, Wenham; assistant-surgeon, Ebenezer Hunt, Danvers; chaplain, John S. Sewell, Wenham.

*Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Lewis A. Tift; first lieutenant, Gideon Wells; second lieutenant, Chauncy Hickox; all of Springfield.

Company B—Captain, Henry M. Lyon; first lieutenant, Eugene B. Richardson; second lieutenant, Fred W. Champney; all of Adams.

Company C—Captain, Samuel C. Graves; first lieutenant, William Goodwin, 3d.; second lieutenant, Samuel Roads; all of Marblehead.

Company D—Captain, William H. Merritt; first lieutenant, George E. Palmer; second lieutenant, William H. Keene; all of Lynn.

Company E—Captain, Samuel T. Littlefield; first lieutenant, Jason H. Knight; second lieutenant, James A. Burditt; all of South Reading.

Company F.—Captain, Henry Stone; first lieutenant, Matthias N. Snow; second lieutenant, Josiah F. Kimball; all of Lynn.

Company G—Captain, Edward L. Rowe; first lieutenant, George L. Fears; second lieutenant, Isaac N. Story; all of Gloucester.

Company H—Captain, William J. Landen; first lieutenant, Charles L. Wood; second lieutenant, John Thayer; all of Springfield.

Company I—Captain, Henry S. Shelton; first lieutenant, Thomas J. Hanley; second lieutenant, Andrew C. McKenna; all of Boston.

Company K—Captain, Lafayette Butler; first lieutenant, William D. Reed; second lieutenant, James Kittle; all of Pittsfield.

On arriving at Baltimore, the regiment received orders to go into camp on the outskirts of the city. It did service in Maryland; part of the time along the line of the Northern Central R.R., to protect the road and the vicinity of Baltimore from the raids of Harry Gilmore and his followers; in garrison at Camp Bradford, a draft rendezvous and conscript camp for the states of Maryland and Delaware; city provost duty in Baltimore, and duties of a similar nature during its entire term of service, receiving the commendations of both brigade and division commanders for promptness and efficiency. At the conclusion of its term of service, the regiment returned to Massachusetts, and was mustered out of service November 10, 1864.

The Eighth, not being uniformed, performed no duty in 1865. On May 18, 1866, the Legislature passed an act for the reorganization of the militia, and orders were issued assigning the following companies to the Eighth Regiment.

Company A, Newburyport, Captain Joseph L. Johnson.

Company B, Newburyport, Captain Charles L. Ayers.

Company C, Marblehead, Captain Knott V. Martin.

Company D, Lynn, Captain Thomas H. Berry.

Company E, Beverly, Captain Francis E. Porter.

Company F, Lynn, Captain Henry Stone.

Company G, Gloucester, Captain Edward L. Rowe.

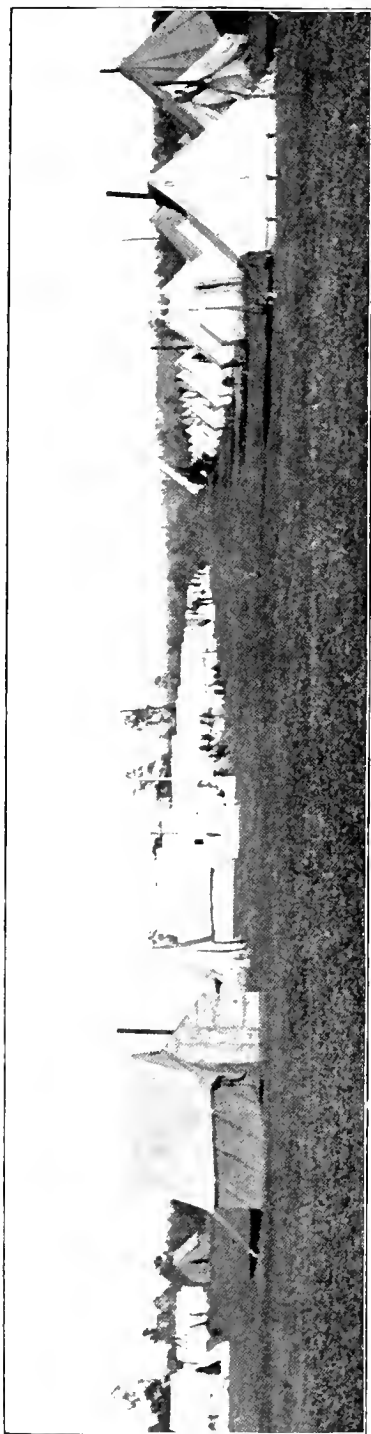
Company H, Salem.

Company I, Lynn, Captain Jeremiah C. Bacheller.

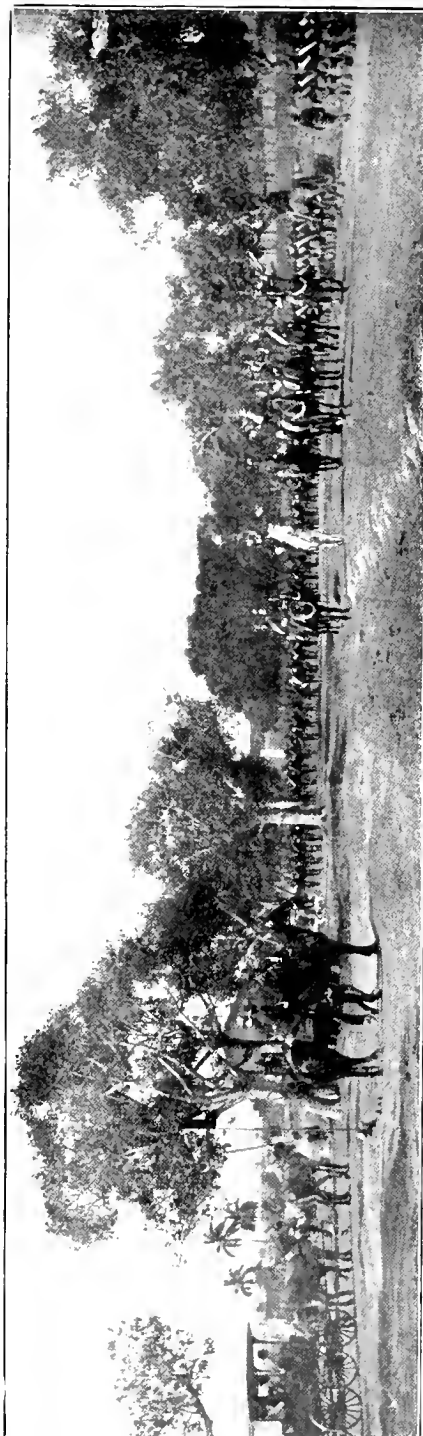
Company K, Salem, Captain Joseph H. Glidden.

All these companies, with the exception of B and K, had been connected with the Eighth during its service in the war. Company B had served as the Third Unattached Company, on coast defence, and Company K, as Company A of the Fifth Regiment, three months' service. The Fourth Unattached Company of Infantry, of Chelsea, Captain J. Q. Adams, was temporarily assigned to the regiment.

From 1866 to the present time, the regiment has performed the regular tours of state duty required of it; all, with the exception of the years 1870, 1872 and 1876, in brigade camp. In 1870, the entire division en-



CAMP EIGHTH REGIMENT LINE OFFICERS STREET, AMERICA'S, GA.



REVIEW EIGHTH REGIMENT, MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. A., AT MATANZAS, CUBA, 1896. INSPECTED BY MAJOR-GENERAL BRECKENRIDGE AND GENERALS WILSON AND SANGER



camped at Concord. In 1872, the Eighth encamped at Hamilton, and in 1876, at Fairmount Park, Philadelphia, Pa., having then present for duty all but thirty-four enlisted men.

Special duty has been performed as follows: June 16, 1869, in Boston as a portion of the escort to President U. S. Grant. June 17, 1875, the entire division was reviewed by the governor, and paraded as escort to the procession in honor of the Centennial anniversary of the Declaration of Independence. June 26, 1877, in Boston, as a portion of the escort to President Rutherford B. Hayes. September 17, 1877, as a portion of the escort of the procession, at the dedication of the Army and Navy Monument in Boston. September 17, 1880, in Boston, as a portion of the escort of the procession of trades and societies, at the celebration of the 250th Anniversary of the Settlement of Boston. October 11, 1882, in Boston, as a portion of the escort to President Chester A. Arthur. July 4, 1888, at Amesbury, as escort to the procession at the unveiling of the Bartlett statue. In 1889, visited Washington and took part in the parade at the inauguration of President Benjamin Harrison. May 18, 1890, at Marblehead, at the funeral of its colonel, Francis A. Osgood.

On the election of Colonel Pew to the command, June 28, 1895, it was evident that past troubles must be ignored, and everyone do his best to put the command in the front rank or step aside and let others do it.

Newer methods of instruction were begun, and Kriegspiel, the German war game, was introduced to the officers at a two days' meeting; where under the direction of Major Livermore U. S. A., author of the American game, the theory of the defense of a village by a small force against a larger one, was exemplified on maps provided for the occasion.

On the fall field day of 1896 the game was put into practice, being the first attempt to carry out the details of attack and defense of a town where officers were left to themselves to work out the problem under the rules laid down.

A leading newspaper had this to say of the regiment: "The fall field days are over and, as at the close of last year, the Eighth and Second lead the line, because they have sought to exemplify real tactics, and the practical experience of the command were there bullets firing rather than paper wads."

Colonel Pew trained his men in the matter of proper protection, as if ordered out into an open country to meet an invading force. There was a purpose in everything. Needless exposure resulted in the retirement of such men as stood in the open in face of repeated concentrated volleys, as they would be retired, dead or wounded, in an actual engagement.

The state duty of the years 1895, '96, and '97, had been creditably performed; the camps of the regiment were models of neatness and sanitary

conditions were of the best. Promptness and accuracy in all details characterized the organization, so that, at the opening of the year 1898, the regiment was in good condition, officers were conversant with their duties, discipline was good and enrolment practically full.

This preparation came none too soon. Early in the year 1898, the disaster to the United States battleship "Maine" in the harbor of Havana caused animated discussion of the probabilities of war with Spain, and companies were rapidly recruited to the maximum allowed by the state. A rigid examination was made of all officers and men, as to their readiness to enter the United States service, and their physical qualifications therefor. Many of the members of the regiment were men with families, and others had business connections which would be seriously interfered with by an absence of two years, for which term troops were to be called.

These examinations greatly reduced the number of well drilled men, and subsequently, when the call came for troops, the Eighth, as well as the other Massachusetts regiments who volunteered for service as United States Volunteers, had a large percentage of recruits, which later became larger when the maximum was raised to 106 to a company.

The method of calling for troops by the general government differed from that of 1861, in that volunteers were called for, preference being given to members of the Volunteer Militia.

Under this call, by General Orders from Headquarters, Commonwealth of Massachusetts, the Eighth was one of the "four infantry regiments offered the privilege of volunteering."

The regiment went into camp at South Framingham May 5, 1898, and was mustered into the United States service on the 11th, leaving May 16 for Camp Thomas, a general rendezvous of troops at Chickamauga, Ga.

The strength of the regiment, as reported, was 47 officers and 896 men; again the largest regiment, as it had been so many times before.

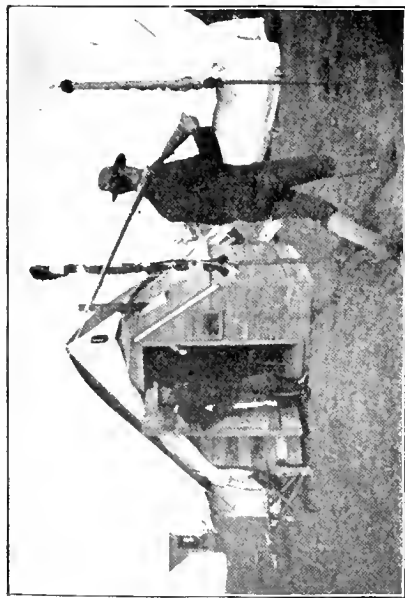
Arriving at Camp Thomas, Chickamauga, it was assigned to the 2d Brigade, 3d Division, 1st Army Corps; Colonel Pew as senior colonel commanding the brigade.

June 7, officers detailed to recruit the companies to 106 men left camp; and in due season returned with the desired number.

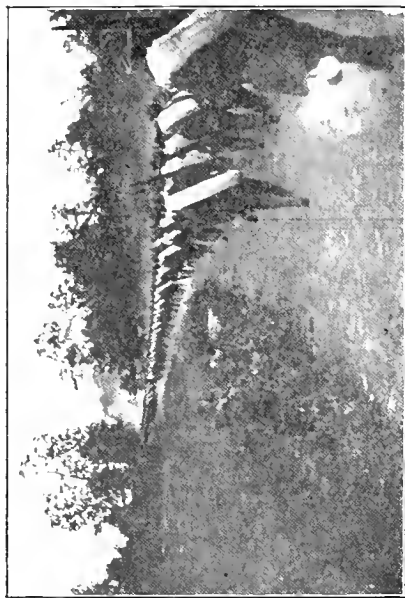
Colonel Pew returned to the regiment after being in command of the brigade a month and a half, and the usual rumors of marching followed.

Constant drilling in all movements incident to tactics and strategy occupied the regiment, and careful attention to sanitary regulations kept the health of the regiment good, while all about it in the great camp much sickness prevailed.

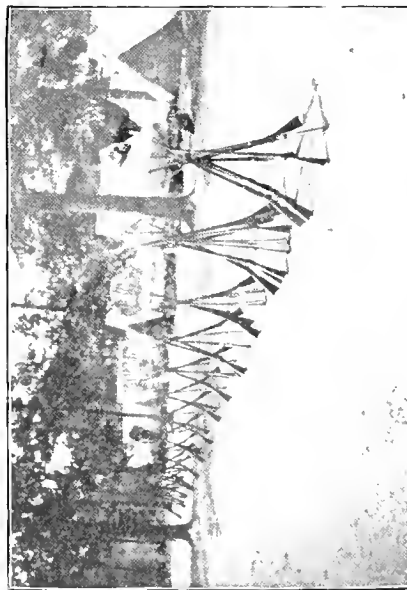
A correspondent with the command wrote that "The Eighth has become an exceptionally healthy and hardy regiment, although there has been no cessation of routine work since the command pitched its camp



Headquarters, Americus, Ga.



Ten Miles from Chickamauga.



Company Street, Chickamauga.



General Gomez at the Rule Range, Matanzas, Cuba.  
SCENES IN THE SERVICE OF THE EIGHTH MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY U. S. A.





here. It is fully equipped for the field, and has elsewhere been complimented for high efficiency, a very rare merit."

The depression of spirits caused by the increasing prevalence of sickness, was beginning to have its effect on the Eighth when, on the 25th of September, the regiment moved camp from Chickamauga Park to Lexington, Ky., where the more bracing air of the blue grass region gave renewed health and strength to the command as the altered tone of correspondence showed.

In the latter part of October, Colonel Pew received permission from the War Department to enlist a band which added much to the happiness of the regiment.

November 10, the command left Lexington for Americus, Ga., and there exchanged the Springfield rifle for the new Krag-Jorgensen.

While at this camp, it was visited by one of the most efficient colonels who served in the War of the Rebellion, who, on his return to Massachusetts, wrote of the Eighth to the governor. "I did not see the regiment on parade, but what is very much better, I saw quite thoroughly the quarters and examined everything as to the corral. I also saw the mess and the quality of the rations. The regiment is in most excellent condition and is such a credit to the state, that it is a very great pleasure to make such a report to you."

On the 30th of December came the long expected orders for the regiment to hold itself in readiness for transportation to Cuba, and on the 6th of January, 1899, it left camp for Savannah whence on the 8th the first battalion of the regiment sailed on the transport *Obdam* for Matanzas, the other battalions following the next day on the transport *Michigan*.

Here garrison duty was performed until the first of April, when the regiment sailed for Boston on board the transport *Meade*, arriving there on Sunday, April 9th.

A furlough of forty-eight hours was granted the men, and arrangements were made for special trains which quickly transferred the companies to their homes. Later, receptions were given to the returned soldiers, by the several towns in which the companies were located, and on April 28, the command was mustered out of the United States service, 1327 men having been with the regiment.

Colonel Pew in speaking of the success of the Eighth, says that it was due to keeping always in mind the idea promulgated by the English Field Marshal, Lord Roberts, that "parade grounds are simply useful for drill and preliminary instruction, and as soon as the rudiments of a soldier's education have been learned, the troops should leave their nursery and try as far as possible to practice in peace what they would have to do in war."

During the war with Spain, the colonel said he had two ideas to

carry out: first, "To keep the men well, and teach them to be kind to themselves, so as to bring them into the presence of the enemy in their best possible condition; and second, to teach them what and how to do when they met the enemy." Ideas simple enough to express, but difficult to put in practice. How well they were carried out, the reports of the committee on the investigation of the War Department, the reports of the surgeon-general, and the inspector-general of the army show.

The commissioner's report says: "The intelligent and watchful supervision on the part of the surgeon and regimental officers, and the observance of the well established rules of camp sanitation, shown by the record of the Eighth Massachusetts Infantry Volunteers at Camp Thomas is very commendable. This regiment was for many weeks very healthy, while much sickness was occurring in regiments near by, although the site, water and drill were practically the same."

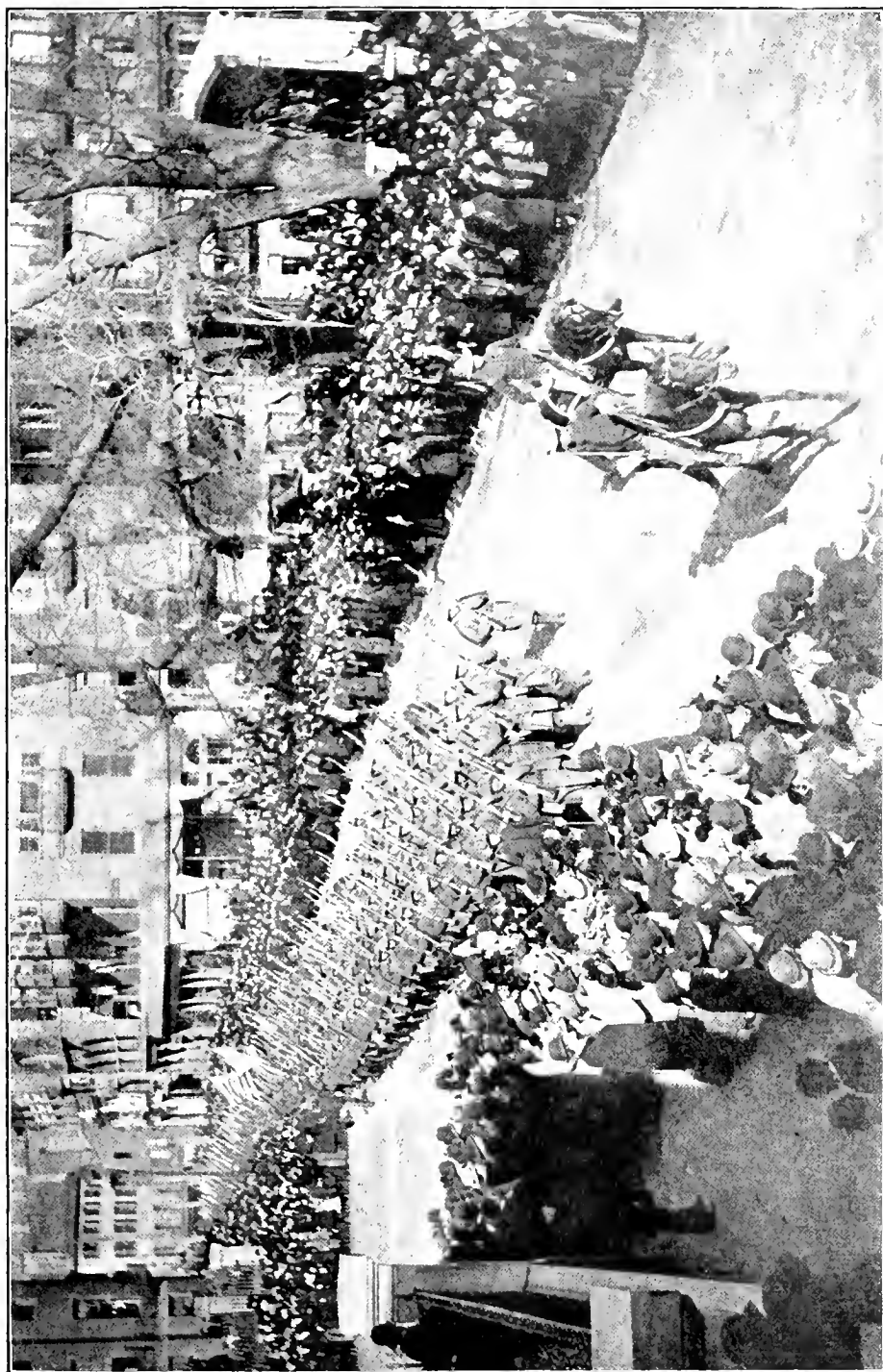
Colonel Pew's discipline was strict and impartial, and the health of his troops consequently of the best, and it is with pride that the fact is chronicled, that no other regiment in the whole American Army of Volunteers is similarly favored in the commissioners' report.

On page 174 of the report of the surgeon-general to the secretary of war for the year 1898, he refers to the character of troops at Chicamauga, saying: "The dirty camps are the sickly camps, here as elsewhere. But discipline and intelligence have their reward also. Without specifying instances low in the scale, attention is invited to the Eighth Massachusetts, already cited, where the positive enforcement of orders, by punitive measures when necessary, has resulted in the actual use of only boiled water for drinking, with exemption from typhoid fever and a low sick rate as a possible consequence."

As to the colonel's second idea, the inspector-general of the army in his report for the year 1898, on page fifty-one, in speaking of Matanzas infantry camps as a model, says, "These same troops had a perfect camp also at Lexington, Ky. Such seasoned, well instructed soldiers as the best of these, like the Eighth Massachusetts, Twelfth New York and Third Engineers, and such handsome, healthful camps wrung from adverse nature, are gratifying to all who ever commanded them."

A letter from Major-General Wilson, who commanded the 1st Army Corps in the Spanish war, writing of the regiment says, "All officers together with the enlisted men, displayed from the first a high state of discipline and efficiency. The regiment upon all occasions, proved itself in every way worthy of the state of Massachusetts, and of the army of the United States."

In Washington, it is stated that the books of the regiment were fuller and better kept than those of any other regiment in service. With all these commendations, we hardly need the further statement of the corps



*Photo by Marr.*

EIGHTH REGIMENT MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. A., PASSING THE STATE HOUSE, APRIL 9, 1899.



commander that he was "Sure if the regiment had served in the presence of the enemy it would have given a good account of itself, and could not have failed to gain a reputation for gallant and soldierly conduct." During this term of service, details were made of thirty-two officers for various responsible positions away from the regiment.

The writer of this watched carefully the returning soldiers of the state, and from an experience of over twenty years in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, part of which was in the United States service during the Rebellion, can truthfully say that no more soldierly men returned to the state from the volunteer service of 1898 than the members of the Old Eighth Regiment.

The roster of officers in the Spanish war, at the muster out of the regiment, was as follows:

*Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Wm. A. Pew, Jr., Salem; lieutenant-colonel, Wm. Stopford, Beverly; major, Frank A. Graves, Marblehead; major, Edward H. Eldredge, Boston; adjutant, Thomas Barroll, Boston; surgeon-major, Wm. Cogswell, Boston; assistant-surgeon, Lieutenant Frank P. T. Logan, Gloucester; assistant-surgeon, Lieutenant Horace B. Frost, Boston; quartermaster, Chas. F. Wonson, Gloucester; chaplain, Geo. D. Sanders, Gloucester.

*Non-commissioned Staff.*

Sergeant-major, John R. Sanborn, Haverhill; quartermaster-sergeant, Chas. F. Perkins, Salem; hospital steward, Chas. L. Spaulding, Salem; hospital steward, Geo. A. Wood, Salem; hospital steward, E. Bennett Burnham, Salem; chief musician, Walter H. Thomas, Haverhill.

*Line Officers.*

Company A, Newburyport—Captain, Alexander G. Perkins; first lieutenant, Geo. W. Langdon; second lieutenant, Geo. H. Dow; all of Newburyport.

Company B, Amesbury—Captain, Horace S. Bean, Amesbury; first lieutenant, Frank Stinson, Amesbury; second lieutenant, James W. Jackman, Topsfield.

Company C, Marblehead—Captain, John M. Pettingill, Amesbury; first lieutenant, Frederick P. Smith, Dedham; second lieutenant, Edgar T. Whelpley, Salem.

Company D, Lynn—Captain, Chas. T. Hilliker, Lynn; first lieutenant, T. J. Cobey, Lynn; second lieutenant, Wm. F. Mason, Gloucester.

Company E, Beverly—Captain, Frederick W. Stopford, Beverly; first lieutenant, C. H. Farnham, Beverly; second lieutenant, L. J. Harvey, Lynn.

Company F, Haverhill—Captain, Wm. C. Dow, Haverhill; first lieutenant, Per Justus, Valdeman Svanberg, of Amesbury; second lieutenant, Alexander Robertson, Beverly.

Company G, Gloucester—Edward J. Horton, Gloucester; first lieutenant, Chas. M. McIsaac, Gloucester; second lieutenant, Chas. R. Warner, Lynn.

Company H, Salem—Captain, Augustus G. Reynolds, Salem; first lieutenant, Wm. F. Young, Lynn; second lieutenant, Thos. O. H. Pineau, Salem.

Company I, Lynn—Captain, John E. Williams, Lynn; first lieutenant, Francisco A. De Sousa, Beverly; second lieutenant, Wm. H. Perry, Lynn.

Company K, Danvers—Captain, A. Preston Chase, Danvers; first lieutenant, David E. Jewell, Haverhill; second lieutenant, David F. Whittier, Haverhill.

Company L, Lawrence—Captain, James Forbes, Lawrence; first lieutenant, Jas. H. Craig, Boston; second lieutenant, W. H. Glendenin, Somerville.

Company M, Somerville—Captain Herbert W. Whitten, Somerville; first lieutenant, Geo. I. Canfield, Somerville; second lieutenant, Frederick W. Pierce, Somerville.

One officer, First Lieutenant Frank H. Downey, of Company I, Lynn, died during the campaign, and the following officers resigned, owing to various causes: Lieutenant-Colonel Edwin W. M. Bailey, Assistant Surgeon Thos. L. Jenkins, Company C: Captain Frank B. Denning, First Lieutenant Linville H. Wardwell, Company G: Second Lieutenant James C. Nutt, Company H: Captain Walter P. Nichols, Captain Jacob C. R. Peabody, First Lieutenant George N. Jewett, Company K: First Lieutenant Henry W. French, Second Lieutenant Stephen N. Bond, Company L: Second Lieutenant Roland H. Sherman.

Much speculation was indulged in by the newspapers of the day, as to the probability of the Eighth appearing at the annual encampment at South Framingham in 1899, but on the 3d of August the regiment reported at camp, small in number, to be sure, but its work was of the best.

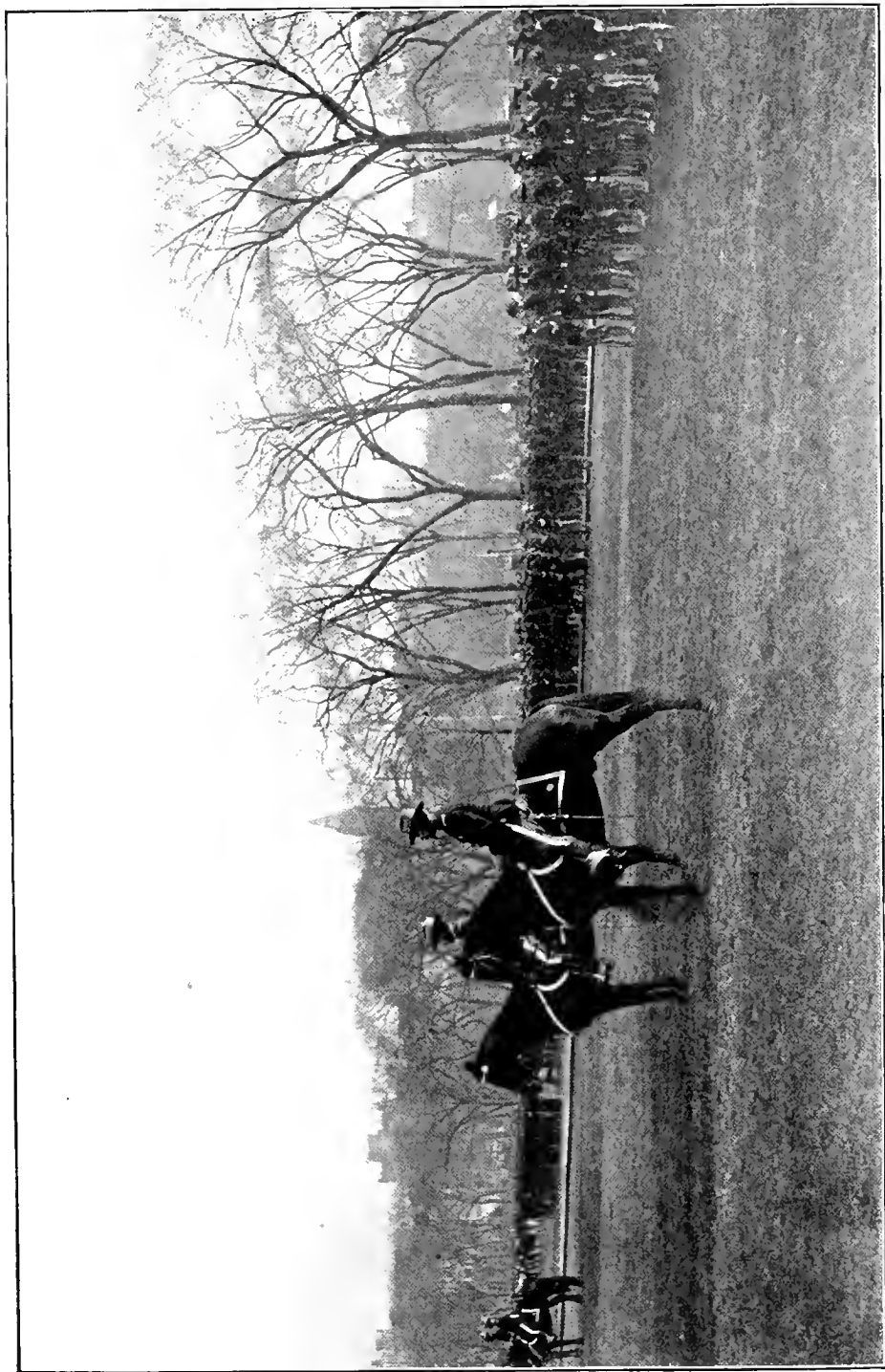
While the external dissensions remain, the internal harmony continues, and the Eighth is still on its way to be the monitor of what the citizen soldier should be: a well drilled but better disciplined *man*.

#### ADDENDA

Annual drills have been held by the command, principally as a separate organization. In 1888, a portion of this duty, was a parade in Boston with the entire State force; in 1881, with the brigade at Lynn, in 1892 and 1893, at Framingham, the day previous to the annual camp. In 1894, the forenoon was spent in movements in the vicinity of Boston, followed by a parade of the entire State force.

Chapter 204, of the Acts of 1876, passed April 28, reduced the infantry companies to sixty-one men. After rigid inspections, the most efficient were retained. Although twenty-six companies were disbanded, the Eighth Regiment retained all its companies, having a second time passed the ordeal of inspection without loss. The same act provided that eight companies should constitute a regiment. Companies F and I were detached and organized as the Seventh Battalion of Infantry. By Chapter 265, Acts of 1878, Companies I, Seventh Battalion; H, First Battalion, and F and K, Sixth Regiment, were assigned to it, making three battalions of four companies each the present organization. Since 1855, it has been commanded as follows:

Colonels Frederick J. Coffin, June 9, 1855, to April 20, 1859, and June 9, 1859, to April 11, 1861; Timothy Munroe, April 18, to May 15, 1861; Edward W. Hinks, May 16, 1861, to August 3, 1861; Frederick J. Coffin, May 26, 1862, to July 18, 1864; Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., July 22, 1864, to January 18, 1882; Charles L. Ayers, March 13, 1882, to December 4, 1885; Francis A. Osgood, January 5, 1886, to May 15, 1890; J. Albert Mills, June 10, 1890, to January 20, 1893; Charles L. Dodge, October 6, 1893, to June 15, 1895; William A. Pew, Jr., June 28, 1895, present commander.



*Photo by Marr.*

EIGHTH REGIMENT MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. V. THE LAST EVENING PARADE, BOSTON COMMON, APRIL 15, 1899.





## CHAPTER IV.

### THE NINTH REGIMENT OF INFANTRY.

By Colonel John R. Farrell and Others.

THE origin of the Ninth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, the famous "fighting Ninth" of the Civil War, and the "Irish Ninth" at all times, may be traced back nearly a century. It found its inspiration in that spirit of homogeneity, which is, perhaps, more characteristic of the Irish race in a foreign land than of any other; except, perhaps, the Scotch people; and the natural valor and patriotic spirit which have on so many bloody fields attested at once the courage and love of liberty of the "Sons of Erin." The Columbian Guards of Boston, organized in 1798, was one of the first American companies which embodied the spirit of patriotism as transferred by the Irish immigrant to his new home in America. It was an association of men of Hibernian descent, most of them still young, for the promotion of a patriotic, social, and military spirit, and continued to be one of the more honored and popular military organizations of Massachusetts up to the end of the war for the Union.



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL JOHN R. FARRELL

One of the most notable offshoots of the Columbian Guards was the famous "Boston Montgomery Guards," organized in the early half of the nineteenth century, and named in honor and commemoration of General Philip Montgomery, the Revolutionary patriot, who fell in 1776 at the gates of Quebec. For a decade, the Montgomery Guards were famous as the crack drill company of the whole country. After defeating all competitors at home, they were challenged to visit New York, Philadelphia, and other large cities, and almost invariably carried off the trophy of victory. Their reputation was indeed national.

When the first call to arms came from President Lincoln, the Montgomery Guards went to the front as Company I of the Ninth Regiment.

M. V. M., and the influence of their character and achievements in company drill and evolutions and the manual of arms, gave tone to the whole regiment, and to a great extent promoted its prompt enlistment and organization.

The history of the Ninth Regiment, as a part of the National Guard of Massachusetts, is inseparably connected with that of the Columbian Guards, and of the Ninth Massachusetts of the great Civil War.

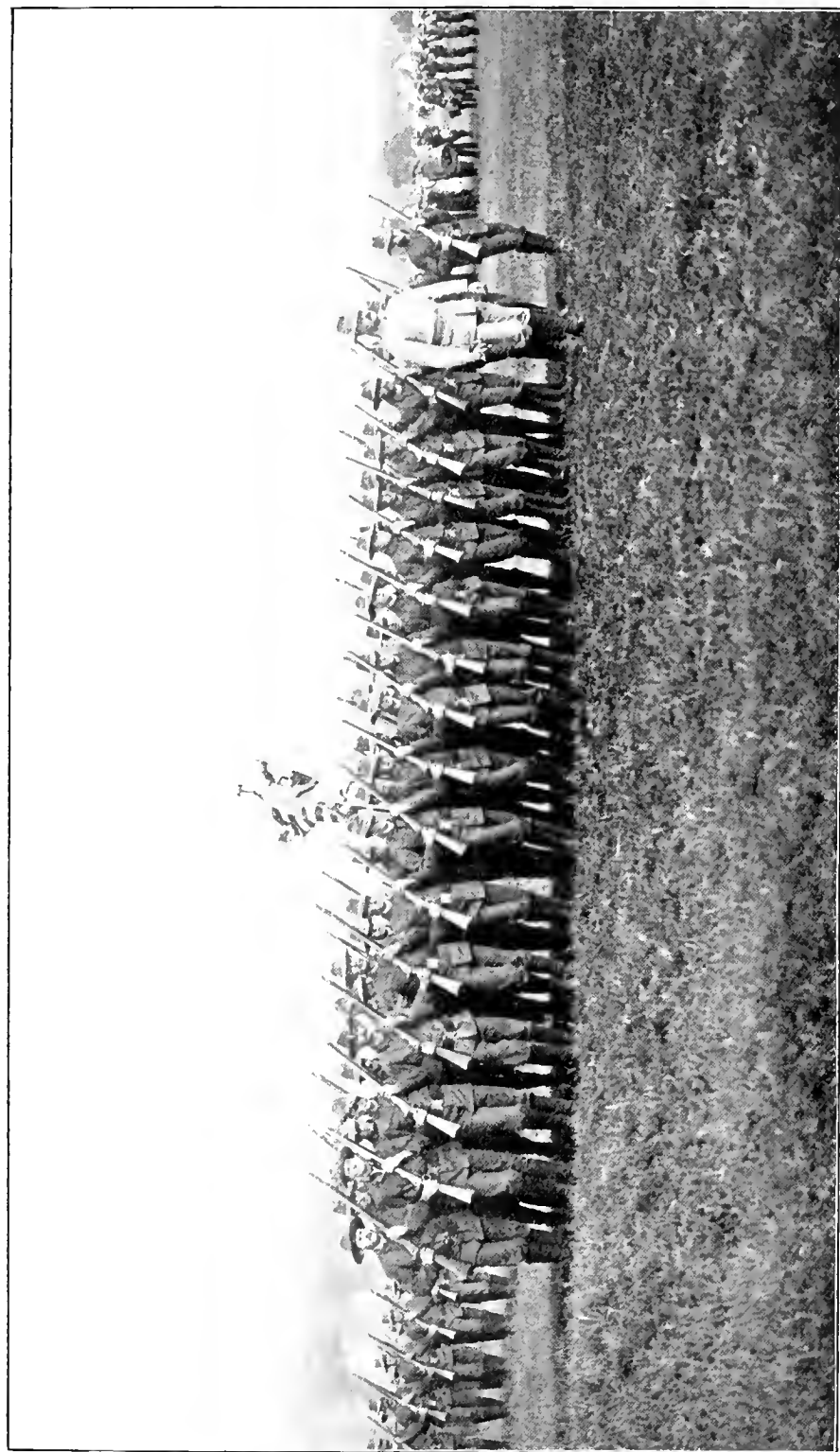
In the beginning of the year 1861, the Legislature of the State of Massachusetts (Chapter 49, Statutes of Massachusetts), repealed all laws heretofore enacted that limited the numbers of the militia, and bestowed authority upon the commander-in-chief to organize as many companies of the militia as he might think proper. Such companies were to be held in readiness at all times to respond to the direct call of the President of the United States, the time being the troublous period of the opening days of the Rebellion. This act was made a law February 15th, 1861, and on the 3rd of April following, a resolve (Chapter 67), was passed, authorizing the adjutant-general of this State, under direction of the governor and council, "to provide either by contract or otherwise a sufficient number of overcoats, blankets, and such other articles of equipment as may be necessary to furnish two thousand troops for active service." Twenty-five thousand dollars was appropriated for this purpose.

The foregoing was a sweeping repeal of the several acts of the Legislature relating to the militia, from 1836, when the Revised Statutes were adopted, down to 1861, when the General Statutes superseded them. The thirteenth chapter of the General Statutes contained the whole body of the militia laws in force in the Commonwealth in the year 1861, and down to the passage of the law of 1864 (Chapter 238).

Under the law of 1861, the Columbian Artillery—an organization of young Irishmen for social and military purposes, commanded by Captain Thomas Cass, and one of the oldest organizations in the State—offered its services for "three or thirty years," was recruited as the Ninth Regiment, M. V. M., and was mustered into the service of the United States for three years, June 11, 1861. It is a simple statement of fact that its record, both of officers and men, is now a matter of brilliant history.

After the departure of the regiment, the Columbian Artillery continued, as an organization, to recruit many new men, who were sent out to join the ranks of the Ninth at the front.

The Ninth Regiment was mustered out of this glorious and momentous period of service, within ten days of the completed period of enlistment, viz: June 21, 1864, at Washington, D. C. The regiment took part in the two great battles of the peninsula—Gaines' Mill and Malvern Hill; at Gaines' Mill the regiment lost eighty-one men in killed alone; Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Mine Run, The Wilderness, Spottsyl-



*Photo by T. E. Mear*

NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, M. V. M., ON REVIEW, 1900. ENCAMPMENT SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M. SOUTH FRAMINGHAM, MASS.



vania, North Anna, Po River, Bethesda Church, Shady Oak and Coal Harbor—certainly a noble list. The regiment was composed chiefly of men of Irish blood and extraction, and, as a matter of actual statistics, ninety per cent. of them were born on Irish soil. It was a most excellent organization, particularly distinguished in active service, and reflected great credit on the State and nation.

## FORMATION OF THE NEW NINTH REGIMENT.

The law of October, 1864, already referred to, had meanwhile so changed the face of things military, that the Columbian Artillery (or Association, as was the more proper name), found itself unable to receive back again into its bosom the returning Ninth. After a short interval a company was recruited from its former ranks, formally organized on February 8, 1865, and was known as the 40th Unattached Company, M. V. M. This was soon followed by the formation of other organizations composed of men of Irish birth and extraction. When the time had developed for the consolidation of these into a regiment, the old Ninth was, by courtesy of Adjutant-General William Schouler, given the opportunity to continue its history in the field, and its traditions and associations as a fighting organization. On May 18, 1866, the following named unattached companies, M. V. M., were named to constitute a regiment to be known as the Ninth Regiment of Infantry:—

Company A, forty men—Captain, John R. Farrell, Boston; First Lieutenant, Joseph Coogan, Boston; Second Lieutenant, William J. Flynn.

Company B, fifty-two men—Captain, James McArdle, Boston; First Lieutenant, William J. Faulkner, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Eugene McCarthy, Boston.

Company C, fifty-three men—Captain, John McGuire, Chelsea; First Lieutenant, John Mulloy, Chelsea; Second Lieutenant, Thomas Scanlan, Chelsea.

Company D, fifty-five men—Captain, Michael Scanlan, Boston; First Lieutenant, Lawrence Logan, Boston.

Company E, fifty-six men—Captain, John M. Tobin, Boston; First Lieutenant, John F. Doherty, Boston; Second Lieutenant, William D. Cunningham, Boston.

Company F, fifty-seven men—Captain, Patrick F. Logan, Boston; First Lieutenant, Hugh McDevitt, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Henry P. Kelly, Boston.

Company G, fifty-nine men—Captain, James White, Charlestown; First Lieutenant, Matthew Welsh, Charlestown; Second Lieutenant, ————, Charlestown.

Company H, sixty men—Captain, Peter A. Sinnott, Boston; First Lieutenant, Simon S. Rankin, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Patrick McDonough, Boston.

Company I, fifty-six men—Captain, Timothy A. Hurley, Boston; First Lieutenant, Bernard A. Finan, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Hugh A. Maddox, Boston.

Company K, sixty-three men—Captain, Robert A. Miller, Boston; First Lieutenant, James Dailey, Boston; Second Lieutenant, William Barry, Boston.

An order was issued and an election was held at the Columbian Armory, 47 Hanover Street, on May 29, 1866, at which the following officers were elected, and the organization completed as part of the First Brigade of Infantry:—

Colonel, Patrick J. Guiney, Roxbury; Lieutenant-Colonel, John R. Farrell, Boston; Major, James McArdle, Boston; Adjutant and First Lieutenant, Bernard F.

Finan, Boston; Quartermaster and Second Lieutenant, James J. Flynn, Boston; Surgeon and Major, Patrick A. O'Connell, Boston; Assistant Surgeon and First Lieutenant, Thomas B. Flatley, Boston; Chaplain and First Lieutenant, Joseph B. O'Hagan, Boston.

The new regiment was ordered into the camp at Sharon, September 11, 1866, where they had the honor of being inspected and reviewed by Major-General B. F. Butler, and were by him highly complimented for the proficiency already attained as an organization in drill and discipline.

The roster of the Ninth Regiment at this time was as follows:—

Company A—Captain, Timothy Teaffe, Boston; First Lieutenant, John McGrath, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Henry P. Teaffe, Boston.

Company B—Captain, Eugene McCarthy, Boston; First Lieutenant, Francis Rorke, Boston; Second Lieutenant, John A. Daley, Boston.

Company C—Captain, John McGuire, Chelsea; First Lieutenant, John Mulloy, Chelsea; Second Lieutenant, Thomas Scanlon, Chelsea.

Company D—Captain, Michael Scanlon, Boston; First Lieutenant, Lawrence Logan, Boston; Second Lieutenant, James Scott, Boston.

Company E—Captain John F. Doherty, Boston; First Lieutenant, Lawrence McGrath, Boston; Second Lieutenant, ———, Boston.

Company F—Captain Patrick F. Logan, Boston; First Lieutenant, Hugh McDevitt, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Henry P. Kelly, Boston.

Company G—Captain James White, Charlestown; First Lieutenant, Matthew Welsh, Charlestown; Second Lieutenant, James H. Potts, Charlestown.

Company H—Captain, Simon S. Rankin, Charlestown; First Lieutenant, ———, Charlestown; Second Lieutenant, Peter F. Rourke, Charlestown.

Company I—Captain, Timothy A. Hurley, Charlestown; First Lieutenant, Hugh A. Madden, Charlestown; Second Lieutenant, Dennis A. Collins, Charlestown.

Company K—Captain, Robert A. Miller, Charlestown; First Lieutenant, James Dailey, Charlestown; Second Lieutenant, William Barry, Charlestown.

Too much credit can hardly be given the officers and men of the old Ninth, who were instrumental at this time in the organization of the new Ninth. The old regiment deserved perpetuation on account of the manner in which it had upheld, on many a field of the Rebellion, the traditions of valor; and the organization thus formed has been kept orderly, intact and growing, down to the present time.

It is only fitting in this connection to call general attention to the circumstance, that the memory of Colonel B. F. Finan is kept green in the hearts of the regiment, which still includes a number of his surviving comrades of the bloody field, especially on account of his efforts in placing the new Ninth in the proud position it has now held for a third of a century. And here is the place to add that to the family of fame, the "fighting Ninth" has contributed one member of undisputed credentials, in the person of Colonel Thomas Cass, of whose career all Bostonians are reminded, whenever they cross that beautiful urban domain known as the City Park.

---

By the Editor—Since the above was written, the stone statue of Colonel Cass has been replaced by a more enduring and statelier monument of bronze.



STATUE OF COLONEL THOMAS CASS, NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY, MASS. VOLS., 1861-64.  
PUBLIC GARDENS, BOSTON, MASS., 1900.





## THE NINTH REGIMENT, 1861-1864.

Captain Cass, who in 1861 commanded the Columbian Association, raised an Irish regiment for three years, was elected colonel, and soon moulded it into an effective fighting body. The regiment encamped in May at Long Island and embarked for Washington on June 24, 1861. Shortly after the battle of Bull Run, the Ninth, hitherto in garrison, encamped at Arlington, near the Potomac. Here they received from the boys of the Eliot School the national flag which led them into every battle on the peninsula, beside the green flag of Ireland, neither of which ever was lowered, and in defence of which many a brave fellow fell. At the Grand Review, where nearly one hundred thousand men passed before General McClellan, they were complimented on their appearance. After Yorktown was evacuated the Union troops, marching day and night, encamped near Richmond. At Hanover Court House the Ninth engaged the enemy about three o'clock p. m., charged them with savage cheers, in one long, unwavering line, and after a hand-to-hand contest the enemy broke and fled. From Gaines' Mills, the Ninth in June moved to Mechanicsville, and repulsed the enemy, returning again the next day to Gaines' Mills. Here the Ninth showed indomitable firmness, holding the rebels in check; but they finally retreated to Porter's main line. They were then ordered forward to hold Mill Creek, together with two other regiments. These never advanced, but the Ninth, solitary and alone, held the position, fighting a vastly superior force until General Griffin, learning that the other two regiments failed to co-operate, ordered the Ninth back.

The Ninth was posted in the woods, under the crest of a hill; all organized Union forces had disappeared. Frantic efforts were being made in the valley to collect the scattered troops, and between them and the enemy the Ninth alone stood, solid and fast in line. Disaster seemed to overwhelm all others, and officers were rushing madly about, vainly striving to collect the remnants of their commands. The Ninth stood among their dead, but no support came. A rebel brigade charged their position. Lieutenant-Colonel Guiney ordered the colors forward, "Men, follow your colors"; the Ninth delivered a galling fire, came to the charge, dashed upon the enemy, broke their lines, chased and routed them. Time and again this was done, and finally, decimated so by shot and shell, after eight hours of consecutive fighting without food or drink, they were forced to fall back. With sullen determination, they rallied again, and nine successive times did they meet their astonished enemies in terrific encounter. The enemy was held in check until darkness, when they withdrew, leaving the Ninth possessors of the field.

It was at Malvern Hill, that death claimed their gallant leader. Here the Ninth again confronted the enemy, who were in a line of battle

in a dense wood, forming a semicircle around the Union troops. The Confederate troops were advancing. Colonel Cass gave the command "Charge!" the enemy hesitated, halted, wavered, then broke, turned and fled to the woods, but Colonel Cass fell, mortally wounded. The charges continued, first one side and then the other, until night-fall closed the battle.

Colonel Cass was sought out by his devoted wife, who had him tenderly removed to his home at Boston. Everything was done that art or affection could suggest, but he died August 12, 1862, having received his wound July 1. He was succeeded by Lieutenant-Colonel P. A. Guiney, whose courage and ability were universally recognized. Under Colonel Guiney, in September, they marched one hundred miles in four days, and on the 17th were engaged in the battle of Antietam, and there valorously fought as of yore.

At Fredericksburg a Pennsylvania colonel, who commanded the brigade, halted the Ninth in an open plain, facing a tempest of bullets and shells. The regiment charged up a hill and awaited orders to charge Ewell's division, which was doing fearful execution, being protected by a stone wall. Darkness came on, but the order to advance came not. Lee was wellnigh impregnable. All day Sunday nothing was gained. The Union forces that night fell back: the great sacrifice of life had been in vain.

At Gettysburg, the first day, the regiment did picket duty, but the second day maintained a position of immense importance on the left, opposite Lee's right. It was thought many times that the rebels would disperse or annihilate the Ninth; but notwithstanding the terrible onslaughts of the enemy, the position was maintained. The regiment returned to Virginia, encamping at Warrenton and Beverley Fort. At Rappahannock Station, a battle took place at night, in which the rebels were driven into the river in hopeless confusion. At Mine Run the regiment was held in reserve, greatly exposed. It was in mid-winter, and the men had to lie quietly on the cold ground; ice formed on the stream, and many men were frozen to death. The Ninth then went into winter quarters and remained until the spring of 1864.

In the Wilderness the Ninth would have won a victory, but, not being supported by the regiments on their flank, were compelled to retreat; but the ground was fiercely contested. Their noble efforts at Spottsylvania, Shady Oak, and Cold Harbor, and many other places, sustained their reputation for valor and fidelity to the Union.

The Ninth Regiment, on the 10th of June, 1864, left for Washington, their time having expired, and met in Boston a hearty reception, and on June 21 were mustered out of the service of the United States. Thus ended the Civil War record of the Old Ninth Regiment; a record of valiant deeds and heavy losses of brave men.

## THE NINTH REGIMENT OF INFANTRY, U. S. V., IN THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR.

By F. T. Pope.

With the reputation of the glorious Fighting Ninth of '61 to sustain, and with the memory of the record made by their fathers at Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Antietam, and Malvern Hill, in their hearts, the Ninth Regiment, M. V. M., as one man, responded to President McKinley's call for volunteers, and left home and loved ones to battle for the honor of their country and the Old Bay State. It is seldom that the people of New England are permitted to see a finer looking body of men than that which marched to the station from the East Armory in Boston, on the morning of May 4, 1898.

The Ninth left for Framingham under the following officers:—

*Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Fred B. Bogan, Boston; Lieutenant-Colonel, Lawrence J. Logan, South Boston; Major, Patrick J. Grady, East Boston; Major, William H. Donovan, Lawrence; Major, Michael J. O'Connor, South Boston; Adjutant, Joseph J. Kelley, South Boston; Quartermaster, Jeremiah G. Fennessey, Boston; Chaplain, P. B. Murphy, Saxonville; Surgeon, Francis T. L. Magurn, Charlestown; Assistant-Surgeon, William H. Devine, South Boston; Assistant-Surgeon, Cornelius J. McGillicuddy, Revere.

*Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergeant-Major, Edward J. Logan, South Boston; Quartermaster-Sergeant, John A. O'Connor, Charlestown; Chief Musician, James E. Sullivan, Dorchester; Principal Musician, Henry J. Althe, Roxbury; Principal Musician, Peter F. Sullivan, Worcester; Hospital Steward, John F. Riley, South Boston; Hospital Steward, Halfdan Rye Breiner, Jamaica Plain; Hospital Steward, Peter Shea, Framingham.

*Line Officers.*

Company A, Boston—Captain, Daniel J. Keefe, Cambridge; First Lieutenant, George M. Rogers, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Timothy J. Sullivan, Boston.

Company B, Boston—Captain, George Murray, South Boston; First Lieutenant, James F. Walsh, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Michael S. Desmond, South Boston.

Company C, Boston—Captain, Thomas F. Quinlan, Boston; First Lieutenant, Henry Crane, Boston; Second Lieutenant, Joseph J. Foley, Boston.

Company D, Charlestown—Captain, David P. Sawyer; First Lieutenant, John J. Dwyer; Second Lieutenant, Charles E. Brines.

Company E, Boston—Captain, J. J. Sullivan; First Lieutenant, John J. Barry; Second Lieutenant, Thomas Devane.

Company F, Lawrence—Captain, Joseph H. Joubert; First Lieutenant, Patrick A. Sands; Second Lieutenant, Michael S. Boles.

Company G, Worcester—Captain, Jeremiah Moynihan; First Lieutenant, John F. Hurley; Second Lieutenant, William E. McCann.

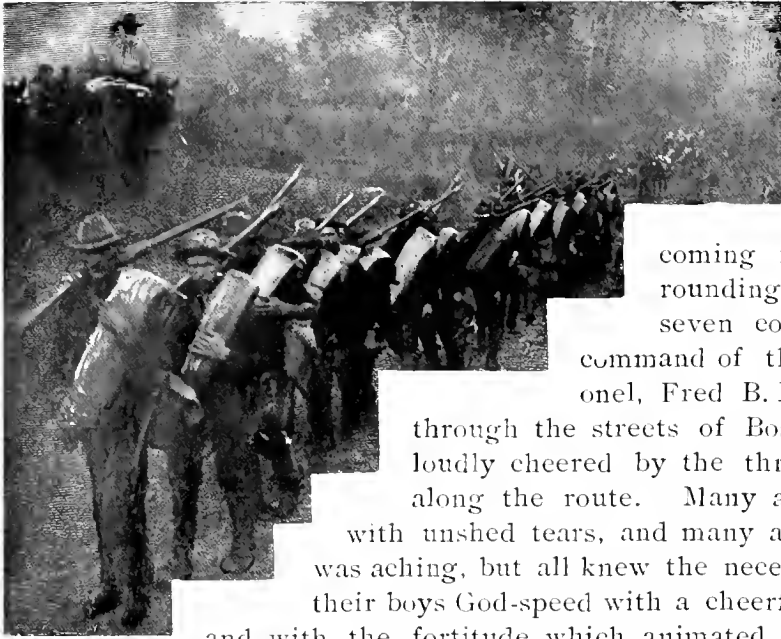
Company H, Boston—Captain, John J. Hayes; First Lieutenant, Benjamin J. Flanagan; Second Lieutenant, Thomas F. Clark.

Company I, Boston—Captain, John H. Dunn; First Lieutenant, W. J. Casey; Second Lieutenant, James A. Cully.

Company K, Clinton—Captain, Peter J. Cannon; First Lieutenant, M. J. Healey; Second Lieutenant, John J. Boyle.

Company L, Natick—Captain, Michael E. Morris; First Lieutenant, Daniel J. Murphy; Second Lieutenant, Philip Connealy.

Company M, Lowell—Captain, Anthony D. Mitten; First Lieutenant, J. S. Gillow; Second Lieutenant, Philip McNulty.



THE NIGHT MARCH.

Seven, out of the twelve companies of the Ninth, were enlisted in Boston; the other five coming from the surrounding towns. As the seven companies under command of their gallant colonel, Fred B. Bogan, marched through the streets of Boston, they were loudly cheered by the throngs of people along the route. Many an eye was wet with unshed tears, and many a mother's heart was aching, but all knew the necessity of bidding their boys God-speed with a cheerful countenance, and with the fortitude which animated the Spartans in ancient days, said "Farewell" with a smile, although their hearts were nigh to breaking. On arriving at camp they found everything prepared for their reception, and at once devoted themselves to persistent drill and preparation.

For four weeks the regiment was encamped at Camp Dewey at South Framingham, and during that period they were several times ordered to be ready to leave for the front, but were disappointed at the last moment. Finally, on May 30, definite orders were received for the regiment to report to the commanding general at Camp Alger, near Falls Church, Virginia, and on the evening of the 31st the command started, the last sounds heard being the farewell cheers of thousands of their friends.

Hardly had the trains left South Framingham, when the run of ill-fortune, which seemed to follow the Ninth throughout the war, commenced. At Westboro, Massachusetts, private Charles J. Doherty, of Company I, while leaning out of the car window, struck his head against an iron standpipe at the side of the track and was fatally injured. He was at once taken to the City Hospital in Boston and died the same evening.

Late in the afternoon of June 1, the Ninth arrived at Alger, and as they marched into the camp bearing, side by side, the national colors, the State flag of Massachusetts and the green banner and golden harp of old Ireland, they were greeted by the hearty cheers of the "Old Irish Seventh" of Illinois. Not content with giving the Bay State boys a glorious

welcome, the men of the Seventh immediately extended an invitation to the regiment to take supper with them, and carried them off by companies to their own camp a short distance away.

The regiment left Massachusetts with a complement of 943 men, and during the month of June enough recruits were sent down from Massachusetts to raise it to the full war strength of 1327 men. From June 1 until June 24, the command remained at Camp Alger. Although camp life was rather monotonous, the men were by no means idle during the time. The Massachusetts troops were, without exception, the best equipped volunteer regiments to take the field, but at the same time they were far from having everything necessary to their welfare in an active campaign. During their stay at Camp Alger all deficiencies in equipment were supplied, and the practice in drill and discipline did them a world of good. They were placed in what was then called the "Provisional Brigade of the Second Army Corps." Colonel F. B. Bogan being the senior commander of the three regiments in the brigade, the Ninth Massachusetts, Thirty-Third and Thirty-Fourth Michigan, was in command for a



HEADQUARTERS AT SIBONEY

time. Later, however, Brigadier-General Duffield, a personal friend of Secretary Alger, was assigned to the command of the brigade.

On the evening of June 23, the long-looked for orders were received, and on the afternoon of June 24, the Ninth with drums beating and colors flying, marched out of the camp amid the cheers of their less fortunate comrades in other regiments, and at last were fairly on their way to the front. The next morning they were in Newport News, Virginia, where they were to take the transport for Cuba, and in the afternoon were transferred to the Harvard by means of two of the small coast steamers. With the Ninth, were two battalions of the Thirty-Fourth Michigan; the Thirty-Third Michigan and the other battalion of the Thirty-Fourth having preceded them on the Yale. The next morning sailing orders were received, and before many hours had passed, the shores of the United States had faded from the view of the Bay State boys, many of whom were fated never to see them again.

The voyage to Cuba was devoid of any special interest, and on the morning of July 1, the Harvard dropped anchor off Siboney, and by six o'clock the same evening the troops were landed and encamped on the beach. They were hardly on shore when an aid arrived from the General Shafter's headquarters, with orders for Colonel Bogan to have his command in readiness to move at midnight. Supper was at once served out to the men, and was hardly finished when a fresh order arrived, countermanding the previous one, and instructing the regiment to drop everything and start at once, as there was heavy fighting going on at the front, and it was badly needed.

Then came that terrible night march, the memory of which will remain in the minds of those who made it as long as they have life. Three days' rations were issued, and at 6.30 o'clock at night, carrying nothing but rifles, ammunition, canteens and haversacks, the regiment started over the trail for the firing line. The distance to be covered was about 16 miles. There were hills to climb, swamps to cross, and rivers to ford. All night they dragged themselves wearily on. Hungry, wet, tired and dirty, their spirits never flagged, and their behavior during the whole time showed that the indomitable spirit of their fathers in the "Old Ninth" was still alive in the sons.

Colonel Bogan was too ill to go, so at about 10 p. m. Lieutenant-Colonel Logan took command, with the understanding that great haste was requested, and that, at the suggestion of General Shafter's aid, the blankets and tentage was to be left behind. There were no horses, and the officers were obliged to march with the men. When they started the moon was shining brightly, but as soon as they got away from the beach and back among the hills, the trail was so shadowed by the trees and chapparal on either hand, that hardly a glimmer of light shone on the

paths. As one of the men said:—"We used to complain of the rough roads around Camp Alger, but they were asphalted boulevards compared with the one from Siboney to Bloody Hill."

Roots and stumps stuck up in the road, and the rain during the day had covered the ground with several inches of soft, sticky mud. Every few minutes some man would trip over a root or step into a hole, and down he would go on his face, his rifle pitching into the mud ahead of him. The darkness was impenetrable, and many times those at the



GENERALS GARCIA AND CASTILLO OF THE CUBAN ARMY.

head of the column would discover that they had left the trail and were entangled in the underbrush. In many places the trail was blocked by wagons carrying ammunition to the front, and taking wounded to the rear, and over these wagons the men were obliged to clamber. For the first two hours they were in good spirits, cracking jokes and laughing good-naturedly at each other's misfortunes; but as time went on, and they became more and more weary, all talk and laughter ceased, each one being too much distracted by his own discomfort and misery to give a thought to his comrades, or to the fact that there might be Spanish sharpshooters in the trees along the road.

Many wounded were coming from the front on their way to the hospital at Siboney, some in wagons and ambulances, and some on foot, dragging themselves wearily along. By questioning them, the men of the



AT THE FORDS.

Ninth learned that there had been hard fighting all day, but that our troops had had the best of it, and that the Spaniards had been forced to fall back. They also learned of the terrible charge at El Caney, and the boys looked wonderingly at the men who told the story, as they stood with bandaged heads and arms, almost every one smoking, and apparently as contented and cheerful as if they had just come from an evening's entertainment. The road grew worse and worse the farther they went. There was no attempt to keep any regular order in marching, as the trail was so narrow in many places that the men were obliged to march in single file. Several streams were crossed which had been so swollen by the recent rains that they were oftentimes up to the shoulders of the men. Frequent halts were called, and the men would drop in the mud and doze off until the order "Forward!" brought them to their feet again.

When day broke the sun shone on a most forlorn set of men. Unwashed, unkempt, and with uniforms covered with mud, they looked as if they had passed through a hard campaign. At five o'clock they were halted for a short rest, and at seven all were awakened and started on again.

By this time they were so close to the firing line that they could hear the sound of the firing, and the bullets flew "zipping" over their heads,



making a strange, whistling noise, which was not particularly pleasant for green troops to hear. A little later a shell screamed overhead, and burst just beyond them. It was the first experience the boys had had with that sort of thing, and many of them ducked involuntarily, while some dropped flat on the ground. A laugh went up from the regiment, and those who had dropped, picked themselves up looking rather sheepish, although it was a perfectly natural act. Just before reaching San Juan hill the road forked, and the Ninth bearing to the left, skirted the base of the hill and halted just behind it for a short rest.

Our troops were in the trenches on the top of the hill, blazing away at the Spaniards in their intrenchments across the valley. The firing was incessant, and long lines of wounded were coming to the rear, many of them on rude litters, or helped by a comrade. Again the Ninth moved on towards the left of the line, and, after two or three more short halts, were placed on the extreme left, next to the Twentieth Regiment of regulars. Several times before they reached this position they were obliged to cross exposed spots. Through these gaps between the hills they could catch glimpses across the valley of the white walls and red roofs of the City of Santiago. While crossing one of these open spots, Private Donovan was struck on the hand by a fragment of a shell—being the first man wounded in the command.



IN THE TRENCHES.

The Ninth was placed in a sunken road which afforded some protection from the bullets which were coming thick and fast, and in this position they lay all day. About dusk, in response to an order from General Bates, companies C and I, under command of Captain Dunn, were sent to re-enforce the Tenth Infantry, but lost their way, and finally found themselves near the position held by the Second Infantry, which was also in need of re-enforcements, and where they were held. A little later, another request was received from the Tenth, and companies G and K were sent. The other eight companies remained in the sunken road, having added to the protection it afforded them by scooping out trenches with their bayonets and spoons. Their sleep that night was not peaceful, for about ten o'clock all were awakened by the sound of firing, and were on their feet in an instant, making hasty preparations for the fight they were sure was at hand. The Spaniards had made an attack on our lines, hoping for a surprise in the darkness, and to recover the ground lost during the day; but they found the Americans awake and ready for them, and after an hour's hard fighting, they were forced to fall back, leaving many dead and wounded. The remainder of the night passed quietly, with the exception of a few scattering shots, and the next morning a truce was declared, to last until five o'clock on the afternoon of the 5th.

About four o'clock on the afternoon of the 4th, a number of the men of Company B, under Captain Murray, who were on outpost duty near the San Juan river, captured a Spanish sharpshooter who was trying to enter the American lines before the truce expired. He was sent under guard to General Bates' headquarters, and from thence to General Shafter's.

The truce continued by frequent renewals until July 10, and on that day the firing commenced at 4.30 in the afternoon and continued until 3.30 on the afternoon of the 11th, when a truce was again declared. The Ninth took no part in the firing on the 10th and 11th, as it had been moved a short distance to the rear, to a position formerly occupied by the Third Infantry, and the Third took the place of the Ninth in the trenches. The new camp of the Ninth was on a little ridge, and here they remained until the 18th, the day after the formal surrender of the city.

When the regiment left Siboney on the night of the first of July, a detail of forty men, under command of Quartermaster J. G. Fennessy, was left behind to remove the baggage and other stores from the Harvard. Some of the baggage was taken on shore on the 2nd, and the work was to have been continued on the morning of the third. On that morning, however, Cervera made his bold dash for liberty out of Santiago harbor, and the Harvard, with the men of the Ninth on board, steamed up the coast to render the fleet any assistance in her power. After the last Spanish vessel had been silenced, Captain Cotton, of the Harvard, was ordered to take on board some 672 prisoners who had reached the shore.



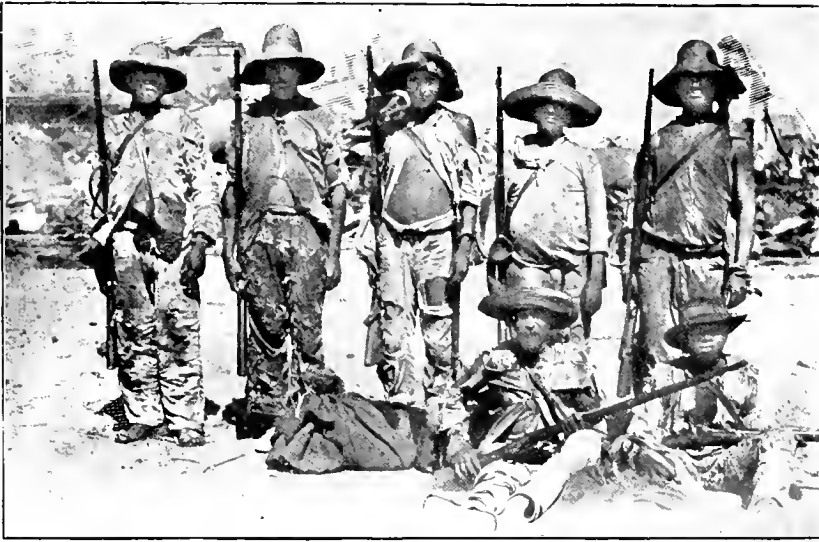
"BORROWER'S PET," THE DYNAMITE GUN.



GRAVES OF THE ROUGH RIDERS, LAS GUASIMAS.



These prisoners were from the *Infanta Maria Teresa* and the *Almirante Oquendo*, which had been beached a short distance west of the mouth of the harbor. Fearing an attack by a party of Cubans which was near the beach, the Spaniards claimed the protection of the American flag, and the little *Gloucester*, under Commander Wainwright, ran in close to the shore, and her crew took charge of the prisoners. Late in the evening they were all on board the *Harvard*, and were placed in an enclosure which had been roped off aft. The force of marines was small, and the men of the Ninth were ordered to assist in guarding the prisoners. Just before midnight on the 4th, one of the prisoners got into a quarrel with one of the sentries, and the sentry was knocked down. As if by a pre-



CUBAN INFANTRY AT SANTIAGO.

concerted signal, fully two-thirds of the Spaniards at once broke through the rope and ran forward on both sides of the vessel. The guards had been told that the rope was the dead line, and that none of the prisoners except the officers' servants should be allowed to pass it; so, as soon as the rope fell, one of the guards fired. Other shots followed, and although Sergeant O'Sullivan, who was in charge of the guard, tried to stop the firing, it was several minutes before it ceased.

In less than five minutes, however, the trouble was over, and the Spaniards were back in the enclosure, thoroughly cowed. They suffered some loss, however, as six were killed and twelve wounded, one of whom died the next day. A complaint was made later by the Spanish government as to the shooting of these men, it being claimed that it was entirely unnecessary, but an investigation justified the action. On July 17, San-

tiago was formally surrendered, and the Ninth took part in the ceremonies, and planted the white State flag on the walls of the city.

On July 19, the day after the formal surrender of Santiago, the Ninth received orders to move towards the right of the line and went into camp in a swampy country about four miles out of the city, near General Wheeler's headquarters, where they remained until August 1st. On that date the regiment moved again, and established a camp on a hill near the road to Santiago.

The climate and the scarcity of food had begun to tell on the men, and many of them were sickening. Hardly a day passed without some of them being taken to the hospital at the foot of the hill, sick with typhoid fever or malaria. Stout, strong men were becoming veritable living skeletons, and were weak as children, so that when the fever came upon them they could not throw it off, and had not enough vitality to fight for their lives. Both food and water were very poor, most of the streams being polluted by men bathing and washing their clothes in them.

On July 25, Lieutenant-Colonel Logan and Captain Dunn, who were both very ill with fever, left for Tampa on the Santiago, reaching Boston on August 15.

Colonel Bogan was very ill, and had been ordered by the surgeons to leave Cuba. He protested strongly, but was finally convinced that his life depended upon it, and decided to go. Arrangements were made for his departure on July 30, and on that very day Major Grady died. His death was a severe blow to the whole regiment, as no officer was more universally beloved, or did more for the good of his men.



RAPID FIRE GUN BEFORE SANTIAGO



COAST-LINE RAILROAD, SANTIAGO.

On the afternoon of the 30th, Colonel Bogan, accompanied by his orderly, Private Anderson, left Cuba for home. Colonel Bogan was quite ill on the trip, but on his arrival at New York, at once took the train for Boston, arriving there on August 5. Friends met him at the station, and he was driven to his home in Charlestown. Everything possible was done to restore him to health, but all efforts were in vain. Little by little he sank, and on the morning of the 9th breathed his last. The Ninth Regiment will always feel his loss deeply. No one ever had a better or a truer friend than Colonel Fred Bogan, and it will be hard to find any one who can take his place in the hearts of his men.

On the 12th, with a volley fired over his grave by his comrades in arms, he was laid to rest in Holy Cross cemetery in Malden. He was buried as a soldier and a Christian, and the tributes due a hero were accorded to his memory. The highest dignitaries of state and city testified by their presence, not only their personal sympathy, but the sympathy of the entire commonwealth and municipality as well. Military officers from all over the state came to pay their tribute of respect to their dead brother in arms, while the streets over which the funeral procession passed were fringed with sorrowing thousands.

But death was still to claim other victims among the officers of the Ninth. On August 6, the day after Colonel Bogan's arrival in Boston, Major O'Connor died. He was one of the most popular and efficient officers in the state militia, and was always ready to sacrifice his

own preferences, to do anything that would benefit his own or any other regiment. Colonel Bogan, and Majors Grady and O'Connor were all brave and efficient officers, true gentlemen, and true friends, and their loss will be long felt, not only in military circles but by all who knew them.

It was not only the officers who were taken, however, as many of the men sickened and died from fever and exposure. Every day during the latter part of July, and all through August, men were taken to the hospitals; many of them never to return. Almost every morning new names were added to the already appalling list of deaths. The men were surrounded by swamps, and the dampness and heavy rains played havoc with them. They were short of doctors, medicine, food and even pure water, and there was hardly a man in the entire command who did not have an attack of sickness of some sort.

On August 16, a party of Boston men rode into the camp of the Ninth. There were three in the party, and they had made the trip from Massachusetts to Cuba for the purpose of recovering, and removing to the United States, the bodies of Majors Grady and O'Connor, Corporal Joseph Lane and Private Frank Carey. After a great deal of trouble and hard work, the bodies were disinterred, and made ready for shipment. Major Grady's body was the only one which was in a coffin; Lieutenant Flanagan having torn up his tent floor to make the rude box in which his commander was laid to rest. The caskets containing the four bodies were placed on the transport *Santiago*, which sailed from Cuba on August 20, arriving off Montauk on the 26th. A special permit was obtained the next day, and the remains were removed from the steamer and taken to Boston by a party of friends.

On the 12th, Major Grady, Corporal Lane and Private Carey were buried, and the city of Boston never before witnessed such a funeral. They died as soldiers, and they received a soldier's burial. It was a worthy tribute to their faithful service amid many perils and hardships; the danger of bullets, fever, semi-starvation, weariness, thirst, and even death, under the burning sun of a foreign clime, far from home and kindred. The streets were thronged with tens of thousands of people, and as the solemn procession moved slowly along, the three hearses with their black trappings, side by side, there was hardly a dry eye in the multitude, and the universal baring of heads was a tribute more thrilling and more impressive than the cheers of millions.

On the next day all that was mortal of Major O'Connor was borne to its last resting place. As on the previous day, the streets were crowded with people to do honor to one who had played well his part in life, and who in death had earned his reward. Many of those who saw the hearse with its four black horses and sombre trappings, and the riderless charger led behind, had never known the dead man, but they honored



him because he had honored and died for the flag. It was not idle curiosity that drew this immense concourse of people from their homes, and which brought moisture to so many eyes when the flag-covered casket passed; it was a genuine tribute to courage displayed, to honor maintained, to patriotism demonstrated.



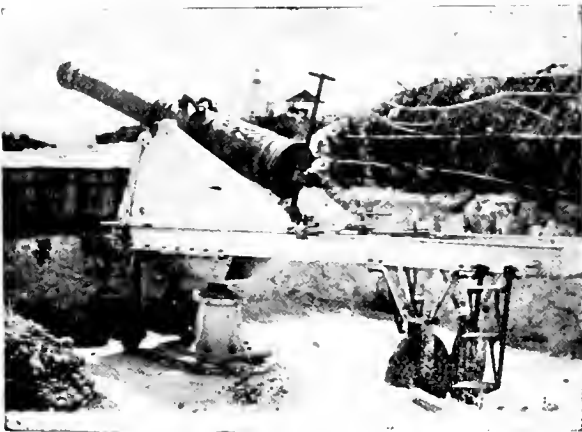
LEAVING FOR HOME. SANTIAGO, 1898.

All this time the regiment remained in its pest camp, and although promises were often made that the men should be sent home, no definite orders were received for their departure. Almost the entire regiment was on the sick list, and "sick call" was omitted, as those who were ill were too weak to drag themselves to the surgeon's tent. Many were sent home on the hospital ships, and many died and were buried in the trenches, but still no relief came. Not only in the Ninth, but in all the other regiments, men were dying fast, and throughout the day and evening the three volleys fired over the graves, and the mournful call of "taps," could be heard from the different camps.

Finally, orders were issued from headquarters that the three volleys and the bugle calls should be discontinued at the burials, as they had a bad effect on the nerves of the sick. The men seemed to be in a comatose state, not caring to eat or talk; passing most of the time lying on their blankets in the shade of their tents. The only desire they expressed was to go home and be able to die among friends, and not in

a foreign country. They expected to die, and seemed absolutely indifferent as to how soon death came. All were pitifully weak, and broke down and cried like children over their misery.

The welcome order came at last, on August 23, for the Ninth to embark at the wharf in Santiago for home. Even this news failed to arouse the men. Mechanically they packed



ANCIENT SPANISH CANNON, SANTIAGO.

the few articles they wished to carry with them, and started for the steamer. Only eight companies went on the first transport, the Allegheny, the others remaining in camp until two days later, when two companies went on board the Panther, and two on the Roumanian. The Allegheny sailed on the 24th, arriving at Montauk on the 31st; the Panther left two days later, but being a much faster vessel, arrived at Camp Wikoff only a few hours behind the Allegheny. The Roumanian sailed on the 29th, and reached Montauk on September 5. The men on the Panther and Roumanian had a comparatively easy time; but on the Allegheny the state of affairs was horrible. Fully two-thirds of the men were sick and unable to help themselves, and the balance were obliged to act as nurses and care for their comrades.

Fifteen men died on the voyage, all but one being buried at sea. The fifteenth was Private Daly, of Company A, who died while being taken from the transport to the shore at Montauk, and the body was shipped home for burial. The transport was overcrowded, and the men were obliged to sleep between decks in hammocks, swung closely together, and the foul air made many of them worse. The Allegheny was originally a cattle steamer, and had no accommodations for carrying passengers. She was never thoroughly cleaned on the trip, as the crew would not, and the men of the Ninth could not, perform the work. There were three deaths on the Roumanian and one on the Panther, and about forty sick were landed from these two vessels. When the Allegheny arrived, 175 sick were taken to the hospitals, and the remainder were so weak that they were hardly able to crawl down the gang-plank to the wharf. On the Panther, the men were not overcrowded, as the officers of the vessel would not allow it, and besides having regular rations, the sailors shared their food with the soldiers, while on the Allegheny only army rations were served out, and even these were none too plentiful. The Roumanian had been fitted to carry sick men, and the troops, sick and well, were fed from the hospital stores. In addition, the Massachusetts Volunteer Aid Association had placed a stock of provisions on board for their use.

When the regiment arrived at Montauk, it was at once ordered to the detention camp, to prevent the spread of any disease which the men might have contracted in Cuba. General Wheeler, who was then in command of the camp, promised that they should not be kept at Camp Wikoff any longer than the three days required by the health regulations. Major Donovan, who was in command of the regiment, and who came with the first detachment, decided to wait until the remainder of the command arrived before starting for Boston, so that the main body of the regiment were quartered at Montauk for eight days. There were several hundred of the men in the hospitals, and there were a large number of deaths during that time.

On September 8, three days after the arrival of the last two companies on the Roumanian, orders were received for the regiment to start for home. Three days previous to the departure of the regiment, all of the sick who were able to be moved were placed on board the steamer Lewiston, which had been fitted up as a hospital ship, en route for Boston. These men had rather a hard experience, as the Lewiston was wrecked on Point Judith breakwater, and the sick were taken on barges to Newport, and brought to Boston by train. The regiment left Montauk about 3 o'clock on the steamer Vigilant, and sailed across Long Island Sound to New London, where a special train of parlor cars was in waiting. The train arrived in Boston at 10.45 P. M., and was met at the station by thousands of people, anxious to welcome the boys home. The warm welcome they received was too much for some of the men in their weakened condition, and many of them had to be helped to the carriages which were in waiting. Of the 943 strong, healthy men who left South Framingham in May, there were only 342 who returned that night, and they were mere wrecks of humanity.

## A GENEROUS TRIBUTE.

Camp Wikoff, L. I., September 5, 1898.

Colonel Lawrence J. Logan, Ninth Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry.

To the officers and soldiers of the Ninth Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry:—By direction of the Secretary of War, you are to proceed at once to your homes, where you will receive the heart-felt welcome and generous plaudits of the people of the great State of Massachusetts.

You were prompt to answer the call of your country. You eagerly sought to meet your country's foes upon a far distant foreign soil. You braved deadly disease in a tropical land. You did your full duty in a war, which has won for us the highest place among the nations of the earth.

In bidding you adieu, I wish you God speed, and may health, prosperity and honor be showered upon you.

JOSEPH WHEELER, Major General, U. S. V.

On November 26, the regiment was mustered out of the United States service at the armories. It had been in the service for a little more than six months, and remained longer in Cuba than any other volunteer regiment. It lost a larger percentage of men than any other Massachusetts regiment. The Second regiment lost ten per cent. of the men who were at the front; the Sixth lost two per cent; but the Ninth lost thirteen per cent. Not one man of the Ninth was killed in battle, all the dead being victims of disease, while the Second had nine killed, and several who died from the effects of wounds.

Since the return of the regiment there have been many changes in the list of officers.

The colonels, lieutenant-colonels and majors of the Ninth Regiment since its organization in 1861, are as follows:

Colonels.—Thomas Cass, June, 1861-July, '62; Patrick R. Guiney, July '62-'68; Patrick A. O'Connell, '68-'69; Bernard F. Finan, '69-'76; William M. Strachan, '76-'92; Fred B. Bogan, '92-August 9, '98. William H. Donovan, March 30, '99.

Lieutenant-Colonels.—C. G. Rowell, June, '61-October, '61; Robert Peard, October, '61-January, '62; P. R. Guiney, January, '62-July, '62; P. T. Hanley, July, '62-'64; John R. Farrell, '66-'68; James McArdle, '68-'72; William M. Strachan, '72-'76; Lawrence J. Logan, '79-'89, Nov. 6, '99.

Majors.—Robert Peard, June, '61-October, '61; P. A. Guiney, October '61-January, '62; P. T. Hanley, January, '62-July, '62; George W. Dutton, August, '62-March, '63; John W. Mahan, March '63-'64; James McArdle, '66-'68; Patrick A. Murphy, '68-'72; Lawrence J. Logan, '72-'76, '79-'89, '98; George A. J. Colgan, '76-'82; Daniel J. Sweeney, '79-'80; Patrick J. Grady, '81-July, 30, '98; Fred B. Bogan, '92; William H. Donovan, '88-'98; Michael J. O'Connor, '92-August 6, '98; Geo. F. H. Murray, John J. Sullivan, Joseph J. Kelly, March 30, '99.

### Roster of the Ninth Regiment when mustered out November 26, 1898:

#### *Field and Staff.*

Colonel, Lawrence J. Logan; Lieutenant-Colonel, William H. Donovan; Majors, George F. H. Murray, John J. Sullivan, Joseph J. Kelly; Adjutant, Benj. J. Flanagan; Quartermaster, Jeremiah G. Fennessey; Chaplain, Fr. Patrick B. Murphy; Surgeon-Major, Francis Magurn; Assistant-Surgeons, Peter O. Shea, Cornelius J. McGillicuddy.

#### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergeant-Major, Edward L. Logan; Quartermaster-Sergeant, John A. O'Connor; Hospital Stewards, David F. Hickey, (chief), John F. Riley; Chief Musician, James E. Sullivan; principal Musicians, Henry Alther, Peter F. Sullivan.

#### *Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Daniel J. Keefe; First Lieutenant, George M. Rogers; Second Lieutenant, Timothy J. Sullivan.

Company B—Captain, James F. Walsh; First Lieutenant, Michael J. Desmond; Second Lieutenant, William J. White.

Company C—Captain, Thomas F. Quinlan; First Lieutenant, Henry Crane; Second Lieutenant, Joseph J. Foley.

Company D—Captain, David P. Sawyer; First Lieutenant, John J. Dwyer; Second Lieutenant, Charles E. Brines.

Company E—Captain, John J. Barry; First Lieutenant, Thomas Devane; Second Lieutenant, Daniel P. Sullivan.

Company F—Captain, J. H. Joubert; First Lieutenant, Patrick A. Sands; Second Lieutenant, Michael S. Boles.

Company G—Captain, Jeremiah Moynihan; First Lieutenant John F. Hurley; Second Lieutenant, William E. McCann.

Company H—Captain, John J. Hayes; First Lieutenant, Benjamin F. Flanagan; Second Lieutenant, Patrick F. Sullivan.

Company I—Captain, John H. Dunn; First Lieutenant, William J. Casey; Second Lieutenant James A. Cully.

Company K—Captain, Peter J. Cannon; First Lieutenant, Martin J. Healey; Second Lieutenant, John J. Boyle.

Company L—Captain, Michael E. Morris; First Lieutenant, Daniel J. Murphy; Second Lieutenant, Joseph B. Hall.

Company M—Captain, Anthony D. Mitten; First Lieutenant, Joseph S. Gillow; Second Lieutenant, Philip McNulty.

#### THE DEAD OF THE NINTH REGIMENT.

Regimental Officers—Colonel, Fred B. Bogan, August 9, Charlestown; Major, Patrick J. Grady, July 30, Santiago; Major, Michael J. O'Connor August 6, Santiago.

Company A, Boston—Privates, William H. Brown, September 19, Montauk, John Connor, September 26, Brooklyn, N. Y.; John F. Daly, August 31, S. S. Allegheny; Edward J. Donegan, September 10, Montauk; John J. Hurney, October 21, Boston; Eugene B. McLaughlin, August 16, Santiago; John J. Murphy, August 22, Santiago.

Company B, Boston—Quartermaster-Sergeant, Louis C. Fanning, September 25, Boston; Corporal, Thomas D. McLeod, August 12, New York; Privates, James A.

Conroy, August 29, S. S. Allegheny; Joseph A. Donovan, August 30, S. S. Allegheny; Michael F. Gaughran, August 27, S. S. Allegheny; William A. Lyons, September 3, Montauk; William F. Mason, September 11, Montauk; George P. McLaughlin, August 6, Santiago; John J. Peard, September 9, South Boston; William G. Saunders, August 3, Santiago; William Kingston, November 25, Boston.

Company C, Boston—Corporals, Samuel P. Wiley, September 11, Montauk; William G. Rodway, October 18, New York; Artificer Leo J. Brady, August 23, S. S. Bay State; Privates, Austin Dunbar, August 30, S. S. Allegheny; James T. Dunn, August 31, S. S. Allegheny; Michael F. Leonard, September 20, Boston; Charles H. McAleer, September 9, Newton; John J. O'Toole, September 17, Boston; John Spillane, September 27, Boston.

Company D, Boston—Privates, James B. Boyle, Brooklyn, N. Y.; John J. Callahan, September 1, Fort Myer, Va.; Leonard Collins, September 30, Boston; William F. Hassett, July 30, Fort Myer; Walter C. Henze, September 13, Charlestown; James H. Kelly, September 10, Brooklyn; Willis S. Marrison, September 26, Santiago; Charles E. Powers, Boston; Joseph E. Sullivan, September 1, Fort Myer.

Company E, Boston—Artificer, Joseph F. Mueser, October 18, Montauk; Wagoner, Daniel F. Connors, September 1, Montauk; Privates, John A. Boyd, August 29, Fort Myer; Henry S. Driscoll, September 8, Montauk; Patrick J. Foley, September 12, Boston; John H. Hagan, September 14, Boston; Michael J. Lynch, October 5, Boston; James D. Moriarty, August 17, Santiago; Patrick F. Moriarty, September 6, Montauk; John J. Murphy, September 4, Fort Myer; William A. Scrivener, August 25, S. S. Bay State.

Company F, Lawrence—Artificer, Stephen J. Ryan, August 28, S. S. Allegheny; Privates, Patrick S. Hollihan, September 19, Lawrence; Walter S. Manahan, September 6, Montauk; James E. Toomey, October 31, Lawrence.

Company G, Worcester—Corporals, John D. McSweeney, August 31, Fort Myer; John F. Horan, September 9, Montauk; Privates, Henry Sullivan, July 23, Santiago; George W. Brosnahan, July 23, Egmont Key, Fla.; Edward F. Sullivan, August 27, S. S. Allegheny; Charles F. McMann, August 30, S. S. Allegheny; Michael J. Healy, August 31, S. S. Allegheny; Joseph N. Coffee, September 5, Camp Meade; James F. McTiernan, September 11, Montauk; John F. Keagan, September 9, Montauk; John J. Creaven, September 26, Montauk.

Company H, Boston—Corporal, Thomas A. Costello, August 28, Santiago; Privates, Michael W. Burke, August 30, Boston; Francis W. Cary, August 5, Santiago; Patrick J. Donahue, August 31, S. S. Allegheny; Joseph S. Donahue, October 19, Montauk; Robert F. Flint, Jr., August 28, S. S. Allegheny; Thomas A. Fulham, September 14, East Boston; James F. Farrell, July 25, Siboney; Elden P. Keene, Montauk; Gustave Knauth, November 7, Brooklyn; William J. Montgomery, September 12, Boston; Thomas J. Murphy, August 27, S. S. Allegheny; Thomas L. Rourke, September 8, Montauk; Timothy J. Tehan, September 5, Boston; John O'Brien, Framingham.

Company I, Boston—Quartermaster-Sergeant, Stephen D. Murphy, October 12, Framingham; Corporal, Jos. D. Lane, August 10, Santiago; Musician, Peter A. Bowler, September 3, Boston; Privates, Charles J. Doherty, May 31, Boston; Thomas F. Fenton, September 3, Boston; Ragner Mellen, August 7, Santiago; Michael H. Nelliga, September 2, Boston; John J. Shea, October 14, Boston.

Company K, Clinton—Sergeants, Joseph Newell, September 13, Montauk; James V. Welsh, September 10, Brooklyn; Wagoner, Patrick Garvey, September 18, Clinton; Privates, Henry J. Jennings, August 12, Santiago; Henry M. Broderick, September 2, S. S. Roumania; Thomas F. Gibbons, September 14, Montauk; William Gorman, September 20, Framingham; John J. McGann, July 27, S. S. Concho; Henry J. McMin, September 28, Boston; John M. McNamara, August 13, Santiago; Michael F. O'Malley, August 30, Santiago; Timothy O'Malley, September 2, S. S. Roumania; Austin L. O'Toole, September 29, Clinton; James P. O'Toole, September 14, Clinton; Michael F. O'Toole, September 14, Clinton; Fred Trimble, September 9, Brooklyn; Thomas Welch, September 10, Montauk.

Company L, Natick—Lieutenant, Philip Connealy, September 19, New London, Conn.; Corporals, John D. Canty, September 27, Framingham; Charles W. Jones, October 4, Natick; John W. Kyte, August 8, Santiago; Privates, Michael J. Desmond, August 15, Santiago; Thomas A. Welch, August 13, Santiago; George F. Gleason, September 12, Montauk; Thomas J. Egan, September 27, Framingham; Edward J.

Davis, September 30, Brooklyn; Charles F. H. Cousins, October 4, Natick; Albert S. Marston, September 19, Lancaster, Pa.

Company M, Lowell—Sergeant, Ralph B. Walker, August 23, Santiago; Privates, Joseph L. Wallace, August 19, Santiago; Chester F. Cummings, September 27, New York; John H. Marshall, September 26, Boston; Charles H. Braden, August 29, S. S. Panther; George A. Pitcher, August 24, S. S. Bay State; John E. Connor, August 28, S. S. Allegheny; Walter Small, August 27, S. S. Allegheny; Walter J. Tilton, August 26, S. S. Allegheny; Hospital Steward, Halfdan Rye Breiner, August 10, Santiago.



"SPAIN WARRED ON THE DEFENCELESS; AMERICA GAVE HER BEST AND BRAVEST THAT THESE MIGHT LIVE."



HEADQUARTERS BATTERY A. CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON, COMMANDING, 1877-79.





## CHAPTER V.

### BATTERY A, LIGHT ARTILLERY.

By Captain Nathan Appleton.

IT is asserted that the visits of Bragg's Battery of Newport, R. I., Captain T. W. Sherman, to Boston in 1850, and a little later of the Marine Artillery of Providence, R. I., stimulated the ambition of our citizens to form a battery of light artillery; that the American Rifles retired from the Mechanic Rifles, and while some of them formed the First Battalion, Light Dragoons, organized March 5, 1852, under Captain Isaac Hull Wright, the rest organized the Boston Light Artillery.

Adjutant-General Ebenezer W. Stone, in his annual report of December 31, 1852, recommended that authority be given to organize one or more light batteries, to be drilled as such, adding that the only additional expense to the state would be that incurred for the use of horses, as all the equipments that would be required in the battery could be secured from the general government. The Hon. C. M. Conrad, secretary of war, in his last annual report, had recommended that the artillery tactics be furnished by the general government to the several states for the use of the militia.



CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON.

By the provisions of a legislative act of the State of Massachusetts, April 23, 1853, the formation of one or more companies of "foot artillery" was authorized, as designated by the War Department March 6, 1845, and the following action was taken by the Governor's Council and the Adjutant General.

Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

Council Chamber, November 1, 1853.

The committee on the militia respectfully advise the organization of a Company of Light Artillery under the act passed April 23, 1853, and that the petition of Nathaniel F. Stevens, and forty-nine others, to be enrolled and incorporated as such company, be granted.

For the Committee,

H. P. FAIRBANKS.

In Council November 1, 1853.

Report accepted and petition granted.

(Signed)

E. M. WRIGHT, Secretary.

Secretary's Office, Boston, November 2, 1853.

A true copy. Attest:

(Signed)

E. M. WRIGHT,

Secretary of the Commonwealth.

Headquarters, Boston, November 17, 1853.

Special Order No. 38.

The Commander-in-Chief, having approved the foregoing advice of Council, orders that the same be carried into effect, agreeably to the order of the War Department, dated March 6, 1845.

And the Commander-in-Chief further orders that when said company is duly organized, it constitute a part of the First Brigade, 1st Division, M. V. M.

Major-General B. F. Edmands, commanding 1st Division, is charged with carrying the above order into effect.

By command of His Excellency, John H. Clifford, Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

EBENEZER W. STONE, Adjutant-General.

This company would be the only field artillery company, acting as such, in the state, all the companies organized as artillery—at that time twenty-five in number—having been required by the 13th section, chapter 218, acts of 1849 (Mass.), to drill as light infantry companies. All they could do, as artillery, was to fire salutes at reviews, etc., as they had no field equipment. They were armed and equipped as infantry.

As the result of an election, presided over by Brigadier-General Samuel Andrews, the returns of which were forwarded to Major-General B. F. Edmands, December 29, 1853, Battery A, Light Artillery, was formed and attached to the 1st Brigade, 1st Division, of the Volunteer Militia of Massachusetts.

#### THE FIRST OFFICERS.

Moses G. Cobb, of Charlestown, who was said to be the best adapted of any officer in the state to drill this arm of the service, was commissioned Captain, December 28, 1853, resigned and discharged, December 23, 1857; Joseph Hale, of Boston, commissioned First Lieutenant, December 28, 1853, resigned and discharged December 23, 1857; Caleb Page, of Somerville, commissioned Second Lieutenant, December 28, 1853, resigned and discharged, June 8, 1855; Nathaniel F. Stevens, of Boston, commissioned Third Lieutenant, December 28, 1853, promoted Second Lieutenant, June 11, 1855, First Lieutenant, February 2, 1858, resigned and discharged, May 21, 1859; Charles R. Morse, of Charlestown, commissioned Fourth Lieutenant, December 28, 1853, resigned and discharged, September 13, 1854; George S. Holt, of Boston, was commissioned Fourth Lieu-

tenant, October 5, 1854, promoted to Third Lieutenant, June 11, 1855, resigned and discharged December 23, 1857.

Copy of a warrant of a Chief of Piece, loaned, to be thus reproduced, by Lieutenant George S. Holt:—

## WARRANT OF A CHIEF OF PIECE.

Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

To Mr. George S. Holt of Boston, Greeting:

*Whereas*, on the fifteenth day of May, A. D., 1854, you were appointed a Chief of Piece of Company A, Light Artillery, of the First Brigade, 1st Division of the Volunteer Militia of Massachusetts. I do, by these presents, by virtue of the power vested in me, grant you this warrant. You will, therefore, with vigilance and fidelity, discharge the duty of a Chief of Piece in said Company, according to the Rules and Regulations established by law for the Government and Discipline of the militia of this Commonwealth. You will also observe and follow such orders and instructions as you shall from time to time receive from your superior officers.

Given under my hand, at Headquarters of said First Brigade, at Boston, the twenty-seventh day of May, one thousand eight hundred and fifty-four.

S. ANDREWS, Brigadier-General.

## COMMISSION OF GEORGE S. HOLT.

October 5, 1854.

His Excellency, Emory Washburn, Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

To George S. Holt, of Boston, Gentleman, Greeting:

*Whereas*, on the Fifth day of October, A. D., one thousand eight hundred and fifty-four, you were elected Fourth Lieutenant of Company of Light Artillery in the First Brigade and 1st Division of the militia of the Commonwealth, I do, by these presents, reposing special trust and confidence in your ability, courage, and good conduct, commission you accordingly. You will, therefore, with honor and fidelity, discharge the duties of said office, according to the Laws of this Commonwealth, and to military Rule and Discipline. And all inferior officers and soldiers are hereby commanded to obey you in your said capacity, and you will yourself observe and follow such orders and instructions as you shall, from time to time, receive from the Commander-in-Chief, or others, your superior officers.

Given under my hand and the seal of the Commonwealth, the seventeenth day of October, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fifty-four, and in the seventy-ninth year of the Independence of the United States of America.

E. M. WRIGHT,

Secretary of the Commonwealth.

By His Excellency the Governor.

By His Excellency Henry J. Gardner, commissioned Third Lieutenant of Company of Light Artillery in the First Brigade and 1st Division, on the eleventh day of June, 1855. Discharged December 23, 1857.

Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

Headquarters, Boston, December 23, 1857.

The Governor and Commander-in-Chief has accepted the Resignation of George S. Holt, Third Lieutenant of Company of Light Artillery in the First Brigade and 1st Division of the militia of this Commonwealth; and he is hereby honorably discharged, at his own request, from the office of Third Lieutenant of the company aforesaid.

By His Excellency's command,

EBENEZER W. STONE,

Adjutant-General.

At the May inspection, 1854, Company Light Artillery, Captain Moses G. Cobb, thirty-eight members were present, twenty-two absent; at the fall encampment there were eighty-four present, eleven absent.

## THE RENDITION OF ANTHONY BURNS.

The company was called out with the militia at the rendition of Anthony Burns, a slave, owned by Colonel Charles T. Suttle, of Virginia, who escaped from Richmond in February, 1852, came to Boston, and was employed in a clothing store on Brattle Street. On May 24, 1854, he was arrested, and after trial was returned to his owner by the United States courts, according to the provisions of the Fugitive Slave Law. The company had not received its field battery, and the cannon which was used to guard Court Square, and formed part of the procession which conveyed Burns to the wharf, was a brass field-piece belonging to the United States troops, the guard of the United States marshal throughout the trial.

In the published diary of Richard H. Dana, edited by Charles Francis Adams, is the following account of the action of the Massachusetts militia on this occasion:—

“The mayor having given General Edmands discretionary orders to preserve peace and enforce the laws, General Edmands gave orders to each commander of a post to fire on the people, whenever they passed the line marked by the police, in a manner he should consider turbulent and disorderly. In one case—that of Captain Evans, of the Boston Artillery—the first two orders were actually given, and in a second more the company would have fired but for the fortunate intervention of Colonel Boyd, who ordered their guns to shoulder. . . . Professor Wyman says, that Captain Young, of the artillery at the head of Franklin Avenue, presented his pistol at every man that came to the alley. . . . The militia, who had been called out, were posted along Court Street and State Street, from the Court House to the wharf. Court Square was held by the regular artillery and their cannon. The militia were drawn up across every street or alley that led to or from Court or State street, at a little distance up the street or alley, so that the people should be kept back, and there should be no access to the route of the procession. The marshal's guard formed immediately about Burns—in front, behind, and on each side. They no longer concealed their weapons, but each man wore a short Roman sword and a revolver. Within the hollow square were the marshal and Burns. Before them were the cavalry and a part of the regulars, and, behind, another portion of the regulars with their cannon.”

## THE FIELD BATTERY.

This company received its field battery on June 17, 1854. On this day a detachment of men went to the arsenal at Cambridge—now no longer in existence—to take two guns to Boston. They had with them Sergeant Nims, and next in rank Sergeant Holt. The horses came from Boston, and the guns, when taken from the arsenal, were brought down to



BATTERY A. LEFT PLATOON, M. BATTERY, SWAMPSCOTT, MAY, 1898.



the "Washington Elm," where, on July 2, 1775, General Washington took command of the armies of the Revolutionary patriots.

From that place,—a quarter of a mile from the arsenal—they started to Boston, and went to their temporary armory in Travers street, next to the old National Theatre. The guns were then dismounted and taken up one story, where for some time they had drills of the piece. They were drilled a few days by an officer of the United States army.

Later, two more guns were added to the battery, and they were properly established in the Cooper street armory.

In accordance with the recommendation of Adjutant-General E. W. Stone, on February 23, 1855, representing that "the present organization and arrangement of the volunteer militia was inconsistent in its designation as 'Artillery,' and 'Light Infantry'; the designation of all the companies heretofore known as 'Artillery' and as 'Light Infantry' was changed to that of 'Infantry.' Thus, in the process of re-organization on the new plan, the artillery regiments ceased to exist, and the artillery arm of the service was formed into batteries and battalions. In 1856, while still under Captain Cobb, this company had the reputation of being one of the best Volunteer Light Batteries—if not the very best—in the United States.

Ormond F. Nims, of Boston, was commissioned fourth lieutenant of this company, still the only battery in the State militia, and designated as "Company of Light Artillery annexed to First Brigade," February 6, 1857, and promoted captain, February 2, 1858.

The act of the legislature abolishing May training took effect in March, 1858.

Soon after the resignation of Captain Cobb, June 1, 1860, his office was abolished by section 27, chapter 13, of the General Statutes, which provided: "that to each company of foot artillery attached to a brigade, and organized as designated by the War Department of the United States, the 6th day of March, 1845, there should be one major to be elected



THE GUIDON BEARER.

in the manner provided for captains and subalterns, four lieutenants, six chiefs of pieces, six gunners, two musicians, etc., etc.

#### THE FIRST GREAT MUSTER.

At the fall encampments, previous to that of 1859, the several organizations had met at separate places of rendezvous; but on the 7th, 8th, and 9th of September of that year, at the great muster at "Loring's Crossing," Concord, Mass., on the land now occupied by the State Prison, all the troops of the State were assembled to the number of 5,333 officers and men. It was called "Camp Massachusetts." By invitation of the Governor Nathaniel P. Banks, Major-General Wool, of the United States Army, was present with his staff at the concert and review. Eighteen bands united in a grand concert on the 8th. The opening piece—"Hail Columbia"—was played with an accompaniment by the Light Artillery, Captain Ormond F. Nims.

The legislature being in session, both branches accepted an invitation to visit the camp on the 9th; also General Wool and staff, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery, and many distinguished persons from abroad. At the close of Governor Banks' speech, introducing General Wool, nine cheers were given for "the hero of Buena Vista," by 6,000 people, accompanied by the guns of the Light Artillery. The same with

a salvo were given for the legislature.

Captain Nims was commissioned major June 18, 1860. On the Fourth of July, 1860, the battery was paraded on Boston Common.

#### VISIT OF THE PRINCE OF WALES.

At a review of the State troops on the occasion of the visit of the Prince of Wales, October 18, 1860, the Company of Artillery turned out—Major, Ormond F. Nims; Adjutant, Dexter H. Follett; Surgeon, John P. Ordway; Quartermaster, Thomas J. Foss. The procession moved at 1 o'clock.



BATTERY A. GUARD DETAIL.

The Light Artillery executed various evolutions after the parade was over.

The Prince was in Boston from Wednesday, the 17th, to Saturday, and on his departure for Portland, Me., at 10 o'clock Saturday morning from the Eastern Depot, a salute was fired by a detachment of the Bos-



ton Light Artillery, on the grounds of the Eastern Railroad company.

In his valedictory of that year, Governor N. P. Banks, referring to this review, in his remarks relative to the military expenditures of the year, said:—

“There is, however, an extraordinary charge in this department for which I am responsible.

. . . This was the only ovation in honor of the Prince, in which the people generally participated. No expenses were incurred, except for compensation to the troops, which amounted to \$2,271. Number of troops present, 2,558.”

#### NIMS' BATTERY.

Major Nims resigned and was discharged November 30, 1860. He recruited, for three years or the war, the Second Battery, known as Cobb's Battery, mustered in at Camp Wollaston, Quincy, July 31, 1861.



BATTERY A. "LEADING OUT."

On August 2, he received an order from headquarters at the State House, to detail one gun and a sufficient number of men to fire a salute on Boston Common, upon the arrival of Major Asa M. Cook's Battery—which went out May 18, 1861, (three months' men), on the call of the President for the militia—their term of service having expired on that day.

The battery commanded by Major Nims was ordered to the seat of war, August 8, 1861, serving in Virginia and in the Department of the Gulf (New Orleans.)

Edward J. Jones was commissioned Fourth Lieutenant of Battery A, February 2, 1858; resigned and was discharged April 19, 1858; commissioned First Lieutenant, February 28, 1862; promoted Captain, May 1, 1862, the organization being then known as the "First Battery."

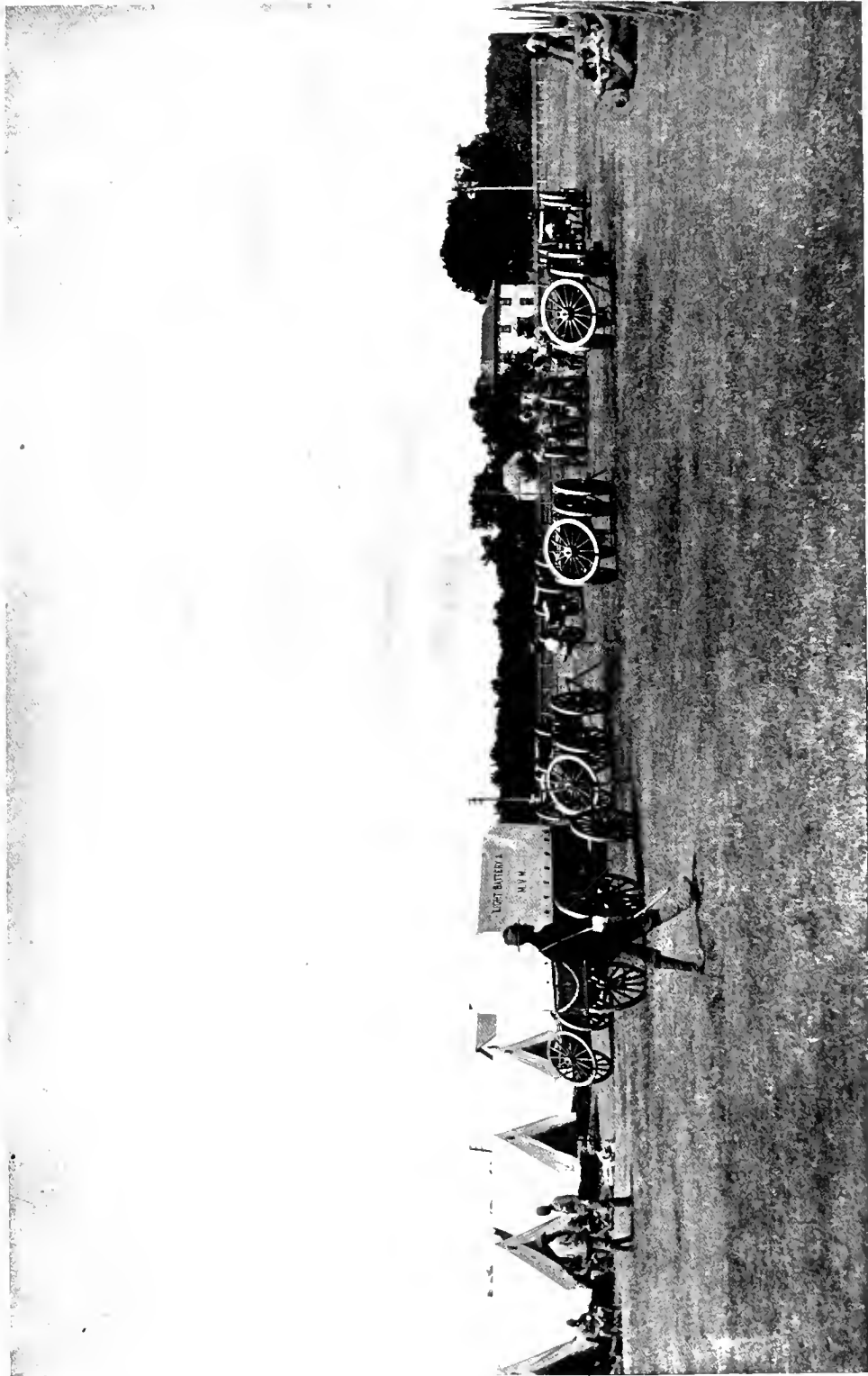
#### THE FIRST DISBANDMENT.

By a special order (No. 101), on May 27, 1862, this battery was disbanded. A call had been issued on the previous day for troops to march immediately to the defense of the national capital. So urgent was the apparent necessity for haste, that the general order from headquarters

at Boston, by the command of His Excellency, John A. Andrew, Governor and Commander-in-Chief, signed William Brown, Assistant Adjutant-General, was executed without waiting for the usual forms of transmission. Four thousand men reported for duty on Boston Common—among them the First Battery ("Battery A"), eighty-seven men. Taking for granted, without special inquiry, that they were ordered out for three months, a large proportion of this number, including Battery A, were not prepared for the intelligence that, in accordance with an act of Congress, passed in July, 1861, they might be held for a term longer than three months, or until sixty days after the meeting of the next session of Congress, or, if Congress should so provide, for an indefinite period. Adjutant-General William Schouler, in his report for 1862, says he went round to the halls where the troops were quartered and explained to them the new law, and about one-half was ready to proceed, law or no law; every one was ready and anxious to go for three months. The Governor telegraphed to the War Department for authority to order them to be mustered in for three months, and received a reply that the President directed the militia to be released—"concentration of forces having been effected which would render their employment unnecessary," and directing enlistments to be made in Massachusetts for three years, as heretofore, in the volunteer service. At this time, General Schouler says, that while he was visiting the different companies, the despatch was received from the President directing them to be released. With reference to the disbandment of the company of Light Artillery, recruited by Major Edward J. Jones, General Schouler says: "I thought then, and I think now (December 31, 1862), that the order to disband this splendid company was just and proper. Yet, upon reflection, I think the men had good cause for complaint. Most of them were mechanics who had families depending upon them for support, and it was natural that before they would take the oath to serve, they should know definitely how long a period they were to be absent. The chief blame for all this trouble and difficulty, is in the law passed by Congress, which was evidently passed in haste and without due consideration of its effects. Subsequently, when the call for nine months volunteers was issued, Captain Jones was among the first to offer his services to recruit a battery. His offer was accepted, and in a very short time he had his company ready, comprising a great part of the men who had been members of the disbanded company, and they are now (December 31, 1862), at the seat of war, serving their country on the battlefield."

#### THE EIGHTH BATTERY.

Immediately on the disbandment of Battery A, May 27, 1862, a general order, bearing the same date, authorized Major Asa M. Cook to enlist a company of Light Artillery in Boston and vicinity for the United



BATTERY A STATE CAMP, SOUTH FRAMINGHAM, AUGUST, 1899



States service for the term of six months; and this went out under the next government call for troops, requiring this State to furnish thirty companies of Infantry to serve for three years, and one company of Light Artillery for six months. This company was designated as the Eighth Battery Light Artillery, M. V. M., Asa M. Cook, captain. They were mustered in June 10, 1862, received their marching orders June 30, proceeded to Washington, served six months, and were commended for bravery and fidelity at the battle of Antietam. Their term expired November 29, 1862.

#### THE ELEVENTH BATTERY.

In the meantime the petition of Major Edward J. Jones and seventy-seven others, dated August 2, 1862, was granted for the organization of a company of Light Artillery, and Major Jones was commissioned captain of the "First Artillery" — "New Company" — August 6, 1862. On August 25, 1862, the battery was mustered into the United States service as the Eleventh Battery Light Artillery, M. V. M., (nine months), and on October 1, was ordered to proceed to Washington and report to the Adjutant-General of the United States. At the expiration of their term of service — May 25, 1863 — they received the thanks of the Commander-in-Chief, Governor Andrew, "for their good conduct, bravery, and soldierly bearing, while serving in distant fields, which were alike honorable to themselves and to the Commonwealth."



BATTERY A. AFTER AMMUNITION.

#### THE COOPER STREET DRAFT RIOT.

Battery A saw active service in Boston, at the time of the "Cooper Street Draft Riot," July 14, 1863.

From the annual report of the adjutant-general of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts (William Schouler), for the year ending December 31, 1863, the following in relation to the draft riot is taken:—

"The law of Congress, authorizing the raising of troops by draft, was put in operation in this Commonwealth in the months of June and July (1863.)

"Major Clark, U. S. A., was appointed provost-marshal-general for the State headquarters, Boston. Assistant provost marshals were appointed for the several congressional districts. These appointments were made in Washington.

"A Board was also established to make an enrollment of all persons in the Commonwealth, between the ages of twenty and forty-five years. The persons thus enrolled were to be divided into two classes, to be called the first and second classes.

"The number of persons thus enrolled in the first class was 107,386, in the second class, 56,792. Total of both classes, 164,178.

"The whole number of names of persons drafted in the several districts was 32,077; of these 6,690 were held to serve, and of these only 743 joined the service; 2,325 (who) procured substitutes (are not included in this number), 22,343 were exempted; 3,044 failed to report; 3,623 (who) paid commutation (also not included), which amounted to \$1,085,800 (one million, eighty-five thousand eight hundred dollars.) Battery A at that time belonged to the First Brigade, 1st division, and was called the Eleventh Company Light Artillery.

"A disgraceful riot having broken out in the city of New York, early in July, 1863, instigated by persons who were opposed to the draft, and the defection having spread to Boston, preparations were made on the afternoon of the 14th to prevent any disturbance here. Verbal orders were given to Captain Jones, to notify his company to assemble at their armory in Cooper street, and to hold them subject to orders. All available troops in the forts and volunteer camps were called upon to be in readiness, the Heavy Artillery at Fort Warren among them."

Colonel Henry Lee, then on Governor John A. Andrew's staff, says, in his "Recollections," contributed to the Boston Journal, June 14, 1896:—

"It was on Commencement Day, in 1863, we received notice that there was going to be trouble. Adjutant-General Schouler and I went to find the Lancers, who had escorted the Governor to Cambridge, to hasten them back to town. Major Stephen Cabot came up with two companies of artillery from Fort Warren, and we had the Forty-fourth and Forty-fifth Regiments just returned; also some recruits from other regiments. We guarded the bridges into Boston, and took all possible precautions."

#### SPECIAL ORDER THEN ISSUED.

Headquarters, Boston, July 14, 1863.

(Special Orders 376.)

Major Cabot First Battalion, First Regiment, Heavy Artillery, Massachusetts Volunteers, having with great expedition reported for duty from Fort Warren, in response to a request by His Excellency the Governor, has, with his command, the thanks of His Excellency.

Major Cabot will report for orders to His Honor Frederick W. Lincoln, Jr., Mayor of Boston. It is the wish of His Excellency, that a portion of Major Cabot's



*Drawing by C. W. Jewell.*  
MASSACHUSETTS ARTILLERY AT GETTYSBURG, JULY 2, 1863. BIGELOW'S NINTH BATTERY, AND PHILLIP'S FIFTH BATTERY AT THE PEACH ORCHARD.





command be ordered for duty at the armory of the Eleventh Battery, Light Artillery, in Cooper street, to support the section of Light Artillery now there.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief,

WM. SCHOULER, Adjutant-General.

The "section" of Light Artillery, which Major Cabot was ordered to support, was under the command of Captain Edward J. Jones. Two pieces—then called a section, are now called a "platoon." This change was made by the War Department at Washington, July 17, 1873, when new tactics were issued for all the branches of the service, to be applicable to the United States Army and the militia of all the States.

The building in Cooper street is now (1899) a school house. After the panels of the door had been broken in, by a joist plied from the outside, a shot was fired through the opening, killing one of the guards. One cannon, double shotted with canister, finished the trouble. They fired into the mob, and it was never known how many were killed and wounded. In the confusion and excitement of the moment it was impossible to determine who first gave the order to fire, as it was "halloed out" by many at the same time.

Major Jones continued captain of this battery till he created a new battery—the three years, Eleventh Battery, in January, 1864—when Lucius Cummings was made captain of the Light Artillery, First Brigade, 1st Division, vice Edward J. Jones, in the United States service.

#### A LETTER TO SECRETARY STANTON.

From the camp of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery at Rappahannock Station, January 14, 1864, I wrote the following letter:—

Hon. Edwin M. Stanton,

Sir: Ever since the Rebellion has existed, the Light Artillery of Massachusetts has been organized as so many independent batteries, each commanded by a captain.

The Governor and senators of Massachusetts, I am informed, and some of the artillery officers of the State, have interested themselves in the plan of having the batteries united in a regiment, with the appointment of field officers. I consider that it personally concerns all those connected with the Massachusetts Light Artillery; and I lately received a communication on the subject from one of Governor Andrew's staff, who said that a request from General Sykes—Captain Martin, Third Massachusetts Battery, is the Chief of Artillery of the Fifth Corps—or from General Meade, to the Secretary of War, might have the desired effect.

This, at best, places the matter in uncertainty, and is an embassy which it would scarcely be becoming for one so young as myself to undertake, unless so ordered, and I thought that I would write to you and express freely my opinion on the subject.

That Massachusetts should have field officers of Light Artillery, seems to me a right which she deserves, not merely in connection with other states that have regimental organizations—and I believe that most of the States having Light Artillery enough to warrant it are so arranged—but also in connection with her cavalry and infantry. For now there is a dead stop to promotion in Light Artillery, and some of the oldest and best tried officers of the State, who have served since the beginning of the war, and who do not wish to leave their favorite branch of the service, cannot get higher up the ladder than two bars.

But, sir, there is another consideration: The artillery brigade of our corps is commanded by a captain of Massachusetts. In the brigade there are captains belong-

ing to states having regimental organizations. In case of their promotion to field appointments in their regiments, the Massachusetts captain would be ousted from his command.

I think that the subject of artillery in the field is one about which little is practically known, and one about which little can be known, except from actual experience.

A brigade of infantry must generally act together; but it is not so with artillery, for it has to do its work for the whole corps. Some guns have to be put in one place, some in another; some rushed to the front, some kept in reserve; and the caissons must be put in some sheltered spot. This must be all personally attended to by the Chief of Artillery, and, in addition, the position of everything remembered, while he is responsible for everything.

A brigade of infantry is commanded by a brigadier-general or a colonel; a brigade of artillery often by a captain.

It seems to me that a man commanding 150 men, 100 odd horses, six guns and six caissons—in all about \$50,000 worth of United States property, and who has an independent command, should rank higher than one commanding 100 men and 100 muskets, and who is under the direct command of another.

Why cannot the artillery be re-organized, and the chiefs of artillery be commissioned by the President, and the old plan of calling a battery a company, be dropped?

Is not a battery of six guns as responsible a command as that which a major of infantry generally has? For while regiments are constantly thinned, a battery must be kept full to a certain complement, or its guns are worse than useless.

And, finally, is Massachusetts to be forgotten?

It may seem to you, sir, unbecoming for one so young as myself to write thus on this matter; but I think that, in a democracy, one cannot overrate the good or bad which he can individually perform, and I consider it the bounden duty of any one who has ideas which he thinks may accomplish good, to present them to those in places of authority.

I have the honor to be, most respectfully yours,

NATHAN APPLETON,

Second Lieutenant, Fifth Massachusetts Battery.

Hon. Edwin M. Stanton.

The very contingency mentioned in the above letter occurred when General Grant came in person to command the Army of the Potomac, and consolidated the corps. When the 3rd Corps was united to the 5th, its chief of artillery was Colonel Charles S. Wainwright of the First New York Regiment of Light Artillery, and as he ranked Captain A. P. Martin, he naturally assumed command of the artillery brigade. I was on his staff later, as I had been on that of Captain Martin.

LETTER TO HON. A. H. RICE.

Fifth Massachusetts Battery.

Rappahannock, Va., April 23, 1864.

To Hon. Alexander H. Rice, M. C.,

My Dear Sir: You are, undoubtedly, aware of the fact that for some time the executive of our state has been strenuously endeavoring to have the batteries of light artillery formed into a regimental organization with the appointment of field officers.

Senator Wilson has promised to bring the matter before the Senate, that some uniform system may be adopted, and that either all or none of the states shall have this regimental organization.

I, as an officer of the Massachusetts Light Artillery, am personally interested in the matter, as well as the feelings which I have in common with others, for the welfare of our State, and I have taken the liberty of writing to you, desiring that if any bill

to accomplish this needed reform should be brought before Congress, you may give it your hearty co-operation.

There is no need of repeating any of the hackneyed arguments for the necessity of field officers of Light Artillery, well known as they are. I believe that a bill soon comes before Congress in relation to the re-organization of the Regular Artillery, and it would be but natural for that of the Volunteer Artillery to follow it. Hoping that some result favorable to our State may be accomplished.

I remain most respectfully yours,

NATHAN APPLETON,

Second Lieutenant, Fifth Massachusetts Battery.

#### LEE'S SURRENDER.

On April 10, 1865, the day of rejoicing over the surrender of General Robert E. Lee, commanding the Confederate States Army, to the forces of the United States under General U. S. Grant, Mayor F. W. Lincoln ordered "a salute of 100 guns to be fired from the Common by Captain Cummings' Battery, and the bells of the city to be rung at twelve o'clock."

At the State House, Governor Andrew ordered "a salute of 200 guns to be fired from the Common—100 by the Boston Light Artillery, Captain Cummings, and 100 by the Franklin Light Battery, Captain Warren French."



BATTERY A. "AIM."

There were processions during the day in Boston and adjoining cities, 4,000 Navy Yard workmen forming one which passed by the State House, and in the evening there was a grand turn-out of the military and fire department, and a general illumination of business places and residences.

#### IN UNIVERSAL MOURNING.

Then nine days later, April 19, 1865, the funeral of our lamented President Lincoln was observed in Boston by an entire suspension of business, and services in the churches. Between the hours of twelve and two, the trains on the railroads, and horse-cars through the streets, stopped running. Emblems of mourning were displayed everywhere. By order of the Adjutant-General, a detachment of Captain Cummings' Light Battery fired minute guns on the Common from twelve till two. In Cambridge, guns were fired at the same hour. The British steamer

Europa, at East Boston, displayed flags at half-mast, and minute guns were fired by order of Captain Hockley. The church bells of the city were tolled for an hour, commencing at two o'clock. In Brighton the bells were tolled from two to three p. m., and 120 guns were fired by a section of the Boston Light Artillery.

COMMEMORATIVE SERVICES, NATIONAL FAST DAY.

June 2, 1865, the day appointed by President Johnson as a National Fast Day, was observed in Boston by solemn services at Music Hall, commemorative of the virtues of the late Abraham Lincoln, with a funeral oration by the Hon. Charles Sumner, and an imposing military and civic procession, composed of eight divisions. The escort was under the command of Brigadier-General W. F. Bartlett, and included the First Light Artillery, 120 men, Captain Cummings; the Second Light Artillery, 120 men, Captain French. The military were thirty-four minutes in passing a given point on the route, which was a long one, covering all the principal streets in the business district of the city, the West End, and through Commonwealth Avenue to Arlington street and the South End.

THE RETURN OF THE WAR FLAGS.

At the formal transfer of the historic battle-flags of Massachusetts batteries and regiments, December 22, 1865, from the care of the United States mustering officer to the state authorities, nearly all the regiments of infantry, cavalry, and artillery, were represented. The headquarters of the commanding general, Major-General Darius N. Couch, were on Boston Common. Here the colors were brought at 9.45 a. m. by Brevet-Colonel Francis N. Clark, U. S. A., and transferred to General Couch. A procession was then formed, and marched through the principal streets to the State House. I acted as aide-de-camp on the staff of General A. P. Martin, who, as senior battery captain, was in command of the Light Artillery. The weather was cold and the trees were covered with ice and snow. At some points of the route residents provided hot coffee for the veterans; but few of these carried muskets, and not more than half wore uniforms. Flags were displayed on public and private buildings, and in several instances were hung across the street. The arrival of the head of the procession at the State House was announced by a salute from Battery A, commanded by Captain Nash. As the regiments and batteries arrived in front of the State House, the color-bearers left the ranks and marched into the passage-way leading to the capitol, and arranged themselves in order on the steps, forming a forest of tattered flags. During this movement Gilmore's band performed continually. The enclosures on either side were filled with soldiers, grouped around the statues of Webster and Horace Mann. At 1.30, while the band played, Governor Andrew descended the steps, attended by his staff, the state officials, of-

fiere of the army and navy stationed here, and other invited guests, to meet the color-bearers. Adjutant-General Schouler called upon the Rev. Dr. Lothrop to offer prayer. Then Major-General Couch, in behalf of the Massachusetts Volunteers, presented the colors, closing his speech with the words: "May it please Your Excellency. The colors of the Massachusetts Volunteers are returned to the State!"

Governor Andrew, on receiving them, gave the pledge of the people and the government, that these relics should be "preserved and cherished amid all the vicissitudes of the future." They were escorted into Doric Hall, fitted into places around the pillars, and the procession was dismissed. Since the rebuilding of the State House they have been arranged in the illuminated crypts of Memorial Hall, in the centre of the building.

#### VISIT OF PRESIDENT JOHNSON.

President Johnson visited Boston at the dedication of the Masonic Temple, corner of Boylston and Tremont streets, in June, 1867. Brigadier-General John H. Reed, of Governor Bullock's staff, with members of the Boston City Council, and of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, and other officials, met the President. Secretary William H. Seward, General



BATTERY A. "FIRE"

Rousseau, General Granger, the Washington Commandery of Knights Templars and the Marine Band, at Springfield, on Saturday the 22d, and offered the military escort which the Governor had ordered to receive him on his approach to the capital of the commonwealth. The special car and locomotive drawing the train for the Presidential party, were decorated with flags and flowers. On their arrival at the Cottage Farm Station on the Boston and Albany Railroad at five o'clock, the distinguished visitors were received first by the First Battalion of Cavalry, about 400 men, under Major Lucius Slade, and a detachment of the First Light Battery, detailed for the purpose by Captain Cummings, under the command of Lieutenant Hall, fired a salute of twenty-one guns as the train rolled in. The procession moved down Essex Avenue, through Longwood, Brookline. Salutes were fired from Parker's Hill by a section of

Battery B, Captain Baxter, which set all the church bells to ringing, and they continued to ring until the procession reached the Boston line at 6.45. Here the President was met by the Mayor and an escort of infantry drawn up in line. The President and Mayor exchanged their respective carriages for the elegant barouche drawn by six bay horses, provided for the use of the President while in the city, and the party moved down the infantry line, drawn up on the east side of the street. The militia then passed in review, after which the procession, consisting of the escort of infantry, a battalion of marines from the Navy Yard, and the First Battalion of Cavalry, in all about 3,000 men, marched through the streets of Boston. The route ended at the Tremont House, shortly after 8 p. m., amid a dense crowd of spectators. As the procession passed through Boylston street, a salute of twenty-one guns was fired upon the Common, by the second section of Battery A, under charge of Lieutenant Libby, and continued until nearly the time of the arrival at the Tremont House. Here Governor Bullock received the Presidential party at 10 p. m.; there was a reception of the city government in the parlors of the hotel; at 11 o'clock a serenade by Gilmore's band of 60 pieces, and later President Johnson and Secretary Seward addressed the crowd. On Sunday the President, accompanied by members of his party and General Banks, visited the school ship George M. Barnard, where Sabbath services were conducted by Collector Russell, according to the Episcopal liturgy. Remarks were made by General Banks and Father Taylor, and Mme. Parepa Rosa sang "Ave Maria," accompanied by Signor Rosa on the violin. In the afternoon the President visited Mount Auburn, and was entertained in Watertown by Mr. Alvin Adams. This was the first Presidential visit to Boston in sixteen years. The next day, June 24, St. John's Day, the President participated in the dedication of the Masonic Temple. The great Masonic procession, which formed the grand feature of the day, was two hours in passing a given point. A piece in charge of Battery B, Captain Baxter, gave the signal at 11 a. m. for the start. On the 25th, the President, Secretary Seward and Postmaster General Randall had a reception at the State House, a visit to Bunker Hill and the Charlestown Navy Yard, a trip down the harbor, a reception at the Tremont House in the evening, and left on the morning of the 26th for Hartford, escorted to the Worcester depot by the Knights Templars.

#### GENERAL PHILIP H. SHERIDAN.

Between October, 1867, and March, 1868, General Sheridan visited various sections of the country on a recreative tour, and arrived in Boston October 7. On the way from Newport to Boston, he was met at Stoughton by members of the Governor's staff, whose duty it was to express the cordial welcome of the executive. At Savin Hill, Dorchester,

where the General left the gaily decorated train, the station and all adjacent buildings were hung with bunting, the national colors were visible in all directions, and at a short distance stood a great triumphal arch of evergreens. The Roxbury Horse Guards, 112 sabres, under command of Captain Curtis, acted as escort to the party which accompanied the General in carriages. As soon as the procession moved, detachments of Batteries A and B, which were stationed on the hill, fired a Major-General's salute of thirteen guns. The route was through Dudley and Washington streets to the Boston line, where they were met by Mayor Norcross and members of the city government, and the right of the escort which extended as far down Washington street as Oak street. The various bodies of troops honored General Sheridan with a major-general's salute as they passed. He rode in the barouche with his head uncovered, Mayor Norcross seated beside him. At Pine street, the carriages made a detour to Harrison Avenue, and thence through Oak street to Washington, and there awaited the passing of the troops in review. The chief marshal was Major-General J. A. Cunningham. The procession was composed of two brigades, infantry, cavalry, and artillery. In the First Brigade was Battery A, eighty men, Captain Lucius Cummings, Boston; Battery B, 100 men, Captain Charles W. Baxter; also in the procession were Battery C, of Malden, sixty men, Captain James B. Ayer, First Lieutenants Edward E. Currier and George H. Johnson; Battery D, of Lawrence, sixty men, Captain Henry M. McIntire, First Lieutenants Frank Annan and George G. Durrell; Eleventh Battery Association, fifty men, Captain Warren French, preceded by Captain O. F. Nims, bearing the flag of the Second Battery; other veteran officers and associations. In addition to the salutes, General Sheridan received many rousing cheers and "tigers." Stores were closed, and business generally was suspended. The Union Club in Park street was elaborately decorated, and there was a very patriotic display of flags, bunting, and appropriate mottoes. The carriages containing the General and party arrived at the Revere House at 1.45 p. m. The troops did not halt in Bowdoin Square, which held a dense and intensely enthusiastic mass of people. The First Brigade went down Cambridge street and around that way to the Common, while the Second Brigade passed through Green street to Causeway street. Most of the military organizations had collations at their armories, and those from abroad returned to their homes that night. The General was obliged to submit to a reception at once in the parlors of the Revere House, meeting among other former comrades General Banks, General Butler, and Hon. Henry Wilson, and about one hundred members of the Veteran Soldiers and Sailors' Association. After visiting the dining-hall, where a collation was in waiting for a large company, he retired to a private room and dined with members of his staff and a few friends. At 4 o'clock His

Excellency Governor Bullock, with other state officials, called upon him and welcomed him in behalf of the whole people of Massachusetts.

In the evening there was a procession of 700 torches, composed of Grand Army Posts from New Bedford, Taunton, Lynn, Boston and Cambridge, who, after parading the principal streets, came to a rest in Bowdoin Square to join in the demonstrations of popular regard. Fireworks were displayed during the march, and many houses were illuminated. At 8 p. m. there was a reception at the Revere House, during which it was affirmed the General was obliged, from fatigue, to change from the right to the left hand in salutation. It was specially noted that he greeted the officers of the colored battalion very cordially. Many distinguished civilians and officers of the army and navy were present. A platform was erected in front of the ladies' drawing-room, with a row of gas-lights at the foot, and a circle of lights overhead. The large hotels and public buildings in the square were illuminated, and blue lights and Roman candles were frequently discharged above a closely-packed mass of humanity. It was estimated that not less than 20,000 persons were in the square and vicinity, and Gilmore's full band, led by P. S. Gilmore, played patriotic songs and quicksteps. Mayor Norcross presented General Sheridan, who made a short speech, remaining on the balcony for several minutes afterwards.

On the 8th he visited Cambridge and Charlestown, and at 1 o'clock went to Lowell on a special train, as the guest of General Butler. Returning to Boston in the evening, at 9.45 he was present at a banquet at the Union Club, participated in by two hundred guests, and the next morning took a special train for Albany, the city and state officials accompanying him as far as Framingham.

#### OTHER CHANGES IN THE ROSTER.

On January 5, 1869, Butler Libby, of East Cambridge, was commissioned captain, having served as First Lieutenant, commissioned May 7, 1867. Other officers were: First Lieutenants, Ira C. Foster, of Boston, and Charles F. Wisner, Grantville; Second Lieutenant, George A. Sawin, of Boston; all commissioned January 5, 1869. Benjamin F. White, of Cambridge, was commissioned adjutant, with the rank of First Lieutenant, January 19, 1869.

#### NATIONAL PEACE JUBILEE, 1869.

At the first jubilee—the National Peace Jubilee of 1869—Battery A did not do any of the firing at the concerts, but turned out 106 men, under command of Captain Butler Libby, on June 16, the second day, to take part in the review by President U. S. Grant.

The right of the line rested at the Providence depot, in the Highland district, the left at the corner of Berkeley and Tremont streets. The troops were under command of General Benjamin F. Butler. It was



generally said that all the batteries were in good trim and made a fine display. Buildings were decorated, and there was great enthusiasm. President Grant attended the concert at the Jubilee in the morning, the parade in the afternoon, a banquet at the Revere House in the evening, and went to Groton that night with Secretary Boutwell.

#### COMMISSIONS AND RESIGNATIONS.

Captain Libby resigned, and was discharged March 14, 1871, and Edwin C. Langley was elected captain, May 9, 1871. George A. Sawin, Second Lieutenant, resigned, and was discharged December 13, 1870. Adjutant Benjamin F. White had resigned, and been discharged June 23, 1870, and on May 29, 1871, Dr. J. Russell Little, of West Roxbury, commissioned Assistant Surgeon, with the rank of First Lieutenant, January 13, 1869, resigned, and was discharged.

#### FIRST BATTALION, FIRST BRIGADE.

By General Order No. 3, June 15, 1871, the First Light Battery, Captain Edwin C. Langley, and the Second Light Battery, Captain Charles W. Baxter, were designated as the Third Battalion of Light Artillery, attached to the First Brigade, M. V. M. The battery commanded by Captain Langley was lettered and known as "Battery A," and that by Captain Baxter as "Battery B," of said battalion. Major-General B. F. Butler promulgated the order, and Dexter H. Follett was commissioned major of the battalion, December 4, 1871.

#### THE PEACE JUBILEE OF 1872.

Monday, June 17, ushered in the International Musical Festival of 1872. It was held in the new "Coliseum" building, erected for the purpose on the Back Bay; 550 feet long, 350 feet wide, with a seating capacity of 60,000 persons. There were present 165 choral societies, and 829 instruments in the orchestra; foreign bands aggregating 258 instruments, and United States bands, 860. The opening prayer was made by the Rev. Phillips Brooks; address of welcome, by Mayor William Gaston; and the inaugural oration by General Nathaniel P. Banks. Johann Strauss was here with his grand orchestra, playing "The Beautiful Blue Danube"; Daniel Godfrey, with the English Grenadier Guards Band; France sent The Garde Republicaine Band; Prussia, the Kaiser Franz Garde Grenadier Band; and Ireland the Irish National Band.

The most popular pieces, and those longest remembered, were the "Star Spangled Banner," the "Anvil Chorus" in the Grand Scena from "Il Trovatore," the old hymn "Hamburg," the "Marseillaise," and "Auld Lang Syne." The "Star Spangled Banner," Mrs. Julia Houston West, soloist, was sung by the full chorus, accompanied by organ, orchestra, drum corps, fire alarm bells, one hundred anvils played upon by mem-

bers of the fire department, and Batteries A and B, of the First Battalion, with ten 10-pounder Parrotts, and six Napoleons.

Major Dexter H. Follett, who commanded the Battalion, told me January 19, 1897, that both batteries were there and added to the noise. He had arranged a price with Patrick Gilmore for every shot fired, and it was done by electricity. Major Follett was outside of the building with the batteries, and I learn from Lieutenant Murray, that John C. Mullaly, now leader of the orchestra at the Boston Museum, sitting by the side of Gilmore and watching his baton, gave the signal to Major Follett. There was immense enthusiasm on the second day, when the English band played the "Star Spangled Banner." On the third day, when "Hamburg" was played—"Kingdoms and thrones to God belong"—it was said that the cannon were introduced with a completeness of effect that had not been reached in any other piece.

The discharges came in with surprising correctness as to time, and at the close of the hymn there was a grand salvo. The fourth day—the day the "Marseillaise" was played—it was said that in the afternoon performances, the cannoneers discharged their pieces about 250 times; eighty-eight reports in the first performance of the "Anvil Chorus." The cannon were placed 100 feet from the northeastern end of the building.

President U. S. Grant was present on the 25th, with his secretaries of state, treasury, army and navy.

The Jubilee closed on the Fourth of July—a rainy day. National salutes were fired at sunrise, noon and, sunset, on the Common, at South Boston, East Boston, the Highlands, and Dorchester, by Batteries A and B, and at the afternoon concert at the Coliseum, during a furious storm, they sustained their part in the performance.

#### LEXINGTON AND CONCORD CENTENNIAL, 1875.

Two pieces of Artillery from Battery A, under command of Captain E. C. Langley, left Boston the night of April 18, 1875, to manage the salute firing at Concord. Two other pieces, under command of Lieutenant John F. Murray, were sent to Cambridge to fire a salute, when the organizations should start to march over the old route to Lexington. From the tent where the exercises were held a procession, nearly two miles in length, moved at 1 o'clock, and proceeded to the battle ground. The first military organization in the escort was the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Captain Dexter H. Follett, 350 men. The chief marshal was William A. Tower. President Grant, escorted by the "Lancers," rode in the rear of the Salem Cadets, and Hon. Hamilton Fish, Secretary of State, was seated by him in the carriage.

#### CENTENNIAL OF THE BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL.

In the magnificent display of citizen soldiery, visiting organizations, G. A. R., Loyal Legion, and civic societies, which formed the pro-

cession on June 17, 1875, the centennial of the Battle of Bunker Hill, Battery A formed part of the First Battalion of the First Brigade, and was commanded by Captain Edwin C. Langley, First Lieutenants John F. Murray and Isaac Chase, and Second Lieutenant Joseph W. Smith. I rode in the escort, as aide on the staff of the chief marshal, General Francis A. Osborne. It was said that Batteries A and B "worked splendidly, and covered themselves with honor." Battery A had seventy-five, and Battery B sixty-eight men present for duty.

#### OBSEQUIES OF VICE-PRESIDENT WILSON.

The funeral obsequies of Vice-President Henry Wilson, whose remains, escorted by a detachment of United States marines, and of the Fifth Maryland Regiment, were on the way from Washington to Natick, Mass., were held in the Representative's Hall of the State House at 11.30 a. m., on November 29, 1875. When the procession, a mile and a-half in length, of carriages in double lines; the militia, including the Twenty-Second Regiment; members of the Grand Army of the Republic, civic organizations and citizens, moved at 2.30 p. m., from the State House entrance, the First Regiment band played a dirge, the fire bells rang, and minute guns were fired by Battery A. The procession passed down Beacon street, over the Mill Dam, and arrived at the Cottage Farm Station, on the Boston and Albany railroad at 3.40 p. m.

John F. Murray, of East Cambridge, was commissioned Second Lieutenant of Battery A, 1st Brigade 1st Division, July 27, 1870; elected First Lieutenant, November 7, 1871—an office he continued to hold after the battery was re-organized and attached to the 2nd Brigade by General Order No. 21, July 14, 1876, in the general re-organization of the militia, under chapter 204, Acts of 1876, James A. Cunningham, Adjutant-General. This act was to reduce the expenses and increase the efficiency of the militia, and by it companies, exclusive of the Cadet Corps, were arranged into regiments of eight companies each, and battalions of two or more companies each, and formed into two brigades.

Battery A, of the 2nd Brigade, retained its captain—Edwin C. Langley, of Cambridge—whose commission dated from May 9, 1871, until March 28, 1877, when he resigned and was discharged. Lieutenant Murray resigned and was discharged April 21, 1879.

John F. Murray had been a good soldier in the Fifth Massachusetts Battery during the four years of the war. He was one of the youngest in it, having enlisted when he was about sixteen years of age. After the war he entered Battery A. I imagine that he had much to do in selecting me to be its captain, when Captain Langley was to retire in 1877. I was asked if I would like to accept the position by Colonel Robert G. Shaw, then on the staff of General Eben Sutton, who com-

manded the brigade to which the battery belonged. He was a young man, a graduate of Harvard, 1869, who entered the militia too young to have taken part in the War of the Rebellion. Colonel Robert G. Shaw, of the Fifty-Fourth Massachusetts Volunteers (colored), who was killed at Fort Wagner, had identically the same name.

After some talk with Shaw, Murray, and others, I decided to have my name offered for election. At the meeting held in the Wareham street Armory, a complimentary vote was passed for Murray, and then, as he declined the position, I was elected on a red ticket, of which I still have a sample. His own ticket was nearly the same color. In the summer of 1878, when I went to Europe on various important matters, I had leave of absence, and turned the battery over to Murray, who still remained Senior First Lieutenant. I was glad that he could have the opportunity of taking the battery to camp at Framingham, and to act as captain, which he did, for he was surely entitled to this distinction, and at the same time he did not have the responsibilities, which would have devolved upon him, if actually commissioned and mustered in as captain. When the battery was in camp I happened to be at Hamburg, Germany, and sent the boys a cablegram of greeting and good wishes.

John F. Murray has for years been a captain in the police force of East Cambridge, now (1897) the second precinct, Cambridgeport.

William F. Hall, then the First Sergeant, was always known as "Billy" Hall. He was later First Lieutenant under Captain (Major) Dexter Follett, and always took the deepest interest in the fortunes of Battery A. He told me that he it was who, as a boy, or very young man, pulled the lanyard that discharged the piece, during the riot at the old Cooper street Armory, in July, 1863.

#### FROM MY SCRAP BOOK.

Record of Proceedings had in Boston on the 9th day of May, 1877, for the choice of captain, Battery A of 2nd Brigade.

John F. Murray had forty-seven votes on the first ballot, and was elected captain in the place of Edwin C. Langley, resigned.

Nathan Appleton had forty-eight votes on the second ballot, and was elected captain, John F. Murray declining to serve.

The Record of Election is signed Eben Sutton, Brigadier-General and presiding officer; Edward N. Fenno, captain and A. D. C., witness.

#### BATTERY A IN 1877.

Battery A was composed of Boston men. Its uniform comprised a dark-blue short frock coat, with three rows of buttons, slashed with red on the breast, and with red shoulder-knots; light-blue trousers, with red cords. While I was captain, I arranged to have them wear what was known as the "Busby" hat, of English origin, made of black Astrachan

fur, with red cloth on the top; a straight, red plume, or pompon, on one side, and a gilt cord hanging down in front. These hats had been discarded by the Twelfth Regiment of Infantry, and I was able to procure enough of Messrs. Bent & Bush for the battery. They are very handsome for light artillery, and more comfortable than the helmet.

At the camp of the 2nd Brigade at Framingham, August 21, 22, 23, 24, 1877, Battery A mustered four officers and sixty-five enlisted men.

FROM GEORGE B. CARTWRIGHT, JR.

Boston, May 28, 1877.

Captain Nathan Appleton, Commanding Battery A, M. V. M.,

Sir: First Lieutenant Murray informed me of my appointment as your adjutant, and I accept the position, appreciating the honor which you have done me, and shall earnestly and strenuously second your endeavors to make the battery the first in the State.

In accordance with instructions from you, I have prepared a roll of the battery, containing each man's name and the date of his muster in, and find that the term of service of three men expires September 1, viz., Sergeant Hugh Dunn, Private Charles Haskins, and Charles F. Whipple. The remainder of the men have at least a year to serve. The roll I will hand to you Monday evening. I have the honor to be, Captain,

Your obedient servant,

GEORGE B. CARTWRIGHT, JR.

George B. Cartwright, Jr., was commissioned adjutant of Battery A, with the rank of First Lieutenant, May 22, 1877, and discharged December 3, 1878, when, to carry into effect the law of 1878, changes were made in the organization of the militia, and Battery A was attached to the First Battalion Light Artillery; Second Lieutenant, January 13, 1880; First Lieutenant, December 12, 1882; resigned and discharged, October 31, 1883.

PRESIDENT HAYES' ESCORT.

I received the following order:—

Headquarters Second Brigade, Boston, June 12, 1877.

Captain Nathan Appleton, Commanding Battery A, Artillery, M. V. M.,

Sir: An important meeting of field officers will be held at brigade headquarters, at 2 p. m., Wednesday, June 13, to make arrangements for escort to President Hayes. General Sutton desires your presence.

Very respectfully your obedient servant,

ROBERT G. SHAW,  
Lieutenant-Colonel and A. A. G.

President Rutherford B. Hayes came, at the invitation of the government of Harvard College, to attend the graduation of his son from the Law Department of that university. The hospitalities of the State were extended to him during his visit. He arrived at the Dudley street (Roxbury) Station of the New York and New England Railroad at 10.15 a. m., on June 26, 1877. Mrs. Hayes, Secretaries Evarts and Devens, and Postmaster-General Key, Hon. Richard McCormick and Mrs. McCormick, were of the Presidential party. They were met at the station by Governor Rice and staff; the cavalry battalion, Major Dexter H. Follett; members of the Governor's Council, the Secretary of State, and heads of departments.

and escorted to the city limits. On the arrival of the train the customary Presidential salute of twenty-one guns was fired by Battery C, of Melrose, Captain Baldwin, First Battalion of Light Artillery, detailed by Major Merrill. Houses were decorated, and flags hung across the street.

The State militia took charge of the party at the Roxbury line. The right rested on Arnold street, and the line was formed on the west side of Washington street, extending as far north as Franklin Square. The President and party moved down the line, escorted by Chief of Police Savage and a detail of mounted police, and proceeded to the left of the 2nd Brigade, which had already passed through Chester Park. Battery A, in this brigade, mustered seventy-five men. This was the first time I had been out with the battery. In the 1st Brigade was the First Battalion, Major Merrill, Batteries B and C, 150 men.

The route of the procession was down Washington street, passing the City Hall and State House, to the Hotel Brunswick; 3,500 men were in the ranks. The balcony of the State House was canopied and carpeted for the ladies of the Presidential party, and the procession was hailed with cheers from the dense mass of people about the State House, and by the members of the Somerset Club at their club house on Beacon street.

The President arrived at the Hotel Brunswick at 2 o'clock, and, with the officers of the army and navy stationed in Boston, took his place on the reviewing stand. The review lasted three-quarters of an hour. A public reception was held in Faneuil Hall, from 4 to 5 o'clock. The President and party attended a complimentary concert by the Apollo Club at Music Hall in the evening, and at 10.15 p. m. a reception and collation at Young's Hotel, by the Loyal Legion, of which Attorney-General Charles Devens was commander.

On the 27th, the President attended the commencement exercises, a banquet by the city of Boston at the Brunswick at 6 o'clock, and a Festival concert at the "Tabernacle" in the evening.

In a note from Adjutant Cartwright, dated June 27, 1877, enclosing a receipt for eighteen saddles, requiring my signature, he wrote: "On all sides I hear congratulatory accounts about the appearance of the battery yesterday, and I can safely say that never since the war has it made so fine an appearance."

#### IN RELATION TO GUNS.

Fort Independence, Mass., (Boston Harbor), July 9, 1877.

Captain Nathan Appleton, Commanding Battery A, M. V. M., Boston, Mass.,

Dear Sir: The commanding officer directs me to acknowledge the receipt of your note of the 7th inst., and to state that the guns and equipments you desire to use on the 11th inst. will be at your disposal, but that it will not be possible for him to furnish ammunition as you request.

Very respectfully your obedient servant,

A. E. WILKINSON,  
First Lieutenant Light Artillery, Post Adjutant.

## IN RELATION TO PROJECTILES.

Boston, July 10, 1877.

Nathan Appleton, Esq., Boston.

Dear Sir: We cannot get the "projectiles" for to-morrow. Our friends in New York telegraph that they can furnish them fixed and ready with cartridge bag and powder—three-inch percussion shell—at \$2.35 each, but that the express will not take them, and they can only be shipped by outside steamer, which sails to-morrow, and reaches this port on Friday morning. If you should conclude to defer your parade, we shall be pleased to order them on for you, and remain,

Yours truly,

WILLIAM READ &amp; SONS.

## FROM MY DIARY.

"July 24, 1877. See Mayor, Governor, Adjutant-General, and others, about Battery A, and the possibility of riots. Drill at Armory."

The riots of laboring men, connected with the railroads at Pittsburg, Penn., in July, 1877, had been very serious, and the State militia had not been able to quell them promptly. From thence they extended west to Chicago, and there was even some slight trouble at Albany. There was, of course, a possibility of disturbance in Boston.

I went to the State House to see the adjutant-general, and find out if I could have some fixed ammunition. There was none available in the State; and, consequently, I was given an order on William Read & Sons for six rounds, which I duly received. At the State House I met Colonel T. B. Edmands, of the Cadets, on a similar errand. I had been passing a few days at Ipswich, and came at once to Boston, hearing that there might be some riot. It was announced that there was to be a meeting and speaking at Park Square, in the evening of that day, but on repairing to the spot I found only a few persons, and nothing very incendiary in their remarks. Later on, going to the armory of Battery A, in Wareham street, I found First Sergeant William F. Hall, and several of the men, on duty, and ready for the possible emergency, but there was not the slightest possible disturbance of the peace in Boston.

## FROM MAJOR GEORGE S. MERRILL.

I received the following letter dated August 8, 1877, at Lawrence, Mass.:—

My Dear Captain: I must thank you for your kind invitation just received, of which myself and staff will certainly avail ourselves during your coming encampment. I thank you the more in that, believing in the utmost cordiality and good feeling in the militia, this is the first invitation to the officers of the First, or old Second Battalion, received from Battery A.

Sincerely yours,

Captain Appleton.

GEORGE S. MERRILL.

The "old Second Battalion" was composed of "Battery C," Melrose, Clark B. Baldwin of Melrose, Captain, and Battery D, Lawrence, George G. Durrell, of Lawrence, Captain. Major Merrill was not connected with the militia prior to the Civil War. In 1862, he assisted in raising a company for the Union service, of which he was chosen lieutenant, and afterwards captain, which position he held until mustered out.

In 1866, he became adjutant of the Sixth regiment Volunteer Militia of Massachusetts, serving three years, being in 1869 elected captain of the Fourth Light Battery ("Battery D"), which he commanded until 1872, when he was chosen major of one of the battalions of Light Artillery in the State's service, holding this position continuously for twenty-one years—until he tendered his resignation in 1893. He was first commander of Post 39 of the Grand Army of the Republic of Lawrence, and subsequently commander of the Department of Massachusetts, and in 1881, Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Army of the Republic of the United States. He has been senior vice-commander of the Massachusetts commandery of the Loyal Legion, and captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

#### IN CAMP AT FRAMINGHAM.

From my Diary: "August 20, 1877, went to camp at Framingham. Rode out with Battery A."

August 23: "Admiral Steadman called at camp, and I gave him a salute, also to my predecessor Past Captain Edwin C. Langley."

#### LETTER FROM GENERAL HORACE BINNEY SARGENT.

August 23, 1877.

My Dear Captain: Your favor of invitation to visit your camp cordially acknowledged by the members of my family, including Lieutenant Commander McCalla, U. S. N., who is much obliged to you. I regret my own inability to come, but have requested the A. A. G. of the G. A. R. to extend your kind invitation to the staff of the G. A. R. department.

I hope you will have a charming visit and tour of duty.

Truly yours,

HORACE BINNEY SARGENT.

From my Diary, August 25, 1877: "Return to Boston tired out."

#### DEDICATION OF THE MONUMENT.

September 16, 1877: "Call on General McClellan. Dine at Ober's with General John C. Robinson, Commander-in-Chief G. A. R., General Horace Binney Sargent, Massachusetts Commander G. A. R., and Colonel Solomon Hovey, Jr., at the city's expense—entertaining fund. Call at headquarters. General A. P. Martin, Chief Marshal."

September 17: "Dedication of Soldiers and Sailors Monument on Boston Common. I turn out with Battery A."

On the city's birthday the monument was dedicated. The procession was an imposing pageant, and consisted of the Grand Army of the Republic, Department of Massachusetts, and visiting Posts, the entire militia of the State, veteran organizations with their old regimental colors, Masonic lodges, Odd Fellows, and other civil societies—making one of the largest processions ever seen in the city of Boston.

The general escort to the parade comprised both brigades of state militia, commanded by the commander-in-chief, Governor Rice, including Battery A, which mustered eighty men. The roster of the battery



was as follows: Captain, Nathan Appleton; First Lieutenant, George B. Cartwright, Jr., Adjutant; Assistant-Surgeon, First Lieutenant, William Appleton; First Lieutenant, John F. Murray; First Lieutenant, Joseph W. Smith; Second Lieutenant, George W. Brooks.

#### SUGGESTIONS FOR IMPROVING ARTILLERY SERVICE

October 30, 1887, while commander of Battery A, I wrote an open letter to Major-General James A. Cunningham, then Adjutant-General of the State of Massachusetts—afterwards superintendent of the Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors Home in Chelsea—containing the following recommendations:—

Having been asked by yourself and others, to give my views in relation to the Light Artillery service of the State, and make any suggestions which may be of possible use in the future, I avail myself of the opportunity thus offered me of so doing, by an open letter to yourself, of which I send the original to Brigadier-General Sutton, commanding the brigade to which I belong, with the request that he will duly forward it to you. The additional tactics prepared by Colonel E. G. Stevens for the formation of a battalion of mounted artillery, the formation of brigade line for drill, dress parade and review, and the ceremony of inspection, were all forwarded to me last summer by the committee in charge, and should have been acknowledged before. I congratulate Colonel Stevens upon the excellence of his work, which provides in a very thorough manner for the different movements of artillery. I have here one suggestion to make, as the result of personal observation, which is that in the brigade line for dress parade or review, the command, "Action front," be given some time before that of "Guides, posts," by the brigade adjutant-general, instead of after, as now; because the manoeuvre is one which must, necessarily, take some little time to be done properly, and have the alignment correct; and during this time the entire brigade, with the general and staff are kept waiting.

I think that at the annual brigade encampment, there is certainly, so far as concerns the artillery, too much parade and review, and not enough battery drill.

During the time I was in the United States volunteer service—eleven months in the field—all of which were with the light artillery—about nine months with a mounted battery, and the rest on the artillery brigade staff of a corps—the only review in which I ever participated, was that of the Army of the Potomac in Washington at the end of the war.

In the field, we occasionally had brigade drills of several batteries, but never anything that could be called a dress parade. This ceremony, while very beautiful and useful for infantry, either by regiment or brigade, is, to my mind, of little or no importance to light artillery.

Afternoon guard mounting, at the time of retreat, was made, in the battery of which I was an officer, something of a ceremony, as being the only one that could be advantageously performed. I would, therefore, respectfully recommend that, during the week at camp, the batteries be only ordered out once or twice for dress parade, as part of the brigade line. On the other hand, they need two or three hours' steady battery drill. The battery should not be harnessed and turned out more than once a day, as the time and work of harnessing and hitching, and the necessary cleaning before and after, are greater, for the general run of men in the militia and with green horses, than one who does not know from experience would suppose.

A good battery drill one-half of the day, and a drill at the manual of the piece, including mounting and dismounting the guns, carriages, etc., or instructions in properly harnessing the horses at another part of the day, when added to the ordinary life and duties at camp, are quite enough for artillery soldiers.

I believe that the State would find it to its advantage to put up stabling accommodations at the camp grounds at Framingham for the horses of the artillery and cavalry, as this expense is one that should not be borne by the mounted organizations. It is very important that horses, taken out of the stables to which they are accustomed for this special use at camp, should have some sort of good shelter provided

for them. During the time I was at camp the horses would have suffered terribly from the heat by day, had they been standing at the picket lines, and severe showers are at any time to be expected at that season of the year, from which horses would be liable to take cold. As it was, the expense of the stable had to be paid by the battery. It is a pity that the camp ground is not larger. It now is hardly of sufficient size to drill one battery of artillery properly—an inconvenience which becomes very serious when other troops are on the ground at the same time. Perhaps at some future time it may be enlarged, but until then we must do the best we can in the present limited space.

I have recently met the committee on armories, of the city government, and the superintendent of public buildings, in relation to matters connected with the armory of Battery A, on Wareham street, Boston. They have agreed to attend to certain necessary repairs at once, while others of less importance can be delayed until spring. I have recommended to them that the original plan of the armory, or one more or less like it, be carried out if possible, so that the building shall have two full stories and a proper roof; my idea being that one of the upper stories should be given to a regiment or battalion of infantry for their armory. The city of Boston is now so large, that there ought to be one building in it capable of holding all the material needed to quell any disturbance which might occur, and for this the Armory of Battery A could easily be arranged. Should the expense be too great for the city to undertake it alone, it might agree to contribute a certain share, while the State would also furnish something. Should this not be enough, I would advise that a subscription be circulated among the business men, and other citizens of Boston, to make up the remainder, simply for the protection of their own property, in case of any disturbance arising. The building should then be connected by telegraph with the State House, brigade headquarters, police and fire departments at the City Hall—any or all of them, as might be deemed best, and could thus be made of real use in case of danger.

I would also recommend, that one or two Gatling guns, with carriages and limbers complete, be added to Battery A, and that the complement of men be raised to 100. The best Gatling gun for street service is that of calibre .45-inch, with ten barrels. The cost of this is \$1,000; that of the carriage and limber, \$280; while fifty feed cases can be had for \$112.50; making in all, for one Gatling gun, complete, \$1,392.50. The limber of a twelve-pounder Napoleon is not suitable for a Gatling gun. Two horses, or even one, suffice to draw the gun, and it can be worked by two men, though it is always better to have more at hand.

It would be a good thing, in my opinion, if the State would allow each battery one-half day for drill and inspection, some time during the spring. The expense would be slight, and more than warranted by the good effect it would have in keeping up the efficiency and prestige of the commands. For Battery A, I would ask an afternoon drill on Boston Common, with firing omitted, some time in May or June.

These, sir, are all the suggestions I have now to make; and, in offering them to your consideration, I desire to thank you for the interest you have always taken in Battery A, since it has been my privilege to be its captain, and the courtesy I have received from you and other members of the military staff of the State.

A similar acknowledgment, I wish to make to my Brigade Commander Brigadier-General Eben Sutton, and the members of his staff.

Believe me, sir, very respectfully yours,

NATHAN APPLETON,  
Captain Battery A, M. V. M.

Subsequently the battery moved into a fine armory, and two Gatling guns were added.

#### COMMENTS OF THE PRESS.

This letter called forth some comment from the newspapers, and from individuals interviewed by newspaper reporters. That there was altogether too much parade and review, and not enough battery drill at the annual encampments, was the universal opinion; but the suggestion that the battery should not be harnessed and turned out more than once

a day, was not so favorably regarded. It was agreed that, as the artillery are allowed horses only at camp, the full benefit of them should be secured, especially as the drivers need the drill full as much, if not more, than the cannoneers, and drills at the manual of the piece can be had in the armories, just as well as in camp.

All were agreed, that the State ought to provide stabling accommodations at the camp ground for the horses of the artillery and cavalry. As regards the size of the camp-ground, most of the gentlemen interviewed thought it plenty large enough for the manoeuvres of a single battery, and even for a battalion of two batteries. There appeared to be a strong feeling, however, that the artillery should go into camp by itself, and be entirely divorced from the infantry; and it was agreed that the artillery is of no benefit to the infantry, seldom participating in a brigade drill, and only serving to weary the infantry at brigade dress parade.

Some thought the location of the armory bad for an infantry organization, and not particularly good for artillery.

Regarding a half-day of battery drill and inspection each spring, it was thought that a whole day would be much better, and cost but a trifle more; and it was also suggested that, instead of omitting firing, it would be better to take one gun down the harbor and practice target firing.

The correspondence relating to the armory, held with the city officials, is here appended:—

FROM HON. HUGH O'BRIEN

Office of the Clerk of Committees, City Hall.

Boston, September 29, 1877.

Nathan Appleton,

Dear Sir: Yours has been received, and the attention of Mr. Tucker, Superintendent of Public Buildings, was called to it as long ago as August 1, and he still has the matter under consideration. As the building is a public building, the committee on that department alone have the charge of it, and the alterations must be made by them. I have called the attention of Mr. Tucker again to the matter, and hope that something will be done. Have called a meeting of the Armory Committee on Saturday next at 11 a. m., and, if you will be present, will also notify Mr. Tucker to be there, and then we can see if anything can be done immediately.

Yours truly,

HUGH O'BRIEN.

(Afterwards Mayor of Boston.)

MAJOR EDWARD J. JONES.

November 3, 1877. Major E. J. Jones presented Battery A with a gold medal. The occasion was one of unusual interest. It took place in the evening, and, after calling the assembly to order, I had the honor of introducing Major Jones as one of the most distinguished representatives of the artillery service in the State.

The major, in response, said he proposed to speak to the company on the origin of the light artillery service, the organization of Battery A, and the use of the several kinds of fixed ammunition furnished this arm

of the service. He sketched, in an interesting way, the development of the light artillery as an arm of the service, showing that in 1842 the first French battery was organized, and that in 1845 the United States Army first had this style of artillery.

After some details of the history of Battery A, Major Jones took from its case a very handsome gold medal, which was, in 1857, presented to this battery by the commander and staff of that time, to be worn each year by the member making the best shot at the annual target practice. It was received by Major Jones in 1860, when he won the record of being the best shot, and had, from a variety of circumstances, remained in his hands until then. It was in the form of a shield, about two and a-half by two inches at its extreme point, and had the battery's motto, "*aut vincere aut mori*," and other suitable inscriptions upon it, including the names of four successive recipients of it previous to 1861. I received the medal on behalf of the battery, and promised to care for it, and see that it was properly used, in accordance with the desire of Major Jones and the original donors.

After the presentation, Major Jones continued his address, referring, in an interesting manner, to the construction, power, range, and use of the several projectiles used by a light battery in active service, illustrating his remarks by specimens of the various kinds. He also exhibited specimens of the various means used for firing the guns of a battery, and explained the several improvements made since the introduction of artillery as a means of warfare.

The address was eminently practical, full of facts and suggestions of the most importance to the artillerymen, and all who were present gave the closest attention throughout.

Battery A was in fine condition, and the events of the evening roused the members to make additional exertions to sustain the reputation of the battery.

#### LETTER FROM CAPTAIN LEVI K. FULLER.

(Of Fuller's Light Battery, organized in 1874. Lieutenant Governor of Vermont 1886; brevetted colonel in 1887, for long and meritorious service in the Vermont National Guard; Governor of Vermont 1892-1894; died October 10, 1896, aged 55.)

#### Fuller's Light Battery.\*

Brattleboro, Vt., November 9, 1877.

Captain Appleton,

Your letter to General Cunningham prompts me to send you a little book on our recent celebration at Bennington, and containing a short account of our own battery. I do not wish to meddle with affairs outside of my own command, but I must commend some of the points taken by you, as gained from my own experience.

A battery needs all the solid work that it can get in a week's muster, both at manual of the piece and battery drill. Almost any battery can march on the road if

you give it time and room enough, but nothing short of severe and continuous work will give it precision and efficiency.

I am, captain, your most obedient servant,

LEVI K. FULLER,  
Captain Fuller's Light Battery, N. G., Vt.

FROM MRS. E. LAWRENCE.

I received the following, dated Aldie, Penn., December 15, 1877:—

In reply to your kind note I hasten to tell you that it will give me great pleasure to comply with your gratifying request. I regret to say that I have no likeness in uniform of Mr. Lawrence; the one that was taken being thought very poor; but I have an excellent photograph in citizen's dress, taken at Whipple's during the war, which I shall have copied and sent to you. I well remember the deep interest Mr. Lawrence took in the battery of which you are now the commander. With kindest regards,

Believe me, very cordially yours,

E. LAWRENCE.

This was the widow of T. Bigelow Lawrence, son of Hon. Abbott Lawrence, who was United States Consul-General at Florence when I was there in 1864.

THE ANNUAL BALL, 1877.

The annual ball of Battery A, which took place December 17, 1877, in the armory on Wareham street, was a very successful and brilliant occasion.

Colonel Beal, the veteran decorator, had transformed the drill room into a beautiful hall, adorned with the trophies of war and emblems of peace. A prominent feature of the decorations was a fort with mounted guns on either side, with the national ensign, surmounted by a glory of national flags, which occupied the end of the armory towards Wareham street. Overhead was an arch of gas jets, beneath which was a column surmounted by an eagle, with sabres arranged at the base.

A temporary balcony at the opposite end accommodated the members of Edmand's Quadrille Band, T. O. Edmands, leader. The bunting, festooned from the ceiling, and the flags, state seals, and other devices on the walls, produced a very striking and brilliant effect.

The order of dances included twenty numbers, ten of which preceded the supper, which was served about midnight. A promenade concert preceded the grand march, which began at 9 o'clock, shortly after the arrival of the Governor and his party.

My associates on the reception committee were: Adjutant, George B. Cartwright, Jr.; Assistant-Surgeon, William Appleton; First Lieutenant, John F. Murray; First Lieutenant, Joseph W. Smith; and Second Lieutenant, George W. Brooks. A large assembly of military and civic dignitaries graced the occasion. There were present His Excellency Governor Alexander H. Rice, attended by General Blackmar and Colonels Rice, Hutchings, Lyman and Campbell, of his staff, and Mayor Frederick O. Prince; General Eben Sutton, with members of his staff, and several

non-commissioned officers; Major George S. Merrill, of the First Battalion Artillery, attended by nearly all the members of his staff, as was also Major Dexter Follett of the First Battalion of Cavalry.

Colonel John L. Stevenson, commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery, also attended, with many officers of his command, it was said, as a mark of courtesy to Captain Appleton. Every officer of rank in the State militia was there, as well as many individual members of their commands, numbering in all between two and three hundred couples. The brilliant uniforms, combined with the toilets of the ladies, rendered the scene very attractive. The most general satisfaction was expressed with the arrangements, and the manner in which they had been carried out. I thought it would be well to have the names of the various commanders of the battery, with the dates of their taking and leaving the command, arranged in the armory where they could be seen by every one there. This was done by Lieutenant George W. Brooks, who presented the battery with shields, on which were painted the names and the dates. They made a fine appearance fastened along the walls, and remained there until destroyed by the fire.

#### JANUARY INSPECTION, 1878

At the inspection of Battery A, by Brigadier-General Sutton and staff, there was a large number of invited guests, including members of the city government. The men mustered fifty strong, and their drill, when the disadvantages of cramped space and the absence of horses was considered, was creditable to the organization, which included many new men.

After the drill, I called the company to order in an adjoining room, and, in behalf of the members of my command, presented to General Sutton a beautiful silver cigar case.

General Sutton expressed his thanks in a few complimentary remarks, and I then explained my views on the improvement of the artillery branch of the service. In pursuance of this idea of perfect efficiency, I suggested that the building the battery now occupied be raised and improved, so that an infantry company might be quartered in the second story, the battery furnished with horses, etc., and the building connected with the City Hall, etc., by telegraph, as previously suggested. I also recommended some minor improvements, such as shutters to the windows, etc. The inspecting officers examined the upper stories of the building, and seemed to coincide with me in my views.

#### PARADE IN '78.

In April, 1878, the battery numbered four commissioned officers and about forty enlisted men. The men took a very lively interest in the battery, and each month showed an improvement. Many old artiller-

ists wished to join it. At the annual inspection of June 15, the battery mustered sixty-five men and six officers, with the full complement of field pieces and horses. After a parade at the South End, the battery reached the Common at 10 o'clock.

The Natick band volunteered its services, and performed excellent music during the parade, and on the Common. An hour was devoted to drill, and at 12 o'clock the officers and men took dinner under a marquee. After dinner the battery paraded through the usual down-town streets.

The inspection, conducted by Inspector-General Brigadier-General Cornelius G. Atwood, Assistant Inspector-Generals Colonel Edward G. Stevens, and Lieutenant-Colonel A. Hun Berry, took place at 2 o'clock on the Common.

There was much adverse criticism in the newspapers, but the military editor of one prominent journal did us the honor to say that "The ranks made a very neat display, and showed the result of much valuable practice since they were last out for parade." As no horses were allowed the artificers and wagoners, they paraded with the detachment with which they drilled. There was a large assembly of spectators in and about the mall (on the Common), during the afternoon, including many infantry, cavalry, and artillery men; also several members of General Sutton's staff.

After the tactics and drill, a number of appointments were confirmed.

On July 4, 1878, Battery A fired the usual salutes, a half-hour at sunrise, 12 o'clock noon, and at sunset.

Battery A encamped at Framingham September 24 to 28, 1878, and of this inspection General Cornelius G. Atwood is quoted in the adjutant-general's report as saying: "The artillery battalion is deserving of great praise; the drills and other exercises witnessed were very creditable, especially the inspection by the brigade inspector. Great and marked improvement was visible, and discipline and personal appearance were far better than before."

With relation to the changes I thought desirable for the armory of Battery A, I received a letter from General Henry Sturgis Russell, in 1897, Fire Commissioner, who was brevet Brigadier-General and Colonel of the Fifth Massachusetts Cavalry, Lieutenant-Colonel Second Massachusetts Cavalry, First Lieutenant and Captain Second Massachusetts Infantry, during the war, and at that time chairman of the Boston Police Commission—dated November 4, 1878.

Dear Sir: I will gladly take hold of the matter treated of in yours of the 1st inst., and do all in my power to effect whatever may seem best.

Yours,

Captain Nathan Appleton.

H. S. RUSSELL.

To carry into effect the arrangement of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia law, as provided by the statute of 1878, Battery A was attached to the First Battalion Light Artillery, and I was directed to report by letter to Major George S. Merrill, commanding the First Battalion, by General Order No. 7, December 3, 1878; existing companies transferred, and the new companies assigned, as therein indicated.

FROM GENERAL AUGUSTUS P. MARTIN.

While in command of Battery A, I received the following letter, dated December 6, 1878, from General Martin:

My Dear Captain: At your suggestion I have directed Mr. J. W. Black to make and frame a copy of one of my large-size photographs in military uniform,—an order for which I herewith enclose—which I desire to have you present to your command as a token of my appreciation of the value of a well-organized militia, as well as the great interest I feel in the success of an organization with which I was connected for seven years previous to the late war, and an arm of the service with which you and I were identified in the Rebellion.

With my best wishes for the success of your battery in the future,

I remain, yours truly,

A. P. MARTIN.

To Captain Nathan Appleton, commanding Battery A, Light Artillery,

P. S. I enclose, herewith, cabinet size for yourself.

A. P. M.

Augustus P. Martin was present as an enlisted man in Battery A, Light Artillery, 1st Brigade, 1st Division, M. V. M., at the annual encampment, August 8, 9, and 10, 1854; at inspection May 30, and encampment August 25, 26, and 27, 1855; at inspection May 28, and encampment August 6, 7, and 8, 1856.

He was present as Third Sergeant at inspection May 27, and encampment August 28, 29, and 30, 1857.

Prior to May 4, 1858, he was for some time clerk of the company, and on that date was commissioned Third Lieutenant, vice John Reed; promoted First Lieutenant, January 7, 1859, vice N. F. Stevens. Resigned, and was discharged, December 13, 1859.

GENERAL JOHN H. REED.

I recall from personal recollections of John H. Reed, the following:

He was at one time a member of the New England Guards. He was on the staff of Major-General B. F. Edmands, Major and Division Engineer. Resigned and joined the Boston Light Artillery, Major Cobb as adjutant; A. D. C. to Governor Banks, rank of Lieutenant-Colonel; Quartermaster-General on the staff of Governor Andrew, with the rank of Brigadier-General. He was captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1866.

REORGANIZATION

In February, 1879, an effort was made to re-organize Battery A, and place it where it ought to be—at the head of the Light Artillery of



the State. A list was opened on the 18th inst. for the signatures of all persons who would like to join the renovated battery, and it was announced that from the names thus obtained, would be selected the best men who could attend the meetings and drills of the company. There was a prospect that there would soon be vacancies among the commissioned officers, and, consequently, a chance of speedy promotion for good men.

On January 13, 1880, Joseph W. Smith, of Cambridge, was commissioned captain of Battery A. He had served as Second Lieutenant, commissioned December 8, 1873, and First Lieutenant, September 4, 1876. Other officers were Lieutenants William Appleton and George W. Brooks, both of Boston, commissioned January 13, 1880; also Second Lieutenant George B. Cartwright, commissioned on the same day, promoted First Lieutenant, December 12, 1882.

Lieutenant Appleton resigned and was discharged October 28, 1882, Lieutenant Cartwright, October 31, 1883, and Lieutenant Brooks, September 3, 1884. Albert W. Carlton, of Boston, was commissioned First Lieutenant November 30, 1883, resigned and was discharged September 3, 1884. On May 22, 1885, John C. Potter, of Boston, was commissioned captain. He had been Second Lieutenant, commissioned November 30, 1883.

Other officers were James R. Murray and Charles D. White, First Lieutenants, both of Boston, commissioned May 22, 1885; also on the same day, Alfred A. Mercier, of Boston, Second Lieutenant. Lieutenant Murray resigned and was discharged December 2, 1885, Second Lieutenant Mercier, December 16, 1885.

On December 23, 1885, Dexter H. Follett, of Boston, was elected Captain of Battery A; July 8, 1886, Charles L. Smith, of Boston, was commissioned First Lieutenant, and Dr. William H. Ruddick, of South Boston, was commissioned Second Lieutenant; Frank H. Mudge, of Boston, was commissioned Second Lieutenant, September 6, 1886.

In the course of time my desire for better quarters for Battery A was fulfilled, and on March 14, 1887, Major Follett wrote me the following letter from 192 Dartmouth street, Boston:

November 4, 1878.

Captain Nathan Appleton,

My Dear Sir: I send herewith an invitation to our opening reception of the new Armory to-morrow, Tuesday evening, and hope that you will be present (Newton street corner of Newland.) I also enclose a list of our fine members, and hope that I may have the honor of adding you. The assessment is \$5 annually, in advance. You will be glad to know that the battery is doing first rate. A full complement of 212 men, and twenty-five on the waiting list.

Very truly yours,

DEXTER H. FOLLETT.

Subsequently, at a drill at the armory, at which I was present, I was elected an honorary member.

Captain Dexter H. Follett had been in the State service, as an officer in the militia, infantry, cavalry, and artillery, with intervals of a few years, since 1851. He recruited the Third Light Battery for the war, and was in the United States service as captain of that organization, from September 5, to November 27, 1861. Since his election as captain of Battery A, December 23, 1885, he had served continuously in that office up to the time the foregoing note was written, and continued to discharge its duties until April 25, 1895, when the battery was disbanded. May 25, 1887, Lieutenant Smith resigned and was discharged, and Second Lieutenant Ruddiek was promoted to First Lieutenant June 7, 1887. On the same day Fred I. Clayton, of Boston, was commissioned Second Lieutenant. Lieutenant Mudge resigned, and was discharged, November 4, 1887, and John C. Grouse, of Nahant, was commissioned Second Lieutenant on November 21, 1887; and John E. Brayman, of Boston, was commissioned Second Lieutenant May 21, 1888. Lieutenant Charles D. White resigned and was discharged October 1, 1888, and Second Lieutenant Clayton was promoted to First Lieutenant November 12, 1888, and commissioned adjutant of the Eighth Infantry January 22, 1890. William F. Hall was commissioned First Lieutenant March 3, 1890; Second Lieutenant John C. Grouse resigned and was discharged April 23, and Henry G. Jordan, of Boston, was commissioned Second Lieutenant June 9; resigned and was discharged March 7, 1891.

By General Order No. 9, May 18, 1891, for the purpose of equalization of brigades, Battery A was detached from the First Battalion Light Artillery, and Battery B was attached, and the battalion was transferred to the 1st Brigade, and Battery A remained attached to the 2nd Brigade.

Captain Dexter H. Follett, commanding Battery A, was ordered to report by letter to Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., commanding 2nd Brigade. Major George S. Merrill, commanding the First Battalion, Battery B, of Worcester, and C, of Lawrence, reported to Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Bridges, Jr., commanding 1st Brigade. Major Merrill resigned and was discharged May 9, 1893.

May 18, 1891, Dr. William T. Souther, of Worcester, was commissioned surgeon, and on June 29, 1891, William P. Davis, of Cambridge, was commissioned Second Lieutenant. Dr. Souther resigned and was discharged March 30, 1892, and Dr. John T. Hovey, of Boston, was commissioned assistant surgeon March 31, 1892; promoted surgeon May 26, 1893.

#### STATUE OF ADMIRAL FARRAGUT.

On June 28, 1893, a bronze statue, by Henry Hudson Kitson, of Admiral David Glasgow Farragut, erected by the city of Boston in the Marine Park at South Boston, was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies.

The parade at 2.40 p. m. through the principal streets of South Boston, was under the direction of Dr. William H. Ruddick, chief marshal. In the procession, which was composed of eight divisions, were officers from Russian, and other visiting war vessels. Two companies from the Charlestown Navy Yard, two battalions of sailors from U. S. S. San Francisco, and three companies of naval cadets from San Francisco, with Carter's Band, twenty-five pieces, acted as escort to Chief Marshal Ruddick. In the 2nd Division, composed of the naval brigade, naval cadets from the Massachusetts training ship Enterprise, and a battalion from the Ninth Regiment, was a mounted platoon of forty men from Light Battery A, Lieutenant J. E. Brayman commanding.

The honorary staff was composed of many distinguished members of naval organizations and veteran associations from New York, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New Hampshire, and Maine. In the procession were members of the G. A. R., the Sons of Veterans, and many carriages containing invited guests, among them ex-Mayor Frederick W. Lincoln, Rear Admiral A. E. K. Benham, Captain (in 1897, Rear Admiral), Thomas O. Selfridge, Jr., commandant of the Navy Yard, other officers of the San Francisco and Vesuvius, and of the Russian cruisers, Dimitry Donskoi, and Rynda.

An address was delivered by ex-Governor Alexander H. Rice, from a stand erected in the Park near the statue, followed by a speech from Captain N. Zelony, commander of the Russian cruiser Dimitry Donskoi, referring to Admiral Farragut's visit to Russia in 1867. The guns of Battery A were stationed on the slope of a hill near by, and performed their appropriate part at the unveiling of the statue.

By virtue of General Order No. 8, April 6, 1894, the Gatling guns were turned over to the infantry. On April 18, 1894, Second Lieutenant William P. Davis resigned and was discharged on account of the reduction of the battery, and on July 24, 1894, Lieutenant William F. Hall resigned and was discharged.

On April 23, 1895, a petition, signed by fifty-three names, led by Colonel William D. Ewing, was presented to His Excellency, Governor Frederic T. Greenhalge, Governor and Commander-in-Chief, in the following terms:

"The undersigned being desirous of being associated together as a company of the mounted arm of the Volunteer Militia of the Commonwealth, respectfully petition to be allowed to organize a Troop of Cavalry or a Battery of Light Artillery, in the event of a vacancy being created, or a new company being needed.

(Signatures)

"If this petition be accepted, there are a number of additional names that can be obtained, but it is not deemed advisable to give more than the minimum number required, thus leaving time to fill up the required number with the most desirable recruits."

Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

Adjutant-General's Office, Executive Department,

Boston, April 24, 1895.

General Order, No. 4.

Paragraph III. In consideration of the report of the inspectors' department, and the evidence adduced at the recent hearing, under orders by the judge advocate-general, it appearing that Battery A, Light Artillery, Second Brigade, M. V. M., has, from lack of harmony and dissensions, fallen below the required standard of efficiency; let an order be issued disbanding said Battery A, and immediate measures caused to be taken for the recovery and care of the military property heretofore in charge of disbanded battery

(Signed)

FREDERIC T. GREENHALGE,

Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

IV. Battery A, Light Artillery, Second Brigade, M. V. M., is hereby disbanded. Honorable discharges for officers and enlisted men will issue from this office.

Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

Executive Department, Boston, April 24, 1895.

The petition of W. D. Ewing, of Boston, and others, for permission to form a company, with a view to its being attached to the Massachusetts (Volunteer) Militia, is hereby granted.

(Signed)

FREDERIC T. GREENHALGE,

Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

V. Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., commanding, Second Brigade, M. V. M., will make the necessary arrangements to organize the before-mentioned petitioners, and enlistments will be commenced on the date of this order. The company, when organized, will be designated as Battery A, Light Artillery, M. V. M., and will be attached to the Second Brigade, and, as the direct successor of the battery disbanded by this order, will continue the service record of that organization.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief,

SAMUEL DALTON,

Adjutant-General.

April 25, 1895, First Lieutenant William H. Ruddick, and Second Lieutenant John E. Brayman, resigned and were discharged on account of the disbandment of the battery.

May 8, 1895, the battery was mustered in at the East Armory, East Newton street, by Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., commander of the 2nd Brigade, and William D. Ewing was commissioned Captain; Jacob C. R. Peabody, of Danvers, Senior First Lieutenant; Richard F. Parker, of Lynn, Junior First Lieutenant; and Amory D. Wainwright, of Brookline, Second Lieutenant. William A. Brooks, of Boston, was commissioned Assistant Surgeon May 23, 1895; First Lieutenant Parker resigned and was discharged March 14, 1896, and was succeeded by Butler Ames, of Lowell, grandson of General B. F. Butler, and son of General Adelbert Ames, March 23, 1896.

On October 29, 1896, the battery took possession of its new quarters in the South Armory, Irvington street, Boston.

On November 16 and 17, 1896, details from Batteries A, B, and C, practised firing with shot and shell at Fort Warren, in Boston Harbor. Only the officers and non-commissioned officers of the batteries went down. Two guns were taken to the fort—one twelve-pounder brass Napoleon, belonging to Battery A, and the other a three-inch iron muzzle-loading rifled gun—the same as used by the Fifth Massachusetts Battery during the war—from Battery C, of Lawrence.

NATHAN APPLETON,

Lieut. and Brevet Capt. Fifth Mass. Battery, U. S. V.,

Capt. Battery A, M. V. M., 1877-79.

*By the Editor.*—

On March 17, 1897, J. C. R. Peabody, of Danvers, was commissioned Captain, and Samuel D. Parker, of Boston, Junior First Lieutenant. At the yearly encampment of the Second Brigade, held at Framingham, July 19-24, 1897, Battery A, under Captain Peabody, came into camp, 100 strong, about midnight, Saturday, July 17, having marched from Boston on Friday, and bivouacked the previous night at Wellesley. General Peach thus speaks of this action on the part of the battery:

"This organization, by its generosity, has inaugurated a custom which the brigade commander has recommended for a number of years, and which, if generally adopted, would result in great advantage to the force, giving to the State practically fifty per cent. more duty than can be realized under the ordinary requirements for camp duty. I believe that if the troops could receive pay for six days camp duty, all would take advantage of the opportunity to report for duty on Saturday, and remain on duty until the following Saturday."

At this camp, Battery A, together with the Eighth Regiment, received the following "distinguished mention" for the elegance and neatness of their quarters. "Both were noted for having their entire camp strictly uniformly arranged, and models of neatness. Never in my long experience have I witnessed a camp of regulars or militia that excelled either. The other organizations, while being clean and neat at all times, did not have the uniformity throughout that prevailed in the before-mentioned organizations."

Captain Jacob C. R. Peabody, of Danvers, resigned July 2, 1898, having been commissioned Captain of Company C, Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts, United States Volunteers, June 28, 1898. He was succeeded by Junior First Lieutenant, Samuel D. Parker, commissioned July 18, 1898. First Lieutenants Harry S. Blake and William Amory, 2nd, both of Boston, were promoted from their sergeanteies, and commissioned July 18, 1898, as was also Second Lieutenant Charles S. Dole, of Newton-

ville, previously Sergeant-Major. Second Lieutenant Amory D. Wainwright, of Boston, resigned May 9, 1898.

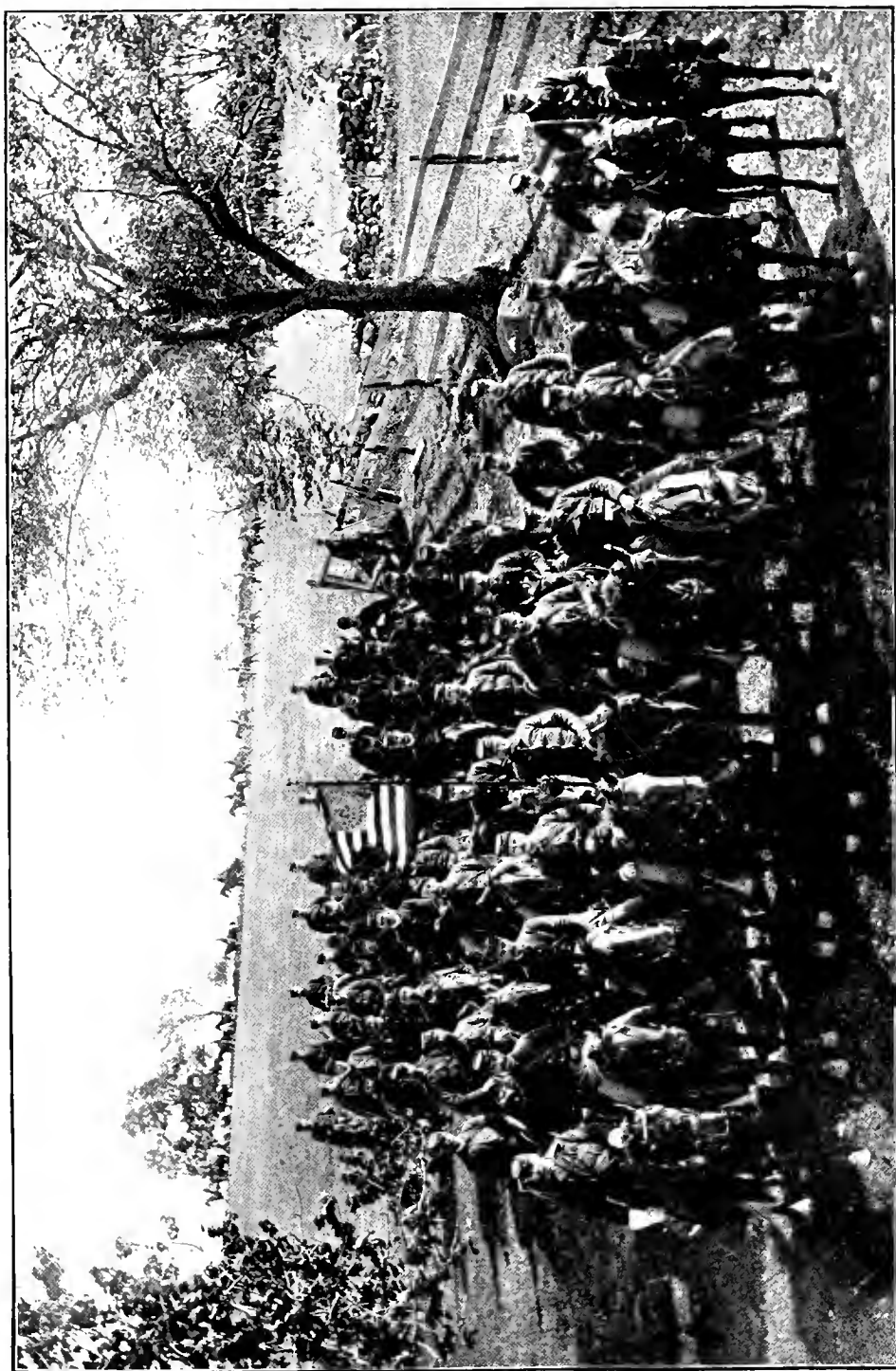
First Lieutenant Butler Ames, of Lowell, resigned March 14, 1898, to be commissioned Adjutant of the Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, United States Volunteers, May 14, 1898; and eventually became its Lieutenant-Colonel August 6, 1898, while on active service in Porto Rico.

Under Special Orders, No. 53, A. G. O., dated May 9, 1898, part of the Fifth Regiment, First and Second Corps Cadets, First Battalion, and Battery A, Light Artillery, and the Signal Corps, were detailed to guard the coast from Plum Island, off Newburyport, to Telegraph Hill, Hull. Brigadier-General Thomas R. Mathews commanded this force until Saturday, May 21, at 6 p. m., when he was relieved by Brigadier-General William A. Bancroft. Only one platoon of Battery A, with two pieces, served at a time, and this was stationed at Galloupe's Point, Swampscott, Mass. While the services of Battery A during the Spanish-American war did not bring it into any special danger or prominence, they were highly appreciated at the time when they were rendered, and when a large part of our population seemed determined to over-estimate Spanish resources, enterprise, and daring, and to undervalue the strength of our navy, and the warlike ability of our own people.

It is doubtless true that the artillery of Massachusetts, furnished as they were with obsolete guns, and compelled to rely on an antiquated drill, of absolutely no value as applied to modern field artillery, would have suffered severely had any modern torpedo boat or small cruiser made a descent on their leaguer.

In such case, however, there is no reason to doubt that the guns of Battery A would have been fought to the last extremity, and to such purpose as their minimum of range and power would allow. It is fortunate for all that that long, and, to many of those in authority, anxious coast-watch, was not rewarded by the approach of even a single light-armed cruiser of the enemy.

Battery A, and also the First Battalion of Artillery, through the efforts of Adjutant-General Dalton, Major L. N. Duchesney and Captain S. D. Parker, who in 1899 visited Washington for the purpose, secured in 1900, three batteries of 3 2-10 inch breech-loading rifled guns of the present field pattern.



*Photo by W. H. Partridge.*  
FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, WELLINGTON, MASS., 1892. COMPANY A IN FRONT, COMPANY D MARCHING IN THE REAR.





## CHAPTER VI.

### FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, M. V. M.

THE First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M., was formerly designated the First Battalion of Light Dragoons, organized October 5, 1852, and received its present designation by S. O. No. 315, March 27, 1865. Cavalry were organized at an early date in both the Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies, as soon in fact as the supply of horses became adequate for the equipment of videttes, dragoons and mounted infantry, the latter forming a very considerable part of the forces which drove King Philip from his own territories and those of his allies, the Nipmucks, in 1675-76. Their troopers were generally light-armed, wearing a morion or open helmet, with or without an adjustable iron bar in front of the nose to protect the face from branches as well as from sword strokes. The gorget and cuirass with heavy boots and long thick gloves, completed the defensive armor then generally worn, although even this was largely replaced by the buff-coat of thick leather, then coming into common use. The Plymouth horse carried swords and petronels, or large, long barreled, heavy-butted, large-bored pistols, but the carbine or short musketoon, was their main reliance in actual combat.

In the later French wars, infantry and artillery became the chief reliance of both contestants, but small bodies of mounted men patrolled frontiers and carried swift succor to threatened points. The southern and middle states supplied most of the troopers and light horse of the Revolution, and, as is elsewhere told, the infantry or so-called artillery company, armed with muskets, yet possessing one or more field pieces, became the favorite arm in Massachusetts during the earlier decades of the nineteenth century. In 1839, out of 230 companies then enrolled in the state militia there were only four companies of cavalry in the state.

In 1840, the re-organization of the militia assigned to the 1st Brigade "the company of cavalry in Franklin;" to the 3d Brigade "the First Battalion of Cavalry, to include the two companies of cavalry in Georgetown and Wenham;" and to the 6th Brigade "the First Regiment of Cavalry, to include the four companies of cavalry in Conway, Coleraine, Chesterfield and Williamsburg." The National Lancers were then an independent company and not assigned. The companies assigned were to wear green coats with red collars, cuffs and turnbacks, blue trousers with red stripes, a tall, black leather cap with cross sabres and a white horsehair pompom, showing a red stripe in front, and carried long pistols and a very broad bladed and heavy sabre.

In 1842, the Franklin, Townsend, Georgetown, Conway and Wenham companies of cavalry had been disbanded, and the National Lancers, Captain Peter Dunbar, was attached to the First Regiment of Light Infantry, while companies A of Chesterfield, Captain Joseph Hawkes; B of Coleraine, Captain Fred E. H. Allen; and C of Williamsburg, Captain Chas. A. Williams, composed the First Regiment of Cavalry.

At this time the great highway leading from Boston to Albany, now paralleled by the Fitchburg railroad, was traversed by large numbers of heavy wagons, and travellers by stage and private equipages. The country taverns along this route were nightly crowded with guests of high and low degree, and it is of record that the wilder parts of the country still furnished much game, including the wild turkey and black bear. But the railroad was beginning to replace the ancient methods of transportation and to increase the population and prosperity of the inland towns and villages. By these, and constant legislative changes, the formation of a mounted militia was discouraged, and in 1845 only one troop of cavalry, the National Lancers, Captain Ezra Forristall, was present at the autumnal inspection.

The Springfield Cavalry, Captain Erasmus D. Beach, was organized in August, 1849, and in 1850 attached to the Sixth Brigade, and on March 8, 1852, Company B, of Boston, Captain Isaac Hull Wright, was organized, and with Company A, the National Lancers, Captain Jonas C. Gipson, designated as the First Battalion of Light Dragoons, M. V. M., Major T. J. Pierce commanding, and attached to the First Brigade.

On June 8, 1853, the North Bridgewater Light Dragoons, Lieutenant R. A. Stoddard commanding, was assigned to the Second Brigade, and in 1854 was commanded by Captain Joel F. Ellis. On July 19, 1853, the Waltham Light Dragoons, Captain Gideon Haynes, was organized, and assigned to the Third Brigade.

The civil war of 1861-65 practically wiped out the Springfield Cavalry, and the North Bridgewater and Waltham companies, whose members largely recruited the 1st Massachusetts Cavalry in 1861-62. In 1864, Troop F, of Chelmsford, Captain Christopher Roby, was recruited, and in 1865, Company C, of Charleston, was organized, and with the Roxbury Horse Guards, Captain Richard Holmes, as Company D, added to the First Battalion of Cavalry, which replaced the two company Battalion of Light Dragoons, by virtue of Special Order No. 315, March 27, 1865. Company E, Unattached Cavalry, organized in New Bedford, was attached to the First Brigade in 1866.

The First Battalion of Cavalry thus organized endured until 1876, when under a system of rigid inspections, thirty companies of infantry, artillery and cavalry were disbanded by G. O. No. 19, 1876. Among these were numbered Companies B, of Boston, and C, of Charlestown.

The First Battalion of Cavalry, thus reduced to Company A, of Boston, and Company D, of Roxbury, was assigned to the Second Brigade, and Troop F, of Chelmsford, to the First. Since that date there has been no material change in the fortunes and standing of the brigade, except that it has steadily retained and increased its prestige, discipline and prosperity.

As an organization it has no war record, although during the rebellion it furnished many officers and recruits to the Union cause, and recruited a number of companies for the cavalry service. The biographies of its past and present members, however, bear honorable testimony to the value of its services to the state and nation.

### COMPANY A, FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY.

#### BOSTON NATIONAL LANCERS.

The National Lancers are associated with the earliest recollections of the oldest inhabitants of Boston, and are equally popular with the present active and rising generations. Their gay uniforms and pennoned lances still lend color and "the pomp and circumstance of glorious war" to occasional parades and processions, although when on duty they present the compact and grimly practical appearance, which the exigencies of modern warfare have exacted.

Originally an independent company; for at that day the Bay State encouraged military organizations and private ownership of the soldiers' weapons; it was organized November 1, 1836, at the suggestion of the Hon. Edward Everett, then governor of Massachusetts. Captain Thomas Davis, First Lieutenant Lewis Dennis and Second Lieutenant Peter Dunbar were commissioned December 8, 1836, and Third Lieutenant Lewis Munroe and Fourth Lieutenant Erastus Coleman were elected in the following spring. Samuel K. Bailey was made orderly sergeant and later adjutant. They were attached to the Second Regiment of Infantry, 3d Brigade, 1st Division, M. V. M., April 13, 1837.



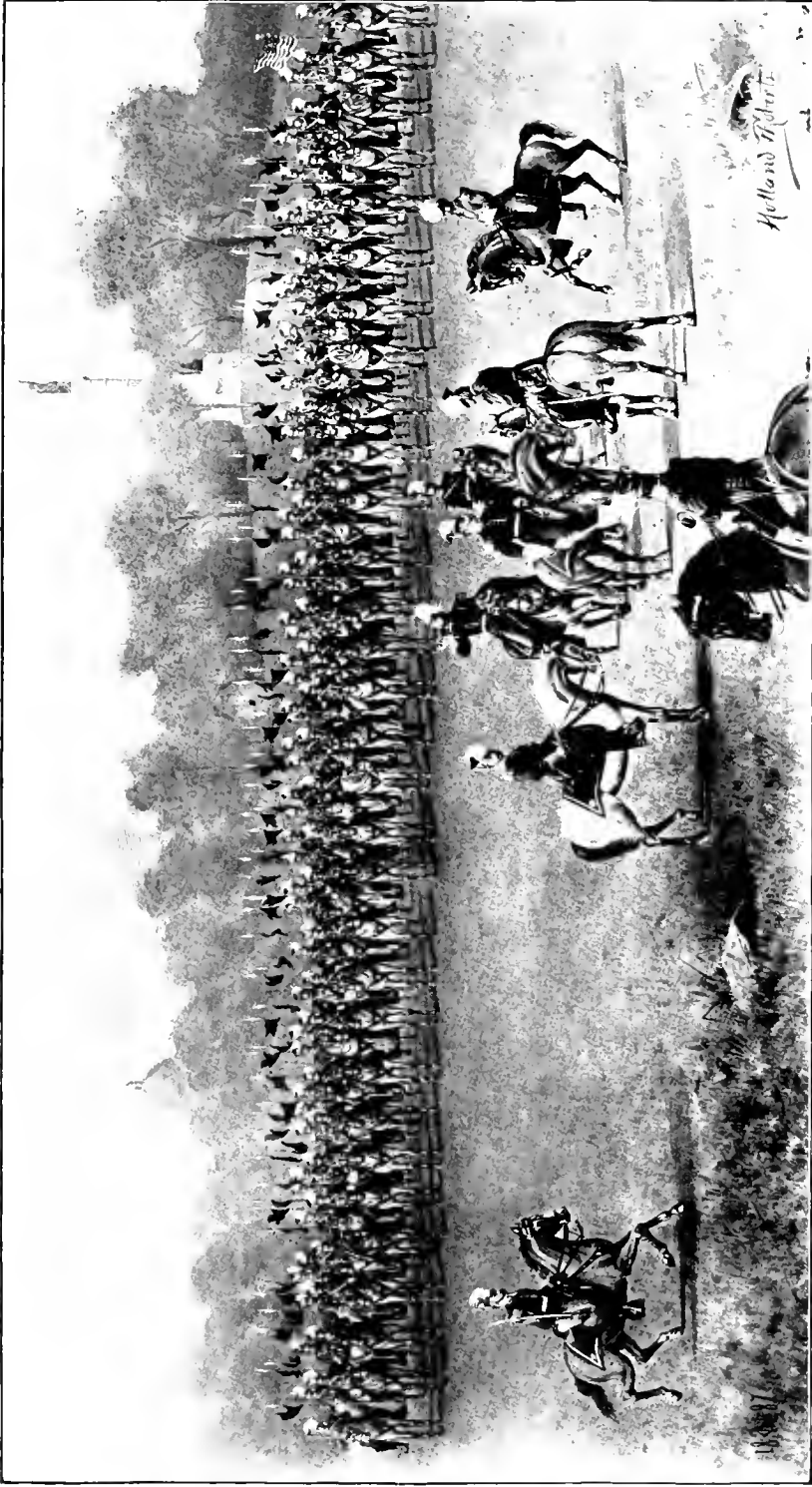
NATIONAL LANCERS, ANNUAL PARADE, BOSTON COMMON, 1851.

Their first appearance in public was on duty at the now almost forgotten Broad Street Riot of June 11, 1837. Broad street was at that time

a residence street, whose houses, once respectable mansions with well kept gardens, had become tenements chiefly occupied by Irish laborers. A bitter feeling, which later found expression in the "Know Nothing" campaign, had already led to numerous personal encounters between American born workmen and "the foreigners." Fire Engine Company, No. 20, of the Fort Hill district had returned from a fire, and several of its members had an altercation with some Irishmen who had gathered to attend a funeral. The firemen were worsted, retreated to the engine house and rang the fire bell to summon assistance. Engine No. 9 responded, and on Summer street near High, encountered the funeral procession through which they attempted to pass. The mourners resisted and a general free fight ensued. Men poured in from the markets, docks, wharves, ship-yards and factories, and the Irish retreated to Broad street which the mob invaded, and finally destroyed a large part of the household goods of the tenants. The mayor ordered "the bells to ring backward" and the militia assembled at Faneuil Hall, whence, led by the Lancers, they paraded down State and through Broad street, which they promptly cleared. The city was however still greatly excited and men were coming in from all the surrounding country. The Lancers, with the rest of the militia, were under arms all night, but there was no further call for their services.

On June 14, 1837, they paraded for the first time with lances and in full uniform fifty-eight strong, and had their first banquet at Concert Hall. Governor Everett and suite, the adjutant-general, brigadier general and staff and the mayor and aldermen of Boston were present among the invited guests. Each anniversary of this occasion has been invariably celebrated by a luxurious banquet to the present day. Wednesday, August 30, they escorted Governor Everett to the commencement exercises at Harvard, and were presented by him with an elegant standard designed and painted by Charles Hubbard and costing \$1000, which is still preserved by the corps. Friday, September 22, they escorted Governor Everett to Salem to attend a review. October 30, 1837, they escorted a deputation of some thirty chiefs of the Sacs and Foxes and twenty of the Iowas and Sioux, who visited Boston. Keokuk, then chief of the Iowas, seems to have created a great impression by his manly bearing and native eloquence.

Under Captain Peter Dunbar, elected July 30, 1839, the Lancers with nineteen other independent companies paraded Thursday, April 22, 1841, in honor of the late President William Henry Harrison. Rufus Choate delivered the oration at Faneuil Hall. On January 19, 20 and 21, 1842, Elder Knapp, a Baptist revivalist, preaching at the Bowdoin Square Tabernacle, was exposed to mob violence, and on the 21st the Lancers turned out, "their line reaching from Hanover Street to Bowdoin Square." The mob dispersed, but the preaching was discontinued.



*By Permission of Holland & Roberts.*

BOSTON NATIONAL LANCERS. BOSTON COMMON, 1867.



Captain Joseph Smith, April 23, 1843. The Lancers escorted President John Tyler on his visit to Boston, and at the dedication of the Bunker Hill Monument, June 16 and 17, 1843.

Captain Ezra Forristall, March 26, 1845. The corps adopted the red coats and blue pants now worn. The Lancers paraded in the funeral procession in honor of President Jackson, July 9, 1845; presented a flag to the First Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, Colonel Caleb Cushing, then departing for Mexico, February 22, 1847; escorted President James K. Polk, visiting Boston June 27, 1847, and received and escorted the remains of President John Q. Adams, March 10, 1848.

Captain Albert Guild, March 21, 1848. The Lancers received and escorted the First Massachusetts Volunteers, Colonel J. H. Wright, returned from the Mexican war, July 22, and escorted the Boston City Government at the formal opening of the Lake Cochituate water service, October 25, 1848. Captain William F. White elected, March 23, 1849.

Captain Thomas J. Pierce, May 13, 1850. Received the Seventh Regiment of New York, July 11, 1850; paraded August 15 in the funeral procession in honor of President Taylor; on October 7, visited New York with ninety-three men, and were entertained four days by the Seventh Regiment and Washington Greys Troop of New York City, and the Washington Horse Guard and the Ringgold Guards, of Brooklyn. On May 12, 1851, a delegation presented the Seventh New York with a standard and each company with a marker's lance and pennon. On September 17, 1851, the Lancers received and escorted President Willard Fillmore, and on the 19th escorted the city government at the great railway celebration.

Captain Jonas C. Gipson, March 18, 1852. Escorted Louis Kosuth, then visiting Boston, April 27, and Daniel Webster, July 9. Received and entertained the Fifth Company of the New York Seventh, July 13-16; escorted the regiment of Marine Artillery, U. S. A., leaving Boston August 28; and took part in the funeral cortege of Daniel Webster, November 30, 1852.

Captain Seth Wilmarth, November 14, 1853. Had the unpleasant duty of forming a part of the armed force which escorted Anthony Burns from the old Court House to T wharf, thence to be returned into slavery. Anthony Burns, the slave of Charles Suttle, of Virginia, had escaped to Boston and was employed by Coffin Pitts, a colored clothes dealer in Brattle Street. He was arrested by order of Watson Freeman, U. S. marshal, Wednesday evening, May 25, 1854, and on Thursday morning brought before U. S. Commissioner Edward G. Loring, who adjourned the case to allow of the employment of counsel. Marshal Tukey, then the head of the Boston police, had an extra force of constables on duty, and Burns was confined in the upper story of the Court House. There

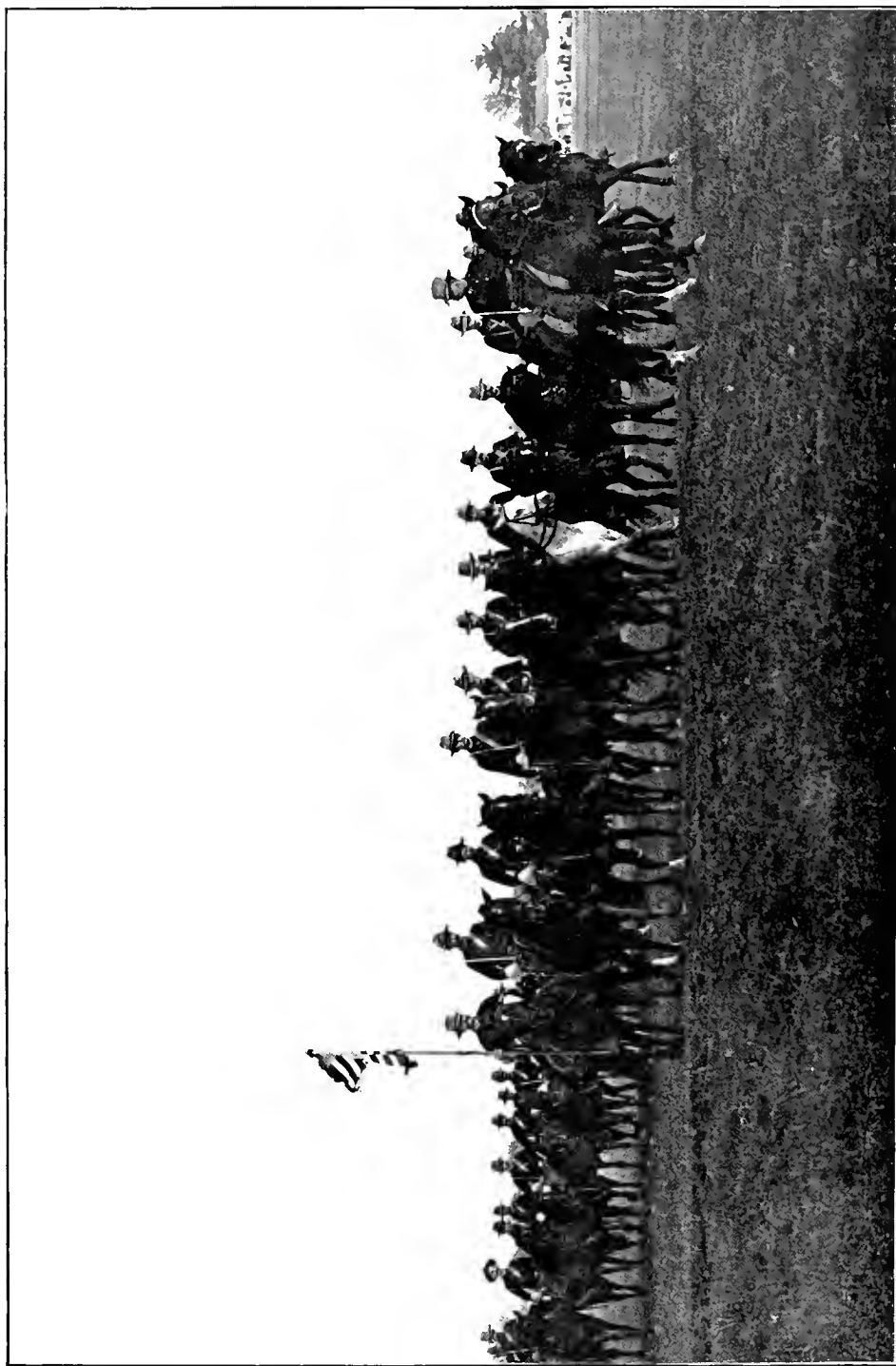
was great popular indignation; the gun stores sold great numbers of guns and pistols, and the city filled up with visitors from all parts of the state. On Friday evening, May 27, a crowded meeting at Faneuil Hall was addressed by Samuel E. Sewell, who presided; Frank W. Bird, of Walpole; John L. Swift, Wendell Phillips, Dr. Howe and Theodore Parker, all of whom advocated the rescue of Burns, by force, if necessary. There is no doubt that this course would have been adopted by an adequate force, but the meeting was brought to a sudden close by the tidings that a rescue had been attempted and had failed. The western door of the Court House had been beaten in with an improvised battering ram, and in the fight which ensued, James Bachelder, a teamster in the employ of Peter Dunbar (captain 1839-43), was fatally stabbed while resisting the assailants, who were finally repulsed.

At the hearing Commissioner Loring adhered strictly to the provisions of the Fugitive Slave Law, which was so framed that any man presumably "held to service" in another state could be extradited on the ex parte oath of two citizens of that state, and taken there to await the final judgment of the courts of that state. His course, which appears to have been strictly legal, resulted in a decision directing the return of Burns to Virginia, and on June 2, 1854, the U. S. revenue cutter Morris awaited him under the guns of Fort Independence. The steamer John Taylor, with steam up, lay at T wharf.

Major General Edmands commanded the militia, consisting of the First Battalion of Light Dragoons; the Fifth Regiment of Artillery, eight companies, Colonel Cowdin; the Fifth Regiment of Light Infantry, eight companies, Colonel Charles L. Holbrook; the Third Battalion of Light Infantry, three companies, Major Robert I. Burbank; and the First Corps Cadets, Colonel Thomas C. Amory. The infantry and artillery companies held the crossings of every street and alley from Court Square to the wharf, and the cavalry filed along the gutters on either side of the procession, which consisted of a hollow square composed of 120 special officers armed with swords and revolvers under Captain Peter Dunbar, who naturally bitterly resented the death of Bachelder. In the center of the square were the United States marshal with his deputies and the prisoner. Before the square marched detachments of U. S. Artillery and marines, a loaded field piece and six men of the 4th U. S. Artillery, and behind it a rear guard of marines.

Funeral emblems draped several of the neighboring buildings; yells, hisses and execrations were heard on all sides; papers of cayenne pepper and it is said bottles of sulphuric acid were hurled at the troops, and, in one instance at least, it is said that a fatal volley at close range was just about to be poured into the crowd, and barely averted. John M. Clark of Vermont received a sabre wound on the head, and the horse of a





*Photo by T. E. Murr*  
NATIONAL LANCERS, COMPANY A, FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, M. V. M. ENCAMPMENT SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., SOUTH FRAMINGHAM, MASS.



Lancer was fatally stabbed on Commercial street, but the force was too strong, and Marshal Freeman and his men with Burns in charge were safely placed upon the John Taylor.

It is not just, at this day, to attribute anything but a soldierly obedience to orders, and constituted authority, to the militia engaged in this humiliating task. As one of them, now an aged man, lately observed, "We obeyed the law, and when the Southerners forgot our example and rose against the law, we were just as ready to vindicate it." Cowdin and Holbrook, who both commanded on that day, led Massachusetts regiments in the Civil war, and many then in the ranks, and less honored but no less devoted, fought and died for the Union and the laws.

Captain Charles A. Kimball, November 15, 1854. Commanded the Lancers at the dedication of the Franklin statue, November 17, 1854.

Captain Axel Dearborn, December 31, 1856. Entertained the Seventh New York, paraded at the unveiling of the Warren statue on Bunker Hill, June 17, 1847.

Captain Michael C. Kenny, November 24, 1857. Died while in command, December 15, 1859.

Captain John H. Fellows, February 7, 1860. The Lancers acted as escort for the Prince of Wales during his visit to Boston, October 17, 18, 19 and 20, and on November 13, escorted Governor Andrew at the dedication of the Cambridge Museum of Comparative Zoology.

Captain Lucius Slade, March 26, 1861. Under him the Lancers recruited companies C and D, First Regiment Cavalry, M. V. M., and one of the Second; all for three years. They escorted the First Cavalry when leaving for the war, December 19, 1861; received and escorted General Corcoran, August 29, 1862; escorted General N. P. Banks and the Forty-first Massachusetts Regiment at departing, November 5, 1862; received the California Cavalry which arrived at Boston, January 14, the Light Artillery, May 28, and the Fifth Regiment, June 26, 1863, on their return from service.

The Lancers had 125 men constantly on service during the Boston Draft Riots, July 14-23, 1863, and on the 14th was ordered by Mayor F. W. Lincoln to clear Dock Square then held by an excited crowd. The infantry opened to right and left, and the Lancers riding through cleared Dock Square and the streets surrounding Faneuil Hall, and thence proceeded to Cooper street, then filled with riotors. Here the Lancers cleared the street and escorted the cannon, taken from the armory, to Haymarket Square, where they were posted to command the approaches.

On June 23, 1864, they entertained Company D, First Massachusetts Cavalry, then on furlough; in February they entertained the Ellsworth Zouaves; escorted the Independent Battalion, Massachusetts Cavalry, received and entertained the First Massachusetts Cavalry on its

return home, October 31, 1864, and especially companies C and D, which they had recruited. They also escorted the city government at the inauguration of the Mystic water service at Charlestown, November 29, 1864. On January 19, 1865, they acted as escort at the funeral of Ex-Governor Edward Everett, who had proposed and encouraged their organization in 1836; acted as escort to a city procession June 1, and on October 17, left Boston 100 strong, and accompanied by the Chelsea Brass Band of eighteen pieces, to visit Chicago, where the Ellsworth Zouaves and Dearborn Light Battery entertained them, October 20-24. On their return they paraded at Detroit and were entertained by General Lewis Cass and his son; paraded at Niagara Falls, and arrived home October 28, 1865, to be received by 160 Lancers, the Prescott Light Guards and Cummings' Battery.

Captain A. S. Sanborn, January 30, 1866. The corps escorted the city government when General W. T. Sherman visited Boston, June 13, 1866; escorted the governor to Arlington, when the town was formally organized, June 17, 1867; and escorted President Andrew Johnson, June 22 and General P. H. Sheridan, October 7, 1867.

Captain Barney Hull, March 24, 1868. The corps escorted the Cambridge city government at the reception of the Hon. Anson Burlingame and the Chinese Embassy, August 24, and entertained the Washington Greys Troop, August 26, 1868.

Captain George E. Richardson, March 15, 1870. The Lancers escorted the governor to Cambridge, and paraded at the dedication of the Soldier's Monument, July 13. On October 6, 1870, escorted the governor at the founding of Memorial Hall, Harvard University.

Captain O. H. P. Smith, March 28, 1871. Escorted Boston city government at the founding of the Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument, September 18; President Grant and the city government at the founding of the Boston Post Office, October 16, and the Grand Duke Alexis of Russia on arriving at Boston, December 8, 1871. In 1872 they escorted President Grant at the opening of the Peace Jubilee, June 25; performed patrol duty five days after the great Boston fire, November 10-15, and celebrated the dedication of their present armory by a grand military ball, December 18, 1872. In 1873 they left 130 strong for Washington, March 1; paraded at the inauguration of President Grant, March 4; arrived in New York on the 7th; were escorted to the Astor House by the Old Guard of New York, and arrived home March 8, 1873.

Captain Thomas W. Neal, April 8, 1873. The corps entertained the First Battalion of Light Artillery, on their return from a visit to New York.

Captain Cyrus C. Emery, July 28, 1874. Received, August 4, at Oakland Beach, R. I., by the Providence and Pawtucket Horse Guards.

April 19, 1875, escorted the governor and President Grant to the centennial celebration of the battle of Lexington. June 17, did escort duty at the centennial anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill. November 29, 1875, escort at the funeral of Vice-President Henry Wilson. May 8, 1876, left Boston for the Centennial at Philadelphia, 110 strong, with the Chelsea Brass Band; arrived May 9. With the First Corps Cadets, escorted Governor Rice, May 10; returned home May 12. Was inspected June 7, 1876, on Boston Common, and retained as one of the three companies which qualified under the new law.

Captain George S. Holt, April 3, 1877. Paraded at the reception of President Hayes, June 26, and at the dedication of the Soldier's Monument, September 17, 1877.

Captain Charles F. Thurston, April 30, 1878. Excursion to Bangor, Me., October 7; received by the Jameson Guards and city government; given a grand ball, and returned home October 10.

Captain Aaron F. Nettleton, May 7, 1879. Received and entertained the Continental Guards, of New Orleans, La., June 16-19. Paraded on the 250th anniversary of the settlement of Boston, September 17, 1880.

Captain Benjamin W. Dean, January 24, 1881. Corps, eighty-seven strong, started for New Orleans, February 17; received at Chicago, Ill., by the Illinois Guards, and at New Orleans, La., were for nine days the guests of the Continental Guards. Escorted the French guests of the City of Boston, November 2, 1881, and paraded at the reception of President Arthur, October 11, 1882. Entertained the Continental Guards of New Orleans, June 13-21, 1883.

Captain Horace G. Kemp, July 24, 1883. Escorted the governor at the opening of the World's Fair in Boston, September 5, 1883.

Captain Henry D. Andrews, April 22, 1884. Entertained Captain William H. Beanham, with members of Battery B, Louisiana Field Artillery, of New Orleans, June 24; and served as escort of G. A. R. at the memorial services to General Grant, August 8, 1885. On Southern excursion, February 15, 1866, was entertained by the National Rifles of Washington, D. C.; by the German Artillery, and Washington Light Infantry, of Charleston, S. C., and by the Stuart Cavalry and Governor Fitz-Hugh Lee at Richmond Va.; arriving home February 22, 1886.

Captain Isaac H. Allard, September 14, 1886. The First Battalion of Cavalry escorted President Cleveland November 8, 1886. The Lancers celebrated their fiftieth anniversary, June 14, 1887; escorted the R. E. Lee Post of Confederate Veterans, of Richmond, Va., June 16, 1887, and entertained the National Rifles, of Washington, D. C., July 25-26, 1888.

Captain Edward B. Wadsworth, November 27, 1888. The corps performed escort duty for President Benj. F. Harrison, August 7, 1889, and again on August 11, 1890.

Captain Addison D. Nichols, January 27, 1891. Corps made excursion to Washington, D. C., October 26, 1891, and were entertained by the National Rifles for three days.

Captain Daniel K. Emerson, February 21, 1893. The Lancers made an excursion to New Orleans, La., February 1, 1894, and were the guests of the Continental Guards for ten days. On September 4, 1894, the battalion paraded at the funeral of General N. P. Banks, at Waltham, Mass.

Captain Oscar A. Jones, May 7, 1895. A detachment formed escort at the funeral of General Coggsell, at Salem, May 24. Battalion paraded at the mobilization of the state militia at Boston, September 4. Paraded at funeral of Major (ex-captain) Cyrus C. Emery, February 18, 1896, and that of D. H. Thurston, March 4, 1896. Visited New York April 26-28, 1897, and formed part of the escort at the dedication of the Grant mausoleum, April 27.

Captain Doris A. Young, June 22, 1897. Besides the annual dinner; parade omitted; July 14, 1897; escorted the governor to Harvard Commencement June 29; rode in from state camp at Framingham, and escorted the crews of U. S. warships, September 3, 1898, and escorted funeral of Major-General George L. Andrews, U. S. A., April 7, 1899.

Captain Frank K. Neal, January 16, 1900, son of Captain Thomas W. Neal, April 8, 1873, is the present commander. The corps has first and last, borne on its rolls about 3500 men.

#### TROOP D, FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, M. V. M.

##### ROXBURY HORSE GUARD.

The Roxbury Horse Guard, like the National Lancers, was originally an independent company of horse, raised in the city of Roxbury, now a district of the Greater Boston of to-day.

At the beginning of the Civil War, a coterie of public spirited citizens of Roxbury decided to organize such a company to act with the authorities to repress disorder or insurrection at home: to aid in repelling invasion from any source, and to assist in recruiting, organizing and training troops for service in the second states.

The first meeting was held at the residence of Colonel Almon D. Hodges, on April 22, 1861, less than two weeks after the bombardment of Fort Sumter, and the gentlemen who attended decided that the proposed company should be a troop of horse.

It was easy to enroll members, and on April 25, Colonel Hodges, who had long served in the Rhode Island militia, was chosen drill mas-



THE FOOTY HORSE GUARDS IN DRESS UNIFORM.

Photo by W. H. Pritchard





ter, and at once began the training of the new company. Neither the state nor the national government could furnish arms, equipments or uniforms, so the members promptly purchased these, and were soon equipped for home service. On May 16, 1861, Colonel Hodges was formally elected the first commander of the new company, which was called the Roxbury Horse Guard, and speedily became an active and efficient troop of cavalry, and a public spirited and efficient organization for patriotic and charitable effort. Among its organizers, early members and patrons, were numbered Roland Worthington, publisher of the "Boston Traveler," Dr. Milbrey Green, destined later to become famous as an artilleryist, Rev. John O. Means, Dr. John S. Flint, Richard Holmes, George Curtis, A. P. Calder, Captain John A. Scott, Robert Molineaux, Thomas Decatur and many other prominent men of Roxbury and vicinity.

Its ranks were always kept open to all desirable recruits who were anxious to perfect themselves in the rudiments of cavalry service; and many such availed themselves of the privilege, and afterwards served under the great cavalry leaders of the republic. The Guard was also largely helpful in raising the Hodges Light Guard, Captain W. W. Graham, and another company of infantry commanded by Captain, later Colonel, John L. Swift, both of which have a record of gallant and effective war service. Its services in this regard, and in the draft riot of 1863 were thus acknowledged by Mayor Lewis of Roxbury:

"City of Roxbury, November 9th, 1863.

Colonel Hodges, Commander of the Roxbury Horse Guard.

My Dear Sir:

"In behalf of the City Council, I acknowledge the receipt of your note accompanying a vote of the Roxbury Horse Guard, tendering their services to assist the authorities to enlist the quota of this city, under the recent call of the President of the United States; and also for duty as a militia or police force in case of any emergency.

"Will you please signify to the members of your command that the City Council thankfully accepts their services in their labor of enlisting the quota of this city, and also, should the occasion demand, that the authorities will avail themselves of the offer of the Horse Guard to serve in the capacity of police officers.

"Please also convey to the gentlemen of the Roxbury Horse Guard, the thanks of the City Council for the invaluable services rendered by the company in filling the quota of Roxbury under the former calls for volunteers, and also in assisting the authorities in preserving the public peace.

I have the honor to be, with great respect

Your obedient servant,

George Lewis, Mayor."

#### AT THE BOSTON DRAFT RIOTS.

On July 14, 1863, the Roxbury Horse Guard had reported for duty during the Boston Draft Riots, together with the Roxbury Reserve Guard and other independent companies, and was relieved from duty by the following order:

Headquarters, Boston, July 14, 1863.

Special Order, No. 404.

"The companies in Roxbury on duty under orders from this Headquarters are relieved from duty until further orders. The companies for their prompt and patriotic response to the call of duty, have the thanks of His Excellency and the Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM SCHOULER, Adjutant-General."

On the next day, however, by Special Order, No. 405, the Roxbury Horse Guard and the Roxbury Reserve Guard, with other independent organizations, were "required to assemble at their armories or at some central rendezvous, at 7 o'clock p. m., and report by orderly at this headquarters." For nearly a week thereafter the Horse Guard awaited orders at their armory, ready for instant service.

The complete repulse of the rioters while attacking Cooper Street armory on the evening of July 14, had, however, broken their spirits, and the stern, swift lesson never had to be repeated in Boston.

In 1894, the troop was re-organized and made a part of the state militia, as Troop D, of the First Battalion of Cavalry, which designation it still retains.

The original agreement as signed by the leaders of the organization ran as follows:

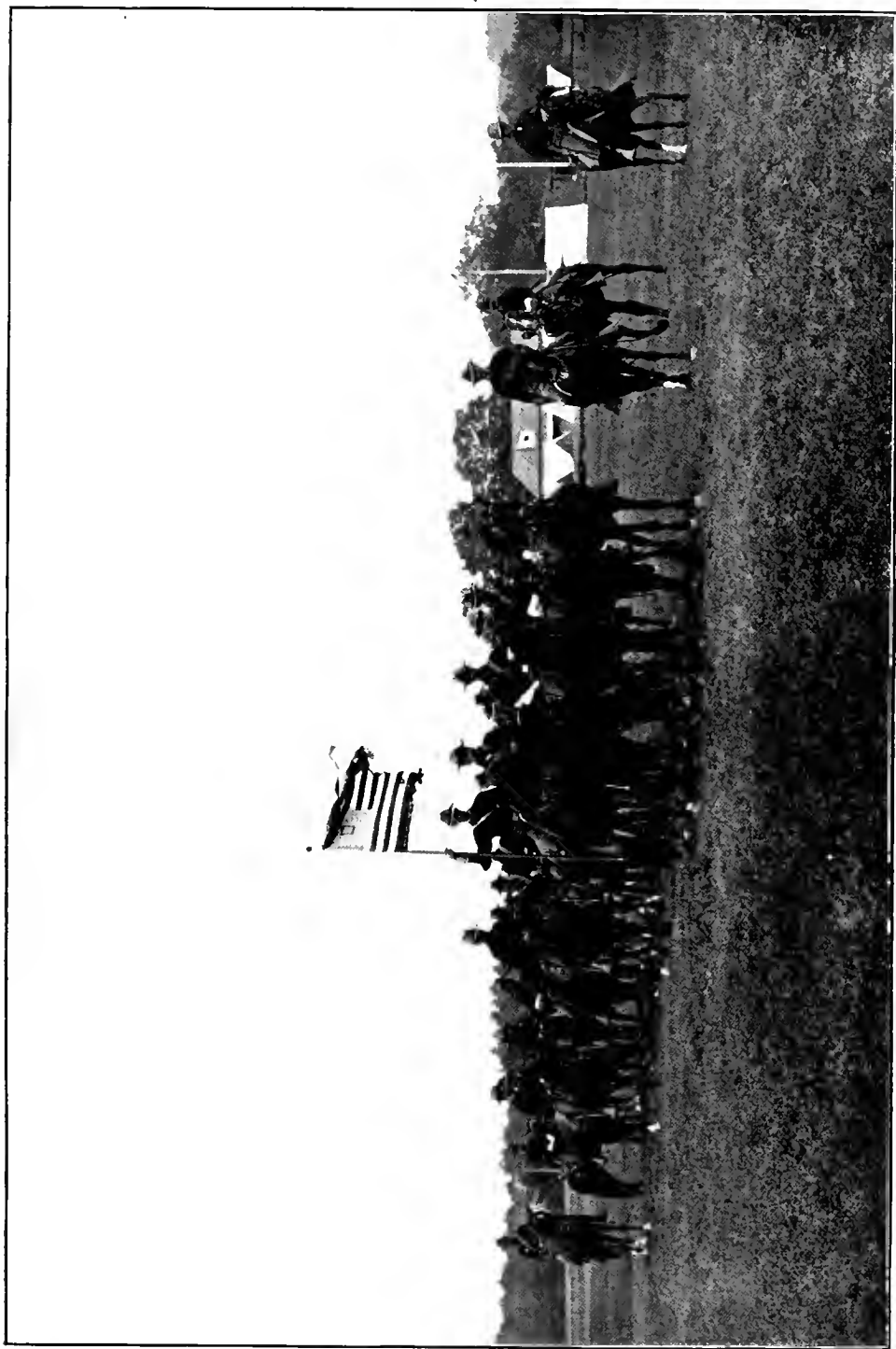
"We, the subscribers, residents of the city of Roxbury, believing it important as well as necessary for the maintainance of the law and good order, to have a military organization, do here associate ourselves as a corps of cavalry, duly enrolled in the military force of the Commonwealth under the name of the Roxbury Horse Guard, and to form a more perfect union, and promote our common welfare, pledge ourselves to the faithful performance of the following articles, forming the Constitution and By-laws for the government of the company."

The following officers were elected July 2, 1864, when the organization was completed:

Captain, Richard Holmes; First Lieutenant, George W. Houghton; Second Lieutenant, Thomas Decatur; Treasurer, Robert W. Molineaux; Clerk, George H. Pike; Surgeon, Benjamin H. Mann; Chaplain, Rev. G. C. Means; Orderly-Sergeant, Joseph Ham; Quartermaster-Sergeant, Joseph S. Ropes; Commissary-Sergeant, Corisander Knight.

Under Captain Holmes, the troop held its first camp at Medford, September 5, 1865, with seventy-four officers and men present, only a sergeant and five men failing to appear. At the second encampment at Sharon, August 22-25, 1866, seventy-seven members were present and one absent on the last day of the tour of duty. The Guard was inspected and reviewed by Major-General Benjamin F. Butler, then commanding the division, and were by him commended. At this time they were armed with cavalry sabres only.

Under Captain George Curtis, elected December 5, 1866, the annual encampment was held at Hull, August 25, 1867. Of a total force of 100



*Photo by T. E. Marr*  
ROXBURY HORSE GUARDS, COMPANY D, FIRST BATTALION CAVALRY, M. V. M. ENCAMPMENT SOUTH FRAMINGHAM, MASS.



men, 87 were present and 13 absent. With the other companies of the First Battalion, the Guard escorted President Andrew Johnson when visiting Boston June 22, 1867. It encamped at Hull, August 4-8, 1868, with 95 rank and file present out of 103 members. It encamped at the same place August 10-14, 1869; and, with 101 rank and file in the saddle, escorted Governor William Claflin to Cambridge on the occasion of the inauguration of the president of Harvard University, October 18, 1869.

Under Captain Aug. P. Calder of Boston, elected July 14, 1870, the Guard took part in the division encampment at Concord, September 6-10, with 93 rank and file out of 103 members. During this tour of duty the battalion escorted General Butler and staff, on that memorable ride to Acton and back, long known as "Butler's dusty ride." At the annual encampment at Quincy, August 8-12, 1871, the attendance was poor, showing only 66 present out of 103 members. The special duties of this year included escort duty, with the battalion, in honor of President Grant at the founding of the Post Office and treasury building, October 16, and also at the reception of Alexis, Grand Duke of Russia, December 8, 1871.

Under Captain Thomas Decatur, commissioned in 1872, no special duty was performed. His successor, Captain John A. Scott, of Boston, elected August 5, 1872, mustered 70 out of 102 members at the annual encampment at Weymouth, August 20-24, and the battalion was of great service at the great Boston fire of the same year. At the height of this terrible conflagration, it was announced that the mob had assembled in the street and was awaiting the blowing up of the jewelry establishment of Shreve, Crump & Low in order to loot the treasures held in stock. The crowd resisted the advance of the Guard, which finally arranged itself across Winter street and backed its horses into the rioters who were forced from their position. Many men were badly injured, including it is said, fourteen who received fractures of the legs and arms. The encampment of August 5-9, 1873, showed a weak troop of 50 out of 59 men, armed with sabres and Remington revolvers, the latter having been issued since the last encampment.

In 1874, the annual encampment, originally set for August 18, was postponed by Governor Thomas Talbot to Tuesday, September 1, to enable the troops to receive new uniforms. The attendance was larger, numbering 76 out of 81 rank and file.

Captain Aaron A. Hall, elected February 18, 1875, led the Guard at the Centennial Anniversary of the Battle of Bunker Hill, June 17, 1875, when Major General Butler commanded a division of 431 officers, 5563 enlisted men and 306 musicians, in all 6300 men, besides visiting militia and regulars with a strength of 3,178, and semi-military and independent organiza-

tions which swelled the total to 11,038 men. At the annual encampment at Framingham, August 3-7, 1875, the Guard was commended for its soldierly appearance by the inspecting officer. At the 1876 encampment of the 2d Brigade, Brigadier General Hobart Moore, commanding, the battalion had been reduced to two companies; Troop B (Boston Light Dragoons) and Company C (Prescott Light Guard) having been disbanded. On October 3, the last day of the encampment, the reorganized battalion, by special permission, paraded in their brilliant special uniforms, the Guard having 67 out of 80 present. At the State encampment, August 21-24, 1877, out of 79 members, 68 were present, armed with sabers only. The special duties of the year called out the battalion to escort president Hayes on his arrival at Boston, September 16, and at the dedication of the Army and Navy Monument September 17, 1877.

At the state encampment, September 10, 1878, 64 men were present out of 80 rank and file, and at the state camp, September 29, to October 14, 1879, the attendance was about the same.

Captain William B. Ferrier, elected January 28, 1880, commanded at the annual inspection and drill on Boston Common; at the annual encampment August 31, and at escort duty with the battalion on the 250th anniversary of the settlement of Boston, September 17, 1880.

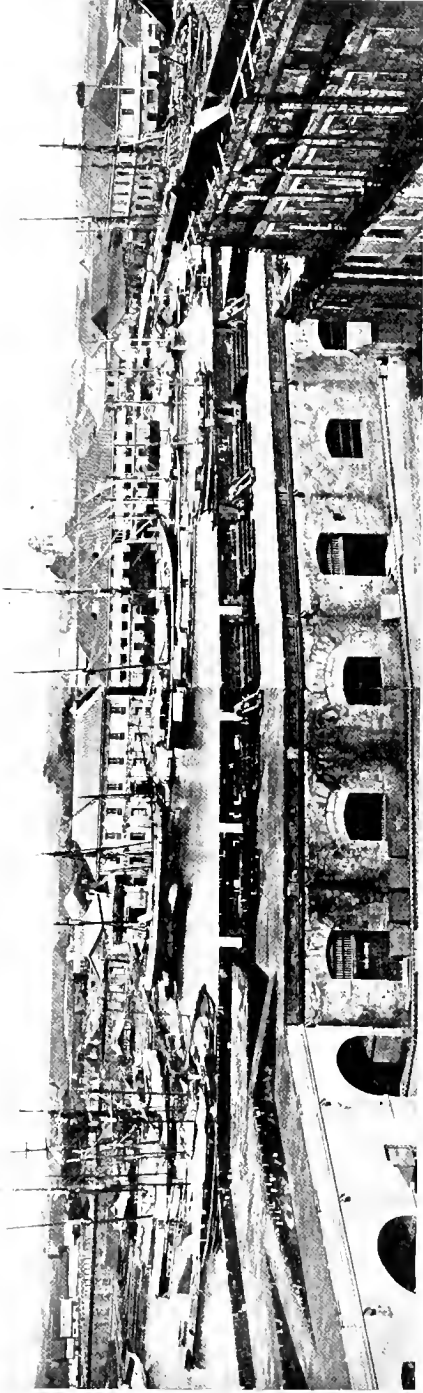
Captain Charles A. Young, elected January 24, 1881, commanded at the annual encampment, September 8-12, 1881. He was later elected major commanding the First Battalion Cavalry.

Captain Francis H. Goss, elected February 16, 1882, led the troop in the parade in honor of President Arthur, on the occasion of his visit to Marshfield to attend the centennial anniversary of the birthday of Daniel Webster, and at the annual encampment of August 22-26, 1882.

Captain John Thomas, elected March 28, 1883, commanded at the annual encampment August 14-18. In 1884, the troops received the Springfield carbines, which they have carried ever since, and made a good showing in the returns of rifle practice of that year; private, now Captain Perrins, Jr., leading the score. There was no special duty.

Captain Lamont G. Burnham, elected February 10, 1885, commanded the troop at the annual encampment of July 21-25, and at that of July 20, 1886. The First Battalion and Troop F, also escorted President Grover Cleveland to Harvard University, while visiting Boston November 8, 1886.

Captain David F. Henderson, elected March 2, 1887, commanded at the annual encampment July 19-23. The rifle practice of the troop team showed decided improvement. The 1888 encampment began at Framingham July 10, and that of 1889 was held August 13-17 inclusive. The 2d Brigade was also mobilized at Lynn, October 3. In 1890, camp duty was performed July 23-26. The battalion escorted President Harrison at Bos-



ANCIENT FORTS, AND THE RIVER, MANILA.



UTI-UTI VILLAGE, SAN RAFAEL VILLAGE AND SAN ANTON VILLAGE, MANILA.  
UNITED STATES VOLUNTEERS IN THE PHILIPPINES. THE CITY OF MANILA AND ITS SUBURBS.





ton, August 11, and the annual drill and inspection took place on Boston Common, October 2, 1890.

Captain Stillman B. King of Boston, elected March 7, 1891, commanded at camp, July 21-15 and at that of June 7-11, 1892. Captain King died while in office December 7, and was paid the last military honors by his command, December 10, 1862.

Captain George F. Henderson, elected December 23, 1892, marched Troop D from Boston to Framingham to attend the annual encampment held July 17-21, 1893; and at like dates in 1894; paraded with the battalion as escort at the funeral of Major General Nathaniel P. Banks at Waltham September 4, 1894, and took part in the mobilization of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia at Boston, October 4. He resigned December 27, 1894.

Captain William A. Perrins, elected January 16, 1895, marched his troop, Monday, July 22, 1895, from Boston to South Framingham to attend the annual encampment, July 13-27. The camp of 1896 was held July 21-25, at which the battalion reported 153 present out of 168 rank and file.

At the following encampment, July 17-24, 1897, the battalion marched from Boston to South Framingham and returned, 175 members present, Troop D having every man on the rolls ready for duty. Captain Perrins was elected major commanding the battalion, December 23, 1897. Captain John Perrins, Jr., elected January 5, 1898, commanded at the annual encampment August 27 to September 3. On this occasion, the First Battalion and Troop F, marched to the camp at South Framingham, and were the only state troops at camp. All the infantry were in the United States' service, and the artillery, cadet, signal and ambulance corps had found special duties in connection with the existing Spanish-American War. Every endeavor had been made to induce the war department to accept these troops, but, although states which had never maintained a troop of cavalry were called upon for mounted regiments and batteries, the claims of the cavalry and artillery of Massachusetts were ignored. Sixty-two men, most of them past or present members of Troop D, had expressed their willingness to serve as cavalry, and nearly two hundred men stood ready to volunteer if wanted. Details from Troop A and D acted as a cavalry guard and patrol at Camp Dewey, Framingham, in April, 1898.

On Saturday, September 3, camp was broken at Framingham at 8.30 A.M. and the entire command set out for Boston to take part in the Naval parade of the U. S. sailors and marines. The column arrived in Boston and joined the parade at the foot of State street at 1.50 P.M., and under the command of Captain Elisha H. Shaw of Troop F, since deceased, escorted the procession.

On February 16, 1899, President McKinley, then the guest of the city of Boston, was escorted by the 1st Battalion, which during the remainder of his stay, furnished details from Troops A and D, which formed a guard of honor at his quarters, and escorts for the presidential cortege.

The annual encampment of the 2d Brigade was held at the state camp ground at South Framingham, August 3-9 inclusive. The 1st Battalion on this occasion marched from Boston, each man carrying his equipment as if on campaign, and for the first time dispensed wholly with civilian assistants.

The annual drill, originally appointed for an earlier date, was by common consent of the Massachusetts militia postponed to October 14, 1899, known as "Dewey Day." On this occasion Troop D, turned out nearly every man of its eighty rank and file, and received many encomiums for its discipline and soldierly appearance.

The annual cavalry competition at Walnut Hill, for the first time in ten years resulted favorably to Troop D, whose guidons now bear the coveted yellow ribbon. During the winter of 1899-1900 the troop has expended a great deal of time and money, in the riding-school, in which the severe training of the regular cavalry service is carried out as nearly as possible. Recent demonstrations in the Transvaal war, of the necessity of rapid mobilization, would seem to indicate the desirability of a more liberal provision for equestrian exercises.

Troop D, while it still retains the traditions of its prototype, the Roxbury Horse Guard, and delights in the kindly and honorable memories perpetuated by its veteran organization, is in the highest sense of the word a military body, whose members desire most and first of all, to become good marksmen, skillful sabreurs, accomplished horsemen, and well-disciplined cavalymen.



By Permission of the John Hancock Mutual Life Ins. Co.

JOHN HANCOCK, COLONEL OF THE CADETS, RECEIVING GENERAL GAGE, LONG WHARF, BOSTON, MAY 13, 1774.

Painting by Chipeland, 31



## CHAPTER VII.

### FIRST CORPS CADETS, M. V. M.

ONLY one military organization in Massachusetts—the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company—boasts of a more ancient origin than the First Corps Cadets. Their privileges, their resources, their Armory, their special insignia, and snowy uniforms—for they are “The White Company” of the Massachusetts National Guard—and above all the honorable and devoted service of hundreds of cadets who have given to their country the military skill, soldierly courtesy and discipline, and lofty purpose inculcated and learned in this ancient battalion—have long made it and its Salem associate battalion striking features of the State militia of Massachusetts.

The history of the First Corps Cadets dates back to 1741, the year in which Governor Jonathan Belcher was succeeded in office by William Shirley, a barrister of English birth, who had for some years resided in Boston. On his accession, the “Governor’s Cadets,” as it was then called, was organized to act for the governor, and also as a defense to the town especially open to attack from the squadrons and privateers of Spain—with whom England was then at peace with the French, ally at peace with the English.

Its first captain was Benjamin Pollard, a prominent citizen of Boston, whose commission, dated October 16, 1741, and signed by Governor William Shirley, is still carefully preserved by the corps, and virtually is its charter, conferring privileges which succeeding governments and legislatures have never materially attacked or diminished.



ARMS OF FIRST CORPS CADETS,  
Superimposed on Arms of the United States. Carried on  
the Corps Flag, (reverse).

Three of its commissioned officers ranked as field officers, the governor being its honorary colonel, and the captain ranking as lieutenant-colonel—a distinction probably conferred because of like privileges enjoyed by certain company officers of the troops of the royal household in England, and in other kingdoms of Europe. One of the first duties

of the Cadets was to act as escort for Governor Shirley to the boundary of Rhode Island, when he visited that province in 1741; and from that date until 1774, it acted as a body guard to the royal governors. In 1741 the Cadets took part in that premature triumph which drove staid Boston almost wild over the news of Lord Vernon's capture of the harbor defenses of Cartagena, where the Massachusetts levies, under Captains

Prescott, Stuart, Goffe, Phillips, and Winslow, were fighting beside the British Grenadiers of the line, and the veterans of the English Foot Guards. Their volleyed musketry, after the fashion of those days, then crashed in front of the Council Chamber, or, as it is now called, "old State House," as it did later on in 1745, when the news of the fall of Louisbourg came to gladden the people of Massachusetts, and to promise Governor Shirley the meed of knight-hood for the astonishing results of his daring yet successful projects.

They were doubtless the nucleus and flower of that militia force of ten thousand men, who, in 1746, awaited anxiously, if not in fear, the coming of that vast but doomed French Armada, which, under the Duc D'Anville, sailed from Brest, to retake Louisbourg, gather the tribes of the Abenakis and the partisans of Canada and Acadia, and capture or lay waste every English settlement from the Straits of Canseau to Savannah; but was scattered by storms, decimated by disease, and harassed in its ignoble retreat by English cruisers.

They served the royal governors and the king, until Lord Loudon, Amherst, and Wolfe, had won and lost in the iron game which gave Canada and Acadia to the Saxon race. Colonel Pollard, their first comman-



CADET. FULL DRESS UNIFORM.

der, died in 1756, and was succeeded by Lieutenant-Colonel Leonard Jarvis; and he in turn was followed by Colonel Joseph Scott, who eventually became a Tory, was proscribed and left the country. Lieutenant Colonel John Hancock commanded the Cadets when General Thomas Gage, as Royal Governor of the presumably loyal Province of Massachusetts Bay, but more especially as the vindicator of the royal claims and authority, landed at Boston May 13, 1774. The Cadets met him at "the Long Wharf," and received him with all the honors, escorting him up King street to the Council Chamber, where now "the old State House" recalls the traditions of an overthrown empire, and an established republic.

There was no lack of due respect and military courtesy on the part of the Cadets or their leader, and for a time the usual relations between the ruling Governor and his "body-guard," remained unimpaired. General Gage, in due time complied with the custom of his predecessors, who had each presented to the Cadets a banner emblazoned

with the arms of the Province, and bearing on the reverse the heraldic blazonry of the donor. The banner was made, presented and accepted, in due and ancient form, and apparently in mutual amity and respect; but the progress of events soon estranged the royal governor and his fearless and outspoken lieutenant-colonel. This estrangement ended in the dismissal of Lieutenant-Colonel Hancock from his command in August.



CADET. WITH OVERCOAT.

1774; the letter sent by Gage—which is still in existence, and in the possession of the corps—being needlessly discourteous and abrupt.

The Cadets were so incensed at the cavalier dismissal of their commander, that they at once formally returned their new standard to Governor Gage, informing him that they considered his dismissal of Colonel Hancock as equivalent to a disbandment of the Corps; and that they no longer considered themselves "the Governor's Independent Company of Cadets." Governor Gage took back the standard, with the remark that Hancock "had used him ill, refusing him proper respect," and stated that had the intentions of the company been known to him sooner, he would have anticipated their action by disbanding them himself.

Thus, after an honorable service of thirty-three years; during which time the Cadets had not only escorted the royal governors of the colony on all occasions of ceremony and public rejoicing, but had restored order and kept the peace on many occasions of popular revolt against the men and measures of the British crown, such as the Stamp Act riots, and the attack on the mansion of ex-Governor Hutchinson; this ancient military body for the time became dormant, out of its love for a patriotic commander, and its devotion to the spirit of American liberty.

There followed a significant correspondence between Colonel Hancock and his company, in which the strongest sentiments of sympathy, confidence, and mutual esteem, were embodied, and also much which indicated a belief in impending changes which would re-unite them under more auspicious conditions. Colonel Hancock thus said of his abrupt and discourteous dismissal: "I shall ever be ready to appear in a public station whenever the humor or interest of the community calls me, but shall prefer the retirement of a private station to being a tool in the hands of power to oppress my countrymen."

Having refused to remain the "Praetorian guard" of General Gage, the Cadets, as a body, seem to have taken no part in the stirring events which so rapidly followed, until after the evacuation of Boston in 1776, when, under circumstances much resembling those existing when the corps was founded in 1741, many of the old members, and others, united to form a military organization known as the "Independent Company." Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Jackson was the first executive officer, but two years later, under Lieutenant-Colonel Hichborn, the corps marched to Rhode Island and became part of the continental forces. Their old commander, John Hancock, although president of the Continental Congress, was also colonel of this Independent Company, thus making the executive officer a Lieutenant-Colonel, and preserving the English custom of an "Honorary Colonel." For some years, at least, the word Cadet was not used in the official name of the company; but in contemporaneous journals and correspondence, it is constantly spoken of as "the Cadets."



The peace of 1783 ended a war which had impoverished the country, and nearly exhausted the military resources and spirit of our fathers. For a year or two no militia musters or parades appear to have taken place, and the American people were apparently content to trust to Providence, and to the forbearance of other nations, for their safety. In 1786 it was proposed to revive the name and privileges of the "Governor's Company of Cadets," and twenty-three members of the "Independent Company" signed an agreement July 20, 1786, in accordance with which all the signers but two met at the American Coffee House, July 27, and elected Samuel Bradford commander.

By August 7 their number had increased to thirty-six, and they then chose the rest of their officers, and adopted a uniform similar to that worn by the corps previous to the American Revolution. As the coat was of scarlet cloth, and as such abhorrent in the eyes of the people of New England, the first vote was re-considered, and a white uniform, faced with scarlet, was chosen in honor of the French troops, who had been our allies.

On August 17, sixty muskets and bayonets were secured at Providence, and the company decided to meet for drill at Faneuil Hall, every Monday and Thursday evening.

The first parade took place on "Cornwallis Day," October 19, 1786. On the previous day the commissions of the officers were confirmed, under the authority conferred by the following resolutions:

*"Resolved,* That the Governor be, and he hereby is, authorized and empowered to commissionate the officers of the Independent Company of Cadets in Boston, with the following rank, namely: The captain with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, and the lieutenant and ensign each with the rank of Major.



CADET. UNDRESS UNIFORM.

"Resolved, That the said Company of Cadets be, and they hereby are, entitled to an Adjutant, and that the Governor be, and he hereby is, authorized and empowered to commissionate the said Adjutant with the rank of Captain."

The first of these resolves revived the custom, as to the commanding officers' rank, existing prior to the time when John Hancock was made Colonel in an honorary office. The State Government had now been established; the Governor, *ex officio*, became the Honorary Colonel, and every governor since has been so considered. The commissions of Colonel Bradford, and Majors William Scollay and Samuel Cabot, were dated August 21, and of Adjutant Martin Brimmer Solier, September 21. The creation of the Adjutant was an innovation, followed, in 1803, by the addition of a surgeon.

No change was made in the number or rank of the officers until 1854, when a quartermaster, with the rank of first lieutenant, was added, and the Governor was empowered to give commissions to such company officers, not above the rank of first lieutenant, as he might deem expedient. Under this authority six first lieutenants were created, the corps being then practically a battalion.

At the close of the Civil War, the rank of adjutant was reduced to that of a first lieutenant, and in 1874 all constructive rank was abolished. The commander became a lieutenant-colonel; there could be only one major, but he was "entitled to all the privileges and emoluments of his rank;" and the staff was further made up of a surgeon, ranking as major, a paymaster ranking as captain, and an adjutant and quartermaster, each ranking as a first lieutenant. The paymaster, also, has since been reduced to the rank of a first lieutenant. The line officers were limited to four



CADET SERVICE UNIFORM.



ARMORY FIRST CORPS CADETS, M. V. M., COLUMBUS AVENUE, BOSTON, MASS.



captains, four first lieutenants, and four second lieutenants, to be commissioned at the discretion of the Governor, who commissioned all the officers except the second lieutenants, who were allowed the corps in 1893. The corps is therefore, practically, a battalion of infantry, of four companies, and has since added to its staff in 1877, an assistant surgeon and an inspector of rifle practice, each ranking as a first lieutenant. A chaplain was allowed by the Militia Act of 1878.

Soon after their organization in 1786, the Cadets were called into service during the popular disturbances known as "Shay's Rebellion," which had then become widespread and formidable enough in some sections to prevent the holding of the county courts, the detention of certain classes of prisoners, and the collection of debts and taxes. By the end of 1786, the insurgents had proceeded to actual violence; and on January 25, 1787, an attack was made on the Arsenal at Springfield, which was repulsed, with loss by the cannon of General Shepard. The slaying of four or five misguided men, practically ended this rebellion, and although several of the leaders were sentenced to death, none were executed; and shortly after to all but one, who served at hard labor for seven

During this time to the safety of Governor magistracy was thus burdened and responsibilities, roated their esteem and corps, upon the occasion ber 19, 1786, with a stan-

arms of the corps, viz.: a motto, "*Monstrat viam*," "It shows the way;" and on the obverse side, the family arms of Governor Bowdoin, according to the traditions of the corps, and the custom of the "Royal Governors." John Hancock succeeded Governor Bowdoin in 1787, and when established in office, ordered that all family arms should be expunged from the standards of the militia. The arms of the State of Massachusetts were, therefore, painted over the Bowdoin arms.

Notwithstanding this order of Hancock's—which it is said was dictated by a personal feeling against Bowdoin—the family arms of the latter "impaled" or painted side by side, with those of Governor Shirley, their first colonel, were kept and worn by the corps, and are still used and worn as a seal, and as an ornament with the dress uniform. The First Corps Cadets also treasures to this day the dress sword of Governor James Bowdoin.

The Cadets, as re-established under the State Government in 1786,



SEAL OF FIRST CORPS CADETS.  
Showing Arms of Governors Shirley and Bowdoin, Impaled.

a full pardon was granted out a sentence in the jail years.

the Cadets looked sharply James Bowdoin, whose dened with undeserved Governor Bowdoin recip-fidelity, and presented the of its first parade, Octo-

dard bearing in chief, the six-pointed star, with the

possessed the following privileges: first, that of being the Guard of Honor to the Governor; second, that (without its own assent) it could not be attached to the command of any officer below the rank of major-general; and, third, that its officers held special and peculiar rank. These peculiar rights have been, to some extent, questioned and assailed in times past.

These privileges were placed under the protection of United States law, when, the Constitution having taken effect in 1789, Congress, under its authority, passed on the 9th of May, 1792, "An Act more effectually to provide for the National defence, by establishing a Uniform Militia throughout the United States," from which the following extracts are made:

Sect. 7. And be it further enacted, That the system of discipline and field exercise which is and shall be ordered to be observed by the Regular Army of the United States, in the different corps of infantry, artillery, and riflemen, shall also be observed by the militia in the exercises and discipline of the said corps, respectively, throughout the United States.

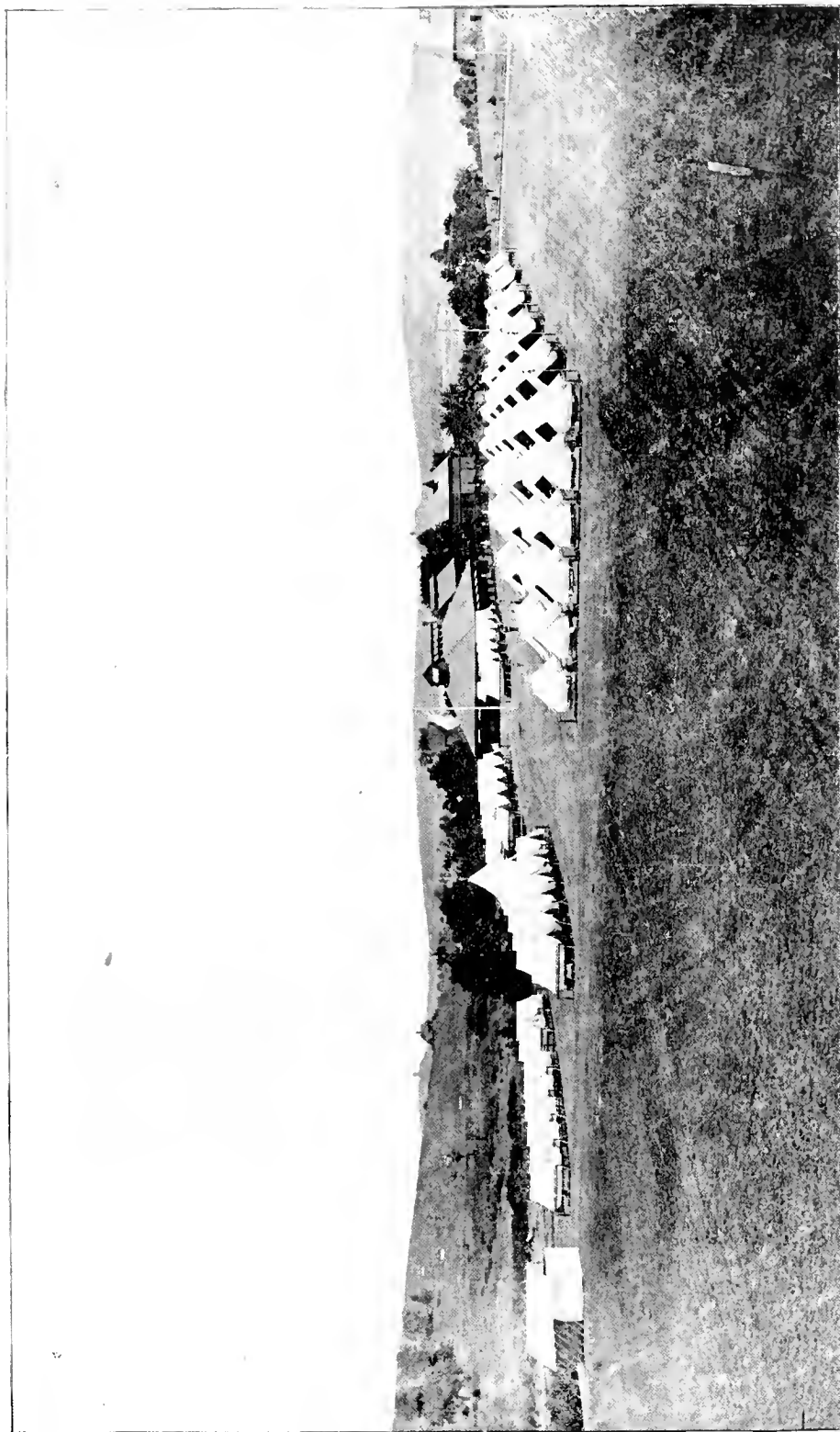
And whereas sundry corps of artillery, cavalry, and infantry, now exist in several of the States, which by the laws, customs, or usages thereof have not been incorporated with, or subject to, the general regulations of the militia.

Sect. 11. Be it further enacted, That such corps retain their accustomed privileges, subject, nevertheless, to all the other duties required by this act, in like manner as the other militia.

This protection was shared by the company of Cadets in Salem, now known as the Second Corps Cadets, and these two corps are the only organizations at present in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, in being when the Constitution of the United States went into effect, which have since had an uninterrupted existence.

The corps was attached to a division November 13, 1799, but does not seem to have been officially designated as a divisionary corps until April 24, 1840. The word "Independent" was then dropped from the official title, although generally used by the corps itself; it was restored in 1854, and was retained until after the War of the Rebellion. That the significant title "Independent" was first used soon after the Declaration of Independence, and was continued after the re-organization under the State government in 1786, seems to indicate that its significance rests more in the general spirit of the revolution, then pervading the people of Massachusetts, than to any claim of military privilege or independence.

The titles borne by the corps, at the various periods of its existence, show considerable variation. Beginning with "The Governor's Company of Cadets" in 1741, and so known until 1774, it was known during the Revolution as the "Independent Company," "Independent Corps"; and later, was called the "Independent Cadets," "Independent Company of Cadets," "Independent Corps of Cadets," "Divisionary Corps of Independent Cadets," and "First Company of Cadets," until



CAMP OF FIRST CORPS CADETS, HINGHAM, MASS.





in, and since, 1874, its official title was the "First Corps of Cadets," and this has finally been shortened to "First Corps Cadets." Originally a part of the enrolled militia, the corps, since 1840, has been included in the Volunteer Militia of the State, and has been called upon for all kinds of duty, from its escort of the State Executive (which it has performed, almost without interruption, for over a century), and the escorts to President Washington and other presidents, and many distinguished persons, who have received a public reception at Boston, to the sterner duty of guarding life and property, and maintaining quiet and good order in times of public peril and disturbance. It has always been a reliable body of gentlemen, who would endure hardship without complaint, and do their duty conscientiously, to the best of their knowledge and ability.

Along these less pleasant lines of action was its service in Shay's Rebellion, already alluded to; and there were days of imperative but unpopular duty during the war of 1812, and at the time of the rendition of Anthony Burns in 1854.

During the Civil War the Corps was in the United States service for a short period (about six weeks) in 1862, at Fort Warren, Boston Harbor; but it was on duty during the draft disturbances of 1863, and always ready for any sudden call in case of emergencies, which often threatened, but, happily, never materialized. Its greatest service was to furnish to the Union armies over 150 men, trained in its ranks, and most of them honored with commissions.

While the members of the First Corps of Cadets, who received commissions, were to be found pretty generally distributed among the various organizations of the Massachusetts Volunteers, three infantry regiments of the three-year troops, the Second, Twentieth, and Twenty-fourth, and one regiment of the nine-months troops, the Forty-fifth, contained many Cadets. Thus, the greater part of the officers of the Second Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M., called by high authority outside this State "the best officered regiment of volunteers in the army," were from the Cadets. They also furnished several officers to the Twentieth Regiment; the others largely came from the New England Guards. The Twenty-fourth was mainly officered from the Guards, but contained several who had been trained in the Cadets. The officers of the Forty-fifth were Cadets, with scarcely an exception; and this fine regiment, which suffered heavily at Kinston and Whitehall, N. C., December 14 and 16, 1862, was generally known in the department as "The Cadet Regiment."

Since the Civil War, the services of the Corps have been required in an emergency but once—in 1872, at the time of the great fire in Boston; but it has participated in many notable military events, in and out of Massachusetts. So far as is now known, the first time it left the State was in 1876, when it escorted the Governor to and from, and in, Phila-

delphia, at the opening of the Centennial Exhibition; it went to Bennington, Vermont, with the Governor, in 1877; to Yorktown, Virginia, with the Governor, in 1881; to Philadelphia again, with the Governor, in 1887; and to New York with the Governor, in 1889 and 1897. In all of these tours it added to the duties of an escort, the representation of the militia of the Commonwealth, sharing that duty in 1887 with the First Regiment, in 1889 with the Fifth Regiment and the Second Corps of Cadets, and in 1897 with the Second Regiment.

The Corps has always been quartered in Boston, first in the attic of Faneuil Hall, then in the two upper stories of a building at 94 Tremont street, and is now in its own Armory on Columbus Avenue, at the corner of Ferdinand street. The title to this building and to the camp-ground at Hingham is held by the alumni of the Corps, its Veteran Association.

This armory, a massive, imposing and handsome edifice of Quincy granite, although apparently finished, is not yet completed, as to its outer ornamentation and inner decoration and fittings. The tower has an altitude of 128 feet, and the ramparts of the head-house are 80 feet high. The whole structure is pierced and crenellated for rifle-fire and the use of quick-firing guns, and light, but strong bridges of steel, give access to the clear-story windows of the great drill hall.

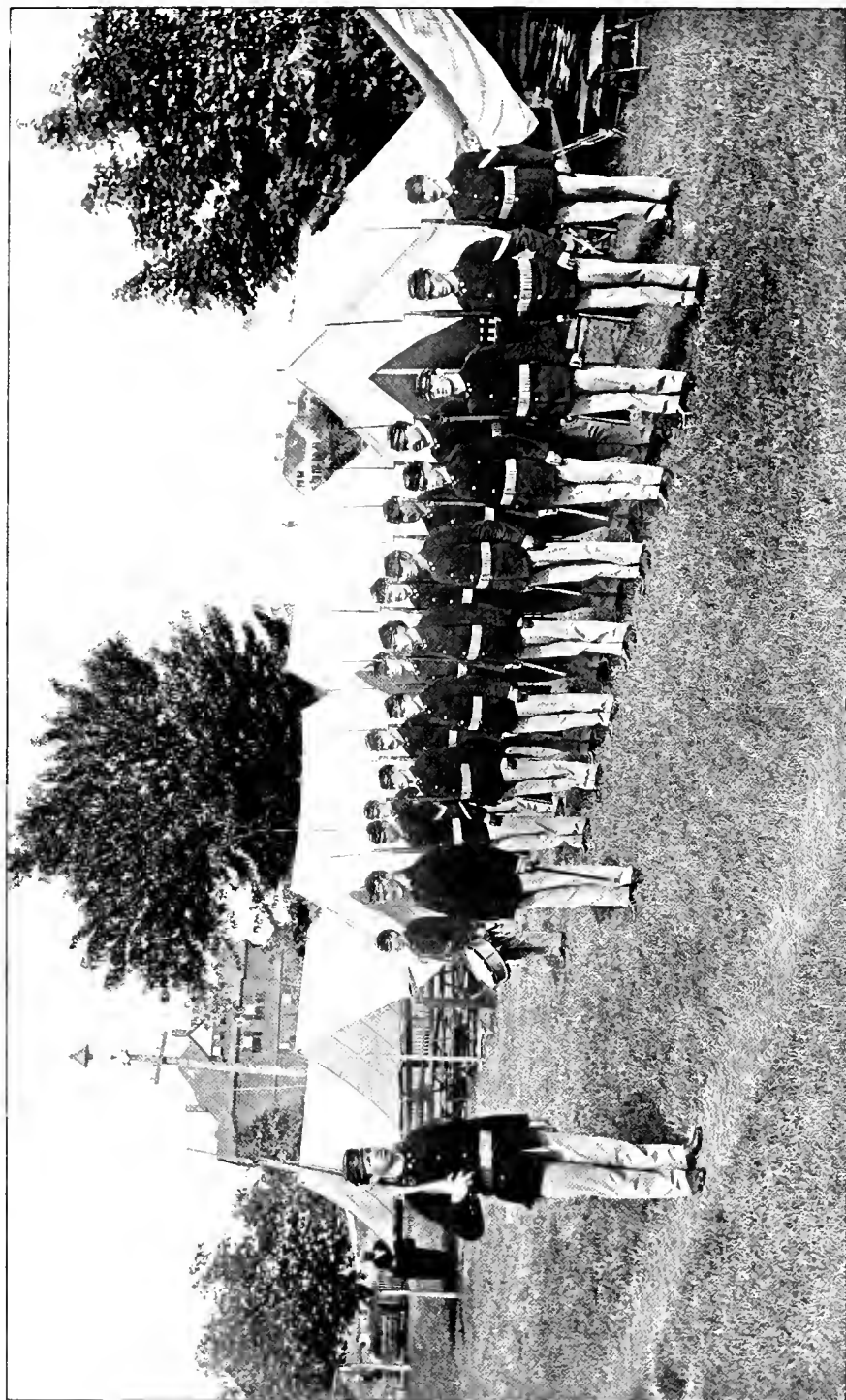
The great Drill Hall is 200 feet long by 100 feet wide, and is surrounded by a balcony. In the sexagonal room in front are the headquarters of the Corps, and between it and the Drill Hall, the Corps Room. In the basement are dressing-rooms, for the officers of the staff, line, and non-commissioned staff, the billiard and reading-room, the armorer's office, engine and boiler rooms, coal bunker, store rooms, baths and lavatories, great rows and tiers of lockers, a well-equipped kitchen, and a mess-room, which also serves as a rifle and pistol range.

The upper story of the Head House is devoted to the display and preservation of the numerous military weapons, etc., which have become the property of the Corps, and is also occupied by the Military Historical Society of Massachusetts, whose library and collections have already added much to the resources of the lover of colonial and provincial research.

The Corps, not being a corporation, cannot hold real estate; consequently, its past members, like the alumni of a college, are incorporated into a Veteran Association, which, through trustees, holds the title to the armory in Boston, and the camp ground in Hingham.

By a special law these properties are exempt from taxation, so long as they are used for military purposes by the organization of the volunteer militia, now known as the First Corps of Cadets, and its successors.

The present debt is a mortgage of \$200,000 on the armory in Boston, all other indebtedness having been liquidated.



FIRST CORPS CADETS, CAMP GUARD.



The Commonwealth of Massachusetts furnishes the arms and the colors carried by the battalion, as it does to all the militia of the State; but the Corps does not accept State clothing or equipments, preferring to own these articles as personal property, like the furniture, books, pictures, and relics in the armory, and the general equipment of the camp ground.

With other organizations of the militia, except the Second Corps of Cadets in Salem, it is customary to occupy public armories or rented quarters, and to encamp on the state ground at South Framingham. The First Corps of Cadets, like the Second, owns its camp ground as well as its armory.

The laws and By-Laws of the Corps require that every officer and soldier shall perform duty or pay the specified fines for its non-performance, unless exempted or excused. Absence from annual drill costs \$4.; camp duty, (seven days) \$28.; regular drill \$1.; special duty, \$2 per day.

To defray the heavy expenses of creating and maintaining this immense establishment, both the active and fine members are assessed, the latter at the rate of ten dollars each, yearly. The active members are thus advised of their position and contingent liabilities:—

“The annual assessment is so arranged, that, while ordinarily it is limited to twenty dollars, it may be increased by the action of the Finance Committee to a maximum of thirty-five dollars, in case the number of fine members, contributing to the support of the Corps, is so reduced that the twenty-dollar assessment will not defray current expenses plus interest on the armory loan.

“So long as the Corps can keep not less than 350 active members on its rolls, and a list of not less than 1,000 fine members, it can not only be assured that the annual assessments of its active members will not exceed twenty dollars each, but it can be sure that its current expenses will be amply provided for, besides the establishment of a sinking fund for the liquidation of the mortgage debt on the armory.”

In addition to this payment, each active member must have made to order, by firms designated by the commanding officer, through the adjutant, the following outfit:

The articles of uniform which every member of the Corps must own, are a dress coat, an undress coat, a pair of trousers, a dress hat, an undress cap, a campaign hat, a suit of brown canvas, and a rubber blanket. Members are also recommended to own their overcoats; but where this is inconvenient, the overcoat may be hired from the Corps at a rental of five dollars a year.

Uniforms are procured under direction of the quartermaster, all work of this description being done under contract at about the following prices:

Dress Coat (white)	\$25 00
Undress Coat (dark blue)	11 00
Trousers (same for dress and undress)	9 00
Overcoat (if purchased outright)	25 00
Canvas Suit	3 75
Shako (dress hat)	4 00
Undress Cap	2 00
Campaign Hat	1 25
Rubber Blanket	1 00
Total	<hr/> \$82 00

## THE CADET CAMP GROUNDS.

The title to the camp ground used by the Corps, vests in its Veteran Association.

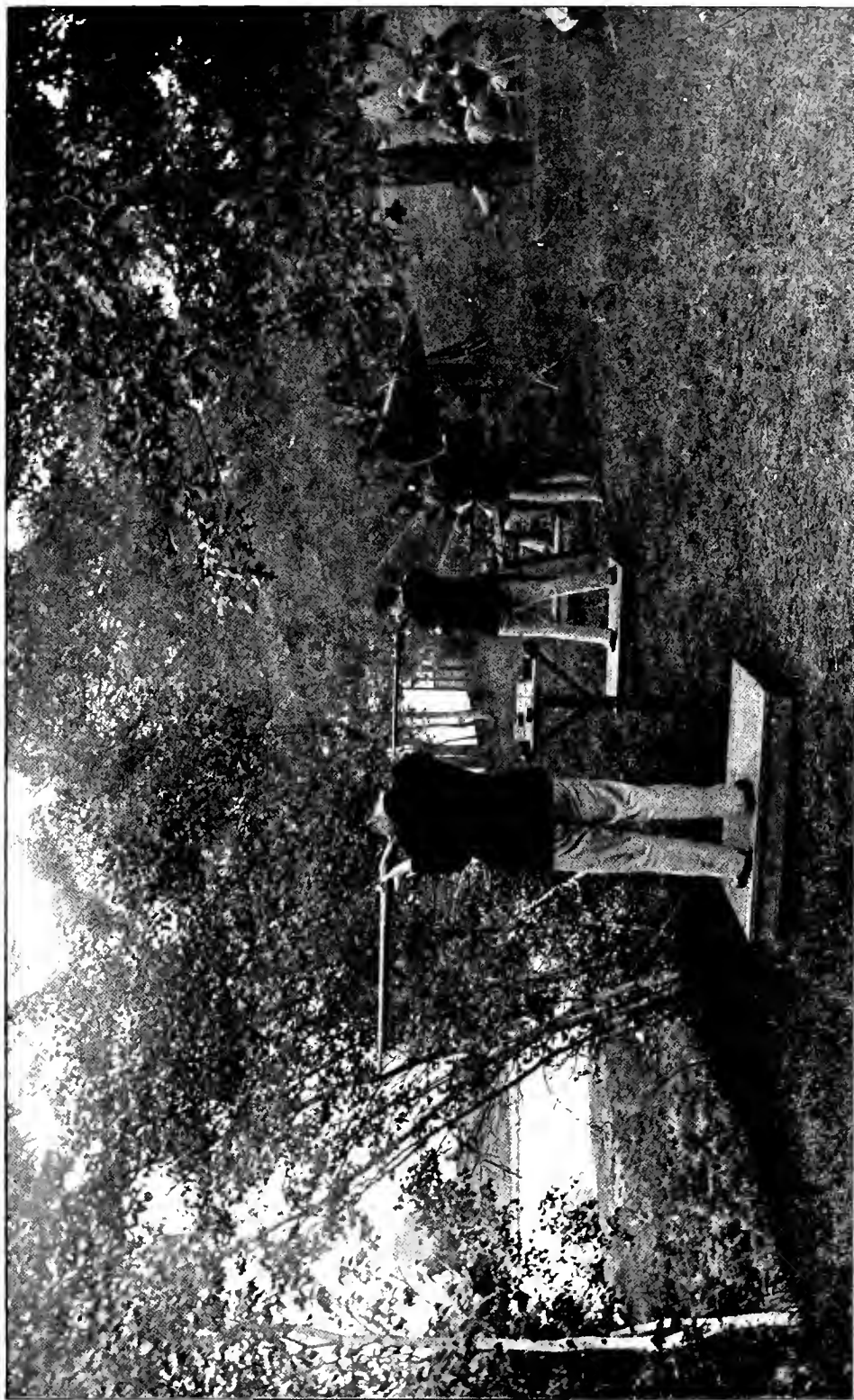
The field is pleasantly situated in the town of Hingham, Mass., near the sea, upon high ground, with a gentle slope which secures natural drainage. On this ground are a mess-hall, a kitchen, a storehouse, formerly a stable, with a loft for the sleeping-quarters of the mess-hall servants; sinks, bath-houses, one for the officers, one for the enlisted men of the Corps, one for the band, and one for the servants, with running water introduced through pipes connected with the town mains; a small building where lamps are stored and cleaned, and a building called the workshop, in which are the quarters of the armorer, barber, and bootblack. These buildings are conveniently grouped, uniformly painted, and give the camp the appearance of a permanent post.

The Corps quarters in tents. The body of the camp comprises the tents of the companies and band, pitched in streets laid out at a right angle with the color-line—an imaginary line running through the parade, parallel to the general direction of its length, a little in front of the body of the camp.

A short distance in rear of the body of the camp and facing toward it, are the tents of the company officers, pitched parallel with the color-line; in rear of them are the tents of the field and staff officers, parallel with them and facing in the same direction; in rear of these are the tents of the non-commissioned staff officers, the hospital, and the tents for the storage of bedding, one for each company and one for the band, the bed-tents facing to the rear, and others to the front, also servants' quarters.

The tents of each company are pitched in two lines, facing inward, upon a street about forty feet in width, except the centre street, which is slightly wider. The tents of adjacent companies back closely upon each other, with an interval of about three feet.

The distance between the rear ends of the company streets and the line officers' tents is about equal to the width of the centre street; a con-



FIRST CORPS CADETS, FIRING POINTS AT HINGHAM.





venient distance is left between the line officers' and the field officers' tents, also between the field officers' and the rear line of tents.

All the tents are of uniform pattern and size, and are pitched upon wooden stanchions firmly fixed in the ground, with wooden cross-rails to which the guy-lines are secured. Each tent has a fly, a board floor with a back-board on hinges, an arm-rack, and a hanging shelf. In the centre of the field and staff line is a larger tent called the headquarter marquee.

The camp is usually pitched by a party sent to the ground a few days in advance. The property is stowed in the mess-hall by the Corps at the close of its tour of duty, and unless the tents are wet, they are struck at the same time.

The rifle practice of the Corps has always been a source of just pride to the officers and men of the battalion, and the report of the Inspector-General for 1897, shows an average of 98.57 in 1896, and of 99.67 in 1897; in 1898, owing to the war, no statistical comparison was made, but the Corps maintained its high average of the previous year.

During the Spanish-American War of 1898-1899, the services of the First Corps Cadets were thus reported:

May 9, to May 16, inclusive, a detachment of 131 men was stationed as follows:

At Hull, forty-six men, at Eastern Point, Nahant, sixty men, and at Bailey's Hill, twenty-three men.

May 17, the detachment was relieved by a detachment of 126 men, which remained on duty until May 24, distributed as follows:

At Hull, forty-five men, at Eastern Point, Nahant, fifty-eight men, and at Bailey's Hill, twenty-three men.

May 25, the above detachment was relieved by a detachment of 119 men, who remained on duty until June 2, distributed as follows:

At Hull, forty-six men, at Eastern Point, Nahant, forty-nine men, and at Bailey's Hill, twenty-four men.

These posts were discontinued June 2, except the one at Eastern Point, where thirty-three men were placed on duty until June 6, when they were relieved by a detachment from the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery United States Volunteers.

Headquarters were established at Eastern Point, Nahant. The field officers divided the duty of superintending the duty at Nahant and at Hull. The food consisted as nearly as possible of the usual army rations.

The quarters at Eastern Point, Nahant, were furnished on private grounds, and through the kindness of the owners. The quarters at Bailey's Hill were in a hired house, converted into temporary barracks. At Hull, the men were quartered in tents on land hired for the purpose. At Eastern Point, the duty consisted in guarding the cables and observation tents

connected with the mine field, established by the United States engineers for the defense of Boston and Lynn harbors. At Bailey's Hill, the detachments were employed in constructing an epaulement for two guns, behind a portion of the said mine-field. At Hull, the detachment guarded the range-finding station, appertaining to the batteries at Fort Warren, Long Island, and Winthrop Head.

It was a great disappointment to the Corps that it could be given no opportunity to furnish the officers and non-commissioned officers for a volunteer regiment in the service of the United States, according to repeated requests made on its behalf to the commander-in-chief, that it should be allowed to do so, thus carrying out one of the chief objects for which the corps exists, and has been carefully trained.

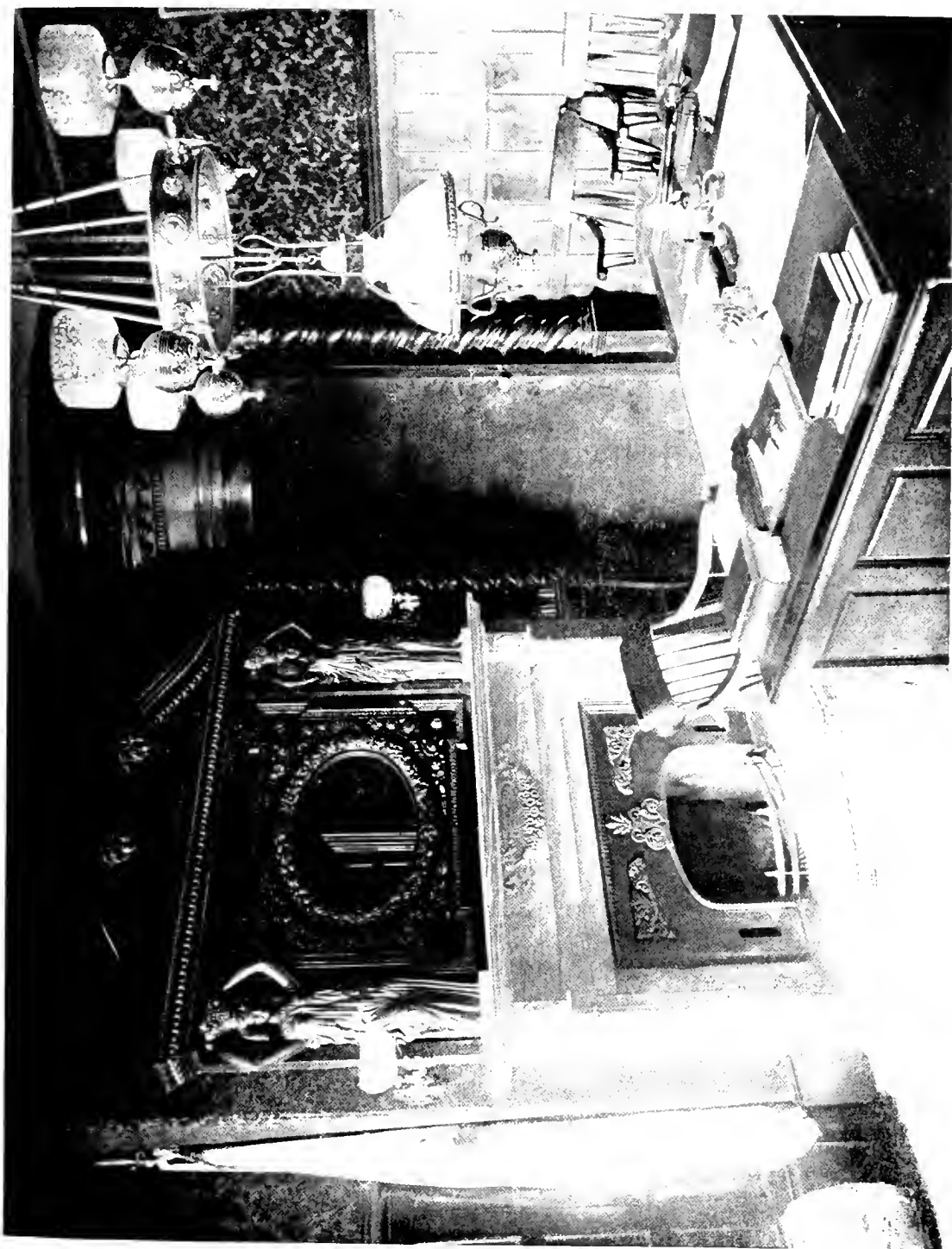
For other duty, outside of its rifle practice, the Corps was called upon but three times during the year 1898, by volunteer detachment, after it had become known that such duty was in accordance with the wishes of the commander-in-chief, as follows:

August 11 and 12, a detachment of thirty men acted as a guard of honor, previous to the funeral of the late Colonel Bogan, of the Ninth Regiment Infantry.

In like manner, on August 27 and 28, thirty men performed a similar duty previous to the funerals of Majors O'Connor and Grady, of the Ninth Regiment Infantry.

September 3, a detachment of 145 men acted as escort to the sailors and marines, landed from the naval squadron in the harbor.

The report of the Inspector of Rifle Practice, forwarded herewith, shows that the Corps, although it was unable to qualify quite so large a percentage of its men as in the previous year, was, nevertheless faithful to its obligations in keeping its men in practice, so that its percentage of marksmen was satisfactory.



SECOND CORPS CADET BATTALION HEADQUARTERS

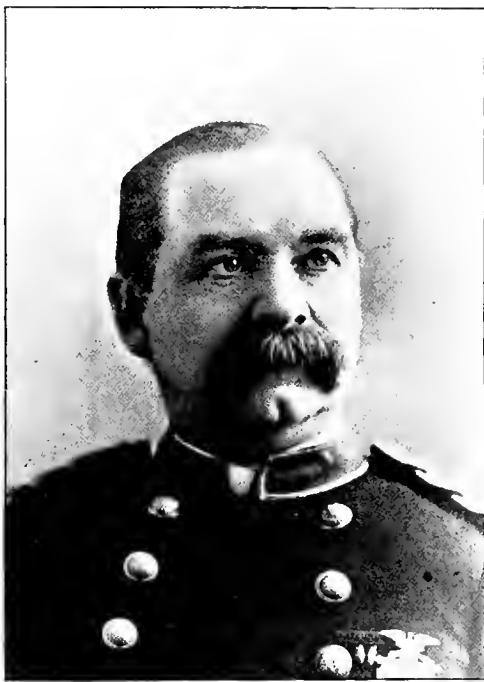


## CHAPTER VIII.

### SECOND CORPS CADETS, M. V. M.

By Colonel J. Frank Dalton.

THE "Salem Cadets" came into existence one hundred and thirteen years ago, and have maintained their organization uninterruptedly ever since. The existence here referred to, is not the officially recognized beginning, but the real starting point of the company which is now organized as a four-company battalion. A combination of causes led to the formation of the Corps. In the first place, from the very nature of the circumstances pertaining to the settlement of the colonies, the use of arms was a recognized necessity. The Indian troubles made it necessary to organize and preserve the militia. The events which preceded and led to the Revolution, operated for the further encouragement of giving organized force to that "right to bear arms," which is handed down as a part of the fundamental law, on which our political system rests. For a long series of years we had old militia organizations, which were made in conformity with the requirements of the law, and were kept up to a period which is within the memory of many now living. All male citizens of the arms-bearing age were enrolled.



COLONEL J. FRANK DALTON.

The companies used to parade on stated occasions without uniforms, and with almost any sort of accoutrements which would keep the utensils of war in place. These things simply show the military spirit which has always been maintained in Massachusetts, and which is further illustrated in the emblematical character of our State coat of arms.

#### DURING SHAY'S REBELLION.

At the time of the formation of the "Salem Cadets," the peace of the commonwealth was disturbed and threatened. There was a spirit of

discontent abroad, and several popular outbreaks. The causes of this condition of affairs were the depreciation of the currency, the heavy taxation to which all were subjected, the extent of public and private indebtedness, and the legal efforts made for the collection of claims. The famous "Shay's Rebellion" was an outcome of the spirit of discontent which prevailed; and as the rebellious state of this period was one of the causes which led to the formation of the "Cadets," the services of the company were tendered to aid in suppressing this rebellion, but they were not required.

The first meeting to take measures to form the company was held in December, 1785, at the tavern known as the "Bunch of Grapes," at the head of what is now Central street, Salem. There is no record of the meeting. A short time previously the Legislature had passed a law to encourage the formation of such companies, as "promotive of military knowledge."

#### THE FIRST ELECTIONS.

As a result of the meeting, the following officers were elected and commissioned, July 10, 1786:

Stephen Abbot, Captain Commandant; William Lefavour, Captain Lieutenant; William Gray, First Lieutenant; Richard Downing, Second Lieutenant; William Chandler, Ensign.

There appears to have been another election December 6, of the same year, and the following officers were chosen, being commissioned December 21, 1786:

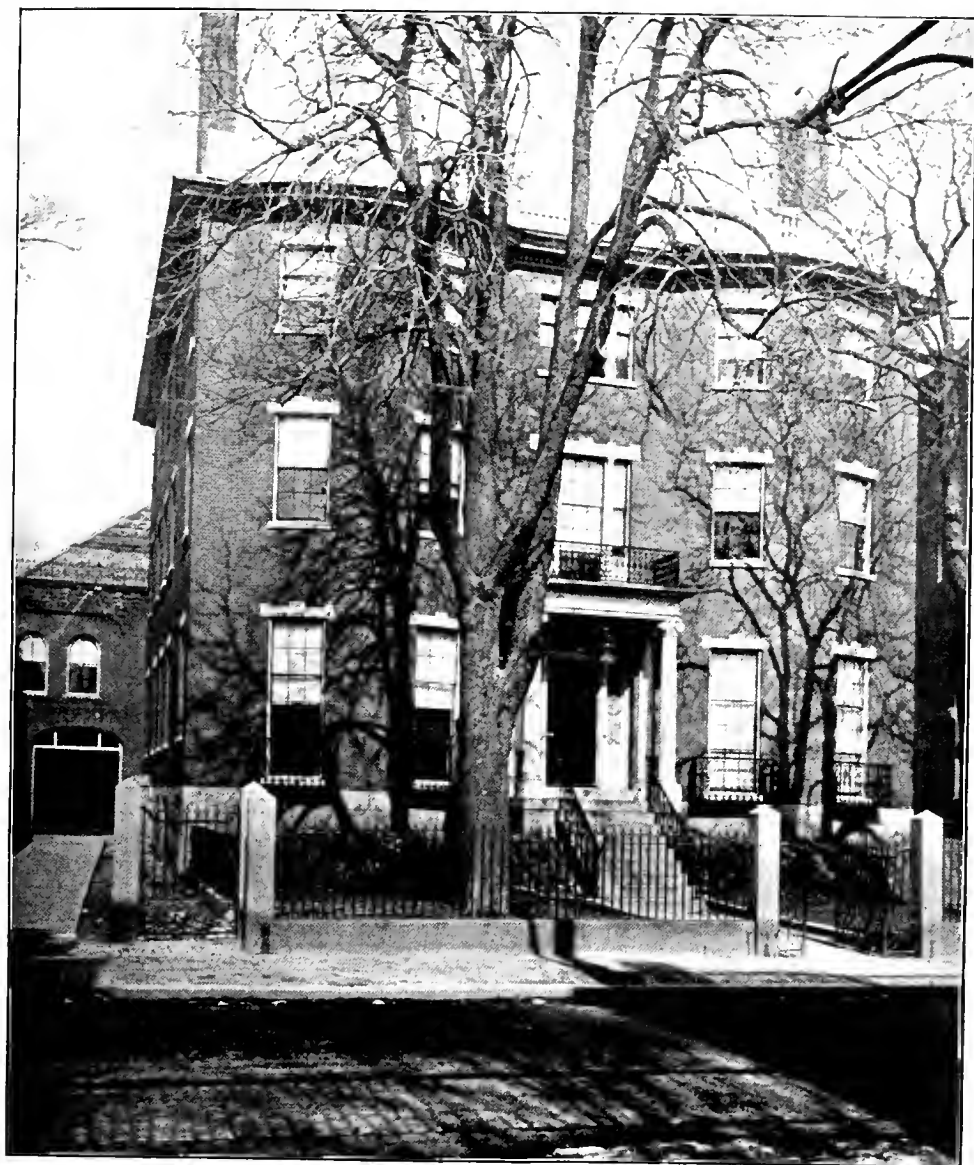
Stephen Abbot, Captain Commandant; John Jenks, Captain Lieutenant; John Saunders, First Lieutenant; Jonathan Hodges, Jr., Second Lieutenant; Abel Lawrence, Ensign.

The first parade of the Corps in full uniform was on April 19, 1787, at which time a daughter of Major Abbot presented a standard to the company. It was of crimson silk, and bore on one side a shield inscribed with the name of the company, held by the figure of Mars, seated on a cloud, who, with his spear, directs to the glory above. Motto: "*Si recte facies.*" On the reverse side was a crown of laurel in a field surrounded with trophies. Motto: "*Sic itur ad astra.*" In the quarter were thirteen Federal stripes.

#### THE UNIFORMS—THE SCARLET COAT, THE GRAY COAT, ETC., ETC.

In all these years the Cadets have worn a scarlet coat, except once, when the adoption of a gray coat almost broke up the company, and it was abandoned. The following is from Dr. Browne's compilation:

The first uniform consisted of a scarlet coat with long skirts, shoulder straps and white cassimere fronts, so worn as to display a vest of white dimity, and ruffles to the shirt bosom and at the wrist. The small clothes were of white dimity, with a black band below the knee; the stockings



ARMORY SECOND CORPS CADETS, SALEM, MASS.





were white with black gaiters. The old-fashioned three-cornered cocked hat, with a scarlet plume, tipped with white, was worn; and the hair was worn braided and powdered in the fashion of that day.

In 1803, the cut of the coat was changed, and the dimity small clothes were superseded by white cassimere pants, welted with red. The wrist ruffles were abandoned, and the cocked hat gave way to the chapeau.

In 1814, a complete renovation was made, the waning interest in the corps having been revived. The coats were made shorter, the cross belts were changed to roundabouts, and patent leather caps superseded the chapeaux. Short boots, worn outside of very tight-fitting pants, were ornamented with double rows of bell buttons of white metal and cross-lacings of red cord.

In 1822, another general innovation was made, after much working for and against, and for a year the scarlet coat was discarded, many members leaving the company in consequence. The new uniform consisted of a short, gray coat, with gold lace trimmings, and three rows of brass buttons, buttoning at the neck; a patent leather cap trimmed with yellow, having a gilt chain and tassel at the side, and a black plume twenty inches long. The pants were of white drill, full in the legs, and worn over the boots; the roundabout belts were of black patent leather.

The following year the gray coats were sold to the South Reading Rifle Company, and a return was made to the favorite scarlet, while the other features of the old uniform were retained.

Fourteen different uniforms worn by the Cadets are thus and more briefly described.

1. Continental suit—white cotton vest and breeches, black gaiters, wig, ruffles, three-cornered cocked hat, white cross belts. Date, 1785.

2. Continental suit—white cassimere vest and breeches, black gaiters, wig, no ruffles, fan chapeau, white cross-belts. Date, 1801.

3. White-breasted red dress coat, white cassimere pants, short boots, white waist belt, leather bell-crowned hat. Date, 1814. (For a short time—1822-23—a gray coat was worn.)

4. Red dress coat, three rows bell buttons, black cap, tall black plume, white cotton pants, black waist belt. Date, 1823.

5. Single-breasted red dress-coat, white leather hat, red and white fountain plume, white cotton pants, white cross-belts and waist-belt. Date, 1835.

6. Modern dress coat, black bell-crowned hat, white and red pompon. Date, 1845.

7. Same coat, dog-skin hat, white pompon, black pants, silver lace. Date, 1848.

8. Same coat, blue shako, black pants with white and red stripes, black belts. Date, 1852.

9. Same coat, chapeau, same pants. Date, 1854.
10. United States Army. Date, 1862.
11. Red dress coat, black trimmings, French cap with white pompon, or horse-hair plume, pants black and white stripe. Date, 1868.
12. Single-breasted red frock, etc. Date 1874.
13. Double-breasted red frock and helmet. Date, 1883.
14. Double-breasted red frock coat with dark-blue facings, trousers same color, black equipments, with brass breastplate bearing the corps shield and motto, French shako with white and red pompon. Date, 1889 and present.

THE CADET ORGANIZATION. THEIR POSITION AS AN INDEPENDENT DIVISIONARY CORPS.

When the Salem Cadets were first enrolled, there was a disagreement about the organization, some preferring an infantry and some an artillery company. When a decision was made in favor of the former, the dissatisfied members withdrew and formed the Salem Artillery, making their first appearance in public May 23, 1787.

The Cadets were formed under a law passed November 29, 1785, in which it was provided that such companies when raised and organized, "shall be under the command of the Major-General of the Division" in which they are formed. The militia law did not provide for more than three officers to a company; and on July 6, 1876, a special resolve was passed by the General Court, authorizing the governor to commission "one captain, one captain-lieutenant, one first lieutenant, one second lieutenant, and one ensign, to every Cadet company which shall be raised within this Commonwealth."

Under the circumstances of their organization, the Cadets always claimed certain privileges pertaining to an independent divisionary corps; but repeated attempts were made by other militia companies, to deprive them of these privileges. The question in dispute was never finally settled upon a definite and enduring basis, till many years afterwards.

As early as September (possibly April) 1789, Colonel John Fiske, commanding the brigade, ordered the company of Cadets to parade on October 6. Finding no reference to the major-general, Captain Saunders returned the order; but wishing to promote harmony, and having received a polite invitation from Colonel Stephen Abbot to march to the Common and be reviewed by the major-general, Captain Saunders said he should cheerfully comply with the Colonel's request, and feel honored in paying General Fiske every mark of respect due to his rank.

Colonel Abbot was elected Brigadier-General in 1792. The Cadets voluntarily appeared with his brigade, and continued to have their orders transmitted through the Brigadier-General till 1834. This fact was often relied upon to prove that the Cadets' claims were not well founded. On the other hand, it was asserted in their behalf, that their original appear-



Colonel A. Parker Brown  
Adjutant-General Samuel Dalton

Colonel J. Frank Dalton  
Colonel J. W. Hart

Colonel Saml A. Johnson  
Colonel Walter F. Peck

Captain James B. Dawson

SIX CORPS CADET COMMANDERS, SECOND CORPS CADETS, BOXFORD, 1900.



ance with, and subordination to, General Abbot's brigade, was entirely voluntary, and out of respect to him, their first captain. It was further claimed that, during much of the long period when they were practically subordinate to the Brigadier-General, the Cadets were not in a flourishing condition, their parades were infrequent, and proper persons could not be found to fill and accept the offices they were entitled to fill; but this did not impair their legal rights.

In 1834, the State militia was re-organized, and the Cadets were annexed to the newly-formed regiment of Light Infantry. A remonstrance, signed by Rufus Choate and others, was sent to the Governor and Council. The result was that the judgment was reversed and the action regarding the Cadets countermanded. The company officers of the regiment afterwards met to organize, but cast blanks. A committee of regimental officers requested a re-hearing on the Cadet matter, and a new military committee went into an examination of the matter in 1835; the final result being that the standing of the Cadets as a divisionary corps was confirmed. Ever since that time they have filled their five commissions.

In 1854, the legislature took action confirmatory of the claims of the Cadets. The Committee on Military Affairs made an examination of the subject. They referred to the act of 1785, under which the Cadets and other companies were organized, and said the object apparently was to establish in each division one or more schools for military instruction and discipline. They also referred to the act of Congress of May 8, 1792, as confirming rights of the companies existing previous to that time by special legislative authority. This law is entitled "An act more effectually to provide for the national defense by establishing a uniform militia system throughout the United States." It contains the following provision: "And whereas, sundry corps of artillery, cavalrymen, and infantry, now exist in several of said States, which, by the laws, customs, or usages thereof, have not been incorporated with, or subject to, the general regulations of the militia: be it further enacted, that such corps retain their accustomed privileges, subject nevertheless, to all other duties required by this act, in like manner with the other militia."

The resolve of 1854 "authorizes and empowers" the governor to commission the officers of the Cadets with the following ranks: "the captain-commandant with the rank of major; the captain-lieutenant with the rank of captain; and the ensign with the rank of third lieutenant, and the additional number of company officers to run a battalion. Subsequent legislation raised the rank of the commanding officer to lieutenant colonel; and the rank is now adjusted according to the present roster as elsewhere presented.

Whatever any person may have thought, or may still think, regard-

ing the rightfulness of the Cadets' claims, they are, at any rate, settled in conformity with their own views, and the decision seems to have been pretty uniformly that way whenever the question has come before the highest State authority. It will probably never again be re-opened, and it is doubtful if a single person could be found in Salem to-day who would desire to re-open it.

A MILITARY "CONTROVERSY."

The independent character of the Cadets' organization quite frequently led to jealousies and conflicts of authority. By what immediately precedes, it is shown that, as early as 1789, this trouble began to break out. It was, of course, intensified when a political element entered into the strife, and when the period of chronic rivalry began. The Salem Light Infantry took the lead in this rivalry, and, from the natural circumstances of the case, had the sympathy of the Mechanic Light Infantry and other regimental companies. "The possession of the right of the line" was the great question in later years.

On October 9, 1832, there was trouble on Salem Common between some of the companies of Colonel Avery's regiment and the Cadets, both being ordered for inspection and review on that day. According to the "Salem Gazette" of that period, the Cadets, which as a brigade corps claimed exemption from the orders of the colonel, "offered the use of their marquee, and themselves as a guard of honor, to the field officers of the day." The offer, as we understand it, was at first accepted by Colonel Avery; but the officers of the light companies in the regiment having objected to this arrangement, on the ground that Captain Miller, of the Cadets, was the junior of all of them in commission, and that they were, therefore, by military usage, entitled to precedence, it was afterwards declined.

The Cadets, however, were upon the alert, and early in the morning marched upon the then vacant Common, and pitched their tents upon the place usually deemed the right of the field. After the line was formed, an order was sent by the colonel for the Cadets to remove their encampment, but they refused obedience, on the ground that they were not under his jurisdiction. The Mechanic Light Infantry and the Salem Light Infantry, seeing that the objectionable arrangement was not altered, moved off the field, under their sergeants, leaving their officers on the ground. The light companies remaining, were the Beverly Light Infantry, under Captain Stevens, the Marblehead Light Infantry, under Lieutenant Homans, and the Marblehead Lafayette Guards, under Captain Brown. These three companies the colonel marched on to the right of the Cadet encampment, "not without some oppugnation, it is said, on the part of their guard, when he attempted to pass their lines."

"In the afternoon, however, the affair was settled by an order from the brigadier-general, directing the commander of the Cadets to obey no order issuing from Colonel Avery. The Cadets marched off the ground, and the review proceeded with such troops as remained on the field." The "Salem Register," in its account, says that, in addition to Brigadier-General Newhall's order not to receive any order from the colonel of the regiment, he also ordered the Cadets to appear in front of his headquarters at the La Fayette Coffee House at three o'clock for review. "The colonel, soon after, sent a message to Captain Miller, stating, as it had been established, that he had no authority to order the Cadets, and as their encampment would interfere with the intended manoeuvres of his troops in the afternoon, he requested Captain Miller, as a favor, to remove his tents. This request was promptly complied with by Captain Miller, the tents were struck, and the Cadets marched from the field."

The conflict does not appear to have been a very bloody one; but it resulted in preventing anything from being done in the forenoon but the inspection of the troops; while, in the afternoon, it put an end to the military manoeuvres that were contemplated, to the disappointment of "all the wondering boys and girls"; and "all the gorgeous show vanished into thin air." These were the words of the "Gazette" on the Friday following the difficulty.

## PAST COMMANDERS.

Stephen Abbot, 1786-8. Born August 12, 1749; died August 9, 1813, aged 64; was born in Andover, served as a soldier in the Revolution, and was commissioned by Washington, major by brevet. He went to Bennington as lieutenant in 1777. In our early militia service he was colonel of the Salem regiment, and afterwards major general of the division. Dr. Bentley says that he was "deservedly beloved" and that "under his judicious patronage the militia of Salem became respectable."

John Saunders, 1788-93. Died June 19, 1845, aged 85; was at one time a merchant in Salem. He afterwards went to New York, where he engaged in business and subsequently returned to Salem. He was the first cashier of the Merchants' Bank, and later Surveyor of the port, and afterwards town clerk. When the Salem Light Infantry was formed, in 1805, he became the first commander of that company, but the late Dr. Browne, in his brief biography, says, "his heart always warmed to the Cadets till the last."

Jonathan Hodges, 1793-95. Died May 23, 1837, aged 73; a son of Gama-liel Hodges, and was born March 1, 1764. He was in early life a merchant, and owned and carried on a distillery in Neptune street. He was for some years cashier of the Salem Bank, and later the town treasurer.

- Abel Lawrence, 1795-1802. Died December 6, 1822, aged 68; was a native of Groton, Mass., but came to Salem in early life, and was married in the year when Independence was declared. He was a distiller, a man of respectability of character, modest and retiring manners, and was often placed in positions of trust and honor.
- Israel Williams, 1802-4. Died December 9, 1831, aged 60; was a sea captain. At the re-organization of the Salem Regiment in 1801, he was chosen captain of one of the militia companies, and he was afterwards chosen captain of the Cadets, which company he brought up to a high state of excellence. He was elected commander of the Essex Guards, organized in Salem in the war of 1812. He was a man who stood high in every relation of life.
- Joseph Winn, 1804-8. Died November 3, 1839, aged 78; he was a native of Burlington, Mass.; was a butcher and also had an extensive commercial business in connection with his slaughtering and packing. He accumulated a handsome property, and died suddenly in the South church.
- Ebenezer Bowditch, 1808-13. Died July 23, 1830, aged 63; he was a silversmith in "Old Paved Street." He was an honest and upright man, of ardent temperament and firm convictions. When he took command the Cadets were divided, and distracted by differences in politics. Being a Republican himself, the Federal members of the company gave him anything but an enthusiastic support. The "Cadet Rebellion" took place during his captaincy. During one parade of troops, when he was so lame that it was supposed the company would be under the command of a lieutenant, the other companies exulted over the prospect that the Cadets would lose the right of the line; but his loyalty to the company was such that he came out and took command, when his lameness was so bad that it was necessary for him to receive assistance in mounting his horse.
- Stephen White, 1813-18. Died August 10, 1814, aged 34; he was a nephew of Captain Joseph White, who was murdered in 1830, and was educated in his uncle's counting-room. He afterwards went to Boston.
- John Dodge, 1818-19. Died June 12, 1820, aged 36; was the son of Joshua Dodge and his mother was a Crowninshield. He was educated to mercantile pursuits, made several voyages as supercargo and factor, and then commenced business on his own account. He was a very worthy man, but not conspicuous for the possession of military qualities.
- Franklin H. Story, 1819-23. Died February 13, 1871, aged 76; was the son of Dr. Elisha Story of Marblehead. He was very popular with the company, not only as its captain, but previously as sergeant and





BANQUET HALL, SALEM CADET ARMORY.



ensign. He was one of the best commanders the Cadets ever had, and was a remarkably fine looking man, and one of pleasing presence and polished manners. In his later years he lived in Boston, and was treasurer of one or more manufacturing companies.

John Winn, Jr., 1823-25. Died April 12, 1858; aged 62; was a son of Joseph Winn, former captain of the Cadets, and carried on the business of a candle-maker, in connection with commercial business. As a commander he was not successful, not because he lacked capacity, but because his business would not allow of that attention to company matters which was essential to military success. He was president of an insurance company in Salem, and afterwards removed to Bangor, where he engaged in the lumber business.

Benjamin F. Browne, 1825-28. Died November 23, 1873, aged 80; joined the company in July, 1818, with the name of Benjamin Browne 3d, having taken his later name with the authority of the Legislature. He was a well-known apothecary, and built the present Browne block. He engaged in privateering during the war of 1812, sailing as surgeon, and was one of the Dartmoor prisoners. Dr. Browne was a leading, influential and respected member of the Democratic party, and was appointed postmaster by John Tyler, after the death of William Henry Harrison, succeeding Caleb Foote in that office. He was loyal to the country under all circumstances, and after the breaking out of the rebellion acted with the Republican party, as did thousands of other Democrats, whose loyalty was so far above all mere party considerations, that they gave their active support to the party charged with the duty of subduing the rebellion and upholding the national honor. Dr. Browne, (as he was more familiarly known) occupied much of his time in the closing years of his life with preparing local and other reminiscences. His manuscript book of nearly 490 pages, which he presented to the Cadets, is one which contains much valuable information pertaining not only to that corps, but to the military history of Salem.

Joseph A. Frothingham, 1828-30. Died September 22, 1880, aged 76; was a son of Stephen Frothingham, a merchant of Newburyport. Later he commenced business as a druggist for himself, and returned to Newburyport, where he engaged in the dry goods business.

Francis B. Crowninshield, 1830-1832. Died May 8, 1877, aged 68; was a son of the Hon. Benjamin W. Crowninshield, Secretary of the Navy under Presidents Madison and Monroe. A year or two after his election he removed to Boston with his father. He was a lawyer in that city, and a member of the Massachusetts Peace Commission at Washington in 1861.

Ephraim F. Miller, 1832-36. Died August 7, 1875, aged 68; was a son of General James Miller, the "hero of Lundy's Lane," whose service during the war of 1811 is well known. Ephraim, the son, read law in Salem, and commenced practice in Ipswich. He was afterwards Deputy Collector and subsequently Collector of the port of Salem.

William Sutton, 1836-41. Died April 18, 1882, aged 82. General Sutton joined the Cadets in 1817, filled many military stations, and finally became Major-General. He was for a long time President of the Commercial (now First National) Bank of Salem, and through life was distinguished for his liberality towards military and other public institutions.

Stephen Osborne, 1841-42. Died November 23, 1869, aged 65. Captain Osborne for many years kept a well-known hat, cap and fur store on the corner of Essex and Central streets. He was a very interesting man, as his intimate acquaintances would all testify, and a man of intelligence and keen-powers of observation. He had a philosophical turn of mind, and there was generally a perceptible streak of good sense and quiet humor running through his conversation. He was recognized as one of the old standard traders "on the street."

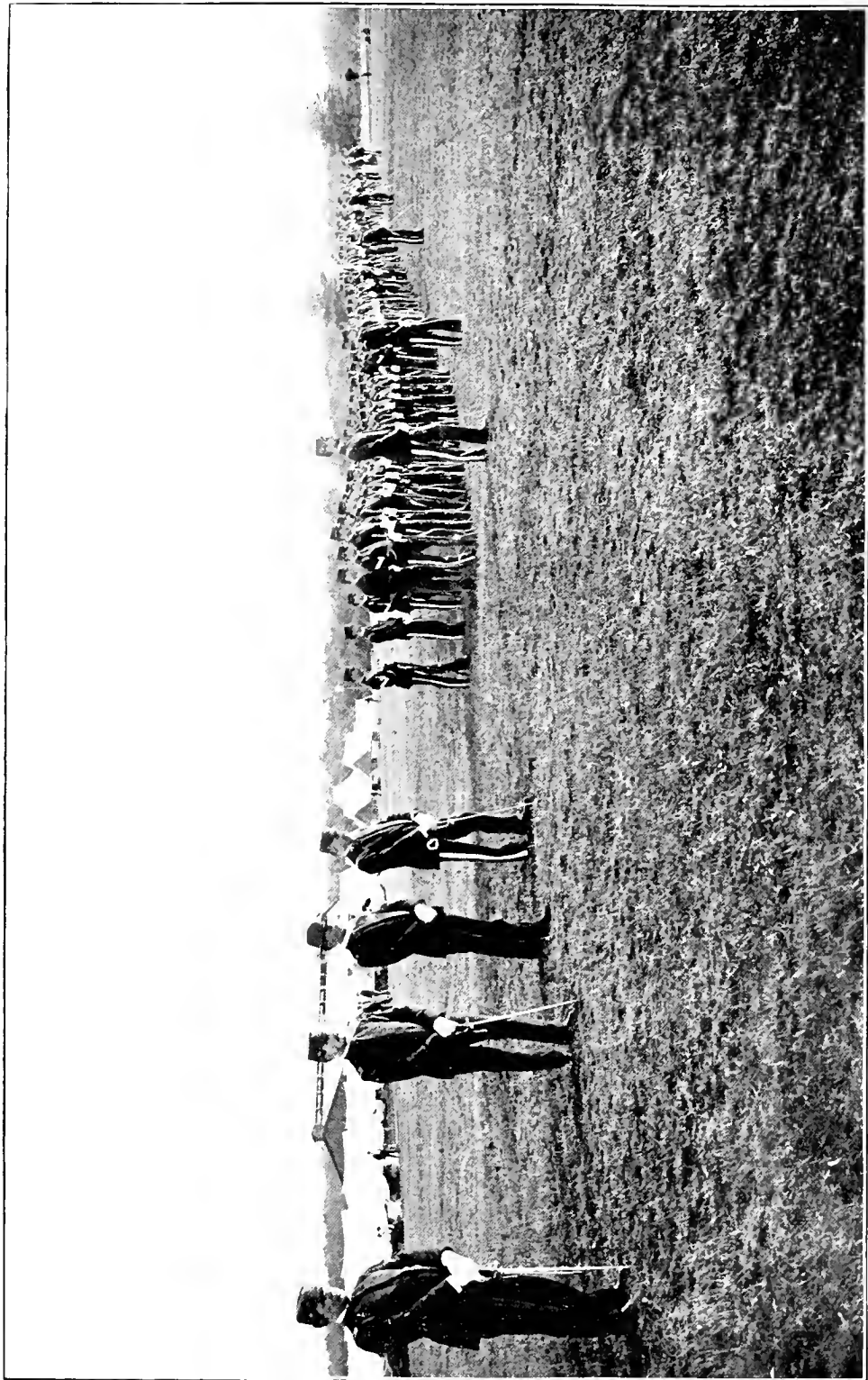
John S. Williams, 1842-44. Died September 11, 1848, aged 42; was a member of the bar of Essex county and a ready and eloquent speaker.

Ephraim F. Miller, 1844-47. This was his second election as captain, and his name is above referred to.

Samuel B. Foster, 1847-61; died March 13, 1872, aged 52; was a son of the late Isaac P. Foster, who carried on the grocery business at the head of Derby Wharf. His term of service as commander of the Cadets, covering a period of fourteen years, is good evidence of his value to that corps. During his management the company prospered, and attained a high degree of perfection. He took great interest in military affairs, particularly in all that related to tactics and discipline. If he could be considered as fairly open to criticism upon any point, such criticism would arise from his over-punctilious exactness in the minor details of military movements. During the time he held command, his superiority was so freely acknowledged that the question was often raised whether his place could really be filled. It is but fair to his successors to say that subsequent experiences have proved that there was no occasion for solicitude in this particular direction; and this may truthfully be said without the least disparagement to the subject of this notice.

J. Louis Marks, 1861-64; removed and went into business in Topeka, Kansas. He commanded the Cadets at Fort Warren during the Civil War.

Thomas H. Johnson, 1864-65. Became secretary and treasurer of the



SECOND CORPS CADETS, M. V. M. CAMP GROUND, FOXFORD, MASS., 1904. ON PARADE, "PARADE REST."



Holyoke Mutual Fire Insurance Company. His methodical mind and habits were of great value to the business interests of the Cadets.

A. Parker Browne, 1865-77. He is still in business in Boston. He well maintained the excellence of the Cadets, and was a popular commander.

Samuel Dalton, 1877-82. He is the present Adjutant-General of the State. He came from Cadet "stock"—the Dalton family being, in the past, members of this organization. Joseph A. Dalton, who commanded the Salem Veterans, was his father.

Edward Hobbs, 1882-84, does business in Boston. His two years of service gave satisfaction.

J. Frank Dalton, 1884, author of this sketch, is a brother of General Samuel, and son of Joseph A. Dalton.

John W. Hart, 1890.

Samuel A. Johnson, 1895.

Walter F. Peck, 1899.

#### A GENERAL REVIEW, TELLING, IN SHORT, WHAT THE CADETS HAVE DONE THESE HUNDRED YEARS.

A great deal could be written about the numerous reviews, parades, and public observances, in which the Cadets have participated during all these years. But we have space for only the briefest mention. The Cadets participated in the reception extended to Lafayette when he visited Salem, and in every public reception given to the Presidents who have visited us, including that of General Washington; and have taken part in a multitude of special and historic observances. In common with other military organizations, the Cadets paraded June 23, 1788, in honor of the adoption of the Constitution of the United States.

The "Salem Mercury" (now "Salem Gazette") of Tuesday, November 3, 1789, is pretty well filled with an account of Washington's tour. He left Boston and came to Salem on the Thursday previous, having visited Marblehead in the forenoon. The inhabitants assembled in Court street to receive him and formed a procession, the Cadets being at the head of it. The "Mercury" says "the President appeared to be perfectly satisfied with everything which took place." He spoke handsomely of the militia, "and passed some very flattering compliments on the Cadets (which is, undoubtedly, the best disciplined light corps in the United States), who acted as his escort, and were, therefore, more immediately under his observation."

For a long series of years the Cadets made some sort of an observance of Washington's birthday, the 22nd of February. The Cadet Ball, on the night of that day, was for a great while a local event that was on the lips of all the ladies for weeks in advance, and the preparations were

of the most elaborate character. The consummation was always brilliant and successful.

Though the Cadet corps, from the character of its organization, could not well have been called into the general service during the war, as were the regiments of State militia, they nevertheless, as an organization, did service at Fort Warren, to the relief of the garrison of United States troops there. They were at Fort Warren, under Major Marks, from May 26, 1862, to October 11, of the same year. Besides this, they furnished, from their active membership, many who went into the service—the First Heavy Artillery, being largely recruited under the Cadet auspices and from the Cadet ranks. We believe it has been ascertained that no less than 160 Cadets held commissions in the national service during the war for the suppression of the Rebellion.

The record of the corps has certainly been a creditable one; and we hope its next hundred years may be as successful as the last have been.

#### CADET ARMORIES.

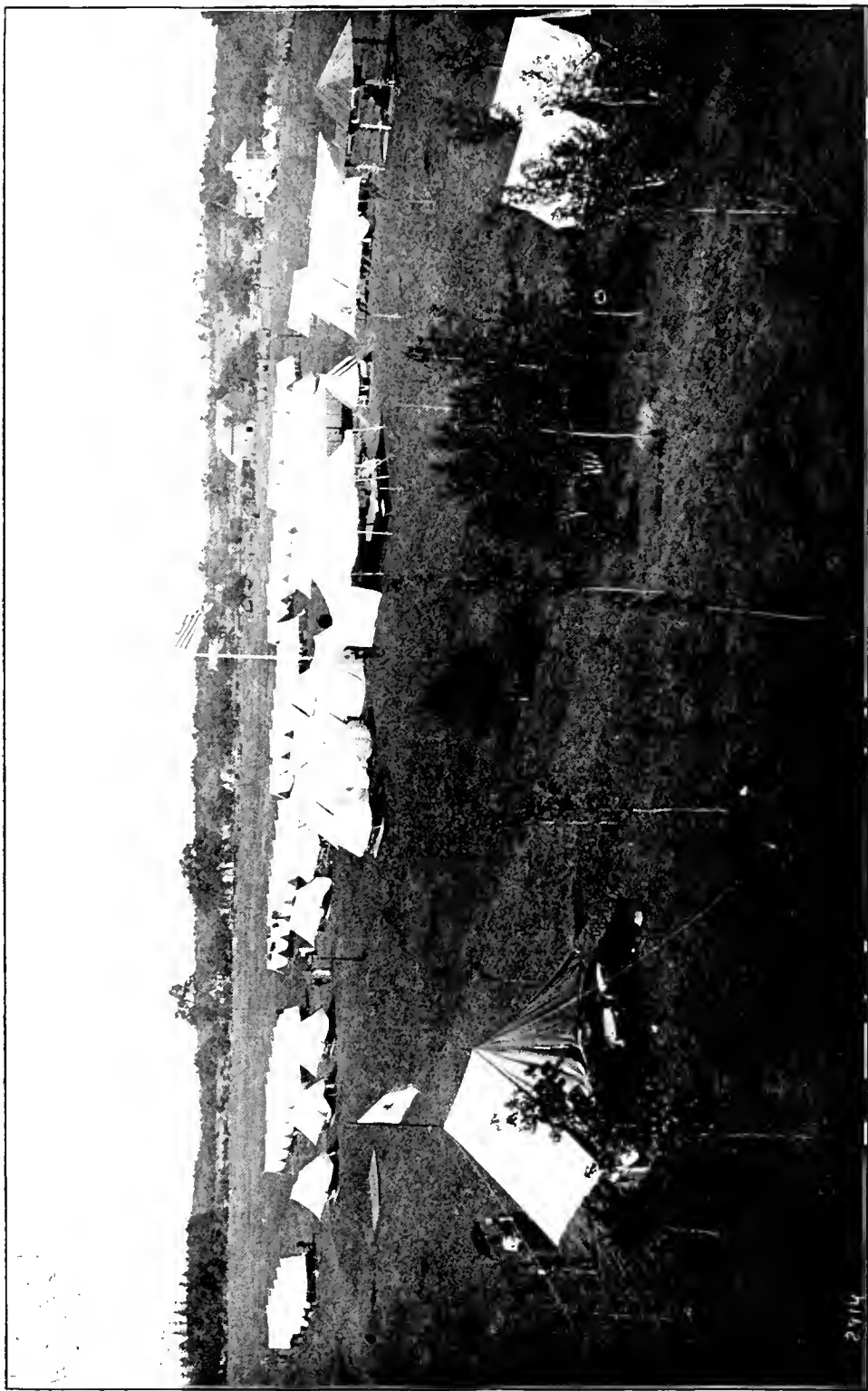
For a long time after the formation of the Cadets, each soldier kept his musket and accoutrements at home and acted as his own armorer. The business meetings were held at one of the taverns, and the rendezvous for parade until 1814, was on the area of the Court House. During 1814, '15, '16 and part of 1817, and until an armory was procured large enough for the purpose, that hall was the place of meeting for drills and parades.

About 1823, or perhaps somewhat earlier, a small room was hired in the Derby building, near the Town Hall, about twenty feet square, which scarcely held some forty muskets and accoutrements. The tents and camp equipage were deposited in the garret above. The company then procured the services of Charles Boden as armorer. This little room sufficed for several years, when a removal was made to a larger one in the Central building.

Afterwards, more spacious and commodious rooms were procured in the chambers of a wooden building on Washington street, about where W. G. Webber & Co.'s store now stands. These rooms were large enough to contain all the arms, accoutrements, tents and camp equipage, with sufficient space for squad drills and company meetings, and was the rendezvous on parade days. For one or two winters, lectures on various subjects were delivered here by members of the company.

The armory was at one time in Bowker's building, and perhaps elsewhere, previous to its removal to Franklin building. It was also for a time in a room or rooms under Washington Hall, now occupied by H. W. Thurston, Washington street.





SECOND CORPS CADETS, M. V. M. CAMP GROUND, BOXFORD, MASS.



The armory in Franklin building was formally opened with a ball, February 22, 1855, and was acknowledged to be the most spacious, commodious and elegant one in the state. It was destroyed by fire on the morning of the 21st of October, 1860, with all the arms, accoutrements, camp equipage, most of the tents, piano, and all the records and documents of the company. The loss to the companies was about \$5,000 in value and the insurance was \$2,000. Oil portraits of General Abbot and Major Foster, with some minor articles were all that were saved. Muskets of a new pattern, worth about \$1,400, the property of the State, were destroyed.

Dr. Browne draws mainly from recollection in the above.

Bowker's Building is on the site of the mansion house which belonged to William Browne (son of Samuel) who married a daughter of Governor Burnett. He brought her to Salem in a coach, with a pair of horses. This was such an unusual sight in those days that the people turned out *en masse* to see them. Some doggerel rhymes, written on the occasion, ran thus:

"Billy Brown has come to town, with his lady fair;  
To make a dash, he spent his cash upon a coach and pair."

The site of the Franklin building was, in the early times of the then colony, the property of Colonel John Higginson, son of the Rev. John, and grandson of the Rev. Francis Higginson, the first minister of Salem. Colonel Higginson, 1675, built on the site an elegant mansion, which continued until 1809, when the estate was sold by John Gardner to Colonel Samuel Archer. The trustees of Colonel Archer sold the property to Josiah Dow, in 1810, having on it the Franklin building, which Colonel Archer had caused to be erected. Dow sold it, in 1811, to Captain Thomas Perkins, a retired merchant, who caused the hall, which was afterwards the Cadet armory, to be finished. It was used occasionally for balls, dancing parties, exhibitions, etc., until it was hired by the Cadets and fitted for their armory. Captain Perkins bequeathed



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WALTER F. PECK.

the estate to the Salem Marine Society, the income to be applied to the relief of indigent members.

The record of the Cadets, reaches back, as has been here shown, to the close of the Revolution. From that time forward it is most honorable. In the war of 1861-65 their record is as brilliant as glory itself—illuminated as it is by the gallant and heroic deaths of many of their number. At the outbreak of the Rebellion, the two Corps Cadets (Boston and Salem) were not sent to the front—the general government being unwilling to muster in other than regimental organizations; but in May, 1862, they were mustered into the United States service and were sent to Fort Warren, in Boston Harbor, where for six months they did garrison duty, and guarded the commissioned officers of the rebel army, who were confined there as prisoners of war. One hundred and sixty-four Salem Cadets were commissioned officers of the Union Army, scattered through every army corps in the service. The late General Cogswell entered the army as a Salem Cadet, commanding a company of the Second Massachusetts Regiment, advancing grade by grade, until he received "promotion on the field," and was placed in command of a brigade.

While there are no official data fixing the number of Salem Cadet members who enlisted or served as officers during the war, a fair estimate would place the number at 500.

In 1889, the corps took part in the celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the adoption of the United States Constitution at New York, being a part of the escort to His Excellency Governor Oliver Ames, the First Corps Cadets and Fifth Massachusetts Regiment, also, participating.

In 1890, the corps entered upon the work of securing better armory accommodations, and supplemented the efforts which had been commenced by the commanding officer and quietly pursued by him for several years. A desirable opportunity presenting itself, the property on Essex street, known as the former residence of Francis Peabody, Esq., and which was also the site of Governor Bradstreet's house, was purchased, and a corporation was formed under the laws of the State, and took the name of the "Stephen Abbot Associates," in honor of the first commander of the corps. The house was handsomely furnished, and a large drill hall was built on the rear land; and the Cadet Armory is now one of the many points of interest visited by the thousands who come to Salem annually to view anything connected with its early history.

The roster of the Corps in 1898 was as follows:

*Field and Staff.*

Lieutenant-Colonel, Samuel A. Johnson, Salem; Major, Walter F. Peck, Salem; Surgeon, James E. Simpson, Salem; Assistant Surgeon, J. William Voss, Peabody;



AT THE TENTS, OFF DUTY.



AT THE MESS TABLES.  
SECOND CORPS CADETS, FORT MILLER, MARBLEHEAD, 1898.



Adjutant, Andrew Fitz, Salem; Quartermaster, David M. Little, Salem; Paymaster, Edward A. Maloon, Beverly; Inspector of Rifle Practice, Charles S. Tuckerman, Salem; Chaplain, Rev. Elvin G. Prescott, Salem.

*Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergeant-Major, Harry F. Dalton; Quartermaster Sergeant, Frank T. Chase; Hospital Steward, Howard L. Horton; Drum Major, Augustus D. Coule.

*Line Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Philip Little, Salem; First Lieutenant, George E. Symonds, Salem; Second Lieutenant, Edward T. Graham, Salem.

Company B—Captain, Reuben W. Ropes, Salem; First Lieutenant, Arthur N. Webb, Salem; Second Lieutenant, Frank S. Perkins, Salem.

Company C—Captain, John E. Spencer, Salem; First Lieutenant, Charles F. Ropes, Salem; Second Lieutenant, F. Ernest Clark, Lynn.

Company D—Captain, George D. Kimball; First Lieutenant, George E. Worthen.

IN THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR.

At the first rumor of impending hostilities, the services of the Corps were promptly tendered by Lieutenant-Colonel S. A. Johnson, then commanding; but owing to its battalion formation, it was not accepted.

Special Order No 51, A. G. O., issued May 6, 1898, assigned the Corps to service at Fort Miller, Naugus Head, Marblehead.

May 9, the first detachment, consisting of Company A, Captain Philip Little, with Lieutenants George E. Symonds and F. Ernest Clark, reported at the fort for duty. On May 12, rapid-fire guns were received and mounted. On May 17, Company A was relieved by Companies B and D, Captain Frank S. Horton commanding, with Lieutenants John E. Spencer and George E. Worthen, who garrisoned the fort until relieved May 24, by Company B, Captain Reuben W. Ropes, with Lieutenants Arthur N. Webb and Harry F. Dalton. The fort, pursuant to orders, was abandoned June 1, and the property turned over to the U. S. government.

The Second Cadets garrisoned the fort at a time, when every one expected that New England would be harassed by the Spanish fleet, and much work was done to prepare the fort for any attack.

Besides garrisoning Fort Miller, the Cadets escorted Company H, Eighth regiment, U. S. V., on its departure for and return from the war; turned out as an organization at the funerals of Corporal Nichols and Privates Deasy and Saunders in Salem, and furnished escorts and firing parties at eleven other funerals.

Some thirty members enlisted in the Eighth Regiment and other organizations, serving with credit. Most of these were mustered out as non-commissioned officers, and one rose to the rank of second lieutenant.

While the Cadets held Fort Miller, the commander, major and adjutant were on duty at battalion headquarters at the Salem armory. Colonel S. A. Johnson was appointed a member of the State Advisory Board, just previous to the breaking out of the war.

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE MASSACHUSETTS NAVAL RESERVE IN THE SPANISH WAR.

By Winthrop Packard and others.

THE naval reserve has been called "Uncle Sam's Land Marines;" and, to a certain extent, the name fits. The idea of the originator of the scheme, Commander John C. Soley, U. S. N. (retired), was the formation of a force which should be a naval adjunct of the land militia, men able to fill acceptably positions on a war-



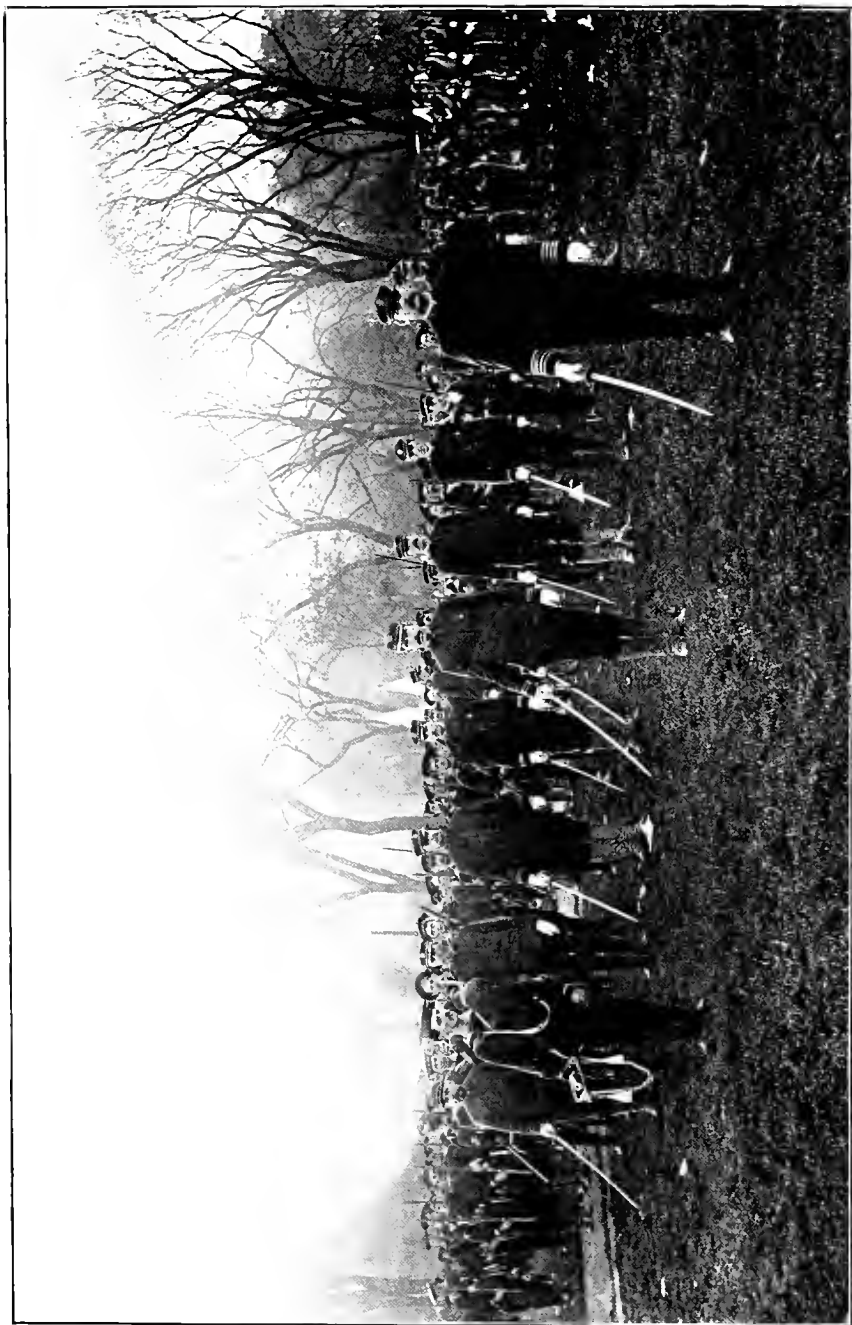
WINTHROP PACKARD, NAVAL BRIGADE, M. V. M.

ship, and still trained and efficient as land forces, ready to serve either as Jack tars, marines, or ordinary infantry and artillery. The first company of naval volunteers was formed March 25, 1890, Massachusetts leading the way, and the organization was extended until, at the outbreak of the war, it was represented in every section of the country, being established in seventeen states, forming twenty-three battalions, and having a total enrollment of 427 officers, and 4,501 men.

The tactics adopted were the same for all organizations. The infantry drill of the United States regulars was learned in its entirety, although it could not, of course, be brought to the same perfection, being but a single branch of duty; but if the naval militiaman is sent ashore, he is ex-

pected, and may be trusted, to make a very fair infantry soldier. The artillery drill comprises thorough practice with navy field mounts, or guns taken ashore to do service as land artillery; the "secondary battery," or small guns used on deck and in the boats during a light attack; and finally, proficiency in heavy battery drill, which means the ability to handle the heaviest guns Uncle Sam has afloat. The whole idea of the naval militia summed up in a word, is that each man is at least well acquainted with





*Photo by Marr*

THE NAVAL BRIGADE, M. V. M., CAPTAIN JOHN W. WEEKS COMMANDING, BOSTON COMMON (DEWEY DAY), OCTOBER 14, 1899.



every part of a line-of-battleship, and every means of attack or defense which she carries, as soon as he steps aboard of her. With opportunities for field and shore practice at Salem and Marblehead in the summer, with a chance now and then to man, wholly or in part, the big cruisers, and on one occasion the battleship "Massachusetts," for a week, when visiting this port, the Massachusetts Naval Brigade long ago attained this standard of general efficiency, and proceeded to turn its attention to the development of a standard of perfection in special branches of the service.

Thus an engineer division of twenty-five men has been organized, which is competent to handle a first class battleship in an emergency. There is also a torpedo division, every man of whom is of the highest practical value on vessels carrying torpedoes. A single direction in which the whole brigade has attained the most remarkable efficiency is marksmanship. Every man of the entire double battalion, officers and men, is a qualified marksman under State rules. Nor does the brigade stop here. It succeeded in 1896, in raising an entire division to the grade of sharpshooters, an honor up to that time attained by no single company of land militia in the United States. That there are some remarkable records at target practice by the organization goes without special record here; and many of these have been made with the heavy guns of the "Massachusetts" and the "Columbia."

#### TOURS OF DUTY.

To give an idea of a practical experience, which no militia in time of peace can hope to achieve, the first two "tours of duty" of a week in summer, of the first battalion of the Massachusetts boys were made on the old "Wabash," anchored then, as now, in the waters of Charlestown navy yard, in connection with the vessels of war of our own navy, then lying in the harbor. In 1893, the "San Francisco" and the "Miantonomah" came



CAMP OF THE NAVAL BRIGADE, LOVELL'S ISLAND, BOSTON HARBOR.

here and sent ashore as many of their men as possible to make room for the force of enlisted men then in the battalion. The men have lived the life of men-of-war, on men-of-war, for one week every summer since the organization of the brigade.

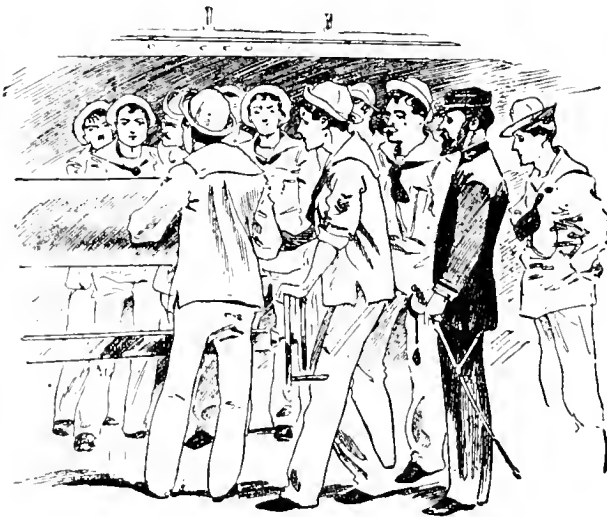
Such practice has alternated with camp duty ashore. The force is transformed into a landing party, field pieces are set up, and sham fighting takes place.

When the old frigate "Passaic" was finally loaned by the government, a few summers ago, the men were delighted. They went to work with a will, scraped her sides, cleaned her bottom, and painted her from stem to stern. With one of her trips down the harbor that year a flotilla of small boats was sent along, each with a gun in its bows, which at a signal attacked the frigate, and a sham battle at sea was fought. Under such unexceptionable circumstances for practice duty as these, the efficiency of the Massachusetts battalion; and equally good accounts have come from New York and other States; was proved at once when they were called on for active service in the war with Spain in 1898.

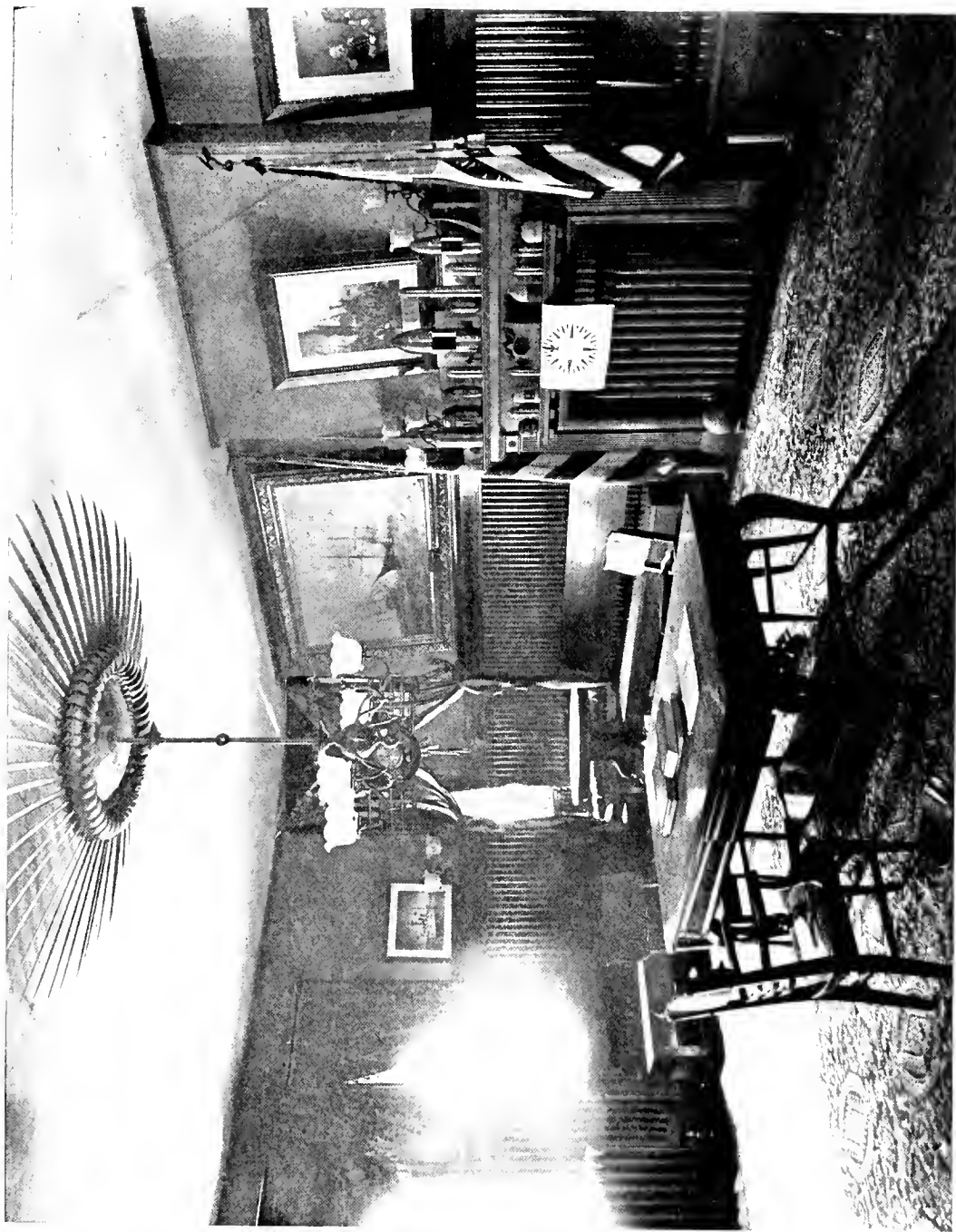
To preserve the *esprit du corps* of the Massachusetts brigade, and to keep the men together in the present struggle, was the especial work of Captain Weeks, who made a visit to Washington for that purpose. As will be seen by this hasty glance at the organization, the requirements in the Naval Militia cover more ground than that of any other service in the army or navy. Every enlisted man in the Massachusetts brigade is today a qualified marksman; knows his rifle, barrel and bayonet; and has been well drilled as infantry. Every man is ready to serve light artillery on land or sea, and knows something practical about the great guns. The Massachusetts Naval Brigade has developed a thoroughly well-equipped and drilled signal squad; an efficient torpedo division; and an engineer corps of twenty-five men, capable of manning the engines of any ship in the service. They can board any vessel of war, and man any part of her;

and yet they are only a militia formation, organized primarily as a second line of coast defense.

The spirit of the organization in Massachusetts has always been kept at a very high standard. As a detail, the examination for petty officers of the various grades, includes a line of questions which, it is stated on the highest authority, many a man who has been on a "man-of-war" all his life could not answer.



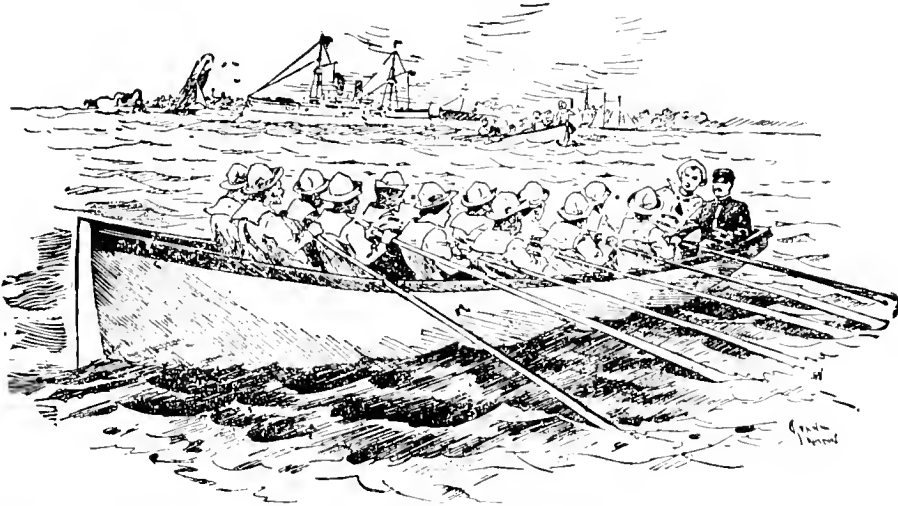
NAVAL BRIGADE. AT THE MAIN BATTERY.



STATE ARMORY, SPRINGFIELD, MASS. QUARTERS OF COMPANY B, NAVAL BRIGADE, M. V. M.



The personnel of the Massachusetts brigade, as intimated at the opening of this article, is much higher than that of the average militia organization. The roster of the divisions includes among the seamen



NAVAL BRIGADE. BOAT PRACTICE.

(privates) the names of many men who are engaged in important business avocations—a large percentage of them employers—in Boston. Twenty-five of the men who went out to man the *Catskill*, the *Lehigh*, and the *Prairie*, had received the fresh diploma of Harvard College, granted in advance by the Alma Mater. The four “crack” organizations of the United States Naval Militia, are those of Massachusetts, New York, Maryland and Michigan, and these have been almost wholly drafted for service on deep sea ships.

It will be seen that the requirements for membership are of the most exacting character, and cover the widest range of duty known to any service.

In Massachusetts, the original form of the organization contemplated two battalions of 208 men each, under a lieutenant commander. The headquarters staff, consisting of a paymaster, surgeon, adjutant, equipment officer, ordnance officer, and petty staff, bringing the total battalion number up to about 225. The Second Battalion, recruited and organized in 1893, consisted of volunteers from towns outside of Boston; Lynn, Fall River, New Bedford, and Springfield.

In April, 1898, the organization was under the command of Captain John W. Weeks, a graduate of Annapolis, who had seen regular sea-service in the navy, with headquarters on the *Minnesota*. The *Minnesota* was an old style steam frigate, whose most glorious service was in the Civil War, in the engagement between the *Monitor* and *Mer-*

rimae at Hampton Roads, in which she fired 202 shells, and 247 solid shot, and received serious damage from the Confederate guns. She lay at the Congress street bridge in Boston Harbor, and it was there that the entire force rendezvoused, and from her the various details went out.

The first actual service rendered was the putting in readiness of the monitors *Lehigh* and *Catskill*, which lay at the Mare Island navy yard, Philadelphia, a detail of officers and men being sent on April 2, 1898, for this purpose. On April 17, full crews for these monitors went on board, and, with few exceptions, served without change during the war, the

*Catskill* being commanded by Lieutenant Martin E. Hall, and the *Lehigh* by Lieutenant R. G. Peck, both regulars. On July 17, Lieutenants Hall and Peck were succeeded by Lieutenants James O. Porter and A. B. Denny, of the naval brigade, who held their commands until the close of the war.

These monitors were of the well-known civil war type, had a speed under their own steam of five or six knots an hour, carried a single heavily-armored turret, and mounted two fifteen-inch smooth bore guns of the obsolete type of 1862. After being thoroughly put in repair, they were stationed at President Roads and at Provincetown, where the crews were drilled, and a watch kept for Spanish ships.



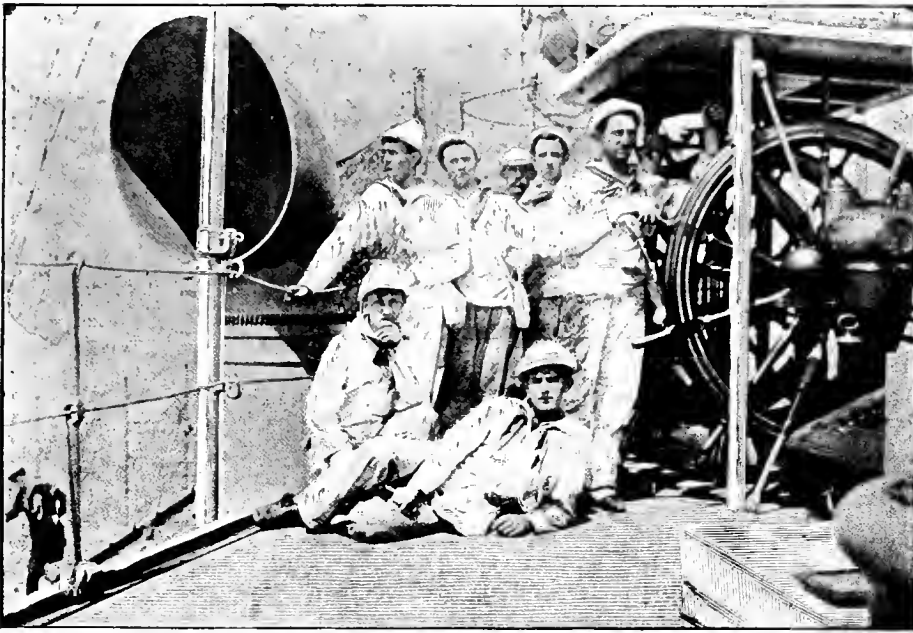
CAPTAIN JOHN A. WEEKS.

Commanding officer of the first naval brigade formed in the United States.

As watch-dogs of the harbor, these boats served their purpose in allaying the fears of those citizens who had real, if needless, expectation of Spanish invasion. Of the bravery and efficiency of the men there can be no doubt. What would have been the outcome of putting these slow-moving and obsolete tubs of vessels, with their old, smooth bores, into action against the rifled guns of a modern warship, can, of course, only be conjectured.

Fortunately the Spanish fleet did not seek the New England coast,

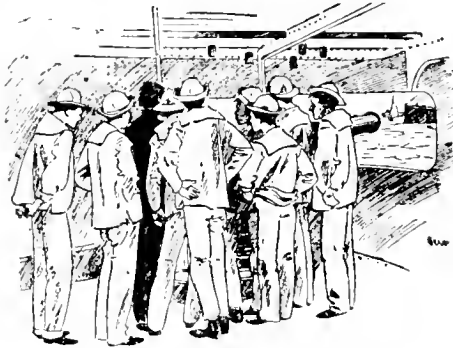




THE NAVAL BRIGADE. U. S. S. COLUMBIA.

and there was no opportunity given for a display of heroism against tremendous odds. In addition to these two vessels, the following auxiliaries were commissioned: the Inca, Seminole, Governor Russell, and East Boston; the first being a converted yacht, the second a converted tug, and the last two converted ferry-boats. The Governor Russell and East Boston were subsequently detached and added to the regular navy. These vessels were well and efficiently manned by men of the Massachusetts Naval Reserve. The Inca was commanded by Lieutenant McKay, U. S. N.; the Seminole, by Lieutenant J. H. Dillaway, Jr.; the Governor Russell, by Lieutenant J. K. Dexter of Springfield. Most of the crew of the Seminole, were from the Connecticut Naval Reserve.

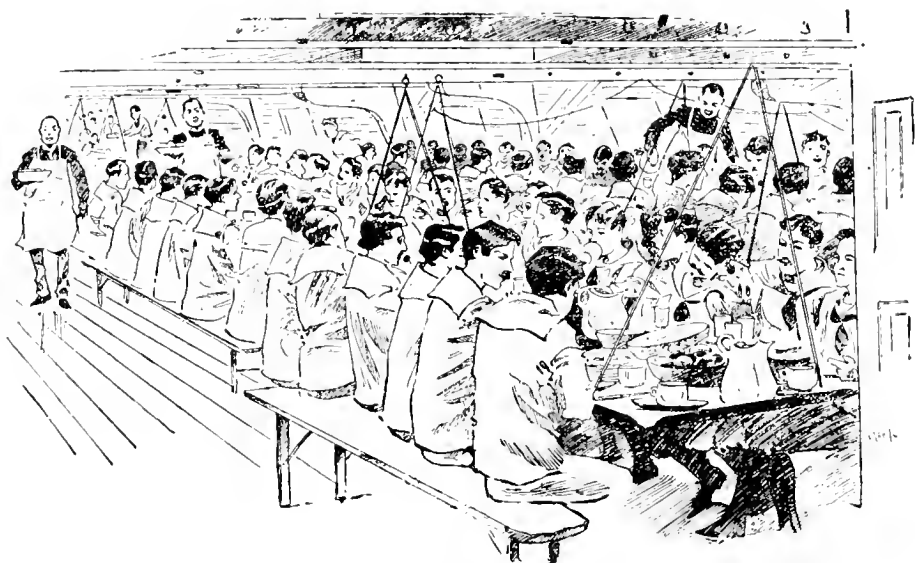
The largest and most important ship, both in equipment and actual service, manned by the reserve, was the United States Steamer *Prairie*. The *Prairie* was one of the four Morgan liners, purchased by the government at the outbreak of the war, and named for the four great sections of the country, the Yankee, the Dixie, the *Prairie*, and the Yosemite, the *Prairie* having previously been registered as the *El Sol*. She was an iron ship of nearly 5,000 tons burden, 410 feet



THE NAVAL BRIGADE. GUNNERY PRACTICE.

over all, having a record of highest speed of about eighteen knots. She carried an armament of ten six-inch, rapid fire guns, six six-pounders, and two Colt automatic machine guns. Her crew, which should have consisted of at least 250 men, was composed of a bare hundred and fifty naval reserve men, reinforced by about thirty volunteers from other sources. In spite of their small number, these men proved themselves entirely efficient and capable, and received the approbation of their commanding officer and of the navy department, each man, before his discharge, winning at least one rating higher than that held at his enlistment.

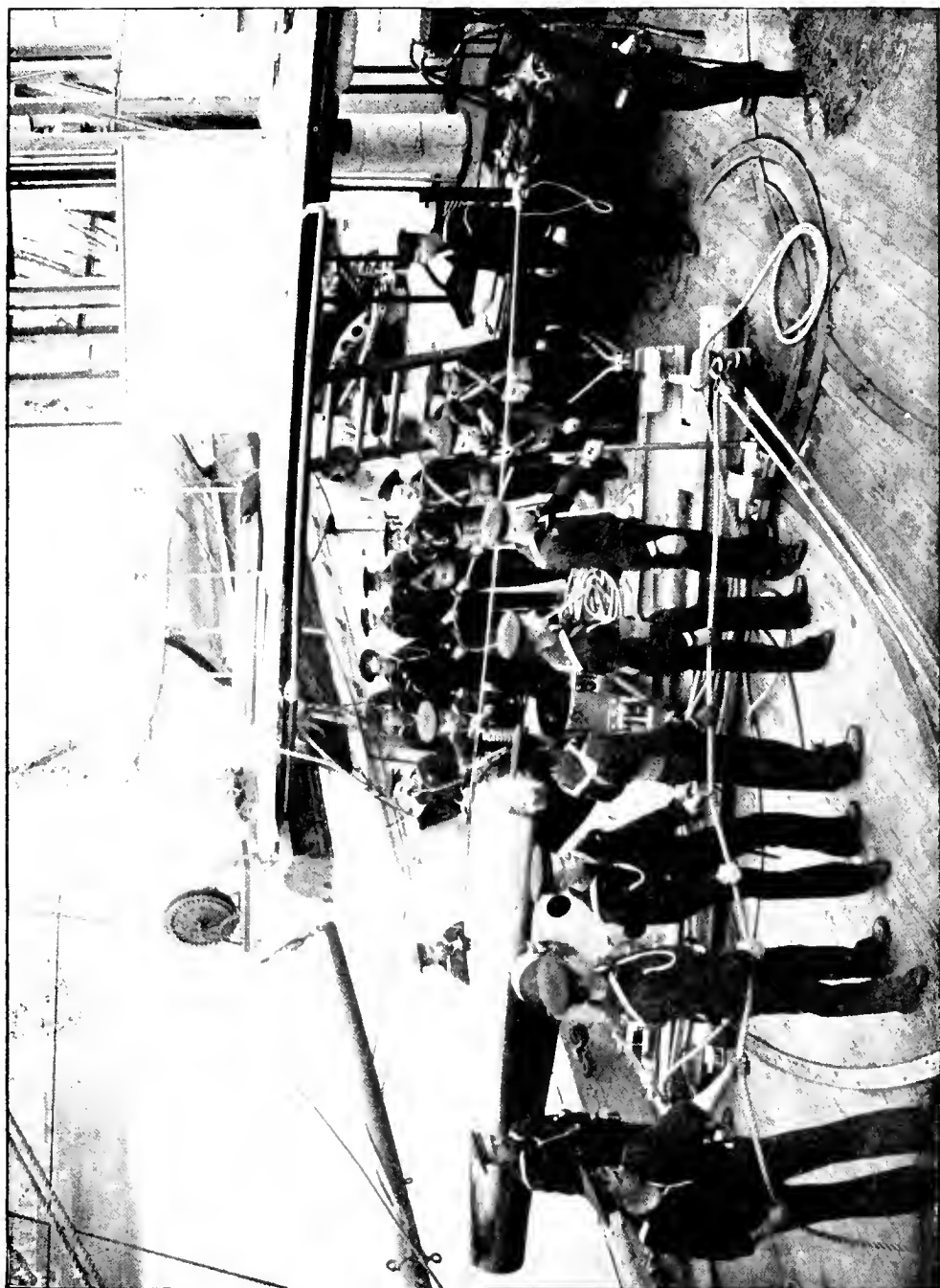
On April 23 the assistant secretary of the navy telegraphed to Captain Weeks, aboard the *Minnesota*: "Send officers and crew for the *Prairie*



NAVAL BRIGADE. AT MESS.

at once." This despatch was received at 1.30 p. m., and at 9 o'clock the next morning a detail reported at the Brooklyn Navy Yard fully officered and equipped for duty. The ship, however, was not ready for service, and the crew was at once employed in the work of preparation, being joined May 2, by another and larger detail, making the crew complete. This detail could have gone at the first call, had it been needed. On Friday, May 13, the ship, fully equipped, passed out of New York Harbor to deafening salutes from every steam whistle available, and was attached to the New England Coast Patrol; its beat being from Nantucket, South Shoals, to a point on the Maine Coast, meeting the *San Francisco*, flagship of the patrol squadron, off Provincetown, daily, for mail and orders.

In this service the ship remained until the latter part of June, the



GUNNERY PRACTICE, 12-IN. D. DAHLGREN PIVOT GUN, (OLD STYLE)



crew being "licked into shape" by the vigorous discipline of Commander C. J. Train and Lieutenant Stoney, bluff old sea-dogs, and Executive Officer Osterhause, formerly of the Naval Academy at Annapolis, a rigid disciplinarian, and, indeed, something of a martinet. During this time white-handed clerks and students first learned the work of stevedores, in coaling ship and handling ballast—of sailors, in standing watch and working a ship at sea, and were faithfully drilled in their already acquired knowledge of gunnery and tactics. So well was this breaking-in done, that the survivors went South for sterner business—"fit" in all respects for the work before them. During the latter part of June the *Prairie* was ordered to New York, where she lay at the Tompkinsville anchorage nearly ten days, coaling ship, putting in all the soft coal that could be heaped in bunkers and hold; the crew working from reveille at 5 a. m., until 6 p. m., and all Sunday and Sunday night; thus putting in nearly eighteen hours at a stretch, after an exhausting week's work. The work was done willingly, however, for orders had come that all mail was to be received at Key West until further notice. At midnight, Sunday, the last lump was in bunkers and the hold ran over, and the crew dropped amid coal dust, barrows and baskets, and slept, too utterly weary to get into their hammocks. Reveille, at 5 o'clock the next morning, found them there, black and grotesque heaps upon a grimy deck.



THE NAVAL BRIGADE. RECREATION.

Five days later found the ship—the most active cruiser on the Havana blockade—lying directly off Morro Castle, and for part of the time, the flagship of the squadron. Here the monotony of a long period of watching and inaction, with an occasional flurry of excitement over a possible blockade-runner, were broken by an action on July 5.

Except for the national salute which ran down the long line of ships in clouds and thunder, and sent the artillerymen on shore to their guns in expectation of a bombardment, the anniversary of the Fourth was as uneventful as the preceding ones; but during the night a blockade-runner, a huge steamship, showed up through the gloom, attempted to pass,

but failed, and was lost in the rush of a tropic thunderstorm. Toward morning the same vessel was sighted by the Hawk and Castine—smaller boats then lying nearer the shore—and driven down the coast. At dawn the ship—which proved to be the Spanish liner Alphonso XII—attempted to make the Port of Mariel, and grounded on a bar off the mouth of the harbor.

Here a boat from the Hawk attempted to board her, but was repulsed by a machine gun, and the Castine's attack upon her was answered by shore batteries.

A report of the action was sent to the Prairie, and she made the twenty-five mile run in a little over an hour, bringing her ten six-inch guns to bear upon the ship and shore batteries with telling effect, and soon silencing a return fire which was weak and singularly inaccurate. At a distance of at least three miles, great holes were blown through the big blockade-runner, and she was soon a mass of burning wreckage. A single shot from one of the six-inch guns sunk a gunboat that came steaming boldly out of the mouth of the harbor, firing and flying the Spanish flag astern. After being about two hours in action the order, "Cease firing," was given, and the ship returned to her post on the blockade, untouched by the Spanish fire, and with no accidents. The crew behaved with the utmost coolness and courage, and showed great precision in gunnery. The Alphonso XII, was loaded with arms, ammunition, and supplies, which were destroyed. Those on board escaped to the shore, presumably uninjured.

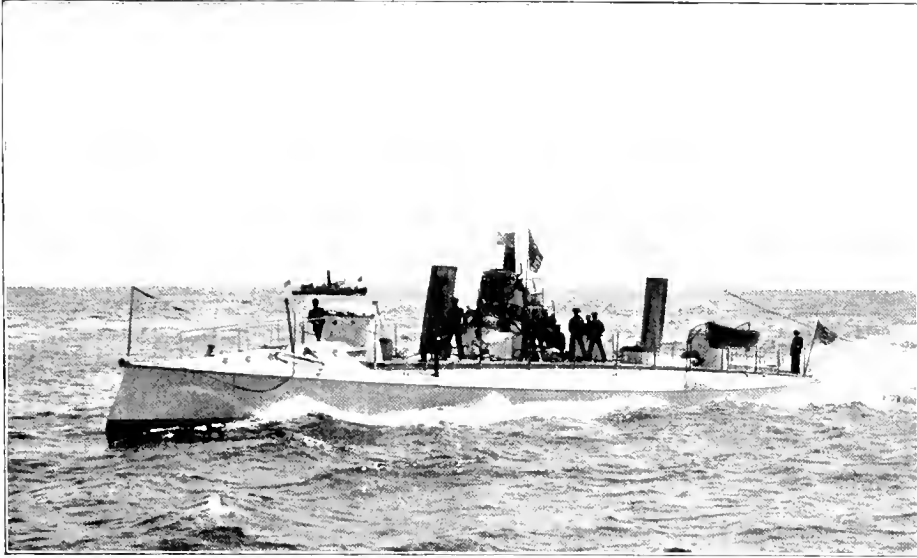
Four or five days later the Prairie proceeded east along the north coast of the island, and blockaded the port of Gibara, where there was a good harbor, a fort, and a Spanish garrison. The Prairie had at the



A BIG STEAMER IN TROUBLE.

time strict orders not to attack or fire upon the place unless she was herself fired upon. Hence, for two weeks or so, an amusing series of manoeuvres was indulged in which kept the garrison "guessing." A favorite

manoeuvre was to head the ship, under a full head of steam, directly toward the fort. Troops would pour from the barracks, man and point the guns, and in evident excitement await the unexpected attack. When



THE TORPEDO BOAT CUSHING, U. S. N.

within a short distance the ship would sheer off and run down the coast, only to repeat the manoeuvre, perhaps, the next day. The end of this comedy of bluff was the withdrawal of the garrison to the interior, leaving the town deserted, and the surrender of the latter by the civil authorities, who came out in a small tug, with a very large white flag, to conduct the negotiations, and who exhibited an amusing mixture of dignity and sea-sickness. That same day the Stars and Stripes were planted over Gibara, and the protection of the United States was extended to the inhabitants, who lived in great fear of a raid by the outlaws who infested the hills round about them.

At daybreak the next morning a despatch boat appeared, ordering the *Prairie* to Guantanamo, and she steamed hurriedly eastward, leaving the Gibarians to their new flag, and whatsoever fate might go with it. As the ship approached the bay of Nipe, further down the coast the smoke of a considerable conflict was seen, heavy cannonading was heard, and the mast-head look-out could distinguish the flash of guns and see troops marching upon the shore, where batteries were replying to several of our gunboats in the bay.

For reasons, perhaps, best known to himself, Captain Train did not enter the bay and join the conflict, but contented himself with lying off the entrance until the cannonading ceased and the *Topeka* and *Dupont*

steamed out. The ship was then put on her eastward course, and rounded Cape Maysi with no further incident. It is needless to say that "the men behind the guns" were bitterly disappointed at this failure to get under fire after their long weeks of inaction.

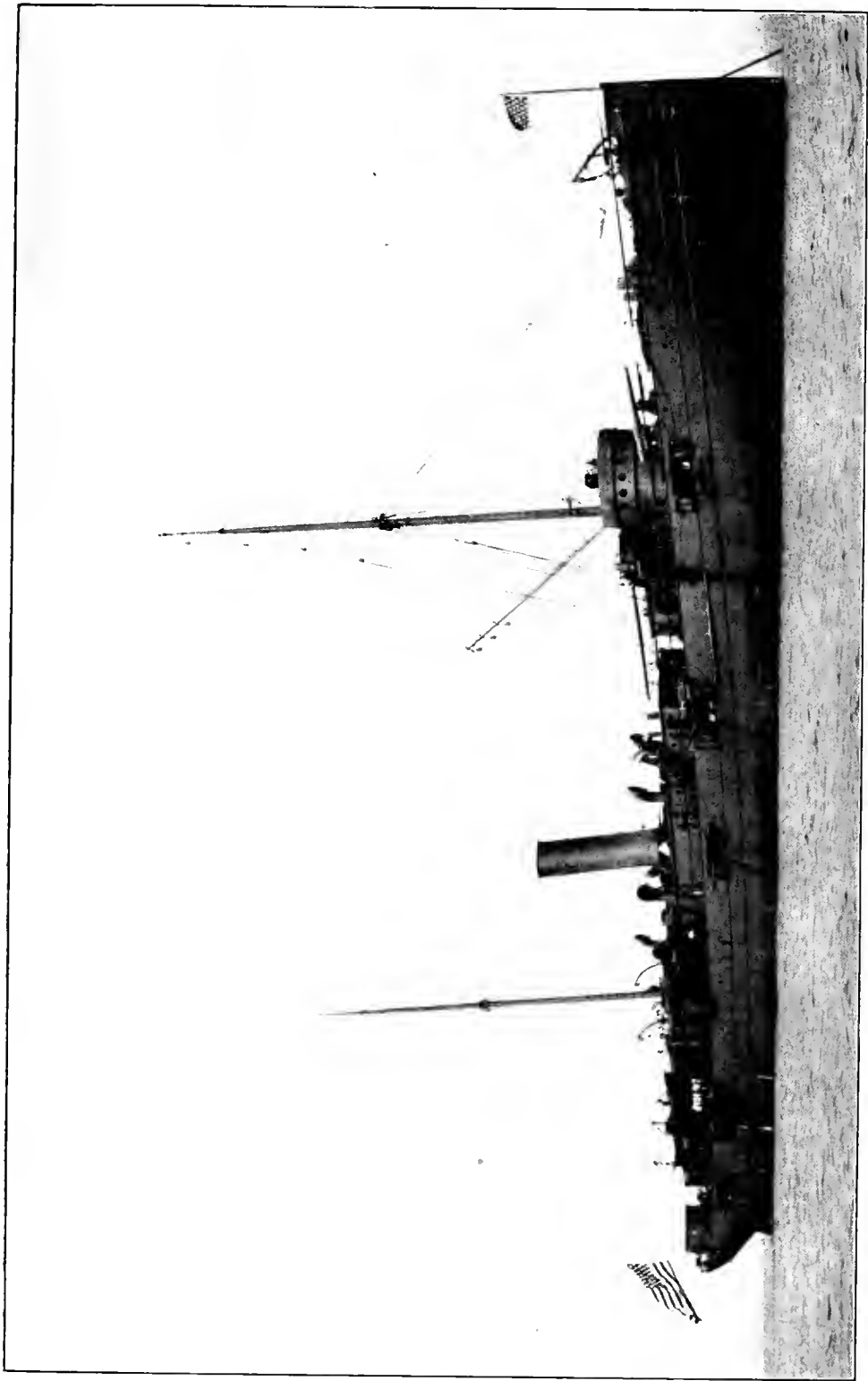
Guantanamo was as populous as Gibara had been lonely. As we rounded the headland, battleship after battleship swung into view. There lay, the Oregon, the Massachusetts, the Indiana, the Iowa; the Texas, bulldog of the Santiago fight; the Brooklyn, her armor dented and her smoke-stack perforated by Spanish shells; the New York; the Vesuvius, "thrower of earthquakes"; the Vulcan, a floating machine-shop, within whose bulk were machinery and material almost equal to the making of a battleship; and a host of cruisers, supply ships, and the largest schooners afloat, laden to the eyes with coal for the fleet.

Here the crew, who had been living for weeks on hard tack and canned "beef," got their first taste of fresh meat from the refrigerator ships, hauling it, frozen stiff, from the holds, where snow fell under the glare of the midsummer tropics. Here, too, they coaled ship alongside the huge schooner Frank M. Palmer, with the crew of the Yankee coaling on the other side, working equal watches with them. By the way, in the same time the Prairie, with little more than half the working gang, put in much more coal than her sister vessel—a trifling incident, perhaps, but showing the stamina of the Massachusetts men; for coaling ship, day and night, watch and watch, for five days in a Cuban July, is no trifle. With re-filled bunkers and fatter mess chests, the ship sailed away to join the Yosemite and San Francisco, north of Porto Rico, on the blockade of San Juan. Here she transferred ammunition to the New Orleans, ferrying it in small boats in a jumping sea, that tried the seamanship and resources of the crew to the uttermost, the feat being accomplished without accident or the loss of a shell.

The presence of Spanish torpedo boats in the harbor of San Juan made the blockade a period of constant watchfulness for fear of night attacks, the crews of the six-pounders sleeping by them, with gunners constantly on the watch throughout the night, and when the order came to proceed to Ponce on the southern side of the island, it was welcomed.

Arriving at Ponce about the first of August, the Prairie's crew, in the weeks that followed, performed a most important service, and work that was, perhaps, the most arduous of their eventful cruise. The bay was already beginning to fill with transports, and troops under General Miles were forcing their way northward toward San Juan. Daily more transports arrived, and one of these, the Massachusetts, a big 6,000 ton liner, ran aground on a shifting sand bar at the mouth of the harbor. She was loaded to her fullest capacity with cavalry, whose presence ashore was greatly desired, and her troopers were transferred to the Prairie over





U. S. "PRAIRIE," ON THE CUBAN BLOCKADE 1898.



night, and thence ferried ashore in the ship's boats. Meanwhile the horses were being transferred to lighters, and the work continued night and day until finished. The *Prairie*, with a hold full of hawsers, with her heavy bitts and powerful engines, was the most available ship for getting this transport off the bar, and she was accordingly ordered to the work. It was an arduous and dangerous duty, involving, as it did, the constant running of great hawsers that snapped like twine under the tug of the engines, and had to be replaced with ceaseless and herculean labor, and it was continued, with no let up, for nearly a week, when the transport slipped off the bar and anchored, uninjured, safely within the bay.

Twenty-four hours afterward the *Manitoba*, a similar ship similarly loaded, steamed in, and, despite all warning, grounded in the same place. Again the *Prairie*'s crew bent to the work of rescue, this time with the assistance of the *Saturn*—a big steam collier. The first hawser which the latter put aboard snapped, and sent her ashore on the bar in a far worse position than the other. After another week of labor, day and night, the *Prairie*, with the assistance of a small tug, got the *Manitoba* safely within the bay, and shortly after the *Saturn*, with most of her coal thrown overboard, and much racked and strained by the seas, was rescued from her perilous position, and the *Prairie* steamed proudly back to her anchorage amid the toots of steam whistles, which voiced the congratulations of the great fleet.

This work, promptly and successfully done, was of great value to the expedition, and reflected great credit on the energy and resourcefulness of Lieutenant Stoney, who had entire charge of it, as well as upon the pluck and persistency of the crew.

The strain upon the latter was shown by the increase of illness among them, nearly a fourth of the whole crew being at one time on the sick list. The illness of two of these—Boatswain's mate Lynward French, and Coxswain Downey, both of Fall River—became so serious that they were put aboard the *St. Paul* to be sent home. French died on the way, and was buried with the marines who fell at Camp McCalla, Guantanamo Bay, Cuba. Downey reached the hospital at New York, and eventually recovered.

The *Prairie* remained at San Juan until the news of the signing of the peace protocol was received, and toward the end of the month was ordered to Santiago, where she took aboard a part of the Seventh Colorado Regiment, and brought them to Camp Wickoff, on Long Island.

After a considerable stay at Tomkinsville, N. Y., the *Prairie* was ordered to League Island Navy Yard, Philadelphia, where she was laid up in ordinary, and the crew shipped to Charlestown Navy Yard, and there discharged from the service, thus ending a five months cruise, in which the ship had logged some 16,000 miles, traversed the coast from Maine to

Key West, and thence to the uttermost limit of the then Spanish West Indies.

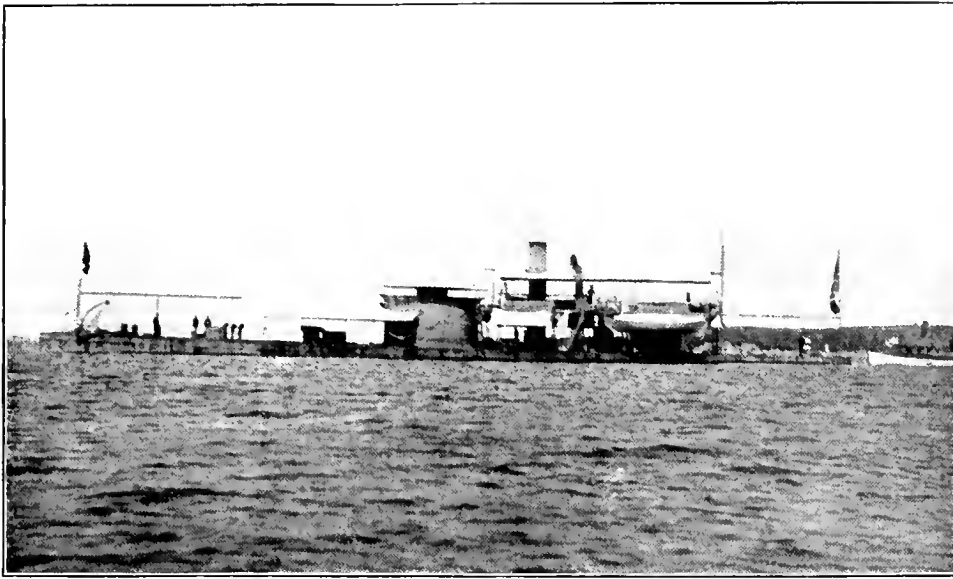
Two coast defense vessels, manned chiefly by the New York Naval Reserves, were commanded by officers of the Massachusetts Naval Brigade.

The "Aileen" was employed in watching the mine fields of New York Harbor. Her commander, Lieut. Walter R. Addicks, commissioned to the junior grade August 19, 1897, was ordered, April 22, 1898, by Capt. J. W. Weeks, to report for duty to Lieut.-Commander H. G. V. Colby, U. S. N., to command a torpedo boat. He reported April 23, reported for physical examination May 28, and on June 13 was ordered by Rear Admiral Erben, U. S. N., to report for examination at the Boston Navy Yard, where, on June 20, he was duly examined by the Board, and on June 21 discharged from duty by Commander Allen D. Brown, U. S. N. On July 2, 1898, he was appointed lieutenant, U. S. N., at once forwarded his acceptance, and on July 5 was ordered to command the "Aileen" in New York Harbor. On August 11 he was detached to command the U. S. S. "Huntress." On August 23 he was ordered back to the "Aileen"; but this order was countermanded the same day, and on the 25th he was ordered to proceed with the "Huntress" to Brooklyn Navy Yard and go out of commission, which he did the next day, and was ordered home. The "Huntress" went out of commission August 30, 1898, and Lieutenant Addicks was honorably discharged from the United States Navy September 6, 1898. He returned to duty with the Naval Brigade, was commissioned lieutenant chief of Co. A, April 11, 1889, and honorably discharged August 31, 1899.

Lieut. Gardner I. Jones, on April 21, 1898, reported to Lieut.-Commander H. G. V. Colby, U. S. N., commanding the Mosquito Fleet, of the Second District, for duty as commanding officer of a gun vessel. Was assigned to the "Governor Russell," and made plans and blue prints for converting the ferry boat into a gun vessel. On May 12, he reported to Lieut. Robert E. Peck, U. S. N., commanding U. S. monitor "Lehigh", as navigator and watch officer. On July 3, having passed written examinations at the Charlestown Navy Yard, he was commissioned lieutenant, senior grade, U. S. N., and ordered to report at New London, Ct., to command the U. S. monitor "Jason", then stationed at the entrance of Long Island Sound, off Fisher's Island, as a coast defense vessel for the protection of the shores of Long Island Sound, and attached to the Third District of the Auxiliary Coast Defense, under command of Lieut.-Commander J. N. Miller, U. S. N. On August 25, he was ordered to proceed to Fort Pond Bay, at Montauk Point, Long Island, and on August 29 left Fort Pond Bay for League Island Navy Yard, where he arrived on August 31. On September 3, the "Jason" was put out of commission, Lieut. Jones was detached and ordered home, and on September 10, received an honorable discharge from the United States naval service.

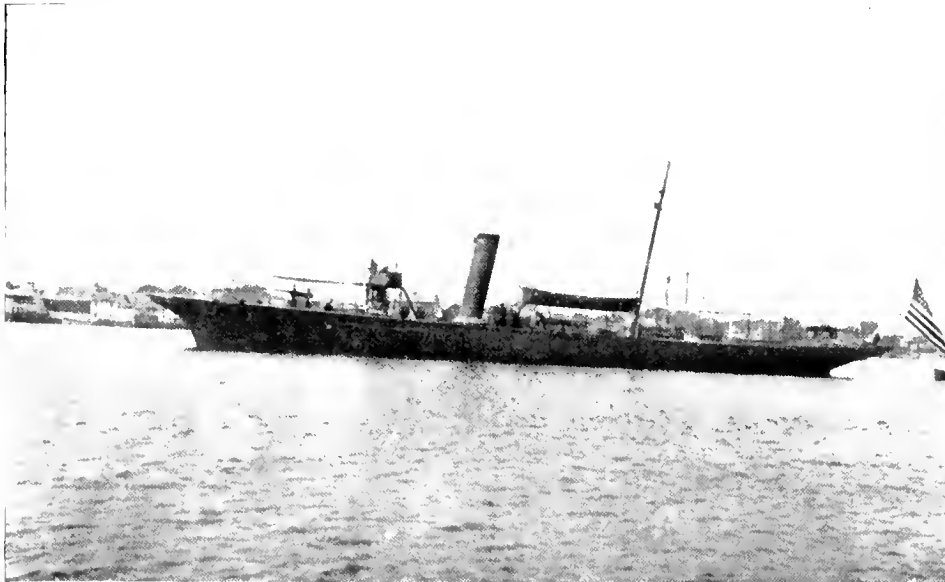
Four new companies were authorized by the Legislature in 1898: I, of Fall River, Lieutenant William B. Edgar; K, of Boston, Lieutenant Pelham Dodd; L, of Newburyport, Lieutenant Edward G. Moody; M, of Gloucester, Lieutenant William G. O'Brien, were organized and officered. Thirty-three men of Company K served in the Signal Corps, and on the "Catskill", "Inca", "Governor Russell" and "East Boston." Company M, of Gloucester, was disbanded in 1899.

With a few exceptions the first of October saw the entire Massachusetts Naval Reserve discharged from the service, in which they had won honors in diverse and difficult fields of operation.



U. S. S. COAST DEFENSE MONITOR, "JASON," 1868.

Length, 200 feet; beam, 46 feet; draft, 11 feet, 6 inches; displacement, 1875 tons; coal capacity, 150 tons; indicated horsepower, (grass hopper) engine, 340 horsepower, at 6 knots per hour. Protection: armour belts and sides, 5 1-inch plates; turret, 11 inches. Armament: Two 16-inch smooth-bore muzzle-loading, Dahlgrens. Complement: 10 officers and 101 men, of the Brooklyn and Rochester, N. Y. Naval Reserves.



U. S. S. "AILEEN," 1868.

Was formerly owned by R. Stevens, N.Y. Designed by Gardner & Cox, built by Roach, at Chester, Pa., in 1866, of 7-8-inch steel, 140 feet over all; load line, 115 feet; beam, 20 feet; depth, 13 feet; draught, 8.75 feet; burthen, 186 tons; engines, triple expansion; coal boiler, speed, 13 knots. Armament: 1 3-pounder semi-automatic Maxim; 2 1-pounder automatic Maxims; 2 6 m.m. automatic Colt quick firing guns.



## CHAPTER X.

### DEPARTMENT OF RIFLE PRACTICE.

By Colonel James A. Frye, Inspector-General of Rifle Practice.



THE WIMBLEDON CUP

**B**UT little more than twenty-five years ago, the story of rifle practice in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia might have been told with a small expenditure of words—for at that time, to state facts briefly and yet explicitly, there was no such thing as rifle practice. And, furthermore, the conditions existing in Massachusetts were those which were to be found not only among the troops of all the other States, but even in the regular army itself.

In the quarter-century now drawing to a close, more of time, more of money, and more of systematic effort have been devoted to practical military training than in all the other peaceful years combined since the founding of the Republic, and that the results achieved have amply made good the outlay, cannot be questioned. Perhaps the most marked advance towards real service efficiency has been that made in the department of small-arms training.

Many commissioned officers now in the service can readily recall the period when the majority of good Americans, both in and out of Congress and State legislatures, clung tenaciously to the comforting delusion that ours was a nation of natural riflemen. The stories of Lexington, of Bunker Hill, of New Orleans—reinforced by brilliant, if apocryphal, anecdotes, culled from all of our wars from 1812 to 1861—did yeoman service in defeating many an honest attempt at military reform. Propositions looking towards the adoption of a national system of training in the actual use of small-arms, were met with ridicule, and then dismissed with splendid contempt. For, while there were to be found legislators and citizens willing to concede that some familiarity with marching manoeuvres and some cleverness at the manual of arms might be essential to the making of the soldier, there were few or none prepared to admit that skill in marksmanship was not an inherent quality—a national characteristic, which, without further worry or thought, might be reckoned as a ready asset in our military stock-taking.

Unfortunately for the theories of the people and their law-makers, it still remained a fact that marksmen are made rather than born. Skill with arms ever has been, and ever will be, an acquirement, and not an inheritance. While it indisputably is true that the Americans, as a nation, always have possessed the military instinct, it is yet equally true that blind reliance on this martial spirit, coupled with an utter disregard for that systematic training which alone could make it effective, has on more than one occasion led the way perilously near to disaster. We are wont, with an optimism thoroughly American, to forget our blunders. In consulting the records of the past, we rapidly turn the pages which tell the story of national negligence, and linger over those which appeal to our vanity by their recital of our ultimate—though too dearly bought—successes. And to this trait must be ascribed our neglect, for nearly a century, to give anything like intelligent attention, to field-firing with service weapons.

The twin stock assertions of the politician—that ours was a nation of marksmen, and that the rifle was the national arm—did untold harm in the decades immediately preceding and following the Civil War. It is true that in the early days, when anti-expansionists were unknown, when the frontier slowly but surely was being pushed westward by our fighting pioneers, and when our armed strength alone prevented aggression from beyond the seas, there were few able-bodied citizens incapable of using firearms with effect. The flint-lock and powder-horn then hung in the place of honor in every dwelling: the bullet-mould was an indispensable article of household furniture. But by the middle of the present century these primitive conditions had passed away forever. Almost unconsciously, we had become a nation of city-dwellers, and even the farming population—with the passing of the Indian and the disappearance of big game—had lost its early skill in shooting.

The belief that the rifle was the American national arm has been based, until recent years, upon a most unsubstantial foundation. The traditionary deeds of Morgan's riflemen in the Revolution, of Jackson's at New Orleans, and of the innumerable scouts and hunters who won fame in the early frontier days—all have contributed towards strengthening this long-cherished, popular delusion. But the stubborn fact remains that, up to 1861, in every war fought on this continent, the troops of the line, by whom must be decided the final issue of any war, have been armed simply and solely with the smooth-bore musket. From 1635 until 1830—when the percussion cap and lock were adopted—the troops of the colonies, and later of the Republic, were sent into the field with the cumbersome flint-lock, and it was not until 1854, well after the close of the Mexican War, that the issue of muzzle-loading rifles to the regular army was begun. The well-known Springfield breech-loading rifle dates from



1868, while the most recent weapon, the Krag-Jorgenson, was issued in 1895.

At the time of the Civil War, we, indeed, approached the condition of a nation of riflemen; for in the two contending armies over three millions of men found themselves called upon to handle this weapon. But that we developed into a nation of marksmen in this stern schooling may well be doubted. It has been too readily forgotten that regiment after regiment of raw troops was rushed headlong to the front, to obtain its first experience with its untried weapons in the turmoil and stress of action. That lines of battle not infrequently became engaged at ranges of one hundred yards, and in many instances at even closer quarters, is a



*Photo. by J. Ernest Clements.*

AT THE WALNUT HILL RANGE, 1899.

matter of official record; that utter annihilation of one or the other of the contending forces failed to result from fighting under such conditions, must afford illuminating testimony to the utter lack of marksmanship on the part of the combatants. The struggle of 1861-65—the most stubborn and bloody of modern times—was fought to its bitter conclusion by men practically devoid of musketry training, and the Union owes its preservation to the grim determination of its defenders, rather than to their efficiency as riflemen.

With the close of the Rebellion the nation threw aside its arms and devoted all its energies to the repair of the havoc wrought by four

long years of fighting. It was enough that the cause of the Union had triumphed: the lessons learned in the rough school of experience were speedily forgotten. Here and there patriotic men were found to protest against the general disregard for things military; but the mass of the people, through their representatives in the legislative bodies, impatiently refused to concern themselves with measures looking towards preparation for war in times of peace.

Meanwhile England—though at peace with all the world—had been quietly strengthening her national defense. Slowly but systematically her magnificent volunteer establishment had been organized and trained as a reserve for the regular army, and in 1860—in recognition of the axiom that “the man who cannot shoot is useless, and an encumbrance to his battalion”—the National Rifle Association of Great Britain was

formed, for the encouragement and direction of volunteer rifle practice, and the famous range at Wimbledon was dedicated. It was not until thirteen years later that the example set by England was to be followed in this country.

In 1871, after long agitation of the matter, the leading military authorities of New York, aided by civilian riflemen, incorporated the National Rifle Association, and in 1873 the range at Creedmoor, Long Island, was thrown open. From this time dates the era of systematic rifle instruction in America. The regular army, up to this time, had paid no attention whatever to this essential part of the soldier's training, and it is worthy of note that to militiamen and civilians is due the credit



*Photo, by J. Ernest Clements.*

WALNUT HILL RANGE. OFF HAND, "HIP REST."

for the improved conditions at once apparent in the military establishment. A paragraph from an order by General Ord, of the regular army, issued in 1873, furnishes a grim commentary on the methods in vogue at

the time:—"Post commanders will direct the issue of any lumber which may be needed for targets. Recent campaigns against Indians have demonstrated that it is better to expend lumber for targets than for coffins."

In 1875, following the lead of New York, the Massachusetts Rifle Association, which is still in a flourishing condition, was organized by a number of civilians interested in the sport, and in the same year the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia Rifle Association was formed by a body of officers who had at heart the advancement of the service. The Commonwealth had as yet refused to recognize rifle practice as essential, although on the purchase of the camp reservation at Framingham, in 1873, Adjutant-General Cunningham had written:—"I earnestly recommend the building of target signals and bulkheads, and making all necessary preparations for successful target practice; that officers and men of the active militia be allowed transportation to

and from the grounds, once each year, for the purpose of target practice; also that the Quartermaster-General be authorized to issue a reasonable amount of ammunition, to be expended in such target practice."

The first militia competition held in the State was shot at South Framingham, under the auspices of the M. V. M. R. A., on November 17, 1875. At this time forty-one of the sixty companies of infantry in the militia establishment were armed with the Springfield muzzle-loading rifle, calibre .58, while the remainder had the Peabody breech-loading rifle, calibre .43. Twenty-three company teams, eighteen of which shot with the Peabody, entered this match. Each team consisted of five men, firing five shots, at 200 yards, off-hand, giving a possible team total of 125. The trophy was won by Company C, First Infantry, on a score of 81 points, or but 64 per cent of the possible aggregate.



*Photo, by J. E. Clements.*

WALNUT HILL RANGE. OFF HAND, "FULL ARM."

In 1876 began the issue of the Springfield breech-loading rifle, calibre .45, and by the following year the infantry was fully equipped with this arm. Annual competitions were held under the direction of the M. V. M. R. A. until 1880, when the State assumed the responsibility, and the association, having effected its purpose, went out of existence. To the officers by whose enthusiasm the State system of rifle practice was inaugurated, too much credit cannot be given; their unselfish work has borne fruit in the unquestioned rifle efficiency of the Massachusetts troops of to-day.

As a matter of record, the statistics of the annual State competitions are given below, from that of 1875, when the winning team of five men scored but 64 per cent. of the possible total, to that of 1899, when the trophy was won by a regimental team of fifteen men, attaining 87 per cent. of the possible score, at two ranges. In 1898, the First Heavy Artillery, Second, Fifth, Sixth, Eighth and Ninth Infantry, with the Naval Brigade, being in the volunteer service of the United States for the Spanish-American War, no competition was held. Since 1882, the regiment or battalion represented by the winning team, has carried the "Tri-Color" on its standard during the ensuing year.

1875. — Company teams of five men, firing five shots each at 200 yards. Twenty-three teams competing. Won by Company C, First Infantry. Score, 81 points out of a possible 125.

1876. — Same conditions as in 1875. Nineteen teams competing. Won by Company A, First Corps Cadets. Score, 85 points.

1877. — Same conditions as in 1875. Twenty-two teams competing. Won by Company A, Fifth Infantry. Score, 80 points.

1878. — Same conditions as in 1875. Seventeen teams competing. Won by Company D, First Corps Cadets. Score, 87 points.

1879. — Same conditions as in 1875. Nine teams competing. Won by Company A, Sixth Infantry. Score, 103 points.

1880. — Massachusetts Volunteer Militia Rifle Association relieved of supervision, and competition held under State orders. Company teams of five men, firing ten shots each at 200 yards. Four teams competing. Won by Company D, First Infantry. Score, 189 points out of a possible 250.

1881. — Same conditions as in 1880. Company D, First Infantry, was the only command complying with orders as to preliminary practice, and was awarded the prize without competition.

1882. — Same conditions as in 1880. Fifteen teams competing. Won by Company D, First Infantry. Score, 190 points. In this competition for the first time the "Tri-Color" was awarded to the regiment or battalion having the winning team.

1883. — Same conditions as in 1880. Thirty-seven teams competing. Won by Company G, Second Infantry. Score, 196 points.

1884.—Company teams of seven men, firing seven shots each at 200 yards. Fifty-four teams competing. Won by Company E, First Infantry. Score, 176 points out of a possible 245.

1885.—Same conditions as in 1884. Fifty-six teams competing. Won by Company D, First Infantry. Score, 184 points.

1886.—Same conditions as in 1884. Sixty-six teams competing. Won by Company D, First Corps Cadets. Score, 193 points.

1887.—Same conditions as in 1884. Sixty-six teams competing. Won by Company B, Second Infantry. Score, 197 points.

1888.—Same conditions as in 1884. Seventy-eight teams competing. Won by Company B, Second Infantry. Score 200 points.

1889.—Same conditions as in 1884. Seventy-four teams competing. Won by Company A, Sixth Infantry. Score, 201 points.

1890.—Regimental or battalion teams of twelve men, firing ten shots each at 200 yards. From this year the State General Competition was contested by nine teams, representing the six regiments of the line, the two Corps of Cadets, and the Naval Brigade. Company teams shot their matches in special regimental and battalion competitions. Won by the Second Infantry. Score, 492 points out of a possible 600.

1891.—Regimental and battalion teams of twelve men, firing seven shots each at 200 and 500 yards. Won by the Second Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 340 points out of a possible 420; at 500 yards, 328 points out of a possible 420; aggregate, 668 points out of a possible 840.

1892.—Same conditions as in 1891. Won by First Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 341 points; at 500 yards, 337 points; aggregate, 678 points.

1893.—Same conditions as in 1891. Won by Sixth Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 329 points; at 500 yards, 349 points; aggregate 678 points.

1894.—Same conditions as in 1891. Won by First Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 353 points; at 500 yards, 352 points; aggregate, 705 points.

1895.—Regimental and battalion teams of fifteen men, firing ten shots each at 200 and 500 yards. Won by Sixth Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 647 points out of a possible 750; at 500 yards, 604 points out of a possible 750; aggregate, 1251 points out of a possible 1500.

1896.—Same conditions as in 1895. Won by Sixth Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 643 points; at 500 yards, 630 points; aggregate score, 1273 points.

1897.—Same conditions as in 1895. Won by Fifth Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 649 points; at 500 yards, 659 points; aggregate 1308 points.

1898.—State General Competition abandoned owing to absence of Massachusetts troops in volunteer service of United States.

1899.—Same conditions as in 1895. Won by First Heavy Artillery, formerly First Infantry. Score at 200 yards, 659 points; at 500 yards, 645 points; aggregate, 1304 points.

It must not for an instant be thought that match-firing has been the sole end of rifle practice in the Massachusetts militia. Far from this, it has simply been regarded as the means for stimulating the interest of individuals in the work in hand. The real labor of the department has been devoted to the qualifying of the men in the ranks for effective shooting under field conditions, and not to the development of a mere handful of expert shots. As early as 1880, marksmanship badges were issued for scores made under easy conditions, and since that year the efforts to make efficient every officer and man of the combatant arms of the service have never slackened.

The standards for marksmanship have varied from year to year, and, since they are necessary to an intelligent study of the progress made, they are given below.

1880-82—One score of 17 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards.

1883—First Class: One score of 20 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards; one score of 17 out of a possible 25, at 300 yards; one score of 17 out of a possible 25, at 500 yards. Second class: One score of 20 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards. Third class: One score of 17 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards.

1884-85—First Class: One score of 20 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards; one score of 20 out of a possible 25, at 300 yards; one score of 20



*Photo, by J. Ernest Clements.*

WALNUT HILL RANGE. LONG DISTANCE, REGULAR PRONE POSITION.

out of a possible 25, at 500 yards. Second and third classes, unchanged.

1886-89—Sharpshooter: One score of 43 out of a possible 50, at

500 yards; one score of 43 out of a possible 50, at 600 yards; one score of 43 out of a possible 50, at 800 yards. First class. One score of 40 out of a possible 50, at 200 yards; one score of 40 out of a possible 50, at 500 yards. Second and third classes, unchanged.

1890—Distinguished Marksman: A sharpshooter of record, who has won an individual prize in any State auspices, has been mentioned in orders as winning "State Team," or the State, under al competition. No requirements for been made since Sharpshooter: 22 out of a possible three scores of 22 25, at 500 yards; out of a possible First class: Three a possible 25, at scores of 21 out of 500 yards. Second of 18 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards. Third class: Three scores of 16 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards.



THE HILTON TROPHY.  
Won by the Massachusetts Militia, 1886-7-8-9.

1891-96—Sharpshooter: Two scores of 22 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards; two scores of 24 out of a possible 25, at 500 yards; two scores of 23 out of a possible 25, at 600 yards. First class: Two scores of 21 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards; two scores of 21 out of a possible 25, at 500 yards. Second class: Two scores of 18 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards. Third class: Two scores of 15 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards.

1897-98—Sharpshooter: Two scores of 22 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards; two scores of 23 out of a possible 25, at 500 yards; two scores of 23 out of a possible 25, at 600 yards. First, second, and third classes, unchanged.

1899—Sharpshooter: Two scores of 22 out of a possible 25, at 200 yards; two scores of 23 out of a possible 25, at 500 yards; two scores of 21 out of a possible 25, at 600 yards. First, second, and third classes, unchanged.

While minor alterations have been made from time to time in the conditions governing qualifications, the policy by which the department has been guided has never varied. For nearly a quarter of a century the

officers charged with its administration have labored untiringly to encourage the rank and file of the militia, not only in acquiring a serviceable familiarity with the rifle and carbine, but also in inciting a genuine liking for practice with these weapons. Through their efforts, legislation has been procured compelling cities and towns wherein troops are stationed to provide proper facilities for range practice; ample provision has been made for the issue of marksmanship decorations, to encourage qualifications; grants of money have been made for rifle efficiency; and ammunition and transportation have been provided to further the work. Since 1894, the annual State appropriation for the expenses of the department has been not less than \$15,000—and even this large sum at times has been found inadequate for the work in hand.

And that this incessant effort has not been in vain, becomes evident on a glance at the results obtained. The following table will show the steady growth of the militia in rifle efficiency, from 1880, when decorations first were issued for qualifications, until 1897—the latest year of routine work. It should be borne in mind that the column showing the total active strength, includes not only the infantry, cavalry, and naval brigade men, but also the light artillery, ambulance and signal corps, and others not required to qualify with small-arms. In view of the results attained in recent years, there need be no wonder that in the late war with Spain the authorities of Massachusetts felt nothing but pride in sending her troops into the service of the General Government.

YEAR.	ACTIVE STRENGTH.	QUALIFIED MARKSMEN.	MARKSMANSHIP PERCENTAGE.
1880	4,166	56	1.3
1881	4,135	141	3.4
1882	4,104	288	7.0
1883	3,892	545	14.0
1884	4,187	795	18.9
1885	4,438	1,058	23.8
1886	4,360	1,449	33.2
1887	4,816	1,897	39.4
1888	5,159	2,336	45.2
1889	5,131	2,610	50.8
1890	5,875	2,459	41.8
1891	5,329	2,828	53.0
1892	5,899	3,401	57.6
1893	6,018	4,397	73.0
1894	6,243	5,147	82.4
1895	5,669	4,661	82.2
1896	6,046	4,894	80.9
1897	6,152	5,279	85.8
1898	Massachusetts troops in volunteer service of U. S.		

Aside from the excellent showing made in the matches shot under State auspices, many brilliant successes have been scored by military teams from Massachusetts on ranges outside the Commonwealth. For seven years the militia sent teams to compete for the "Inter-State" cham-



pionship at Creedmoor, winning fifth position in 1878, with a score of 722 points; third in 1879, score 928; second in 1885, score 959; and the coveted first place in 1886, 1887, 1888, and 1889, with the splendid scores of 1,024, 1,014, 1,047, and 1,045 points respectively. These victories brought, temporarily, into the custody of the State the beautiful bronze trophy known to all riflemen as the "Soldier of Marathon."

From 1886 to 1889, the Hilton Challenge Trophy, emblematic of the military shooting supremacy of the world, was handsomely won by the Massachusetts team, with the record-breaking scores of 1,044, 1,096, 1,080, and 1,057 points. Since the latter year, however, no teams have competed for the trophy under State orders, owing to a feeling that lack of interest on the part of other countries, as well as among our own States, had robbed the contest of its original significance.

In 1887 a team of ten officers and men competed at Chicago, defeating teams from the regular army and many of the Western States. In 1889 a carefully selected team, under command of the late Major J. P. Frost, A. I. G. R. P., invaded England and defeated the representatives of the Honorable Artillery Company of London, the Royal Berkshire Regiment, the London Rifle Brigade, the Sussex County Volunteers, and the South London Rifle Association. The story of this peaceful campaign, which did much to promote good fellowship between the riflemen of the two countries, has been told at length in another part of this volume.

It is impossible to give in detail the victories won by individual officers and men of the militia, but it should be said that the men from



*Photo, by J. Ernest Clements.*

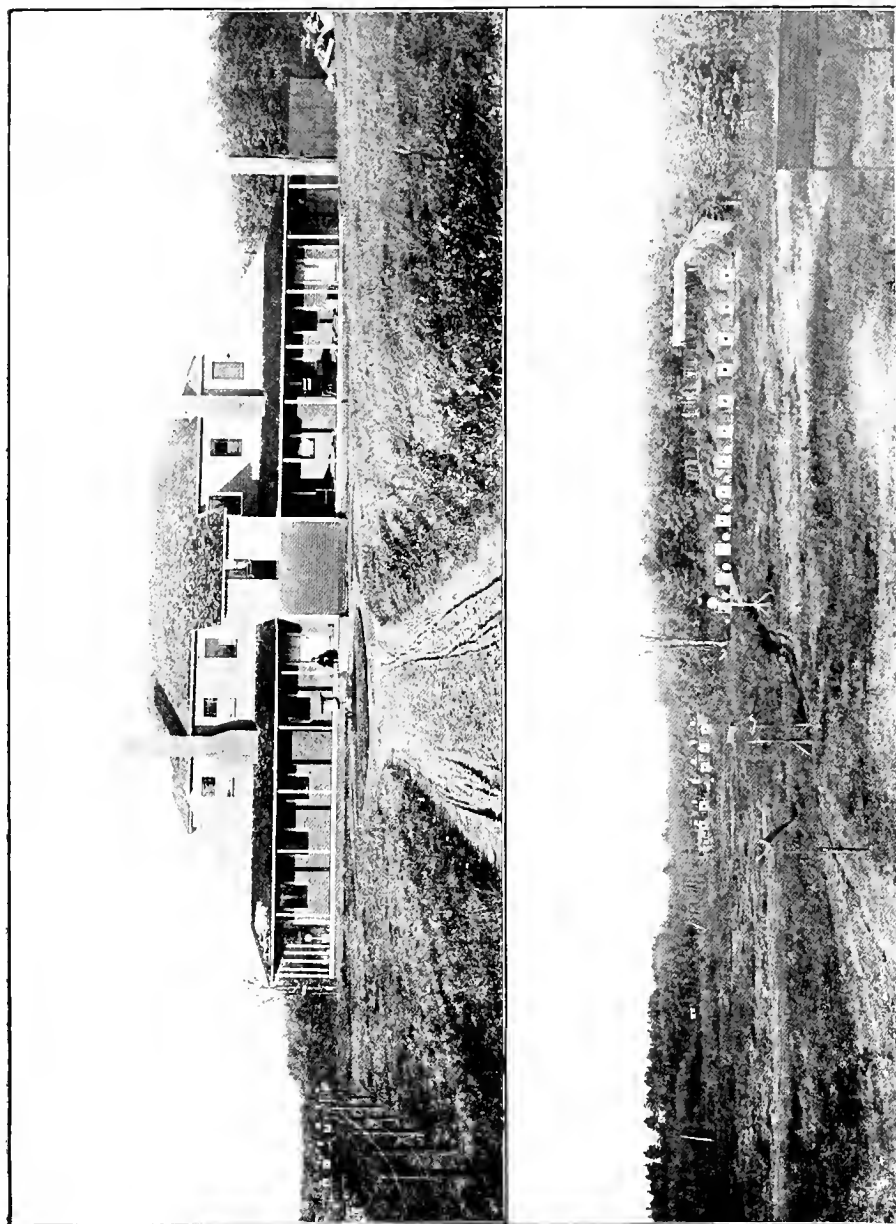
WALNUT HILL RANGE. LONG DISTANCE, "TEXAS GRIP."

Massachusetts have always been found among the prize winners at every meeting of importance held during the last twenty years. In 1882, Major C. W. Hinman—then private in the First Infantry—shot on the American team which met Sir Henry Halford's British riflemen at Creedmoor, and in the following year, with Privates Rabbeth, First Infantry, and Bull, Second Infantry, he accompanied the American team to shoot the return match at Wimbledon. In 1896, at the Olympic Games at Athens, the world's military revolver championship was won by Lieutenant J. B. Paine, I. R. P., First Infantry, while Lieutenant Sumner Paine, of the same regiment, won the "any revolver" championship at this historic meeting.

The officers and men who have upheld the honor of Massachusetts at the Creedmoor contests, are the following: Sergeant J. P. Andrews, First Infantry; Private F. D. Bartlett, First Cadets; Lieutenant L. H. Bateman, Fifth Infantry; Colonel M. Beal, Sixth Infantry; Private A. L. Brackett, First Infantry; Private F. C. Brownell, First Infantry; Private F. R. Bull, Second Infantry; Private M. W. Bull, Second Infantry; Lieutenant S. S. Bumstead, Second Infantry; Private M. Daulton, First Infantry; Private C. S. Dole, First Cadets; Sergeant G. Doyle, Second Infantry; Private L. Eddy, First Infantry; Lieutenant R. B. Edes, Fifth Infantry; Corporal G. E. Everett, First Infantry; Private L. T. Farnsworth, Second Infantry; Private W. M. Farrow, Second Infantry; Private C. C. Foster, First Cadets; Major J. P. Frost, A. I. G. R. P.; Private H. C. Gardner, First Infantry; Sergeant I. P. Gragg, First Infantry; Private L. Grant, First Cadets; Major C. W. Hinman, A. I. G. R. P.; Major E. Hobbs, Second Cadets; Sergeant L. L. Hubbard, First Infantry; Corporal W. D. Huddleson, First Infantry; Lieutenant W. G. Hussey, Eighth Infantry; Sergeant W. C. Johnston, Second Brigade; Corporal W. W. Kellett, Second Cadets; Corporal W. M. Lithgow, First Infantry; Sergeant W. M. Merrill, Second Brigade; Lieutenant W. H. Merritt, Second Cadets; Captain J. B. Osborn, First Brigade; Sergeant C. A. Parker, First Cadets; Private F. W. Perkins, Eighth Infantry; Private N. A. Putnam, First Infantry; Lieutenant H. T. Rockwell, First Infantry; Private E. C. Spofford, Second Cadets; Sergeant C. C. Wemyss, Fifth Infantry; Private A. C. White, Second Infantry; Lieutenant H. White, First Infantry; Private L. M. Wiswell, Fifth Infantry. It is worthy of note that on the Creedmoor team for 1878 was detailed, as substitute, Private William E. Russell, Company D, First Corps of Cadets, who later was destined to become Governor of Massachusetts and Commander-in-Chief of its militia.

Since 1890\* the following marksmen have been mentioned in orders for their performances at the State General Competitions, such mention

\* Up to and including 1898.



*Photo by J. E. Clements.*

STATE RIFLE RANGE, WALNUT HILL, MASS.



carrying with it eligibility to positions on the "State Team," annually placed on record: Gunner's Mate G. T. Adams, Naval Brigade; Lieutenant F. A. Bardwell, Second Infantry; Lieutenant T. D. Barroll, Eighth Infantry; Sergeant E. E. Baudoin, First Infantry; Private W. H. Bean, Second Cadets; Sergeant J. W. Blake, First Infantry; Lieutenant J. Bordman, Jr., First Infantry; Private G. G. Bradford, First Cadets; Corporal T. H. Bradley, First Infantry; Sergeant D. M. Bruce, Second Cadets; Lieutenant M. W. Bull, Second Infantry; Lieutenant S. S. Bumstead, Second Infantry; Private J. C. Cadigan, Second Infantry; Private H. N. Conn, First Cadets; Sergeant W. W. Cooke, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant G. P. Cooley, First Infantry; Lieutenant H. S. Crossman, Naval Brigade; Private C. Delaney, Second Infantry; Private B. Dimock, Eighth Infantry; Private G. F. Draper, Eighth Infantry; Private G. Durward, Fifth Infantry; Lieutenant R. B. Edes, Fifth Infantry; Lieutenant F. B. Felton, Second Infantry; Sergeant F. T. Fischer, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant J. L. Gibbs, First Infantry; Lieutenant E. J. Gihon, Sixth Infantry; Seaman F. C. Graves, Naval Brigade; Sergeant F. E. Gray, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant C. E. Hamilton, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant F. G. Harden, Eighth Infantry; Musician A. E. Harlow, First Infantry; Lieutenant H. O. Hicks, Second Infantry; Sergeant N. Hill, Jr., Second Cadets; Lieutenant C. T. Hilliker, Eighth Infantry; Private C. A. Hinds, Second Infantry; Major C. W. Hinman, First Brigade; Private C. E. Horton, Sixth Infantry; Corporal R. Howard, Sixth Infantry; Color Sergeant W. D. Huddleson, First Infantry; Sergeant A. F. Hull, Second Cadets; Private W. G. Hussey, Second Cadets; Private W. B. Jackson, Fifth Infantry; Private H. Johnson, Second Infantry; Musician J. H. Keough, Sixth Infantry; Musician P. S. Killam, Sixth Infantry; Private P. A. Mansfield, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant T. McCarthy, Fifth Infantry; Lieutenant W. H. Merritt, Second Cadets; Sergeant J. J. Monahan, Troop F, Cavalry; Captain M. E. Morris, Ninth Infantry; Private G. H. Nason, Fifth Infantry; Private R. M. Neidel, Second Infantry; Captain C. P. Nutter, First Infantry; Lieutenant J. B. Paine, First Infantry; Sergeant-Major V. C. Pond, First Cadets; Private J. P. Reardon, Ninth Infantry; Coxswain J. B. Richards, Naval Brigade; Sergeant W. S. Ripley, Signal Corps, First Brigade; Paymaster Sergeant G. R. Russell, First Infantry; Sergeant H. J. Smith, Second Infantry; Private S. G. Smith, Fifth Infantry; Major F. G. Southmayd, Second Infantry; Sergeant E. T. Stephens, Second Infantry; Captain W. E. Sweetser, Sixth Infantry; Sergeant G. E. Symonds, Second Cadets; Corporal G. L. Tabbut, Sixth Infantry; Private J. D. Upton, First Cadets; Sergeant-Major H. C. Wells, First Cadets; Captain R. A. Whipple, Second Infantry; Sergeant G. E. Worthen, Second Cadets; Private G. E. Worthen, Jr., Second Cadets.

The following officers and men have won ratings as Distinguished

Marksmen since that grade was instituted in 1890. The roll includes nearly all the winners of individual decorations during that period:— Private W. T. Abbott, Eighth Infantry; Gunner's Mate G. T. Adams, Naval Brigade; Private T. Anderton, First Heavy Artillery; Captain C. J. Baker, Second Cadets; Lieutenant F. A. Bardwell, Second Infantry; Private T. D. Barroll, First Cadets; Sergeant O. B. Battles, First Infantry; Sergeant E. E. Baudoin, First Infantry; Captain W. H. Bean, Sixth Infantry; Major G. H. Benyon, Fifth Infantry; Private E. F. Bergholtz, Second Cadets; Private J. W. Blake, First Infantry; Lieutenant J. Bordman, Jr., First Infantry; Corporal R. H. Booth, First Infantry; Private S. Bowker, Ninth Infantry; Private G. G. Bradford, First Cadets; Corporal T. H. Bradley, First Infantry; Lieutenant J. Breen, Ninth Infantry; Sergeant D. M. Bruce, Second Cadets; Sergeant M. W. Bull, First Brigade; Lieutenant S. S. Bumstead, Second Infantry; Private J. E. Burns, Sixth Infantry; Private J. C. Cadigan, Second Infantry; Private W. Carrl, Troop F, Cavalry; Colonel W. L. Chase, I. G. R. P.; Major D. Clark, Second Infantry; Private H. N. Conn, First Cadets; Trooper C. F. Cook, First Cavalry; Corporal W. E. Cook, First Heavy Artillery; Sergeant W. W. Cooke, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant G. P. Cooley, First Infantry; Sergeant F. M. Crittenden, Second Infantry; Lieutenant H. S. Crossman, Naval Brigade; Captain F. C. Damon, Eighth Infantry; Private A. Davis, Sixth Infantry; Private C. Delaney, Second Infantry; Private W. P. Dickson, Fifth Infantry; Private B. Dimock, Eighth Infantry; Private G. F. Draper, Eighth Infantry; Private G. Durward, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant R. B. Edes, Fifth Infantry; Capt. C. N. Edgell, Second Infantry; Private S. D. Edwards, Second Cadets; Private E. C. B. Erickson, Fifth Infantry; Corporal G. Faber, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant C. W. Facey, Fifth Infantry; Lieutenant F. B. Felton, Second Infantry; Sergeant L. E. Felton, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant F. T. Fischer, Sixth Infantry; Major C. C. Foster, Fifth Infantry; Private W. M. Foster, Sixth Infantry; Private C. Esterbrook, Ninth Infantry; Private W. F. Fowle, Fifth Infantry; Major J. P. Frost, Second Brigade; Lieutenant J. A. Frye, First Infantry; Corporal P. D. Gambell, Fifth Infantry; Private W. C. Gannon, Sixth Infantry; Corporal J. L. Gibbs, First Infantry; Private C. E. Gillette, First Infantry; Lieutenant E. J. Gihon, Sixth Infantry; Seaman F. C. Graves, Naval Brigade; Sergeant F. E. Gray, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant C. E. Hamilton, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant O. D. Hapgood, Second Infantry; Sergeant F. G. Harden, Eighth Infantry; Musician A. E. Harlow, First Infantry; Private J. P. Hickey, Second Cadets; Lieutenant H. O. Hicks, Second Infantry; Sergeant M. S. Higgins, Eighth Infantry; Sergeant N. Hill, Jr., Second Cadets; Lieutenant C. T. Hilliker, Eighth Infantry; Corporal S. A. Hinekey, Eighth Infantry; Private C. A. Hinds, Second Infantry; Major C. W. Hinman, First Brigade; Private C. E. Horton, Sixth Infantry; Pri-

vate R. Howard, Sixth Infantry; Corporal W. D. Huddleson, First Infantry; Sergeant A. F. Hull, Second Cadets; Lieutenant W. G. Hussey, Eighth Infantry; Corporal W. B. Jackson, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant C. J. Jeffers, Eighth Infantry; Private A. D. Jefferson, Second Infantry; Private H. Johnson, Second Infantry; Private J. M. Johnson, Second Infantry; Sergeant W. C. Johnson, Jr., Second Brigade; Captain J. H. Joubert, Ninth Infantry; Private J. H. Keough, Sixth Infantry; Corporal E. H. Keyes, Troop F, Cavalry; Private P. S. Killam, Sixth Infantry; Captain S. T. Kirk, Eighth Infantry; Corporal J. V. Lawler, Fifth Infantry; Private P. A. Mansfield, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant T. McCarthy, Fifth Infantry; Captain H. McDonald, Second Infantry; Sergeant W. M. Merrill, Second Brigade; Lieutenant W. H. Merritt, Second Cadets; Sergeant C. W. Mills, Sixth Infantry; Sergeant J. J. Monahan, Troop F, Cavalry; Captain M. E. Morris, Ninth Infantry; Lieutenant D. J. Moynihan, Second Infantry; Private G. H. Nason, Fifth Infantry; Private R. M. Neidel, Second Infantry; Lieutenant C. P. Nutter, First Infantry; Lieutenant E. C. Osgood, Fifth Infantry; Lieutenant J. B. Paine, First Infantry; Sergeant C. A. Parker, First Cadets; Trooper L. J. Parkhurst, Troop F, Cavalry; Private L. W. Patten, Fifth Infantry; Seaman A. J. Perkins, Naval Brigade; Corporal F. W. Pierce, Eighth Infantry; Sergeant Major V. C. Pond, First Cadets; Private J. P. Reardon, Ninth Infantry; Coxswain J. B. Richards, Naval Brigade; Lieutenant C. A. Richardson, Fifth Infantry; Colonel H. T. Rockwell, I. G. R. P.; Captain R. W. Ropes, Second Cadets; Sergeant C. R. Russell, First Infantry; Private W. C. Sanborn, Second Cadets; Private A. R. Schultze, First Heavy Artillery; Private F. W. Scott, Fifth Infantry; Corporal A. R. Sedgerly, Sixth Infantry; Sergeant A. H. Sisson, Eighth Infantry; Captain E. H. Shaw, Troop F, Cavalry; Seaman E. M. Slocum, Naval Brigade; Private F. P. Smith, First Cadets; Sergeant H. J. Smith, Second Infantry; Private S. G. Smith, Fifth Infantry; Sergeant W. E. Smith, Second Cadets; Major F. G. Southmayd, Second Infantry; Sergeant E. T. Stephens, Second Infantry; Lieutenant J. A. Sterling, Second Infantry; Corporal E. W. Sweetser, Troop F, Cavalry; Sergeant W. E. Sweetser, Sixth Infantry; Sergeant G. E. Symonds, Second Cadets, Corporal G. L. Tabbut, Sixth Infantry; Sergeant W. N. Tolman, Signal Corps, First Brigade; Sergeant A. T. Tornrose, First Infantry; Private J. D. Upton, First Cadets; Sergeant Major H. C. Wells, First Cadets; Captain C. Williamson, First Infantry; Captain R. A. Whipple, Second Infantry; Lieutenant H. W. Whitten, Eighth Infantry; Captain H. E. Whiting, Sixth Infantry; Lieutenant G. E. Worthen, Sixth Infantry; Private G. E. Worthen, Jr., Second Cadets.

As an officially recognized bureau of the State government, the department of rifle practice in Massachusetts has had an existence of but fifteen years, but during that short period its record has been most hon-

orable. Since 1884, over twelve thousand marksmen, trained under its supervision, have served their term in the militia, and have been discharged, to return to civil life. It is safe to assert that to-day, aside from the active militia, there exists in the State a reserve of riflemen, still of military age, of over eight thousand effectives. The value of this tremendous military factor has never received full appreciation. That it has more than repaid the outlay required in its creation cannot be questioned.

Since the organization of the department, it has had but five regularly commissioned chiefs. In 1884, Col. Horace T. Rockwell, then assistant inspector-general, was assigned to duty as inspector-general of rifle practice, acting in that capacity until 1887, when the position was formally recognized, and he was commissioned accordingly. To him, more than to any other one officer, is due the markable work done in Massachusetts. His thorough knowledge of the science of rifle-shooting, joined to his executive ability and indomitable perseverance, accomplished the re-organization of the State to-day so justly prides itself. In 1890, Colonel William L. Chase was commissioned as assistant to Colonel Rockwell, and on the resignation of the latter officer, in 1891, he took his place at the head of the department. He was succeeded in 1894 by Colonel George F. Hall, who met with unqualified success in his efforts to maintain the prestige of the department. In 1897, Colonel Hall received a well-merited promotion as brigadier general, and turned over the duties of his office to Brigadier-General Curtis Guild, Jr., with whom was appointed Colonel James A. Frye, as assistant inspector-general. Under General Guild's administration all records for qualification were broken, and the outbreak of the Spanish-American War found the militia in the best of condition for field service. General Guild and Colonel Frye having resigned to accept volunteer commissions in the United States service, Colonel Richard D. Sears, assistant adjutant-general, was detailed as acting inspector-general, serving until the spring of 1899, when he was relieved by Colonel James T. Soutter, who acted as chief of the department until Colonel Frye received his appointment on July 6, 1899.



BRONZE STATUE, "THE SOLDIER OF MARATHON,"  
THE INTERSTATE TROPHY.  
Won by the Massachusetts Militia, 1886-7-8-9.



## CHAPTER XI.

### SURGICAL AND MEDICAL HISTORY OF THE M. V. M.

Brigadier-General Robert Allen Blood, Surgeon-General, M. V. M.

THE record of American military surgery as naturally divides itself into the colonial, provincial, revolutionary and national eras, as does our military and political histories, but on the whole, covers the most humane and enlightened practice of the healing art in dealing with the terrible wounds and fatal diseases incident to military operations.

The most savage peoples have had some rude knowledge of surgery and physic, and the myths of the most ancient nations embody in tradition and fable references to the great healers of a remote past. The restraining and protective bandage; the cooling embrocation, and emollient salve or plaster; the use of lancet, acupuncture, cupping, blister and cautery, and of rude anodynes, soporifics, carminatives, purges, etc., etc., are indicated in the dimmest traditions of the past, and are known to a greater or less extent among the rudest savages of the present era.

Cyrus the Great had a train of skilled surgeons and physicians, and made of conquered Babylon a great depot of surgical and medical supplies; Alexander was equally solicitous for the welfare of his troops; and the priests of Israel and Egypt went with their armies both to heal and to bless. Caesar's Commentaries tell of the careful removal of his sick and wounded legionaries to neighboring towns, when the war trumpets called to march and battle, and details the location of the hospital in the Roman camps of his day.

The Christian era did not at first particularly tend to the regular and systematic relief of large bodies of sufferers, and, however much the



BRIGADIER-GENERAL ROBERT A. BLOOD,  
Surgeon-General, M. V. M., 1896-1900.

charities of the early Christians may have done for the individual, pilgrims and soldiers must have suffered woefully at times. The term "exercitus medicus" is with difficulty traced back to the third century, and the establishment of regular hospitals at Rome is first ascribed to the Lady Fabiola, a convert of St. Jerome. Later, another lady convert, Paula, built one at Bethlem, and others were located at various points in western Europe and in Asia Minor, for the benefit of pilgrims to the Holy Sepulchre.

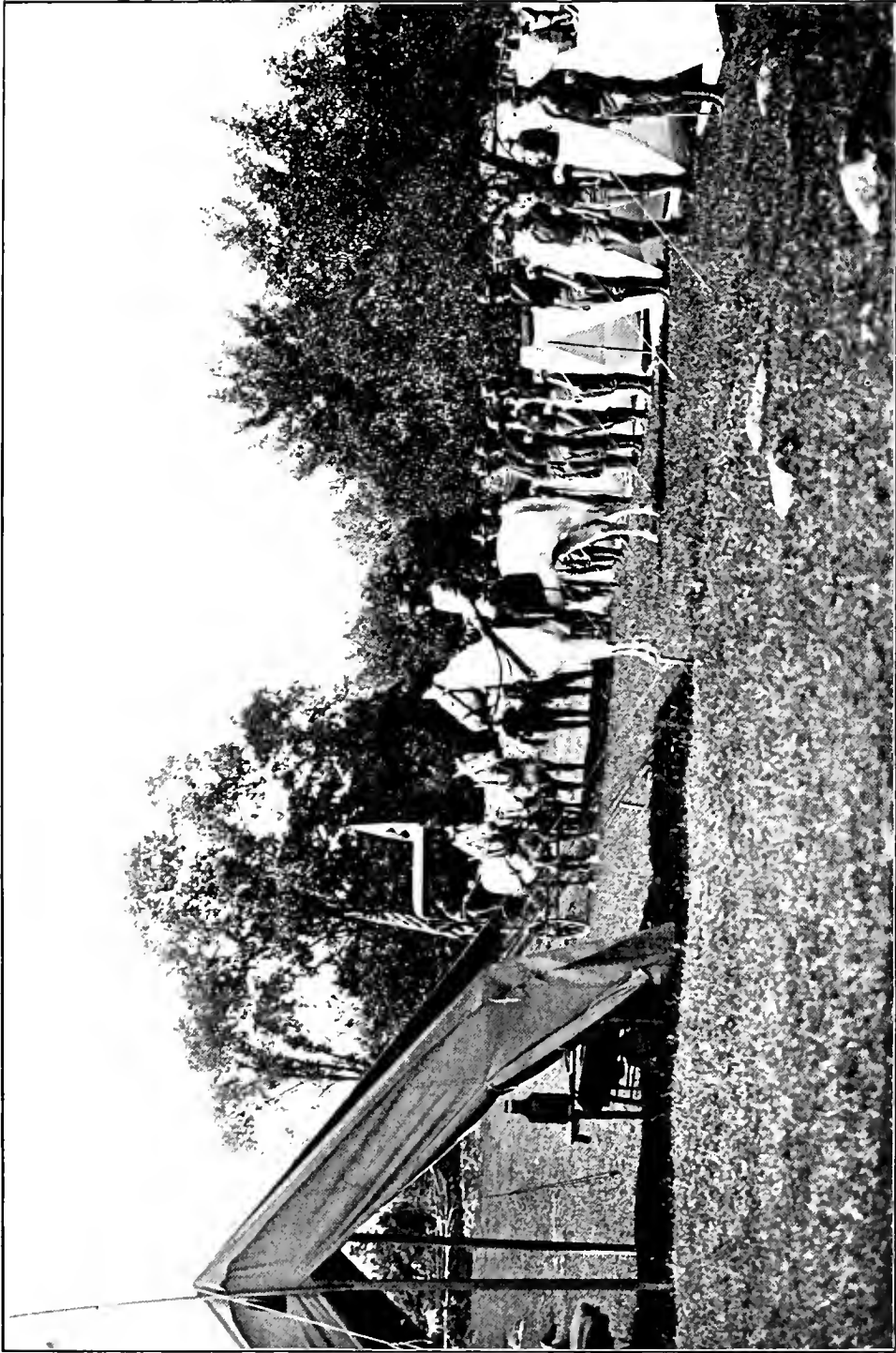
In the sixth century, the emperor, Mauritius, attached to his forces a corps of "Dispotatoi" or "drink givers" to succor and remove the wounded in battle. Their saddles were furnished with two stirrups on the left side, and probably had a kind of pad or pillion on which the patient was expected to sit sideways, as women were often carried.

In the ninth century, the emperor, Leo VI., expressly mentions these assistants in his work on "Tactics," and says that they were furnished with medicines and other aids to the wounded.

In the twelfth century the princess-historian, Anna Commena, gives some account of the medical service as established by her father Alexis Commenus; head of the later Greek and Roman empire. His own knights, like those of the west and north of Europe, seem to have assumed most of the care of their wounded followers and comrades, and to have prided themselves much on their skill in compounding vulnerary salves, elixirs, balsams, etc. This practice is satirized by Cervantes in *Don Quixote*, and is again and again depicted in the romances of knight-errantry. Unholy and holy spells, exorcisms and ceremonies abounded, and even the careful cleansing, anointing and cooling of the weapon with which the wound was inflicted was considered of great efficacy, and probably did allow wounds to heal by first intention, which would have been fatal if treated according to the prevailing practice.

There is still extant a curious letter from Sir Kenelm Digby to Governor Winthrop, alluding to his recent experiments with this sympathetic mode of treatment, and the use of a solution of vitriol, (sulphate of iron) as the best embrocation.

In the fifteenth century, the military surgeon had become a person of some note, was duly recognized as a non-combatant, and yet was sometimes obliged to furnish armed men and allowed to share in the proceeds of lawful plunder and the ransom of prisoners. Thus Nicholas Colnet, the field surgeon of King Henry V. of England, received a salary of forty marks yearly, with a share in all plunder, but if the latter exceeded twenty pounds yearly, one-third of the surplus was to go to his majesty. He was also obliged to furnish a guard of three archers, and served but one year under these conditions. Merstede, who succeeded him, and was made chief of twelve assistant surgeons, received thirty-six pounds per



*Photo by T. E. Harr.*

FIELD HOSPITAL AND AMBULANCE CORPS, 1900. FIELD MANOEUVRES, M. V. M., SOUTH FRAMINGHAM, MASS.



annum and was furnished a guard of three archers, for whose subsistence he was allowed twelve pennies daily.

Under Queen Elizabeth the medical service was at a low ebb. The surgeon received the same pay and allowances as the sergeant, drummer and fifer, viz; "five shillings weekly with an allowance of two shillings weekly for apparel." For years thereafter, the military surgeon and "ship's doctor" were poorly paid and hard-worked, besides being considered as scarcely entitled to be treated as "gentlemen and soldiers."

The settlement of New England took place at a time when the use of the bow, cross-bow, pike, sword, war-axe and defensive armor was still advocated by many military men, though rapidly being discredited by the adoption of fire-arms. The terrible wounds inflicted by the latter upon the wealthy possessors of costly armor, undoubtedly inured to the increased prestige and improvement of the medical service.

The horror and fear inspired in the hearts of the hardiest warriors, when they were first exposed to field artillery and realized the new conditions of warfare, is well expressed in Monro's "Account of the Worthy Scots Regiment, called McKay's Regiment, levied in August, 1626;" six years later than the landing at Plymouth.

"It is thought the invention of cannon was found at Nuremberg, for the ruin of man; being at first, for a long time, used for battering down of walls and cities, and for counter-batteries, till at last they were used in the field to break the squadrons and battailes of horse and foote: some carrying pieces called Spingardes, of four foote and a half long, that shot manie bulletts at once no bigger than walnuts; and how soon the trumpets did sound, the enemy were thundered on with these as with showers of hailstones, so that the enemie were cruelly affrighted with them, men of valor being suddenly taken away who before were wonted to fight valiently and long with sworde and lance; more for ye honor of victorie than for any shedding of bloude. But now men were martyrizd and cutte downe at more than half a mile of distance, by those furious and thundering engines of great cannon that sometimes shoote fiery bulletts able to burn whole cities, castles, houses or bridges where they chanced to falle, and if they happen to lighte within walls, or amongst a brigadd of foote or horse, as they did at Leipsigh, on the (Land) grave Von Torne his brigadd they spoyle a number at once as doubtless the devilish invention did within Valenstine."

To the apprehensions of men, who could no longer trust to skill in fence and defensive armor, was added the belief that bullet and shell burned the wound and deposited a poison within it; and it was long years before the surgeon, in most cases, abandoned the use of corrosive drugs, the cauterizing iron, and even the pouring in of boiling oil to counteract the supposed venomous and poisonous deposits.

Henry IV. of France established field hospitals at the siege of Amiens, and his grateful soldiers in recognition of the unheard of comfort and aid given the sick and wounded, termed their service here, "The Velvet Campaign." In 1536 his surgeon and trusted counsellor, Ambrose Pare, began those humane labors which so greatly banished from French surgery the crude severities which had hitherto tortured the patient. His humanity also saved from abandonment many of the desperately wounded, who had hitherto been callously abandoned to certain robbery and death. So great was the confidence of the soldiery in his skill and humanity, that when Metz was besieged by Charles V. with 100,000 men, the garrison desired as a special favor that Pare should be sent to join them. An Italian captain, for a great bribe, smuggled him into the city, and when he appeared upon the ramparts the soldiers went wild with joy, shouting: "We shall not die, even if wounded. Pare is with us!" The successful defence of this city, "the bulwark of France," is ascribed largely to the cheerfulness and confidence inspired by the presence and labors of Pare.

Despite the reforms which he initiated, however, the practice of surgery remained burdened with many crudities and errors at the time of the settlement of New England. The surgeon's instruments were few, and generally rudely designed and constructed, and, as will be seen later, the wounded were subjected to a long and tedious treatment, in which salves, balsams, corrosive powders, bulky tents, and strong compresses, sear cloth, and even the actual cautery needlessly irritated the injured tissues, assured suppurations, and equally delayed the healing action of nature.

The enlargement, dilatation and scarification of wounds; the resort to copious bleeding, and crude methods of amputation were also in vogue at this period. Still, the early surgeons of Massachusetts were probably as skilful, humane and discreet as the most of their profession in Europe, and decidedly the superior of the average military or naval practitioner of their generation.

1620-1684.

In the colonial period there does not appear to have been any official recognition of the medical needs of the people, troops and mariners of the colony, and nothing permanent in the way of surgeons, hospitals, hygienic precautions, or the like, seems to have been attempted for many years. If there were epidemics far more disastrous and dangerous than usual, (and this meant a mortality such as to-day would leave our cities almost deserted) a "pest house" might be prepared, and public fumigations with sulphur, tar and the like might be ordered, and a certain amount of treatment and nursing given to the poorest victims. Thereafter the charitable physician could petition the governor and council for remuneration.

ation, and in most instances the claim seems to have been received with partial, although seldom complete recognition.

Thus, it is on record in the Archives of the State of Massachusetts, that such petitions were filed, and met with a more or less liberal reception and payment.

Drs. Samuel Oliver and Lot Bridges of Boston, 1645, were "paid for services and medicines to poor patients." October, 1667, Henry Taylor, Chirurgeon, was "paid for attendance and medicines." John Endicott, Chyrurgeon, of Boston, 1667, was "paid for attendance and medicines." The list of medicines furnished includes "boluses, elixirs, conserves, electuaries, purges, diaphoretics, etc. etc."

On September 19, 1684, William Hawkins, Chyrurgeon, of Boston, was paid his bill for "Dressing and curing ye broken thigh of Nicholas Crowley."

On June 20, 1710, Dr. Zabdiel Boylston, of Boston, was "paid twenty pounds on a claim of fifty-one pounds, fourteen shilling and six pence for services rendered the distressed people of the "Mary Lynn."

On June 28, 1727, Dr. Aaron Bourne, of Marblehead, was finally paid 111 pounds, six pence, for attendance on a poor sailor who had been landed there. The doctor had previously been indicted by the town authorities for relieving this man, and had incurred heavy costs, about twenty-two pounds.

In times of emergency, as in King Philip's war, the authorities did not hesitate to seize or "impress" anybody or anything which could be of use to the Commonwealth. If "chyrurgeon" or "phisitian" was wanted, the governor and council gave their orders, and Edward Rawson, the secretary, issued his warrant to the constable, who forthwith seized upon man, beast, goods, provisions, armor, weapons or whatsoever else the warrant called for. After the service was done, or the goods, etc., expended, a claim in the form of a petition was usually justly considered by the council. A few examples of the working of this system follow.

In King Philip's war an attack was made on the English near Chelmsford, and Dr. David Middleton, of Boston, was "impressed," and furnished with an "impressed horse" to go there with the post who had come in with the news. The following letter tells for itself the nature of the "medical service" of that period:

Chelmsford, N. E., March ye 20, 1675.

Dr Sir:

I bless God I am safely hither, but was much troubled with a jadish horse who tyred by that time we got to Cambridge. We had much adoo to get him to Woburn. I am in very good quarters, and the sergt. is very kind to me, and extraordinary civil. The young man that was shott in the Belly dyed about two of the clocke this morning. He was mortally wounded for his bowells were punctured with ye shott. I took out a piece about four or five inches long, and did dress his wounds.

Dear Sir, I humbly intreat you to pray the Council to grant us a stronger guard, for we expect the Indians any hour to fall upon us, and if they come we shall all be cut offe. Sir, I would desire you to send me a payre of forceps, and a probe, with an Incision Knife, and hoping you will grant my request, for without those instruments I can do nothing. I remain, in haste having not time to enlarge at present, Sir,

Your Obliged Servant,

DAVID MIDDLETON.

The following form of warrant was issued and served on a Boston surgeon when the Indians were especially active:

"To the constable of Boston,

"These require you forthwith to impress in His Majesty's name, Mr. William Hawkins, Chyrurgeon, to immediately prepare himself with materials as Chirurgeon, to dispatch to Marlborough to Captain Moseley, and attend his souldiers at Groton and elsewhere. For which end you are to impress an able horse, suitable for him to go to his post.

"Dated at Boston, 17th August, 1675, making return hereof to the secretary,

EDW. RAWSON, Sec'y."

That this method sometimes bore very hardly on some of its victims appears from the petition of Samuel Holman, surgeon, of Boston.

"To ye Right Honorable, the Governor and Council, now sitting in Boston, April 5, 1676,

"The Petition of Samuel Holman Humbly sheweth, that your petitioner's servant went out to mount guard under the command of Captain Mosely. Afterwards, the constables Prest some of his instruments for Chirurgeonry for Captain Moseley's Chirurgeon, and soon after his horse was Prest for the use of the county. Then, by order from the Council, the Constable Prest a whole box of Instruments for Dr. Nichols when he went to Narragansett, which Instruments were delivered to Dr. Gerrish now with the army. And about two months since, your Petitioner was prest to go out to Naragansett under the command of Captain Wadsworth, and having been Prest in ye forenoon, was commanded to march the next morning, so that he had no opportunity for applying himself to your Honors for relief (the councill that day being at Cambridge) and he being very sickly and infirm of body, was forced to compound with them, and sending his servant in his room, which servant cost ye petitioner fourteen pounds in money. And when Captain Wadsworth was dismissed at Marlborough, ye petitioner's servant was put with Captain Turner's, who is now in the army, and since that, ye clerk of ye company to which he appertains, has prest his musket for ye use of the county, and not withstanding, ye petitioner is ordered out to watch and work on ye fortifications. Whereby he accounts that very hard measure is dealt out to him, especially considering that he hath no real estate to live upon, and nothing but his calling to procure a maintenance for his family."

Petitioner went on to ask for the release of his servant, William Sampson. Later he was ordered compensation for the following list of instruments "taken from him for the use of the county: The Dismembering Saw, two catheters, large and small, a Speculum, a Dilator, 4 Cauterising Irons, a large Probe, a Head Saw, a large pair of Forceps, a Seton Instrument, a large Spatula, a Dutch Billy, etc."

March 23, 1678, Dr. Barton, of Salem, files with the clerk of the council the certificate of three citizens that his claim for services is just.



It says "He had spent several medicines upon ye wounded men, and assisted in dressing seventeen days."

September 2, 1676, Dr. William Locke of Hadley, petitions for pay "for his services as Chirurgeon at Mt. Hope, and in the Narrangansett country with Captain Mosely, in the Nipmuck county with Captain Henchman, with Mosely at Quaboag, and with Captains Lathrop and Pyncheon at other places."

Regular bargains were at times made with surgeons, who were to go out and stay with the troops. Thus, in 1645, it was, "Ordered: That Mr. Loyal, Chirurgeon, be employed in the present campaign." Palsgrave Wellington, of Boston, was appointed by Major-General Daniel Gookin, June 24, 1676, "to attend the souldiers of the country as a Chirurgeon for the troops," and is notified, November 16, that "he is to be ready at one-half hour's warning." February 5, 1698, Dr. John Eads, contracted for a term with Captain Mould, offers depositions to show that the captain, at or near the close of his contracted term, "promised to see him paid if he staid."

The form of warrant to press Dr. David Middleton of Boston for an expedition to Maine, seems to indicate that no contract was made in his case, unless the concluding sentence indicates a reward beyond the grave.

"To Mr. David Middleton, Chyurgeon:

You are hereby ordered to address yourself to Captain Samuel Hunting, now going out on the country's service to the Eastward, with him to go as Chirurgeon. His directions to attend as a diligent attendant and using your best skill and improvements of the Emplaistors and other medicaments delivered to you by the said Captain Hunting for the best and special relief of all sick and wounded souldiers, looking up to God for blessing for your endeavors."

Dated at Boston 2nd April, 1677.

By order of the Governor and Council.

EDWARD RAWSON, Clerk."

Any rebellion against these summary methods seems to have been promptly punished, as is seen in the following sentence of a drumhead court martial on a recalcitrant surgeon.

"Dr. David Bennett to be thrust out of the army and all place and service therein, and after that he shall by the loss of his wages bear ye damage which his rebellious spirit hath put the country to, in the sending up of Mr. Hawkins.

SAMUEL APPLETON,

A. MOSELY,

November 10, 1675.

JONATHAN POOLE.

In many cases, however, the frontier militia were compelled to pay for their own medical attendance, or rely on the charity or public spirit of their local physicians, who had no legal claim on the colony for remuneration.

Thus, in 1695, Captain Stephen Greenleaf of Newbury, while intercepting a band of Indians, trying to get beyond the Merrimac with certain prisoners, who later were rescued, was shot in the wrist and side, and for his service and sufferings received a grant of forty pounds. Dr. Humphrey's bill for attendance follows:

To Captain Greenleaf.

In the yeare 1695.

Visits, Balsams, Emplaistors, Tinctures, Unguents, Searcloth and Dressings. From 8th of October to last of January, unto the perfecting of the cure of a large gun-shot wound in the side and wrist: Major and minor fractures, nerves and tendons lacerated, also a large wound under his side, with a laceration of the muscle. For the cure to me, 12: 06: 00.

HUMPHREY BRADSTREET, Chirurgeon.

In June, 1695, Dr. Nathaniel Hall of Yarmouth, tavern keeper, petitions, showing that in the Naragansett campaigns, he lost an arm, and that his pension of five pounds per year had not been paid for nine years. Also that having been engaged by Sir William Phips to go on the Pemaquid expedition, he had not been paid in full. His claim was sixty-three pounds. He was voted fifty pounds, and a continuation of his pension.

After the close of the French war, 1748, "William Rand, Phisitian," petitions for payment for medical attendance, medicines and a nurse for Andrew Dumesne or Dumeneys, a "French prisoner, from June 7, 1746, to April 29, 1747." William Shirley was then governor, and his bill was paid.

Francis LeBaron, surgeon of a French privateer from Bordeaux, which was shipwrecked in Buzzard's Bay in 1696, was induced to settle at Plymouth, and became noted as a surgeon there. He died at Plymouth in 1704.

John Lloyd, born in 1728, returned to America in 1752, and was made surgeon at Castle William, Boston Harbor. It is believed that he was the first surgeon in America to substitute the ligation of arteries for the actual cautery.

Matthew Fuller, of Plymouth, born in 1640, removed to Barnstable in 1650, and died in 1678. Was appointed surgeon-general of the Plymouth forces in 1673, and styled "captain" in 1675.

Ammi Ruhamah Cutler, born at Cambridge, 1705, went as captain in Moulton's Regiment on the Louisburg expedition of 1745-46, and was placed in charge of the fortified rendezvous at Canso. Later he was made chief surgeon of the hospital at Louisburg, Cape Breton, where he died in the line of duty in March, 1746.

Dr. George Stuart or Stewart of Boston, descended from a noble Scottish house, married Ruth, daughter of Dr. John Cutler of Boston, and in 1740 raised one of the five companies sent from Boston to take part in Lord

Vernon's fatal expedition against Cartagena, South America. He acted as a volunteer surgeon from his arrival at the rendezvous at Port Royal, Jamaica, until his death, hastened by his humane but exhausting labors in the harbor of Cartagena, in May, 1741. He left a son Walter, whose son became John, Baronet Stewart, residing in London, England.

## IN THE REVOLUTION.

Surgeons were liberally provided by the Provincial Congress, which sat at Watertown during the siege of Boston. The following excerpts from their proceedings may be of interest: "Resolved: That the persons recommended by the Commanding Officers of the Several Regiments be appointed as surgeons to their several Regiments, Provided they appear to be duly qualified upon examination, May 8, 1775."

Previous to the action of these officers, however, congress found it necessary to provide hospitals for the troops, and the following form of commission was issued:

"The Congress of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.

To Isaac Foster, Esq., Greeting:

Being informed of your skill in surgery, and reposing especial Trust and confidence in your Ability and good conduct, do by these presents constitute and appoint you, the said Isaac Foster, to be Surgeon of the Hospital at Cambridge, appointed for the sick and wounded soldiers of the Colonial Army. You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of a Surgeon in said Hospital in all things pertaining thereto. Observing such orders and instructions as you shall from time to time receive from any of your superior officers in the said army, according to Military Rules and Discipline established by the Congress, for which this is your sufficient warrant.

By the Order of Congress.

Watertown, June 28, 1775.

At the same date, a like commission was issued to Dr. Isaac Rand, only differing in the addition of the words "and Medicine" after "surgery," and making him "Surgeon and Phisitian to the Hospital at Cambridge, appointed by the Congress for the reception of such officers and soldiers of the Colony as may be infected with the smallpox."

The following lists of surgeons and "surgeon's mates," as they were then, and long afterward called, were prepared by a "committy" whose medical experience probably far exceeded their skill in spelling, as shown in the following report:

Watertown, June 1, 1775.

"A Liste of Surgeons and Mates examined and approved by a Committy of Congress.

Dr. David Jones, Surgeon of Colonel Gerrish's regiment.

Samuel Blanchard, Mate to Jones.

Dr. Joseph Hunt, mate to Dr. Joseph Foster in the Cambridge Hospital.

Dr. Jacob Bacon, as Mate in Colonel Scammon's Regiment.

Dr. Harris Clay Fudges, as mate.

Dr. Edward Durrant, as Surgeon in Colonel Mansfield's Regiment.

Dr. Josiah Harvey, as mate in Colonel Fellows' Regiment.

Dr. Abram Watson, Surgeon of Colonel Gardner's Regiment.  
 Dr. William Vinall, as Mate in Colonel Gardner's Regiment.  
 Dr. John Georges, as mate in General Heath's Regiment.  
 Dr. Isaac Spofford, Surgeon in Colonel Nixon's Regiment.  
 Dr. John Crocker, Surgeon in Colonel Scammon's Regiment.  
 Dr. Walter Hastings, Surgeon in Colonel Bridges' Regiment.  
 Dr. Timo' Child, Surgeon of Colonel Patterson's Regiment.  
 Dr. Levi Willard, Surgeon of Colonel Reed's Regiment.  
 Dr. Daniel Parker, Surgeon of Colonel Walker's Regiment.  
 Dr. Thomas Kittredge, Surgeon of Colonel Frye's Regiment."

"July 7, 1775.

A list of Surgeons this day examined and approved by the committy appointed for that purpose, viz.:

Dr. John Warren, Surgeon to Cambridge Hospital.  
 Dr. James Thatcher, his mate.  
 Dr. James Hart, Surgeon to Colonel Prescott's Regiment.  
 Dr. Enoch Dale, Surgeon to Colonel Doolittle's Regiment.  
 Dr. Absalom Russell, his mate.  
 Dr. Samuel Adams, Surgeon to Colonel Fellows' Regiment.  
 Dr. Edward Flint, Surgeon to Colonel Ward's Regiment.  
 Dr. William Dexter, his Mate.  
 Dr. Parker Cleaveland, Surgeon to Colonel Sergeant's Regiment.  
 Dr. William Aspinwall, Surgeon to Roxbury Hospital.  
 Dr. Samuel Whitwell, Mate to Dr. Howard in the Roxbury Horspittel.  
 Dr. Joseph Holt, Mate Dr. Cleaveland.  
 Dr. Moses Barnad, Mate to Dr. Dunsmore in Colonel Whitecomb's Regiment."

"Watertown, July 12, 1775.

This day the Committy appointed to examine surgeons for the army examined and approved

Dr. David Turnbull, Surgeon in Colonel Brewer's Regiment.  
 Dr. William Eustis, Surgeon in Colonel Gridley's Regiment.  
 Dr. Stephen Swett, Surgeon to Colonel Phinney's Regiment.  
 Dr. Josiah Lord, Surgeon's Mate in Colonel Little's Regiment.  
 Dr. Nehemiah Hind, Surgeon's Mate to Colonel Woodbridge's Regiment.  
 Dr. Eliphalet Downer, Surgeon to General Heath's Regiment.  
 Dr. Elisha Howatt, Surgeon to Colonel Little's Regiment.  
 Dr. Josiah Langdon, Surgeon to Colonel Nixon's Regiment.

It is related that after the evacuation of Boston, Dr. John Warren, brother of General Joseph Warren, and surgeon in the Continental Army, visited the old town workhouse, a large brick structure, whitewashed, and surrounded by a high board fence, which then stood on the north side of what is now Park street, and had been used as a hospital by the British garrison. Dr. Warren visited the hospital and inspected some of the medicines left behind in the hurry of the enforced evacuation.

In an affidavit made April 9, 1776, and attested before James Otis, Esquire, Justice of the Peace, he recounts the fact that he visited the said hospital and inspected these medicines, and then continues: "They consisted chiefly of the kinds mostly in demand. I observed small quan-

ties of what I supposed was white and yellow arsenic intermixed, and then received information from Dr. Daniel Scott, that he had taken a large quantity of arsenic from amongst the medicines. I viewed it, and judged it to be about 12 or 15 pounds. I did not use the medicines."

It is probable that this was the work of some subordinate officer, and not done with the knowledge of the British general commanding. It is, however, only too indicative of the cruelty, hatred and cowardice which animated many British officers in their dealings with our sires, whom they counted only as "rebels and traitors" and without the pale of mercy or humanity.

The following brief biographical notices of Massachusetts surgeons, who served in the Revolutionary War, have been deemed worthy of insertion here:

Samuel Adams, son of John Adams, born at Boston, October 27, 1751, graduated at Harvard 1770. He served as surgeon after the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill, and in the Continental Army after the siege of Boston. The hardships of the Revolutionary War broke his constitution, and he died at Quincy, Mass., June 17, 1788.

William Aspinwall, born at Brookline, Mass., May 23, 1743, graduated at Harvard College 1764. During the retreat of the British from Lexington, he fought as a volunteer, and carried off the field the body of Captain Isaac Gardiner, which had been pierced by twelve bullets. He sought a commission in the Continental Army, but was dissuaded from serving as a soldier by General Joseph Warren, and became surgeon of General Heath's brigade, and later deputy director of the Roxbury Hospital. He married a daughter of Captain Gardiner, and built up a splendid practice. He was especially skilful in inoculating for the smallpox, but welcomed vaccination as a great boon to humanity. Died April 16, 1823.

Josiah Bartlett, born at Charlestown, Mass., in 1759, was a pupil of Isaac Foster, and aided him in the general hospital at Cambridge in 1775. He was made surgeon's mate; served in the Continental Army until 1780, and later served for two years on American cruisers. Died March 3, 1820.

John Brooks, born at Medford, Mass., 1752, studied under Simon Tufts of Medford, and had for a fellow student the famous Count Rumford. In 1775 he raised a company of minutemen, and led it to answer the Concord alarm. He was present as a volunteer at Bunker Hill, and was sent by Prescott of Pepperrell to General Ward to demand reinforcements. He became a major in the Continental Army; was lieutenant-colonel in 1777; led the charge on Burgoyne's entrenchments at Saratoga, and was adjutant-general at the battle of Monmouth. He was elected governor of Massachusetts in 1816, and was for some time a major-general of the State militia. He died March 8, 1825.

Timothy Childs, born at Deerfield, Mass., in February, 1748, was commissioned captain of minutemen in 1774, and marched his company to Cambridge in 1775. He was made surgeon of Patterson's Regiment, accompanied it to New York, and later to Montreal. He retired in 1777, was elected to the Massachusetts legislature in 1792, and died February 25, 1821.

John Cuming was a son of Robert Cuming, who left Scotland after the Jacobite Rebellion of 1745, and settled and died at Concord, Mass. John left college and went against the French and Indians in 1755, and later became a colonel of militia, and was offered a general's commission.

William Eustis, born at Boston, June 10, 1753, graduated at Harvard in 1772, was a student under Dr. Joseph Warren, and assisted in caring for the wounded after the battles of Lexington and Concord. He was appointed surgeon of Gridley's Artillery Regiment, and accompanied it in the New York campaign. He was made hospital surgeon, and was offered the position of lieutenant-colonel of artillery by General Knox. He became secretary of war under President Madison, and later was elected governor of Massachusetts.

Parker Cleaveland of Rowley, Mass., born in 1760, was the son of Rev. John Cleaveland of Essex, Mass. He became assistant surgeon in Sergeant's Massachusetts Regiment, 1775.

Dr. David Cobb, born at Attleboro, Mass., in 1748, was a surgeon at the siege of Boston in 1775, but became lieutenant-colonel of Jackson's Regiment, and was discharged as colonel and brevet brigadier-general. He was made major-general of the Massachusetts militia in 1786; elected lieutenant-governor in 1809; was again major-general, 1st Division, Massachusetts militia, in 1812, and died April 17, 1830.

Oliver Fiske, born at Brookfield, Mass., September 2, 1762, volunteered in 1780, when 18 years old, to serve in the Continental Army, and was stationed at West Point at the time of Arnold's treachery. He died at Boston in 1836.

Joshua Fiske, born at Dedham, Mass., in May, 1749, graduated at Harvard, 1763, and served as surgeon of militia. He died at Beverly, Mass., in March, 1833.

John Hart, born at Ipswich, Mass., October, 1751, joined Prescott's Regiment at Cambridge in 1775; and when Prescott disbanded in New York, 1776, served as surgeon of Bailey's Second Massachusetts Regiment until 1783, and in Jackson's Reserve Regiment until 1784; in all nine years and three months.

Amos Holbrook, born at Bellingham, Mass., January 23, 1754, was made surgeon's mate in Colonel John Groaton's Regiment in 1775, and surgeon in 1776. He was transferred to Joseph Vose's Regiment, went

to New Jersey, and was discharged in 1777. He died at Boston in 1842, aged 88 years.

Dr. Pardon Haye was born at New London, Conn., February 2, 1762, had moved to Hoosac, Mass., when fifteen and served for some time in the Continental Army. He was captain of the Rowe company under Governors Hancock and Adams. Died December 26, 1833.

Thomas Kittredge, born at Andover, Mass., July, 1746, studied at Dummer Academy, Byfield, and under Dr. Sawyer of Newburyport. He aided the wounded after the battle of Bunker Hill, and served in the Continental Army. He died in October, 1818.

John Manning, son of Joseph Manning, born at Ipswich, Mass., 1737, commenced to practice there in 1760. He aided in treating the wounded at Cambridge, 1775, and served in the Rhode Island and Long Island campaigns.

Oliver Prescott, born in Groton, Mass., April 27, 1731, graduated at Harvard College, 1750. He served as major, lieutenant-colonel and colonel in the Massachusetts militia. Was a brigadier-general in 1775-76 and made a major-general in 1781.

William Spooner, born at Boston, November 24, 1760, was surgeon of the Boston Regiment in Shay's Rebellion, 1787. Dr. Spooner was a member of the board of Overseers of Harvard College.

Marshall Spring of Watertown, Mass., graduated at Harvard, 1762, was a Tory in sentiment, but cared for the Americans wounded in the battle of Lexington, and remained in the state until his death in 1818.

John Barnard Swett of Marblehead was born June 1, 1752. He graduated at Harvard in 1767, and joined the American army in 1778 as surgeon in Greene's Rhode Island campaign. Later, he went on the disastrous Penobscot expedition and barely escaped capture.

Samuel Tenney of Rowley, Mass., entered Harvard in 1768. He joined the American army on the day of the battle of Bunker Hill, and although much fatigued, cared for the wounded, and was made surgeon's mate under Dr. Eustis of the Massachusetts line. Later he was made surgeon of a Rhode Island regiment, and was present at the surrenders of Generals Burgoyne and Cornwallis. He was elected to Congress in 1800, and died at Exeter, N. H., in 1816.

Dr. James Thacher was born at Barnstable, Mass., in 1754; studied under Dr. Abner Henry of that town, and in 1775 was made surgeon's mate under Dr. John Warren at the Provincial hospital at Cambridge. Later he was made surgeon's mate under Surgeon David Townsend in Colonel Asa Whitcomb's Regiment. He was stationed at West Point at the time of Arnold's treachery in 1780, and was present at the execution of Major Andre and the surrender of Cornwallis. He died at Barnstable in 1844, when over ninety years old.

John Thomas, Jr., was born at Plymouth, Mass., April 1, 1758. His father, of the same name, was a surgeon at the capture of Louisburg, 1745-46, and became surgeon in the Massachusetts line in 1775, with his son as surgeon's mate, but resigned in 1776. His son succeeded him as surgeon and served to the close of the war, in which three of his brothers were also engaged, one as captain of artillery. Later he settled in Poughkeepsie, N. Y., and died there in 1818.

Joseph Warren, born at Roxbury, Mass., graduated at Harvard in 1759, practiced under Dr. Lloyd and delivered a famous oration in the Old South church on the anniversary of the Boston Massacre on March 5, 1775. He was a leader in the events which culminated in the Revolution; fought among and inspired his fellow countrymen on the day of Concord and Lexington, and was made major-general June 14, 1775. He served as a volunteer at the battle of Bunker Hill, June 19, 1775, and was killed during the retreat near the captured redoubt.

William Stoddard Williams, born at Deerfield, Mass., October 11, 1762, held the position of surgeon of the Second Regiment, 2d Brigade, 4th Division, M. V. M., from 1794 to 1810. He died January 8, 1828.

During the Mexican War the medical staff of the regular army had full control of the hygienic precautions and surgical and medical treatment, which were rendered necessary by the siege of Vera Cruz and the advance upon the city of Mexico. In this campaign, all necessary allowances being made for the imperfect methods of the surgery and treatment of that era, the death rate of the invading army was very low, and indeed, was in strong contrast to the terrible losses of the allied English and French armies, in eastern Turkey and the Crimea, in 1854 and 1855.

At the beginning of the Civil War in 1861, there was no State medical department such as exists to-day, and, on the 13th of June, Dr. William J. Dale was commissioned the first surgeon-general of Massachusetts. He thus records the previously existing conditions, under which the first levies were examined, cared for and supplied for service in the field.

"The duties of this office were assumed by me on the 16th day of June last. Prior to that time, from the 16th day of April, the medical supervision of the volunteer regiments was under the direction of an informal medical board, assisted by an advisory commission of physicians and surgeons, who represented the state as a board of examining surgeons.

"No contracts have (yet) been made by this department, as the orders for the construction of ambulances, tents, mess chests and other supplies for a movable hospital were made prior to the date of my commission. The three months' volunteers were furnished with their supplies, on the order of your Excellency, through the adjutant-general."

The regiments mustered into the service of the United States





A FIELD HOSPITAL AT BUNKER HILL, JUNE 17, 1775.

*From the cyclopaedia of Bunker Hill.*



were supplied by the order of the Military Committee of the honorable Council; the regulation supply of the army for three months' field service being the standard, with such variations as the medical department thought advisable.

Only medical supplies and surgical instruments, dressings, etc., were furnished the regiments first sent forward. These were valued as follows: Third Regiment, \$446.78; Fourth Regiment, \$407.40; Fifth Regiment, \$415.65; Sixth Regiment, \$386.40; Eighth Regiment, \$353.78; and of these supplies, a considerable portion were unused and turned over to the United States for the Massachusetts authorities. The First, Second, Seventh, Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Fifteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-First, Twenty-Second, Twenty-Third, Twenty-Fourth, Twenty-Fifth, Twenty-Sixth and Twenty-Seventh Regiments of Infantry, and First Regiment of Cavalry, each received from six to twenty iron beds with bed and pillow ticks, cases, sheets, towels, blankets, nettings, litters, hospital knapsacks, mess chests, stores, etc., etc.; the total expenditures for the year 1861 being \$22,441.60.

Of this total, \$1,862.07 represented the entire expenditure for all the regiments while encamped in the State, from April 16, to November 7, 1861; \$8,719.29 the outfits of the three months' regiments, and \$12,102.40 the outfits of the three years' regiments, etc. It should be said that many recruits were received and cared for by the Massachusetts General Hospital, prescribed for by the State apothecary at the State House, or attended without charge at their own homes by medical advisors of their own choosing. There was no limit to the patriotism of the medical fraternity of Massachusetts of that generation.

Surgeon-General Dale goes on to say: "Prior to the first of July, with the exception of a special detail made by order of your Excellency for the county of Worcester, the services of the inspecting surgeons in the examination of recruits throughout the state were a gratuitous and patriotic offering, and no class has made a more generous and cheerful sacrifice than the medical profession of this Commonwealth. The whole amount, to the first of November, paid for the examination of recruits and medical attendance is \$1,732.05.

"Amid all the distresses incident to the war, it is a cause for thankfulness that our regiments, in camp, at home and at the seat of war, have been so generally exempt from the diseases incident to armies. This result is owing somewhat to the generally healthy character of the season—the prudent oversight in the selection of camps—the faithfulness and efficiency of the commissariat—the general intelligence which characterized the material of our volunteer force; but mainly to the untiring watchfulness and fidelity of the regimental surgeons, and their care and

vigilance in all matters pertaining to the hygienic and sanitary condition of the camps."

The report at the close of 1862 showed that the Thirty-second, Thirty-third and Thirty-fourth Regiments of Infantry had been supplied with medical stores by the state authorities at a cost of \$3008.02. The regiments thereafter sent out were supplied under the direction of Surgeon Satterlee, U. S. A., medical purveyor, New York City, and the supplies charged to the United States.

The medical staff, surgeons and surgeon's mates, of the Third, Fourth, Fifth, and Eighth Regiments of Infantry, Third Battalion of Riflemen and Cook's Battery of Light Artillery were appointed by the colonel or other commanding officer of each organization; no medical examination was required or provided for, and it is a grateful task to chronicle of the gentlemen thus appointed, in the words of Surgeon-General Dale:

"These surgeons responded promptly and patriotically to regimental orders and discharged their new and untried duties with faithfulness and ability." The following medical officers were commissioned under these conditions:

#### THREE MONTHS' REGIMENTS.

Third Regiment, Infantry, M. V. M.: Surgeon, Alexander R. Holmes, New Bedford, mustered out July 22, 1861; surgeon's mate, Johnson Clarke, New Bedford. Dr. Johnson Clarke was later detailed by Major-General Benjamin F. Butler as surgeon of the Massachusetts Battalion at Fortress Monroe, and died in the service at his post. "He was greatly esteemed as a conscientious and devoted officer" says the report.

Fourth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M.: Surgeon, Henry M. Saville, Quincy; surgeon's mate, William L. Faxon, Quincy; both mustered out July 22, 1861.

Fifth Regiment, Infantry, M. V. M.: Surgeon, Samuel W. Hurd, Charlestown, mustered out July 22, 1861; surgeon's mates, Henry H. Mitchell, Bridgewater and William W. Keene, Jr., Charlestown, mustered out July 22, 1861. Dr. Hurd later served as volunteer surgeon in the army of the Potomac, and Dr. Mitchell was commissioned assistant surgeon and transferred to the New York Zouaves July 1, 1861.

Sixth Regiment, Infantry, M. V. M.: Surgeon, Norman Smith, Groton; surgeon's mate, Jansen T. Paine, Charlestown; both mustered out Aug. 2, 1861. Dr. Paine was afterward assistant surgeon of the Thirty-First.

Eighth Regiment, Infantry, M. V. M.: Surgeon, Bowman B. Breed, Lynn; surgeon's mate, Warren Tapley, Lynn; both mustered out Aug. 1, 1861. Dr. Breed became a surgeon of U. S. Vols.

Third Battalion of Rifles: Surgeon, Oramel Martin, Worcester, mustered out Aug. 3, 1861.

Cook's Battery, Light Artillery: Surgeon, John P. Ordway, Boston; surgeon's mate, F. LeBaron Munroe, Boston; both mustered out Aug. 2, 1861. Dr. Munroe became assistant surgeon of the 1st Regt.

At an early date, however, in answer to a memorial signed by Drs. James Jackson, George Hayward and S. D. Townsend, Governor Andrew appointed a medical commission consisting of the following physicians and surgeons: Dr. George Hayward, Dr. S. D. Townsend, Dr. John Ware,

Dr. Samuel S. G. Howe, Dr. J. Mason Warren, Dr. S. Cabot, Jr., Dr. R. M. Hodges, Dr. George H. Lyman and Surgeon-General William J. Dale.

Dr. Samuel G. Howe was shortly after appointed a commissioner to examine the condition of our troops at the seat of war, and resigned. Dr. George H. Lyman was made brigade surgeon and later medical director of Fitz-John Porter's division, Army of the Potomac, and later still, medical inspector and assigned to duty in the west. Dr. George H. Gay was appointed on the commission in his place.

Upon the call for troops, May 3, 1861, authority was vested in the governor of the state to appoint all regimental surgeons, the candidates having previously passed the examinations of a duly qualified board of examiners. The Medical Commission of Massachusetts was at once constituted a Board of Examining Surgeons, and in accordance with its decisions, candidates for the medical staff were appointed as follows:

#### THREE YEARS' REGIMENTS, MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEERS.

First Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Richard H. Salter, Boston, discharged Feb. 10, 1863; Edward A. Whiston, Framingham, mustered out May 28, 1864. Assistant surgeons, Samuel A. Green, Boston, promoted surgeon 24th Mass., Sept. 2, 1861; Francis LeBaron Munroe, Medway, promoted surgeon 15th Mass., Dec. 29, 1862; Thomas F. Oakes, Dartmouth, promoted surgeon 56th Mass., July 31, 1863; Neil K. Gunn, Boston, died in hospital June 3, 1863; Isaiah L. Pickard, Littleton, mustered out May 28, 1874; John B. Garvie, Boston.

Second Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Lucius M. Sargent, Jr., Boston, commissioned captain Co. H, 1st Mass. Cavalry, Oct. 9, 1861, killed at Bellfield, Va., Dec. 9, 1864; Francis Leland, Milford, honorably discharged Oct. 24, 1862; Lincoln R. Stone, Salem, surgeon 54th Mass., April 21, 1863; surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; William H. Heath, Stoneham, died Aug. 28, 1864, in line of duty; William Nichols, Jr., Boston, declined promotion, served term and became surgeon 3d Heavy Artillery; Curtis E. Munn, Westfield, mustered out July 14, 1865. Assistant surgeons, L. R. Stone, promoted surgeon Nov. 7, 1862; William Nichols promoted surgeon 3d Heavy Artillery, Sept. 27, 1864; William H. Heath, promoted surgeon April 24, 1863; James Wightman, Boston, died at Washington, June 15, 1863; George P. Peck, Boston, mustered out July 14, 1865.

Seventh Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, S. Atherton Holman, Taunton, appointed surgeon U. S. Vols., Sept. 22, 1864, brevet colonel; Henry W. Lincoln, Hubbardston, mustered out 1864. Assistant surgeons, Z. Boylston Adams, Boston, promoted surgeon 32d Regt., May 26, 1862; Henry W. Lincoln, promoted surgeon Sept. 10, 1863; Arthur W. Cowdrey, Stow, promoted surgeon 37th Regt. U. S. Colored Troops, Oct. 26, 1863.

Ninth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Peter Peneo, Boston, promoted brigade surgeon, U. S. A.; Stephen W. Drew, Woburn, honorably discharged Dec. 6, 1862; James F. Sullivan, Boston, mustered out June 21, 1864. Assistant surgeons, Patrick A. O'Connel, Boston, honorably discharged Sept. 12, 1861, surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; Francis M. Lincoln, Boston, honorably discharged July 12, 1861, appointed surgeon 35th Regt.; James F. Sullivan, promoted surgeon Dec. 16, 1862; James W. Fitzpatrick, Boston, promoted surgeon, U. S. Vols., March 29, 1862; John Ryan, Boston, mustered out June 21, 1864.

Tenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Cyrus N. Chamberlain, Northampton, commissioned surgeon, U. S. Vols., May 14, 1863, brevet lieutenant-colonel; Albert B. Robinson, Holden, mustered out July 1, 1864. Assistant surgeons, William Holbrook, Palmer, commissioned surgeon 18th Regt., Jan. 13, 1862; George Jewett, Fitchburg, discharged November 17, 1862, afterwards surgeon 51st Regt.; Albert B. Robinson, commissioned surgeon May 15, 1863; John H. Gilman, Lowell, mustered out July 1, 1864.

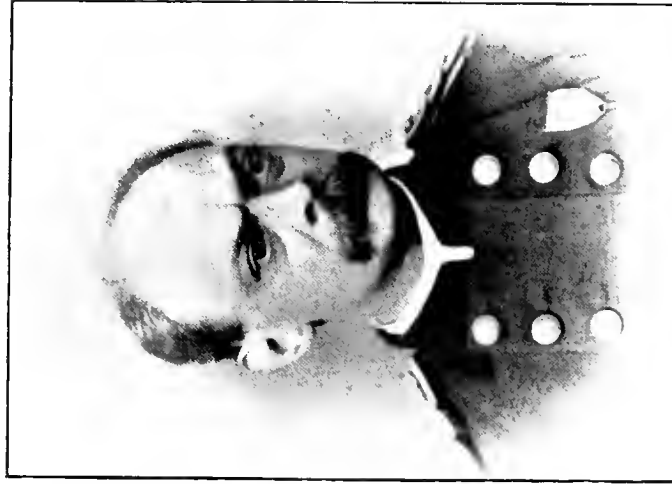
- Eleventh Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Luther V. Bell, Somerville, promoted brigade surgeon and died in the service, Feb. 11, 1762; Ira Russell, Natick, promoted brigade surgeon May 14, 1863, brevet lieutenant-colonel; John W. Foye, Boston, promoted surgeon U. S. Vols., March 26, 1863, brevet lieutenant-colonel; John A. Douglas, Waltham, honorably discharged Oct. 11, 1864; George F. Thompson, Belchertown, declined promotion; Cyrus B. Smith, Granby, mustered out July 14, 1865, promoted from 34th Regt.; assistant surgeons, John W. Foye, promoted surgeon April 22, 1863; Alfred G. Williams, Athol, honorably discharged Aug. 8, 1862; John A. Douglas, promoted surgeon May 15, 1863; Samuel C. Whittier, Boston, discharged May 27, 1864, promoted surgeon 23d Regt.; Thomas Crozier, Jr., Charlestown, transferred from 16th Regt. July 11, 1864, mustered out July 14, 1865.
- Twelfth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Jedediah H. Baxter, Boston, promoted brigade surgeon April 17, 1862, surgeon U. S. Vols.; John McLean Hayward, Boston, honorably discharged April 23, 1863; William H. W. Hinds, Boston, mustered out July 8, 1864; assistant surgeons, John McLean Hayward, promoted surgeon, April 29, 1862; Albert A. Kendall, Newton, killed in action Sept. 17, 1862; John H. McGregor, Boston, honorably discharged Sept. 2, 1863; Charles A. Wheeler, West Boylston, mustered out July 8, 1864.
- Thirteenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Allston M. Whitney, Boston, mustered out Aug. 1, 1864; assistant surgeons, J. Theodore Heard, Boston, promoted brigade surgeon, U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; William W. Claflin, Marlborough, honorably discharged Dec. 1, 1862; James L. Harriman, Marlborough, honorably discharged Jan. 30, 1863; Lloyd W. Hixon, Lowell, mustered out Aug. 1, 1864; Edgar Parker, Bridgewater, honorably discharged Sept. 8, 1863.
- Fourteenth Regiment, Infantry: See First Heavy Artillery.
- Fifteenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Joseph N. Bates, Worcester, discharged July 17, 1862; Samuel Foster Haven, Jr., killed at Fredericksburg, Va., Dec. 13, 1862; F. LeBaron Monroe, Medway, mustered out July 27, 1863; assistant surgeons, S. Foster Haven, Jr., Worcester, promoted surgeon July 21, 1862; Henry Rockwood, Westford; Theodore O. Cornish, Millbury, mustered out July 29, 1864.
- Sixteenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Charles C. Jewett, Holliston, mustered out July 27, 1864; assistant surgeons, Edward A. Whiston, Framingham, promoted surgeon, 1st Regt., March 5, 1863; George King, Franklin, promoted surgeon, 29th Regt., May 21, 1864; Thomas Crozier, Jr., Charlestown, transferred to 11th Regt. July 11, 1864.
- Seventeenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Isaac F. Galloupe, Lynn, mustered out Aug. 3, 1864; Daniel S. Allen, Gloucester, mustered out July 11, 1865; assistant surgeons, William H. W. Hinds, Boston, promoted surgeon 12th Regt. May 26, 1863; Charles G. A. Eayrs, Lowell, mustered out Aug. 3, 1864; George W. Clarke, Boston, mustered out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Eighteenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, David P. Smith, Springfield, promoted brigade surgeon, surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; William Holbrook, Palmer, mustered out Sept. 2, 1864; assistant surgeons, Orlando Brown, Wrentham, promoted surgeon 29th Regt. Dec. 14, 1861; Abial Nelson, honorably discharged July 31, 1862; Edwin F. Silcox, Springfield, dismissed Jan. 5, 1863; Joseph W. Merriam, Boston, appointed assistant surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet major; Joseph G. Wilbur, Boston, honorably discharged Nov. 14, 1863; Benjamin F. Hastings, Boston, mustered out at expiration of service.
- Nineteenth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, J. Franklin Dyer, Rockport, mustered out Aug., 1864; Gustavus P. Pratt, Cohasset, mustered out June 30, 1865; assistant surgeons, Josiah N. Willard, Boston, promoted surgeon 14th Regt., Nov. 10, 1862; John E. Hill, Charlestown, died of wounds at Georgetown, D. C., Sept. 11, 1862; Vertulan R. Stone, Boston, honorably discharged May 11, 1863; Benjamin F. Taft, Blackstone, honorably discharged March 14, 1863; William D. Knapp, Boston, dismissed 1863; Gustavus P. Pratt, Cohasset, promoted surgeon Nov. 23, 1861; Daniel W. Fulton, Boston, mustered out June 30, 1865.
- Twentieth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Henry Bryant, Boston, promoted brigade surgeon Sept. 10, 1861; Nathan Hayward, Roxbury, mustered out Sept., 1864; Fred W. Mercer, Boston, honorably discharged April 13, 1865; Murdock McGregor, Boston, promoted from 33d Regt., mustered out July 16, 1865; assistant surgeons,



COLONEL ANSON P. HOOKER,  
Assistant Surgeon-General, M. V. M., 1863-1873.



BRIGADIER-GENERAL WILLIAM J. DALE,  
Surgeon-General, M. V. M., 1861-1883.



COLONEL JOSHUA B. TREADWELL,  
Assistant Surgeon-General, M. V. M., 1871-1878.





Nathan Hayward, promoted surgeon Sept. 10, 1861; Edward H. H. Revere, Boston, killed at Antietam, Sept. 17, 1862; Benjamin F. Taft, Blackstone, transferred to 19th Regt., Jan. 17, 1863; John G. Perry, Boston, honorably discharged Aug. 10, 1864; Geo. R. Dinsmore, Keene, N. H., mustered out July 16, 1865; C. E. Inches, Boston, transferred from 37th Regt., mustered out July 16, 1865.

Twenty-First Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Calvin Cutter, Warren, honorably discharged May 17, 1864; James Oliver, Athol, mustered out Aug. 30, 1864; assistant surgeons, Orrin Warren, West Newbury, promoted surgeon 33d Regt., June 23, 1862; Joseph W. Hastings, Warren, promoted surgeon 33d Regt., May 26, 1863; James Oliver, Athol, promoted surgeon May 26, 1864; John Wesley Mitchell, Avon, Me., mustered out Aug. 30, 1864; Edgar L. Carr, Pittsfield, N. H., mustered out Aug. 30, 1864.

Twenty-Second Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Edward L. Warren, Weymouth, honorably discharged June 10, 1862; Frederick L. Ainsworth, Boston, appointed surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; Marshall E. Simonds, Marion, honorably discharged Aug. 27, 1863; Isaac H. Stearns, Stoughton, mustered out Oct. 17, 1864; assistant surgeons, James P. Prince, Lynn, promoted surgeon 36th Regt., Aug. 13, 1862; Marshall E. Simmons, promoted surgeon Dec. 29, 1862; Isaac H. Stearns, promoted surgeon Aug. 28, 1863; George T. Perkins, Boston, appointed assistant surgeon 32d Regt., Oct. 17, 1864.

Twenty-Third Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, George Derby, Boston, appointed surgeon U. S. Vols. June 2, 1864, brevet lieutenant-colonel; Samuel C. Whittier, Boston, mustered out June 25, 1865; assistant surgeons, Silas E. Stone, Walpole, honorably discharged Sept. 2, 1862; James A. Emmerton, Salem, discharged to be surgeon 2d Regt., Heavy Artillery; Jacob Roberts, Boston, honorably discharged July 1, 1863; Edward P. Cummings, Exeter, N. H., mustered out Oct. 13, 1864.

Twenty-Fourth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Samuel A. Green, Boston, mustered out; Edward R. Wheeler, Spencer; assistant surgeons, Hall Curtis, Boston, promoted surgeon 2d Regt., Heavy Artillery, June 18, 1863; Charles E. Briggs, Boston, promoted surgeon 54th Regt., Infantry Nov. 24, 1863; William S. Tremaine, Boston, promoted surgeon colored troops; Edward R. Wheeler, promoted surgeon Nov. 10, 1854; John W. Parsons, Boston, mustered out.

Twenty-Fifth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, J. Marcus Rice, Worcester, honorably discharged Oct. 20, 1864; assistant surgeons, Theron Temple, Belchertown, honorably discharged March 27, 1862; Joseph C. Batchelder, Templeton, honorably discharged Aug. 19, 1862; Samuel Flagg, Worcester, honorably discharged Aug. 9, 1863; Horace Mecomey, Worcester, honorably discharged July 13, 1863; Samuel E. Shantz, Boston, honorably discharged Dec. 16, 1863; Alpheus E. Hoyt, Milford, promoted surgeon, April 21, 1865, mustered out July 13, 1865.

Twenty-Sixth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Anson P. Hooker, Cambridge, honorably discharged June 18, 1862, commissioned assistant surgeon-general of Mass. May 26, 1863; James G. Bradt, Lowell, mustered out; George T. Perkins, Boston, mustered out Sept. 26, 1865; assistant surgeons, James G. Bradt, Lowell, promoted surgeon July 14, 1862; Samuel M. Willis, Lynn, promoted surgeon 1st Louisiana Vols.; Edward Russell, Quincy, assistant surgeon 4th Cavalry, Feb. 3, 1864; Isaac Smith, Foxborough, honorably discharged Nov. 7, 1864; John C. Rogers, Pembroke, Me., not mustered in.

Twenty-Seventh Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, George A. Otis, Springfield, honorably discharged June 28, 1864, surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; D. B. Nelson Fish, Amherst, mustered out June 26, 1865; assistant surgeons, Samuel Camp, Great Barrington, discharged March 27, 1862; Peter E. Hubon, Worcester, promoted surgeon 28th Regt. May 27, 1863; Franklin L. Hunt, West Boylston, killed by guerillas near Washington, N. C., Nov. 18, 1862; D. B. N. Fish, promoted surgeon Sept. 20, 1864; Curtis E. Mann, Westfield, promoted surgeon 2d Regt. Dec. 5, 1864.

Twenty-Eighth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Patrick A. O'Connell, Boston, appointed surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; Peter E. Hubon, Worcester, mustered out June 30, 1865; assistant surgeons, George W. Snow, Chelsea, promoted surgeon 35th Regt., March 31, 1863; James T. Rood, Rutland, resigned; John C. Barrington, Chelsea, honorably discharged June 17, 1864; John E. Par-

- sons, Charlestown, honorably discharged July 30, 1863; A. A. Chase, Meredith, N. H., mustered out June 30, 1865.
- Twenty-Ninth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Orlando Brown, Wrentham, resigned Aug. 6, 1862; Geo. B. Cogswell, Easton, honorably discharged March 15, 1864; Geo. King, Franklin, honorably discharged May 15, 1865; Robt. E. Jameson, Woburn, mustered out July 29, 1865; assistant surgeons, George B. Cogswell, promoted surgeon Aug. 7, 1862; Albert Wood, Tewksbury, promoted surgeon, 1st Cavalry, July 6, 1853; James C. Bassett, Charlestown, discharged Feb. 27, 1863; Robt. E. Jameson, promoted surgeon May 27, 1865; Gustavus P. Pratt, Cohasset, not mustered, promoted surgeon 19th Regiment; Edgar L. Carr, Pittsfield, N. H., transferred from 35th Regt., mustered out July 29, 1865.
- Thirtieth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Samuel K. Towle, Haverhill, honorably discharged; Samuel A. Davis, Charlestown; assistant surgeons, Alfred F. Holt, Cambridge, surgeon 1st Texas Cavalry; Samuel A. Davis, promoted surgeon Dec. 27, 1864; Francis C. Greene, Northampton, honorably discharged April 1, 1864; C. S. Jackson, Plymouth.
- Thirty-First Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Eben Kimball Sanborn, Rutland, Vt., died in the service, April 3, 1862; Edwin C. Bidwell, Middlefield, mustered out Sept. 9, 1865; assistant surgeons, Edwin C. Bidwell, promoted surgeon April 29, 1862; James T. Paine, Charlestown, promoted surgeon Louisiana Vols., surgeon U. S. Vols.; Henry W. Brown, Medway, promoted surgeon 4th Corps d'Afrique Sept. 10, 1863; Flower G. Kittredge, Harvard, discharged Jan. 28, 1864; Cyrus S. Mann, Newton, honorably discharged March 25, 1864; Elisha P. Clarke, Milford, honorably discharged Sept. 9, 1865.
- Thirty-Second Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Z. Boylston Adams, Boston, honorably discharged Aug. 4, 1863; William L. Faxon, Quincy, honorably discharged May 31, 1865; Samuel W. Fletcher, Pepperrell, mustered out June 27, 1865; assistant surgeons, Wm. L. Faxon, promoted surgeon Aug. 25, 1863; Windsor H. Bigelow, Boston, honorably discharged Jan. 6, 1863; Samuel L. Young, Boston, honorably discharged April 12, 1863; Samuel W. Fletcher, promoted surgeon Jan. 1, 1865; George T. Perkins, Boston, promoted surgeon 26th Regt., Dec. 21, 1864; John H. McGregor, Needham, mustered out June 27, 1865.
- Thirty-Third Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Orin Warren, West Newbury, honorably discharged April 1, 1863; Joseph W. Hastings, Warren, mustered out June 11, 1865; assistant surgeons, William S. Brown, Boston, promoted surgeon 55th Regt., May 15, 1863; Daniel P. Gage, Lowell, honorably discharged Feb. 22, 1863; Murdock McGregor, Boston, promoted surgeon 20th Regt., May 16, 1865; Melville E. Webb, Saco, Me., mustered out June 11, 1865.
- Thirty-Fourth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Rouse R. Clarke, Northbridge, mustered out July 8, 1865; assistant surgeons, Cyrus B. Smith, Granby, promoted surgeon 11th Regt., Nov. 28, 1864; William Thorndike, Beverly, promoted surgeon 39th Regt., Jan. 22, 1864; Charles G. Allen, Barre, mustered out July 8, 1865; Henry J. Millard, North Adams, mustered out July 8, 1865.
- Thirty-Fifth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Francis M. Lincoln, Boston, honorably discharged March 10, 1863; George W. Snow, Chelsea, honorably discharged June 9, 1865; assistant surgeons, George N. Munsell, Harwich, honorably discharged April 24, 1863; Albert W. Clark, Woburn, honorably discharged May 1, 1863; Edward Paul Roche, Boston, honorably discharged June 9, 1865; Benjamin Coburn, Fredericton, N. B., not mustered; Edgar L. Carr, Pittsfield, N. H., transferred to 29th Regt.
- Thirty-Sixth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, James P. Prince, Lynn, appointed surgeon U. S. Vols., May 3, 1865, brevet lieutenant-colonel; Albert H. Bryant, Natick, mustered out June 11, 1865; assistant surgeons, Warren Tyler, No. Brookfield, honorably discharged Oct. 22, 1863; Albert H. Bryant, promoted surgeon, May 1, 1865.
- Thirty-Seventh Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Chas. F. Crehore, Boston, honorably discharged Dec. 4, 1864; Elisha M. White, Boston, mustered out June 22, 1865; assistant surgeons, Thomas C. Lawton, Sheffield, honorably discharged Feb. 23, 1864; Joshua S. Ellis, died at Newport, R. I.; Albert L. Mitchell, Boston, dis-

- missed Dec. 26, 1863; Elisha M. White, promoted surgeon Dec. 21, 1864; C. E. Inches, Boston, transferred to 20th Regt., June 20, 1865.
- Thirty-Eighth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Samuel C. Hartwell, Southbridge, honorably discharged March 2, 1864; Edwin F. Ward, Enfield, mustered out June 30, 1865; assistant surgeons, Edwin F. Ward, promoted surgeon March 3, 1864; Geo. E. Thomson, Belchertown, promoted surgeon 11th Battalion, Oct. 19, 1864.
- Thirty-Ninth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Calvin G. Page, honorably discharged Nov. 12, 1863; William Thorndike, Beverly, mustered out June 3, 1865; assistant surgeons, James L. Chipman, Milford, honorably discharged May 23, 1864; Henry H. Mitchell, E. Bridgewater, surgeon 36th Regt. U. S. colored troops Nov. 1, 1863; John F. Butler, Chesterfield, N. H., mustered out June 3, 1865.
- Fortieth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Oliver H. Brewster, Pittsfield, honorably discharged Oct. 3, 1863; Andrew Smith, Williamstown, honorably discharged March 1, 1864; Samuel L. Dutton, Chelmsford, honorably discharged May 11, 1865; Charles F. P. Hildreth, Concord, N. H., honorably discharged June 16, 1865; assistant surgeons, Andrew Smith, promoted surgeon Oct. 4, 1863; Jonathan Cass, Great Barrington, honorably discharged July 27, 1863; Paul C. Garvin, Boston, promoted surgeon 4th cavalry April 26, 1864; Ephraim C. Merriam, Lunenburg, honorably discharged, July 7, 1864; Chas. F. P. Hildreth, promoted surgeon May 14, 1865.
- Forty-First Regiment, Infantry: Became 3d Regt. Cavalry.
- Fifty-Fourth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Lincoln R. Stone, Salem, promoted surgeon U. S. Vols., brevet lieutenant-colonel; Charles E. Briggs, Boston, mustered out Aug. 21, 1865; assistant surgeons, Charles B. Bridgham, Buckfield, Me., honorably discharged, July 16, 1864, re-commissioned; Louis D. Radzinsky, Switzerland, promoted surgeon 104th Regt. U. S. colored troops; Joshua B. Treadwell, Boston, mustered out Aug. 21, 1865.
- Fifty-Fifth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, W. Symington Brown, Boston, honorably discharged July 2, 1865; Burt G. Wilder, Newton, mustered out Aug. 29, 1865; assistant surgeons, Burt G. Wilder, promoted surgeon July 11, 1865; Warren M. Babbitt, Braintree, promoted 103d U. S. colored troops; W. H. Lothrop, Boston, mustered out Aug. 29, 1865.
- Fifty-Sixth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, T. Fletcher Oakes, Dartmouth, mustered out July 13, 1865; assistant surgeons, Horatio S. Soule, Winthrop, mustered out July 12, 1865; Jerome E. Robert, Springfield, discharged Sept. 22, 1863.
- Fifty-Seventh Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Whitman V. White, Stockbridge, mustered out July 30, 1865; assistant surgeons, Chas. E. Heath, Monterey, discharged Jan. 28, 1865; Charles O. Carpenter, Holyoke, discharged Jan. 30, 1865; Warren Tyler, No. Brookfield, not mustered; M. F. Gavin, Boston, mustered out July 30, 1865; David S. Clarke, Derry, N. H., transferred from 59th Regt., mustered out July 30, 1865.
- Fifty-Eighth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Alfred A. Stocker, Cambridge, discharged Aug. 1, 1864; Alfred H. Bryant, Natick, not mustered, see 36th Regt.; Frank Whitman, Roxbury, N. H., mustered out July 14, 1865; assistant surgeons, Frank Whitman, promoted surgeon April 14, 1865; Thomas Dawson, Boston, mustered out July 14, 1865.
- Fifty-Ninth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, William Ingalls, Winchester, mustered out Sept. 14, 1865; Edward W. Norton, Blandford, honorably discharged Jan. 28, 1865; David S. Clark, Derry, N. H., transferred to 57th Regt. May 26, 1865.
- First Regiment, Cavalry: Surgeons, James Holland, Westfield, honorably discharged June 26, 1863; Albert Wood, Westfield, honorably discharged Nov. 1, 1864, U. S. Hospital, City Point, Nov. 1, 1864, staff surgeon U. S. A. Jan. 1, 1865; Frederick W. Mercer, Boston, made surgeon 4th Regt. Mass. Cavalry Sept. 3, 1863; Samuel W. Abbott, Woburn, acting brigade surgeon Feb. and Mar., 1865, mustered out June 26, 1865; assistant surgeons, Oscar C. DeWolfe, Chester, promoted surgeon 2d Cavalry Nov. 17, 1862; Albert R. Rice, Springfield, assistant surgeon 49th Regt. Nov. 21, 1862; Homer H. Warner, Springfield, discharged Aug. 20, 1864; George S. Osborne, Danvers, promoted surgeon 5th Cavalry Dec. 30, 1863; Samuel W. Abbott, promoted surgeon Nov. 2, 1864.

Second Regiment, Cavalry: Surgeons, Oscar C. DeWolfe, Chester, honorably discharged Feb. 4, 1865; Eldredge M. Johnson, Agawam, mustered out July 20, 1865; assistant surgeons, Harlow Gamwell, Huntington, promoted surgeon 5th Cavalry May 7, 1864; Eldredge M. Johnson, promoted surgeon Feb. 8, 1865; Alvan F. Buckman, mustered out July 20, 1865.

Third Regiment, Cavalry: Surgeons, Albert H. Blanchard, from 41st Regt. Infantry, honorably discharged, Feb. 29, 1864; Daniel F. Leavitt, So. Danvers, honorably discharged July 21, 1865; George G. Tarbell, Lincoln, mustered out July 20, 1865; assistant surgeons, John Blackmer, Somerville, from 41st Regt. Infantry, promoted surgeon 47th Regt. Nov. 4, 1862; Daniel F. Leavitt, 41st Regt., promoted surgeon March 1, 1864; Daniel S. Allen, Gloucester, promoted surgeon 17th Regt. Feb. 20, 1865; George G. Tarbell, promoted surgeon Aug. 9, 1865.

Fourth Regiment, Cavalry: Surgeons, Frederick W. Mercer, Boston, honorably discharged April 7, 1864, afterwards surgeon 60th Regt.; Paul C. Garvin, Boston, mustered out; assistant surgeons, Edward S. Russell, Quincy, mustered out; John H. McGregor, Needham, honorably discharged April 23, 1864; Edward K. Hill, Newbury, Me., discharged Dec. 20, 1864; Julius Weber, Lynn, honorably discharged June 12, 1865.

Fifth Regiment, Cavalry: Surgeons, George S. Osborne, Danvers, honorably discharged May 7, 1864; Harlow Gamwell, Huntington, honorably discharged Feb. 8, 1865; Frederick G. Parker, East Corinth, Me., mustered out Nov., 1865; assistant surgeons, Samuel Ingalls, Melrose, honorably discharged April 20, 1864; Frederick G. Parker, promoted surgeon Feb. 16, 1865; Isaac S. Cushman, Newburyport, honorably discharged May 31, 1865; Oliver F. Wadsworth, Boston, mustered out Nov., 1865.

First Regiment, Heavy Artillery, formerly Fourteenth Regiment Infantry: Surgeons, David Dana, Reading, honorably discharged Oct. 30, 1862; Josiah N. Willard, Boston, honorably discharged Oct. 13, 1864; Edward R. Cutler, Sudbury, mustered out July 31, 1865; assistant surgeons, Samuel K. Towle, Haverhill, promoted surgeon 30th Regt. Feb. 28, 1862; Edward B. Mason, Boston, honorably discharged Aug. 1, 1863, deceased; Samuel L. Dutton, Chelmsford, promoted surgeon 40th Regt. Mar. 1, 1864; Edward R. Cutler, promoted surgeon Dec. 5, 1864; George H. Larrabee, Edgartown, honorably discharged Mar. 14, 1864; George E. Mason, Providence, R. I., mustered out July 31, 1865.

Second Regiment, Heavy Artillery: Surgeons, Hall Curtis, Boston, honorably discharged May 10, 1864; James Emmerton, Salem, mustered out Sept. 3, 1865; assistant surgeons, Dixie C. Hoyt, Milford, died during yellow fever epidemic at Newbern, N. C., Nov. 1, 1864; James Henry Denny, Boston, mustered out Sept. 3, 1865; John C. Barrington, Chelsea, mustered out Sept. 3, 1865.

Third Regiment, Heavy Artillery: Surgeon, William Nichols, Jr., Boston, mustered out Sept. 18, 1865; assistant surgeon, George E. Pinkham, Farmington, N. H., mustered out Sept. 18, 1865.

Fourth Regiment, Heavy Artillery: Surgeon, John Stearns, Boston, mustered out June 17, 1865; assistant surgeon, John F. Saville, Quincy, mustered out June 17, 1865.

#### ONE YEAR REGIMENTS.

Sixty-First Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, James Oliver, Athol, mustered out July 16, 1865; assistant surgeons, James Oliver, promoted surgeon Oct. 18, 1864; Rufus A. Olloque, Boston, mustered out July 16, 1865.

In the nine months' regiments the colonels appointed the surgeons and assistant surgeons, the candidates having first been examined and approved by the medical commission. Surgeon Dale commented unfavorably on this condition of affairs, but says in closing: "I am happy to add that thus far, in the nine months' regiments, no other motive than the desire to secure the most competent surgeons has influenced the officers, and they have been fortunate in securing faithful and experienced men."

## NINE MONTHS' REGIMENTS.

- Third Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Alfred A. Stocker, Cambridge, honorably discharged, commissioned surgeon 58th Regt. Oct. 16, 1863; assistant surgeon, Woodbridge C. Howe, Mattapoisett, mustered out June 26, 1863.
- Fourth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, James Waldock, Roxbury, mustered out Aug. 28, 1863; assistant surgeons, Edward Norton, Blandford, mustered out, commissioned assistant surgeon 59th Regt. Jan. 13, 1864; Joseph F. Gould, Boston, mustered out Aug. 28, 1863.
- Fifth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, William Ingalls, Winchester, mustered out Aug. 28, 1863, commissioned surgeon 59th Regt. Oct. 13, 1863; assistant surgeon, Dixie C. Hoyt, Milford, mustered out and commissioned assistant surgeon 2d Heavy Artillery, Aug. 24, 1863.
- Sixth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Walter Burnham, Lowell, mustered out June 3, 1863; assistant surgeons, Otis W. Humphrey and George E. Pinkham, Lowell, mustered out June 3, 1863.
- Eighth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Charles Haddock, Beverly; assistant surgeon, John L. Robinson, Wenham, mustered out August 17, 1863.
- Forty-Second Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Ariel I. Cummings, Roxbury, died in rebel prison, Texas; assistant surgeons, Thomas B. Hitchcock, Newton, discharged July 22, 1864; R. B. Heintzleman, Philadelphia, Pa., mustered out Aug. 20, 1863.
- Forty-Third Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, A. Carter Webber, Cambridge, mustered out July 30, 1863; assistant surgeons, Augustus Mason, Brighton, resigned; Henry O. Marcy, Cambridge, mustered out July 30, 1863.
- Forty-Fourth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Robert Ware, Boston, died at Newbern, N. C., April 10, 1863; Theodore W. Fisher, Medway, mustered out June 18, 1863; assistant surgeons, Theodore W. Fisher, promoted surgeon April 10, 1863; Daniel McPhee, Boston, mustered out June 18, 1863.
- Forty-Fifth Regiment Infantry: Surgeon, Samuel Kneeland; assistant surgeons, Joshua B. Treadwell and Daniel McLean, all of Boston, mustered out July 7, 1863.
- Forty-Sixth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, James H. Waterman, Westfield, mustered out July 29, 1863; assistant surgeon, Thomas Gilfillan, Cummington, assistant surgeon 59th Regt., Dec. 12, 1863.
- Forty-Seventh Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, John Blackmer, Somerville, mustered out Sept. 1, 1863; assistant surgeons, Frederick W. Mercer, Boston, commissioned surgeon 4th Regiment, Cavalry, Sept. 3, 1863; Charles F. Barnard, Boston, mustered out Sept. 1, 1863.
- Forty-Eighth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Yorick G. Hurd, Amesbury; assistant surgeon, Francis F. Brown, Sudbury, mustered out Sept. 3, 1863.
- Forty-Ninth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Frederick Winsor, Boston; assistant surgeons, Albert P. Rice, Springfield, and Joseph B. Reynolds, Concord, all mustered out Sept. 1, 1863.
- Fiftieth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, William Cogswell, Bradford, mustered out Aug. 24, 1863; assistant surgeons, Nathaniel W. French, Concord, N. H., died of typhoid at Baton Rouge, La., April 21, 1863; John Hancock, Pawtucket, R. I., mustered out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Fifty-First Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, George Jewett, Fitchburg, mustered out July 27, 1863; assistant surgeon, Paul C. Garvin, commissioned assistant surgeon, 40th Regt., Oct. 6, 1863.
- Fifty-Second Regiment, Infantry: Surgeons, Frederick A. Sawyer, Greenfield; assistant surgeons, John M. Richardson, Chesterfield, and Henry M. Sabin, Lenox, all mustered out Aug. 14, 1863.
- Fifty-Third Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, J. Q. A. McCollister, Groton, mustered out Sept. 2, 1863; assistant surgeons, William M. Barrett, Fitchburg, discharged Sept. 8, 1863; William L. Bond, Charlestown, mustered out Sept. 2, 1863.

## ONE HUNDRED DAYS REGIMENTS.

- Fifth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Joshua B. Treadwell, Boston; assistant surgeon, George H. Jones, Boston, mustered out Nov. 16, 1864.
- Sixth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Walter Burnham, Lowell; assistant surgeons, William Bass, Lowell, and George W. Sargent, Lawrence, mustered out Oct. 27, 1864.
- Eighth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, John L. Robinson, Wenham; assistant surgeon, Ebenezer Hunt, Danvers, mustered out Nov. 10, 1864.
- Forty-Second Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Albert B. Robinson, Holden, mustered out Nov. 11, 1864.
- Sixtieth Regiment, Infantry: Surgeon, Frederick W. Mercer, mustered out Nov. 30, 1864, commissioned surgeon 20th Regt., Dec. 7, 1864; assistant surgeon, George H. Bowers, Boston, mustered out Nov. 30, 1864.

Among these, several took a more active part in the campaigns of the republic. Lucius Manlius Sargent, Jr., born at Boston, September 15, 1826, was commissioned surgeon of the Second Regiment, Massachusetts Vols., May 28, 1861. He was commissioned captain, First Massachusetts Cavalry, October 31, 1861, and served near Charleston, S. C., until August 19, 1862, when eight companies were detailed to join the army of the Potomac. During the succeeding campaigns he was engaged with his commands at Kelly's Fort, Sulphur Springs, Stephensburg and Aldie Station, and at the latter place was left for dead on the field, but was only wounded, a rifle ball having glanced around the ribs under the skin for nearly one half of the circumference of the body. He was promoted major January 2, 1864, and commissioned lieutenant-colonel of his regiment September 30, but was killed by a shell at Bellfield, Va., December 9th of the same year, while in the act of recalling a detachment exposed to the fire of a strong fieldwork.

Dr. Horatio S. Soule, of Winthrop, Mass., commissioned assistant surgeon of the Fifty-Sixth Regiment, Infantry, November 3, 1863, not only served faithfully his whole term of service, but during the fighting in the Wilderness, for several days commanded a detachment of light artillery, which had lost its officers, and repeatedly carried his guns into action.

In 1862 the Massachusetts Medical Commission addressed to Brigadier-General Wm. A. Hammond, Surgeon-General U. S. A., a remonstrance against the great abuses incident to the employment of inexperienced surgeons, "many of whom, in common with the rest of mankind, labored under the delusion that the main business of the surgeon is to perform operations instead of preventing them."

They therefore "recommend that the surgeon-general, U. S. A., be respectfully requested to appoint a sufficient number of surgeons, whose duty should be a general supervision of the wounded in examining personally so far as can be done—and to decide as to the primary surgical treatment in the case presented, and if any operation is deemed

necessary, to direct a suitable person to perform it, and at the proper time etc., etc."

A communication was at the same time addressed to Hon. E. M. Stanton, secretary of war, advising him of the submission of this remonstrance.

A very courteous reply from Surgeon-General Hammond acknowledged the existence of the evils referred to, and assured the commission of his hearty co-operation, but also stated, "that first class surgeons had not come forward for field service with the alacrity which is to be desired, and I am sorry to see so little stress, in many of the states, upon the qualifications of regimental medical officers."

There is no doubt that eventually many gallant soldiers were saved from death or needless mutilation by reforms thus initiated.

In 1862, the following civilian surgeons were sent to the front and rendered efficient service: February 2, Dr. Albert Hitchcock to Roanoke Island, and on May 2 and September 19, to other posts. March 3, Dr. J. B. Upham, Samuel Kneeland, Boston; J. C. Batchelder, Templeton; and R. R. Clarke, Northbridge, to Newbern, N. C.; April 10, Drs. Samuel Cabot, George H. Gay, R. M. Hodges, Luther Parke, Jr., and S. C. Hartwell, Jr., to aid Massachusetts troops near Yorktown, Va.; also Dr. William G. Breck to assist those wounded at the battle of Corinth, Miss., and Dr. William Nichols, Jr., to Fortress Munroe. April 29, Dr. James M. Newell of Sutton to North Carolina. He was afterwards detailed as acting surgeon 48th Pennsylvania Vols., and was drowned while endeavoring to save some women and children from a sinking transport laden with convalescents under his charge. May 1, Drs. Henry Shaw, J. R. Bronson, A. R. Becker; May 9, Dr. Benj. J. Cushing to Fortress Monroe. May 12, Drs. A. B. Hall, William H. Page and Stephen Mighell to the Army of the Potomac. May 16, Drs. Josiah D. Wilber and John G. Perry to assist Dr. Cushing at Fortress Monroe. May 20, Dr. A. R. Rice to the First Massachusetts Cavalry, Hilton Head, N. C. May 21, upon a requisition from Surgeon Tripler, medical director, U. S. A., Drs. Joseph Sargent, William Mack, A. LeBaron Munroe, Frederick Ainsworth, William H. Thorndike, Joel Seaverns; A. J. Cummings, William D. Lamb, J. H. Morse, B. Carpenter, F. A. Howe, Benj. T. Crocker, Jona. Brown, H. H. Fuller, J. S. G. Hitchcock, J. Q. A. McColleston, Wm. R. Fletcher, D. D. Seymour, B. F. Campbell, A. A. Stocker, Asa Millett, Joseph Underwood, F. C. Green and A. D. Blanchard, twenty-five in all, were sent to the assistance of the Army of Potomac, then near Williamsburg, Va.

On June 2, Dr. Henry J. Bigelow was detailed, and was later employed on special service by the secretary of war.

July 1, 3, 7 and 8, on the requisition of the surgeon-general of the United States, Drs. E. G. Pierce, Charles L. Swasey, Benjamin F. Burgess,

Seneca Sargent, E. B. Allen, R. Cresson Stiles, S. H. Hurd, J. E. Whiting, Ira Perry, Isaac H. Stearns, John W. Hinkley, Frederick Winsor and Joseph W. Clift were detailed to assist the Army of the Potomac.

August 31, on an order from the secretary of war, Drs. W. G. Breck and Alfred Lambert of Springfield; Foster Hooper, R. T. Davis, Joseph W. Heartley and William C. Bennett of Fall River; J. L. Miller, Timothy Childs, F. A. Cady, D. B. Nelson, J. H. Manning, A. M. Smith, and E. H. Sexton of Pittsfield; C. C. Holcombe of Lee; and George H. Gay, C. H. Stedman, H. G. Clark, J. H. Dix, H. J. Bowditch, C. E. Buckingham, G. F. Bigelow, J. H. Blake, William H. Page, A. Ruppaner, S. H. Carney, A. P. Barker, J. S. Flint, H. A. Martin, D. B. Morse, J. H. Warren, D. McB. Thaxter, James Waldo, B. F. Wing, Wm. S. Coffin, J. G. Arnold, H. L. Shaw, J. Green, P. P. Ingalls and R. J. Goodwin of Boston and vicinity were detailed under the direction of Dr. George H. Gay, and reported to Surgeon-General Hammond, U. S. A. They carried with them, and on separate trains, over a hundred tons of supplies contributed by the surgeons and charitable associations of Massachusetts, and finally received the following order:

Surgeon-General's Office, Washington, September 2, 1862.

The bearer, Dr. George H. Gay, and twenty-eight others, have permission to visit Centerville and Fairfax Stations, to report for duty to Medical Inspector Coolidge, U. S. A., or Dr. J. C. McKee, U. S. A. They are entitled to transportation and subsistence.

By authority of the Secretary of War,

(signed) WILLIAM A. HAMMOND,

Surgeon-General U. S. A.

Dr. Gay applied to the quartermaster at Alexandria for transportation, and was informed "that transportation to the places had been forbidden by superior officers only two hours previous." His report goes on to say:

"Members of our party then strolled about the city and visited different hospitals. Reports were made by different parties that the medical staff was amply supplied, although many sick and wounded were seen lying about on the sidewalks, upon the steps of the hospitals, and hotels unattended, to some of whom all care was refused by subordinates connected with the hospitals, until the individual efforts of certain members of our party compelled attention to the needs of the sufferers.

"Meeting with no co-operation here, Dr. Buckingham was detailed early on Wednesday, September 3, to report to the surgeon-general and await his instructions. Dr. Buckingham returned in the afternoon, and reported that the surgeon-general had no further need of our services."

The party returned to Washington and decided to make details to visit each and every hospital, in and around the capital, and to find out and visit every Massachusetts soldier and relieve his wants. This was



done very systematically and thoroughly, and the articles needed delivered directly to each patient. The report of several examiners showed a generally favorable condition of the patients in these hospitals. There was an almost universal want of clean underclothes, etc., which were promptly supplied by Dr. Gay and his assistants.

On Friday, September 3, Surgeon-General Hammond asked for two surgeons to proceed to a spot between Fairfax Court House and Centreville, where "many soldiers lay wounded and starving." Drs. C. H. Stedman and H. I. Bowditch of Boston volunteered their services, and started at 11 p. m. with a train of ambulances. The distance (twenty-two miles) was covered in about six hours, the horses being allowed to walk most of the way, although the night was cool and the loads very light. Dr. Stedman's report goes on to say "On arriving at our place of destination, lying about on the grass, or in an old house and its outhouses, we found one hundred and fifty soldiers suffering from gunshot wounds of every description, inflicted five or six days before. Two had been shot in the lungs; one through both thighs and the scrotum; some through the abdomen; in short, no portion of the body had escaped. Five surgeons of the army were in attendance, but for want of food and sleep these were nearly exhausted, and being able to perform but little duty, they requested me to remove some limbs, which operations were necessary to the more favorable transportation of the wounded to Washington."

Having performed these operations, dressed many wounds and visited a Confederate hospital some four miles away, to remove Captain Kelton of the Twenty-First Massachusetts, who had lost a leg; the ambulances were filled with the wounded and returned to Washington. Both surgeons testified to the kindness and skill of "Assistant Surgeon Joseph W. Harding of the Twenty-First Massachusetts and his associates, who had worn themselves out in their vain attempts to adequately relieve the sufferings of their comrades."

Both also testified to the utter incompetence, brutality and selfishness of the wagon-masters and drivers of the ambulance trains, then wholly in the hands of the quartermaster's department. This abuse was later in the course of the war largely remedied.

On Saturday, September 6, the First, Eleventh and Sixteenth Massachusetts Regiments were visited and supplied with underclothing, and arrangements were made for supplying the Thirteenth Regiment.

Most of the supplies not distributed were finally divided between the Sanitary Commission and the Association for the Relief of Massachusetts Soldiers, and the party returned to Massachusetts.

The extraordinary conduct of the medical and military authorities in refusing the aid of these skilful and patriotic surgeons, is thus commented upon by Surgeon-General Dale: "These surgeons left the state

under the direction of Dr. George H. Gay; they were detailed by your Excellency on the order of the honorable secretary of war; and it has not yet been satisfactorily ascertained why their services, which might have been invaluable, were not accepted by the authority to whom they were directed to report."

Drs. E. G. Pierce of Holyoke and J. H. Morse of Lawrence, detailed at earlier dates to the Army of the Potomac, never recovered from the exposures and hardships of their service, and died of disease then contracted, after their return home.

Ninety-five physicians and surgeons were appointed in this year for the several counties to examine such enrolled citizens as claimed exemption from draft by reason of disability. Their names, and the commendations bestowed on them for discreet performance of this unpleasant duty, will be found in Surgeon-General Dale's report of December 31, 1862.

On May, 26, 1863, Dr. Anson P. Hooker, surgeon of the Twenty-Sixth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, was commissioned assistant surgeon-general of Massachusetts. The only medical supplies purchased this year were for the state camps, and from December 1, 1862, to October 1, 1863, amounted to only \$1,086.13.

The Medical Commission this year lost by death, Dr. George Hayward, the distinguished and honored head of the Board, and by resignation Dr. John Ware. Drs. John C. Dalton and Samuel Abbott of Boston were appointed to fill the vacancies.

In 1864, Surgeon-General Dale calls special attention to the loss of Dr. William H. Heath of Stoneham, surgeon Second Massachusetts Infantry, who at date of August 14, 1864, "died from fever contracted in the arduous discharge of duty during the march of General Sherman from Atlanta. The respect shown to his memory by those with whom he had long been associated attests how deeply the loss of this lamented and faithful surgeon was felt."

Of Dr. Dixie C. Hoyt of Milford, assistant surgeon of the Fifth Massachusetts Volunteers, (nine months' regiment) and later of the Second Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, who died of yellow fever at Newbern, N. C., November 4, 1864, he says: "Dr. Hoyt, humane and skillful in his profession, fell a victim to the prevailing epidemic at Newbern, the sufferings consequent upon which he fearlessly and faithfully endeavored to mitigate by unceasing toil and self-sacrifice."

During 1864, the following details were made on the call of the surgeon-general, U. S. A: May 8, 1854, Drs. Alfred Hitchcock, Fitchburg; A. H. Blanchard, Sherborn; Frederick Winsor, Cambridge; J. C. Harris, West Cambridge; J. B. Taylor, East Cambridge; George T. Bigelow, John P. Ordway, J. B. Treadwell, Wm. H. Page, M. C. Green and Algeron Coolidge of Boston. May 12, Drs. Francis Leland, Milford;

Wm. D. Lamb, Lawrence; O. O. Davis, North Andover; Asa Millet, Bridgewater; R. J. P. Goodwin, Milford. June 5, Drs. John C. Warren, Edward Wigglesworth, James P. Brewster and B. A. Sawyer, of Boston. June 7, Drs. C. A. Ahern and C. G. Coleman, Boston. June 11, Drs. James Holland, Westfield, and H. H. F. Whittemore of Marblehead.

Of the services rendered by these gentlemen General Dale says: "The unremitting and skilful service of the above surgeons obtained from the medical directors of the corps to which they were assigned, an acknowledgement of their great indebtedness to them in the emergency requiring their assistance."

In February, Surgeon-General Dale took charge of the Massachusetts agents, viz: Lieutenant-Colonel Tufts at Washington; William Robinson, Esq., at Baltimore; Lieutenant-Colonel Robert R. Corson at Philadelphia; Colonel Frank E. Howe at New York and A. L. Stimson at Hilton Head, S. C. Colonel How served gratuitously this year, and Mr. Stimson resigned before its close. Their duties were: First to visit, by agent or deputy, all trains or transports conveying sick or wounded soldiers, and to see that every Massachusetts man "received every attention which it was their right to claim from government, or their privilege to claim from private munificence." Second, to make weekly returns of all arrivals with the regiment, company, residence and condition of each soldier, and the particular hospital to which he was transferred. Third, to make similar weekly returns of all remaining in the general hospitals, adding an account of all deaths and departures; giving, in short, "a full statement of what becomes of every man who may fall under the agent's notice." Fourth, to give attention to the statements of discharged soldiers who may fall into distress, secure their admission into the public hospitals, and otherwise provide gratuitously for such cases as appear meritorious till the state can be communicated with; and to procure from the military authorities the papers necessary to forward soldiers to their homes, and generally to render such service as any exigency not contemplated may call for.

The above statements, however, give but a very meagre idea of the scope of humanitarian work carried on by the medical department of Massachusetts in the Civil War. Military couriers were sent to meet and accompany parties of invalid soldiers; supplies forwarded and distributed in the field; the private correspondence of the soldiers and their friends facilitated; news procured of those still in the rebel hospitals or prisons; and in short, everything was done which could assist the living, care for the heroic dead or console the afflicted.

The following brief resume of the work of these agents in 1863 may give some idea of the invaluable service rendered in this way during the Rebellion.

Colonel Frank E. Howe, New York: "Soldiers visited in hospitals, registered and aided, 5,164; soldiers lodged and otherwise aided at the New England Soldier's Relief Association, 5,393, of which number five died and were decently cared for. Number of families given state aid 41; total 10,598. These figures do not include regiments and detachments passing through the city, or a large number of miscellaneous calls for assistance or information which were duly attended to."

Agent William Robinson at Baltimore: "Soldiers visited in the hospitals, 1,000; transportation furnished to 150 persons; expenses and disbursements, \$1,074.06."

Gardner Tufts, Washington, D. C.: "Soldiers visited in hospitals, 6,588; died, 540; bodies sent home, 90; number of names reported from other sections, 11,428. Pay collected for 640; assisted from stores of this department, 6,473; supplied outside, 4,000; letters written and copied, 6,272; telegrams sent, 610; recommendations for passes given, 1,000; number supplied with Thanksgiving dinner, 22,000; soldiers' tickets sold, 1,700; total number of soldiers visited, supplied and reported, 18,877; articles specially distributed, 33,547."

The agency paid out for expenses, \$11,556.99; of relief fund, \$3525.26; sending home bodies, \$5,412.50; soldiers' tickets, \$13,600; paid out bounties, (recruiting department) \$90,000.00; Thanksgiving dinner, \$3,433.00; pay collected and disbursed, \$95,962.00; aggregate of money transactions, \$213,752.59.

The Thanksgiving dinner above referred to was proposed by S. B. Stebbins, Esq., of the Union City Committee of Boston, Mass., on November 18, 1864. It was tendered to all the soldiers in Washington, irrespective of their states. Fifteen and three-quarter tons of poultry, pies, etc., were distributed to 18,000 patients in thirty-six different hospitals, and also to the men of twenty-six companies of the Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, Sixteenth Light Battery, and other scattered detachments.

The Baltimore agency was closed May 31, 1865; that at Philadelphia, July 31, and that at New York, November 1. The agency at Washington, under Lieutenant-Colonel Tufts was continued through the year.

In this year "the decease of Dr. John C. Dalton, appointed on the medical commission in 1863, ended a long, honorable and patriotic career, whose closing efforts were devoted to the service of his state and country. He was succeeded on the board by Dr. R. W. Hooper."

In accordance with G. O. No. 1, A. G. O., January 6, 1865, a register was established in the office of the surgeon-general, wherein disabled officers and soldiers seeking employment, could register their names, ages, former occupations, occupations sought, dates and places of enlistment, terms of service, character of disabilities, references and present addresses.

The number of applicants in 1865 was 2,132, including all who had lost a limb, 83 otherwise wounded and 247 more or less disabled by disease contracted in the service. Number furnished employment, 701; of whom 91 had lost a limb, 25 suffered from wounds and 106 were more or less disabled by disease. Registered but unemployed, 1,431; of whom 220 had lost a limb, 58 were otherwise wounded and 41 were disabled by disease. The total expense to the state was \$2,051.68, including \$738.08 expended in organizing the Soldier's Messenger Corps. Probably most of the undisable officers and soldiers registered obtained employment for themselves.

An association of returned officers under Colonel H. S. Russell, aided this work greatly with funds and by personal exertion. The street railroad companies, places of public amusement, private charity and a host of municipal and social organizations began to aid those who no longer had a legal claim on the state or national government.

In closing his report of the last year of the great Civil War, Surgeon-General Dale, in chronicling the measures active or proposed for the assistance of discharged soldiers, said:

"I venture to remark, however, that this committee will cheerfully bear record, that such of our soldiers as were born or reared in New England, together with those of our adopted citizens who understood the magnitude of the issues at stake, entered the service from a love of country, and with a full knowledge of its perils. Accepting the responsibilities of war, with its hardships and sacrifices, they served as good soldiers, and most of those who escaped its dangers, on their return to the peaceful pursuits of their former occupations, are now good citizens, with the record of a full service and an honorable discharge. Of this class, there are but few who claim or ask any consideration from the state, save that recognition which is due the patriotic citizen and the brave soldier. The exceptions, are those who will carry to the grave the disabilities they incurred in the line of their duty, and who are cut off by the character of these disabilities from all means of support.

"To such, Massachusetts will deal out no niggard charity, nor will she forget the families of those who fell in defence of her rights.

"The Commonwealth will not cease to remember the proud encomium she has won. 'All the world has seen during the war, that wherever a Massachusetts column passes a great people follow it, not only to stimulate the living to fight, endure and conquer, but to place beneath the suffering the great arm of support and consolation, and to whisper in the ear of the dying of the brightness of eternal anticipation for the brave and good who die for their country.'"

Surgeon-General Dale's duties in 1866 included, beside the purchase of medical supplies for the state militia, an exhaustive statement of the

services rendered to the disabled veterans of the war, and to the heirs and families of those deceased in the service. The military hospital at Rainsford Island was discontinued, and during this year Surgeon Edward R. Wheeler and Assistant Surgeon John W. Parsons of the Twenty-Fourth Regiment and Surgeon Samuel A. Davis and Assistant Surgeon Cornelius S. Jackson of the Thirtieth were mustered out with their respective regiments, thus releasing from duty the last Massachusetts surgeon of the Civil War.

The following excerpts from reports of Massachusetts surgeons who served in the Civil War will be of interest:

Assistant Surgeon W. W. Keene Jr., Fifth Massachusetts Volunteers:

"The Fifth Massachusetts Infantry left Alexandria July 16, 1851, in the brigade of Colonel Ambrose E. Burnside. Our supply of medical stores was amply sufficient, but we had no means of transporting them, and they had to be left with the teams of the quartermaster to be forwarded from Alexandria. The first hospital I was at during the battle (First Bull Run) was at a spring about half a mile beyond Sedley Church, near which our brigade crossed Bull Run. Here we had instruments and dressings, water and a canteen of brandy. Afterwards, I went, by order, to the church, and so far as I know of, there was no other detail made to attend to the fatigue duties at this hospital, such as removing wounded, preparing food, bringing water, etc. I left this hospital between four and five o'clock in the afternoon, on the approach of the Confederates, with Colonel Lawrence, who was wounded. The wounded were exposed that night to rain, but it was not uncomfortably cold. The operations I saw were all amputations, or extractions of balls, but the main thing done was to apply primary water dressings. There were many cases where simple cerate was unwisely used. It is proper to state, in extenuation of the faults observed, that they were mostly, in my opinion, due to the utter lack of experience on the part of medical officers, and I by no means exclude myself, of both the mode of obtaining supplies and the proper persons to apply to."

Surgeon Daniel P. Smith, Eighteenth Massachusetts, made brigade surgeon December, 1861, was sent January 23, 1862, to General G. H. Thomas, whose victory over Zollicoffer at Fish Creek, had just been reported at Louisville. "Although only seventy-five miles, a wagon was often a week on the road. Reached Somerset, (ten miles from the field) on the 29th. I found the little village crowded with sick and wounded. Churches and the farmhouses had been pressed into service. . . . The roads were of such a wretched description, that, taking into account the continuous rain, it was wonderful that transportation of them to Somerset had been effected."

After Shiloh, "on the part of General Grant's army, there appeared to be a want of foresight in providing for the probable wants of the wounded. The most painful feature, however, that I encountered was the inhumanity of the state agents. One steamboat captain, I remember, who came from Cincinnati with a steamboat finely fitted out with every hospital convenience, flatly refused to receive any but Ohio wounded upon his boat, and entirely ignored the authority of any medical officer."

Charles S. Tripler, medical director, U. S. A., in "Operations Medical Department, Army of the Potomac, U. S. A., July 1861 to July 1862," says: "On April 16th, six civilian surgeons deputed by the governor of Massachusetts, by authority of the secretary of war, arrived in camp and offered their services. They were particularly charged to look after the Massachusetts Volunteers, but with a zeal as creditable as it was rare, and a patriotism as conspicuous as it was disinterested, they expressed their readiness and their desire to render their services wherever they could be most useful. The party consisted of Drs. Cabot, Lodge, Gay, Parke, Hartwell and Homans. Some of these gentlemen were assigned to the Massachusetts troops in Sumner's corps; the others fitted up a portion of the tents on the Ship Point road as a field hospital for regulars. They had precisely the same supplies as the other surgeons. With these means they were soon at the head of a model establishment for the field. After the evacuation of Yorktown, and the battle of Williamsburg, they repaired promptly to the town and there rendered important services to the wounded. . . . Here I was joined by a party of able and distinguished surgeons from New York, consisting of Drs. James R. Wood, Daniel L. Rogers, Kruehowitz, Sonté, Ayers and others. Drs. Cabot, Hitchcock and Bronson of Massachusetts were also promptly on the ground. The hospitals were distributed among these gentlemen, and I need scarcely say that the wounded received at their hands the most prompt and skilful attention."

On May 24th. "I then inspected the hospital at White House, made contracts with nineteen physicians from Massachusetts, sent promptly by Surgeon-General W. J. Dale, in answer to a telegram from me; placed eight of them on duty at White House, and sent the remainder to Yorktown to relieve as many regimental officers as were forthwith ordered to their regiments."

Assistant Surgeon John W. Foye, Eleventh Massachusetts, July 21, 1861, Bull Run: "In the afternoon, a medical officer of rank visited the hospital at Sedley's Ford and left it optional to go to the rear or remain. Surgeon Luther V. Bell, Eleventh Massachusetts, Dr. Curtis, a civilian surgeon, and Chaplain Parker, Second New Hampshire Volunteers, remained until all the wounded capable of being moved had been sent to the rear."

Medical Director Letterman says of Assistant Surgeon A. A. Kendall of the Twelfth Massachusetts Volunteers, who was killed by the enemy while with his regiment in an engagement. "He was a faithful and efficient officer, active and zealous in his duty to which he fell a victim in the midst of battle."

Manassas, second Bull Run. John W. Foye, surgeon U. S. Volunteers, on August 26, 1862 started on a freight train from Warrenton Junction, Va., for Alexandria to secure supplies, but near Bristow Station the train received the fire of two companies of Stuart's cavalry deployed as skirmishers, and five Louisiana regiments in line of battle. The train was hurled from the track while going at full speed and during the night destroyed by fire. Of seven passengers, five were killed by the enemy's fire. At 8 a. m. the next morning, Wednesday, August 27th, a company of the Twelfth Pennsylvania Cavalry, which had been out, were returning to Bristow but ran upon the enemy before they were aware of their presence. A section of artillery opened up on them at five hundred yards, and they were utterly routed.

Surgeon Foye says: "I asked for and obtained permission from Major Wheat, provost marshal of Jackson's command, to attend the wounded captured in this affair, but the want of appliances limited my treatment. In the fight which followed that day at Bristow's Station, the number of Union prisoners was augmented, although the Confederate troops were gradually forced back to Manassas. Such of them as were wounded were turned over to my care, but at sunset, unable to hold the field, they paroled the wounded, taking officers and uninjured men to Manassas.

"At 3 p. m., August 28th, prisoners followed the main body of Jackson's force towards Centerville, crossing Bull Run at Blackburn's Ford, and going across the country in circuitous routes to Sedley Church, which they reached at 5 p. m. The privates were then paroled, but the officers were retained. About sunset a brisk skirmish took place, in which thirty Confederates were wounded. Sedley church was filled up by Surgeon McGuire, medical director of Jackson's command, and I obtained permission to treat any of our wounded that should come in.

"Monday, August 29th. Second battle at Manassas. Church filled with wounded. At 10 a. m. the enemy having been steadily forced back, the church became untenable; the wounded were hastily moved back across the ford and the enemies' wagons, thirteen in number, started for Aldie, the prisoners, myself included, following under a strong guard. Returned on Sunday, 31, to Sedley's Ford.

"Monday, September 1. Joined by 30 officers and 1,250 privates captured August 26 and 29. Privates paroled, officers taken to Richmond September 2. Foye released, evening of September 1, accompanied paroled



men to Saltillo farm, near Chantilly, where the men were ordered back to Centerville and Surgeon Foye was allowed to go to Chantilly to look out for the wounded with a surgeon of the Brooklyn Zouaves. Foye there got a pass from Fitz-Hugh Lee, and started for Washington via Fairfax. On September 4, he rejoined his regiment near Alexandria. It had fought at Bristow Station August 27, Manassas August 29, Chantilly September 1, and out of 400 effectives, had lost thirteen killed and seventy wounded."

Later Foye, at Fredericksburg, says that there were good arrangements for the care of the wounded, and at Chancellorsville that the ambulance corps was efficient.

Brigade Surgeon W. H. Church, U. S. Volunteers, says in his report of the attack on Roanoke Island, February 7, 1862: "Surgeon J. N. Marcus Rice of the Twenty-Fifth Massachusetts Volunteers was wounded in the midst of his very arduous duties. The ball grazed his side, fortunately without inflicting a severe wound. . . . The largest hospital at the north end of the island I have placed in charge of Surgeon S. A. Green of the Twenty-Fourth Massachusetts Volunteers, and Surgeon George A. Otis of the Twenty-Seventh Massachusetts has the management of the two hospitals near the fort in the center of the island."

Of the battle of Newbern, N. C. he says: "The conduct of Surgeon George Derby and Assistant Surgeon S. E. Stone of the Twenty-Third Massachusetts Volunteers is deserving of special mention. Before the action opened, I located them at a point which proved to be in the immediate range of the enemy's fire. They must have remained there two hours before I thought of their position, where I found them quietly performing their operations with the balls flying thick and fast. I immediately ordered Dr. Derby to remove his wounded to a house in a more protected position. Drs. Upham, Kneeland, Batchelder and Clarke joined us at Hatteras Inlet and were of great assistance both in field and hospital. Dr. Bowman B. Breed, Surgeon of the Eighth, was afterwards medical director at Newbern."

Assistant Surgeon-General Colonel Anson P. Hooker was retired from duty on July 1, 1866. The medical staff of the active militia was chiefly composed of men who had served in the field. The report of this year received a significant interest, from the embodiment therein of a list of 2,123 names of men and officers who had died in rebel prisons.

In 1868, the Surgeon-General's duties were chiefly connected with the care of disabled soldiers, and the presentation of claims for arrears of pay, bounty, pensions, etc., due from the general government to Massachusetts soldiers of the war.

His annual report of 1869 shows that the camp ground at Hull had been supplied with pure water through tubular wells, and that the camps at Boxford and Springfield showed a great degree of improvement in

sanitary arrangements. He suggested innovations in the supply of hospitals, tentage, etc., and "a vigorous physical examination by the proper medical officers" of all recruits.

On December 31, 1873, died Colonel Anson P. Hooker, assistant surgeon-general of Massachusetts during the Civil War. Surgeon-General Dale in his report for that year pays his memory the tribute of a brief but impressive obituary. He says in the report for that year:

"On December 1, 1874, the Medical Commission of Massachusetts instituted by Governor Andrew on the order of the secretary of war—a board of civil surgeons for the examination of candidates for the medical staff of the volunteer force of the state, during the war and since—were relieved from duty.

"The long, honorable and patriotic services of this board, voluntary and without pay, were gratefully acknowledged by your Honor on behalf of the Commonwealth."

General Order No. 35, A. G. O., Mass., dated December 1, 1874, designated a board of surgeons from the volunteer force of the state, for the examination of candidates for the medical staff of the militia.

Surgeon B. Joy Jeffries, of the First Corps Cadets, furnished the following physical statistics gathered from the examination of seventy-two cadets, made at Camp Palfrey, Nahant, July 21-25, 1874:

"Born in Boston, 44; other parts of Massachusetts, 16; New Hampshire, 4; Maine, 3; New Brunswick, 1; New Orleans, 1; Washington, 1; Philadelphia, 1; England, 1. Occupation: Medicine, 4; law, 6; architects, 2; professional students, 6; in business, 41; clerks, 12; farmer, 1. Weight: Heaviest, 219; lightest, 114; average, 148. Height: Tallest, 6 feet 11-2 inches, shortest, 5 feet 2 1-2 inches; average, 5 feet 8 inches. Age: Oldest, 52 years; youngest, 21 years; average 30 years."

In his report for 1875, Surgeon-General Dale includes notes of similar physical statistics by Surgeon Wm. F. Southard, of 114 men of the Second Corps Cadets:

"Born in Salem, 65; other parts of Massachusetts, 37; Maine, 4; New Hampshire, 1; Rhode Island, 1; New York, 3; Virginia, 1; Connecticut, 1. Occupation: Medicine, 1; law, 3; clerks, 40; farmers, 4; in business 66. Weight: Heaviest, 215 pounds; lightest, 129; average, 141. Height: Tallest, 6 feet; shortest, 5 feet 3 inches; average, 5 feet 7 inches. Age: Oldest, 55 years; youngest, 19 years; average, 28 years."

In 1876, the report shows that "on the reorganization of the militia, G. O. No. 24, series of 1876, A. G. O., announced the following officers as detailed for service on the board of medical officers for the examination of appointees for the medical staff, viz: Colonel Joshua B. Treadwell, assistant surgeon-general, president; Lieutenant-Colonel Robert Amory, medical director 1st Brigade; Lieutenant-Colonel John L. Hil-

dreth, medical director 2d Brigade; Major Edward J. Foster, surgeon Fifth Regiment Infantry; Major Daniel Dana, surgeon 1st Battalion, Heavy Artillery."

In 1878, the books, records and papers relating to the prosecution of soldiers' claims against the general government were turned over to the adjutant-general of the Commonwealth.

The report of this year in regard to the sanitary, hygienic and meteorological conditions at the yearly encampment, shows a most creditable and intelligent appreciation and performance of duty by the medical staff.

In 1880, there was reported considerable intestinal disease from the use of well water at the state camp at South Framingham.

On Tuesday, September 5, 1882, during the encampment of the 2d Brigade at Framingham, the sky was completely overcast with a yellow haze, which caused it to be styled for years afterward the "yellow day." Medical Director Charles H. Williams thus describes this phenomenon:

"The whole sky was covered with a uniform yellow haze, probably resulting from the forest fires. The day was quite dark, and was so filled with the yellow tints, that it quite cut off the yellow rays from all objects, causing the grass to appear a bluish green, and giving to any lamp or candle a whitish look like an electric light. This appearance lasted only one day, and was followed by a day of excessive heat."

In the report for 1882, the formation of an ambulance corps is for the first time suggested.

The death, after arriving home, of Major J. A. Fleming of the Ninth Regiment Infantry, taken sick at camp, is reported in 1883 by Surgeon-General Orran Geo. Cilley, who succeeded Surgeon-General Dale January 4, 1883. General Cilley had previously served as surgeon of the First Battalion Cavalry, M.V. M., from February 1, 1873, to April 28, 1876.

The report of Surgeon-General Alfred F. Holt, who was appointed January 3, 1884, recommends strongly the formation of an ambulance corps, and the building of a permanent hospital. It also announced



SURGEON-GENERAL ORRAN G. CILLEY,  
1883-1884.

the decease of Surgeon N. S. Chamberlain of the Sixth Regiment Infantry. General Holt had served in the Civil War in Company C, Third Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry, from April 17 to July 21, 1861, as private and hospital steward; was made assistant surgeon Thirtieth Massachusetts Volunteers, February 20, 1862; promoted surgeon First Texas Cavalry, December 1, 1862; and he became major December, 1863, and colonel in January, 1865.

In 1885, he chronicles the legislation which authorized an ambulance corps, and its initiation at the annual encampment of the 2d Brigade by Lieutenant Samuel B. Clark, its first commander. Its uniforms, equipments, stretchers, etc., are described and were practically identical with those now in use.

In 1889, the camp ground at South Framingham had been supplied with a regular water service from a pond in the vicinity. During the early winter of this year, prizes were offered to the members of the Ambulance Corps to encourage them to learn to apply such material as can readily be found near a battlefield, as temporary splints for broken limbs. The prizes were as follows:

"To the soldier making and applying the neatest and best, temporary, long splint for a broken thigh, ten dollars.

"To the soldier making the neatest and best, temporary splint for a leg broken below the knee, or for an arm broken above the elbow, five dollars.

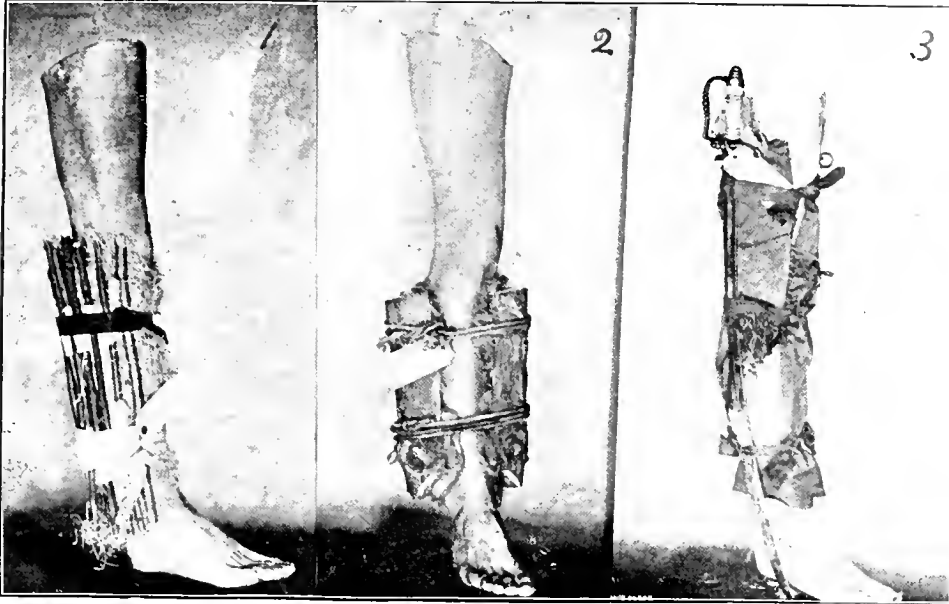
"These splints may be made of straw, brush, pieces of boards, or such other material as would probably be found in the vicinity of a battlefield. The material must, of course, be obtained outside of the armories, but the work of preparing the splints and their applications to the plaster form, (if these are used) must be done in the armories, and under the supervision of the ambulance officers or



SURGEON-GENERAL ALFRED F. HOLT,  
184-1891.

the sergeants of the corps. Furthermore, these splints must be made with the knives, seissors, bandages, etc., supplied by the state, except that an axe or a hatchet may be used."

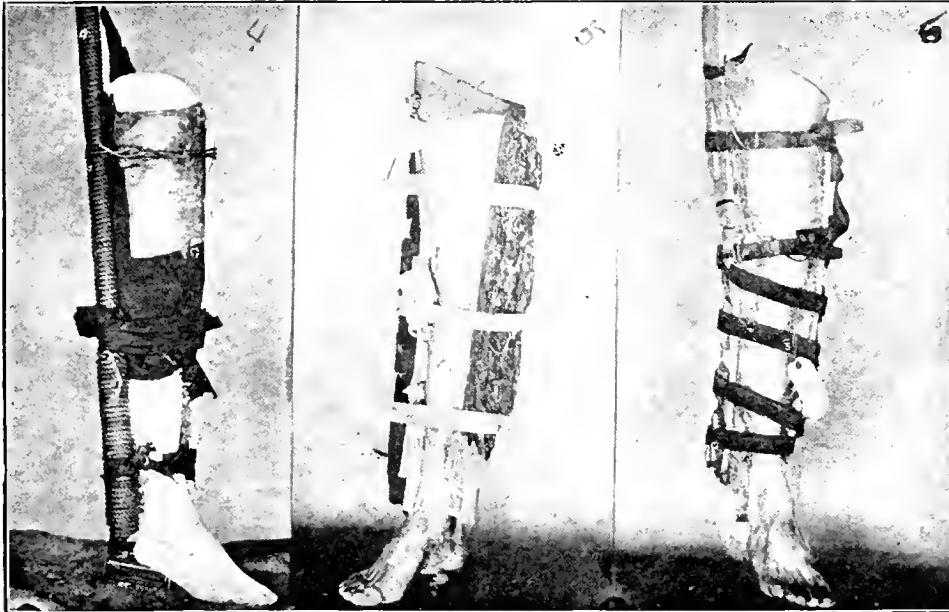
The prizes were awarded Thursday, November 28, there being



No. 1. Withes and Moss.

No. 2. Bark.

No. 3. Sword and Sheath.



No. 4. Rope-Bound Withes.

No. 5. Bark.

No. 6. Spliced Splints and Straps.

AMBULANCE CORPS EXHIBIT. EMERGENCY SPLINTS FOR LEG.



eighteen samples submitted, "applied to plaster forms furnished for the purpose. All the contestants had fully complied with the terms of the circulars, and the material used in preparing these temporary dressings was such as would be found anywhere, consisting of bark, twigs, pieces of wood, straw, table knives, etc., etc. Many of the dressings showed marked ingenuity and skill, in both the conception and application, and all of them gave practical evidence of careful and thoughtful work, showing a general knowledge of the reason for such appliances, and the purpose for which they were applied."

Photographs of these samples, shown to surgeons in other states and in Europe, have always elicited approval and surprise, and even incredulity, when the examiners were informed that they were the work of enlisted men of the Massachusetts militia.

The report for 1891 was submitted by Surgeon-General Kittredge, who succeeded General Holt January 8, 1891. His previous military service was as assistant surgeon of the Second Battalion Artillery April 27 to September 14, 1875; assistant surgeon Eighth Regiment, M.V.M., August 21, 1878; surgeon August 10, 1881, and medical director 2d Brigade staff March 7, 1882. He called attention to the imperfect condition of the field, operating and pocket cases, medicine chests, and "old, obsolete field companions" then in use; and also announced a return to the old method of having one firm purvey all the medical and surgical requisites.

In 1892, General Kittredge strongly recommended "that every officer and man before being accepted for the military service of the state, be given a thorough physical examination." He also recommended the establishment of a "systematic course of athletic exercises to improve their physique"; "the adoption of a working suit of duck, or other suitable material for drill and fatigue duty"; "a change in the knapsacks then in use;" the use of "fixed rations for all organizations, to be prepared after the most approved military methods", and the establishment of an "emergency ration."



SURGEON-GENERAL THOMAS J. KITTREDGE,  
1891-1894.

New orderly pouches were provided, and with the aid of Major William L. Richardson, surgeon First Corps Cadets; Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert L. Burrell, medical director 1st Brigade; Major David Clark, surgeon Second Regiment Infantry, and Major Charles H. Cogswell, surgeon First Battalion Cavalry, the details of the new outfit and a fixed and uniform supply table were agreed upon.

Desiring to furnish the ambulance corps opportunities for active and beneficial practice, Surgeon-General Kittredge offered their services to the superintendents of the Boston & Maine, Old Colony, New York & New England, and Boston & Albany railroad companies. The superin-

tendent of the Boston & Maine refused the offer with scant courtesy, but the other lines accepted it with thanks.

His report for 1893 showed improvement in nearly every department and detail of the state medical service.

Surgeon-General Kittredge was succeeded January 4, 1894, by General Herbert L. Burrell, who was commissioned assistant surgeon, First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M., August 3, 1882; transferred to First Regiment Infantry, March 10, 1883, resigning April 15, to be commissioned surgeon of the First Battalion Cavalry. This position he resigned May 26, 1886, and was made medical director, 1st Brigade, M. V. M., February 20, 1889. He continued to improve upon the very



SURGEON-GENERAL HERBERT L. BURRELL,  
1894-1895.

effective service established by his predecessors. An emergency chest, capable of being transformed into an operating table was this year devised, "first, to supply at camps and on tours of duty, such extraordinary and surgical supplies as might at any time be needed; second, that this emergency chest should serve as a part of the equipment of the Ambulance Corps to meet any public calamity. It is kept at the State House, and is issued on requisition to the senior surgeon on duty there."

He recommended in closing, the provision of certain instruments for the emergency chest; a revision of the medical officer's orderly pouch; an increase in the number of veterinary surgeons and veterinary hospitals for the isolation of infectious cases, etc.; the physical examination of all



recruits by paid officers; the designation of qualified soldiers as company bearers, who were to wear red brassards; better bathing facilities at the state camp grounds; state to furnish all food at camps; exclusion of all spirituous liquors from the quarters of the officers and men; special inquiry into the causes of men falling while in line of march or on parade; the provision of standard fatigue service uniforms for rough work and hot weather, and the transfer of the state hospital to some other part of the camp grounds.

Surgeon-General Burrell, owing to the increased demands upon his time and effort, imposed by his duties as assistant professor of clinical surgery at Harvard University, tendered his resignation, April 22, 1895.

Edward Jacob Forster, then medical director on the staff of Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Bridges, First Brigade, M. V. M., was commissioned in his place April 23, 1895.

He had served many years in the militia, having been private and corporal in the Twenty-Sixth Unattached Company, later Company C, Fifth Regiment Infantry, from September 30, 1864, to October 1, 1866. He was commissioned surgeon of the Fifth Regiment, May 19, 1871; discharged April 28, 1876; reappointed July 26, 1876, and discharged by reason of expiration of term of service January 11, 1892. He was commissioned medical director of the First Brigade, M. V. M., January 12, 1894. His first report deals with his attendance as official delegate at the fifth annual meeting of the Association of Military Surgeons of the United States at Buffalo, N. Y.; as medical officer with Governor Greenhalge and



SURGEON-GENERAL EDWARD J. FORSTER,  
1895-1896.

others at the dedication of the Chickamauga and Chattanooga National Military Park; and in the same capacity, with the governor and his council, at the Cotton States International Exposition, Atlanta, Ga. He chronicles certain changes in the field equipment, and especially the preparation of an orderly pouch, distended by an aluminum basket or skeleton tray, and the revision and issuance of complete supplies for both pouches and medicine chests. The Ambulance Corps is kindly and practically

considered, receiving due praise and many timely suggestions as to more perfect service.

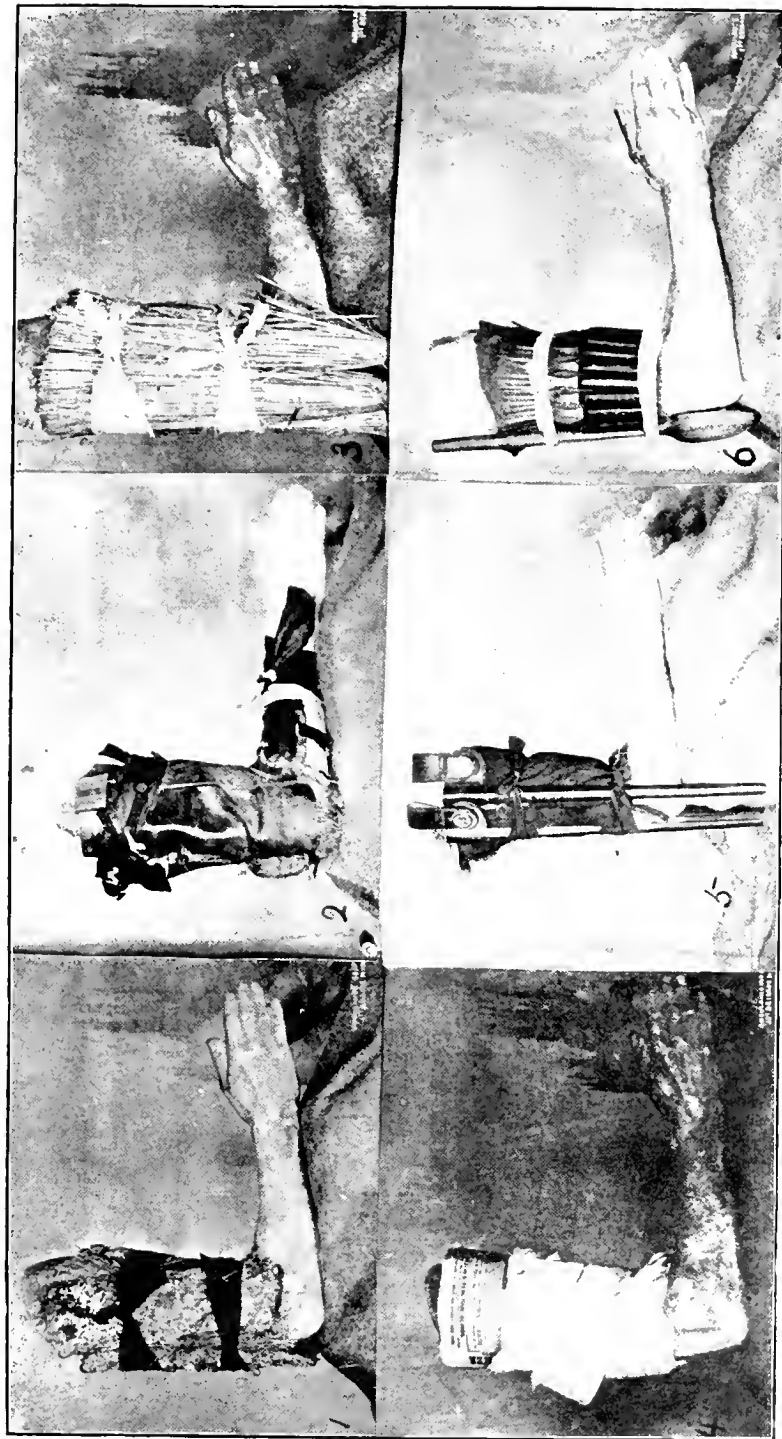
In General Orders No. 6, company officers were directed to consult with the senior medical officer of their command, and to appoint four litter bearers, to be instructed in removing and giving first aid to the wounded, an innovation proposed by Surgeon-General Burrell. The work of the veterinarian department was commended, and recommendations made for perfecting the sanitary condition of the State camp ground, and instituting a State ration to be cooked and furnished to the troops while in camp. He also recommended that examinations of all recruits be mandatory; chronicled additions to the office library, and the good work of the school for medical officers, presided over by Major Wm. H. Devine, surgeon of the Ninth Infantry, and suggested that each battalion should have a medical officer, giving each regiment of infantry an extra assistant surgeon, with one to each battalion of artillery and cavalry. He also advocated the appointment of medical officers to the lowest grade only, promotion from which was to be earned only by good behavior and efficient service. His heart was in his work, and undoubtedly most of these recommendations would have ripened into active reforms under his care, had he lived to serve another year.

Surgeon-General Forster died suddenly of cerebral hemorrhage in New York, May 16, 1896. He had just attended the sixth annual meeting of the Association of Military Surgeons of the United States, and was returning home when the fatal rupture ended his life and labors.

Born at Charlestown, Mass., July 9, 1846, he received his diploma at Harvard in 1868, and continued his studies at Paris and Berlin before settling down to acquire a practice under the shadow of Bunker Hill monument. The committee on necrology, of the Association of Military Surgeons, U. S. A., thus paid tribute to the dead surgeon-general:

"In his medical work he was from the beginning conscientious, painstaking, tireless and sympathetic. For many years he was visiting physician to the Boston City Hospital, in connection with which he was also for some years secretary of the medical staff. He was active in the promotion of the movement to secure a State medical registration law, and when the movement finally culminated in the law of 1894, he was appointed a member of the Board of Registration, and became the secretary.

"He was a power in medical society work, and both the Massachusetts Medical Society and the Obstetrical Society of Boston, will permanently bear the impress of the judicious and zealous administration of the various offices, to which he was elected by them. In 1891 he was made treasurer of the former, and immediately set himself not only to simplifying and improving the system of accounts, but he devoted an enormous amount of time and labor to the preparation of a complete cata-



No. 1. Thick Bark. No. 2. Old Boot. No. 3. Straw Bottle Packing. No. 4. Newspapers. No. 5. Bayonet Sheaths. No. 6. Wooden Spoon and Steel Forks.

AMBULANCE CORPS EXHIBIT. EMERGENCY SPLINTS FOR ARM.



logue of the society, from its foundation in 1781, which will ever remain an enduring memorial of Dr. Forster's zeal and efficiency in office.

"He was in the habit of seeking recreation in natural history, and was an interested student of the habits and ways of the bees, while in botany, his interest was manifested by the production of a valuable work on the identification of edible mushrooms.

"General Forster's social, patriotic, charitable and scientific inclinations found vent in numerous societies of which he was a member, in which his sterling qualities always made his presence felt."

Dr. C. M. Green, then assistant-surgeon First Corps Cadets, M. V. M., gracefully said:

"The record of his years of devotion is written in the grateful memory of his patients. To medical charities he gave a large part of his time; in his earlier life to the poor of Charlestown; and for many years past as one of the visiting physicians of the Boston City Hospital."

Robert Allen Blood succeeded Surgeon-General Forster, of whose decease his report in 1896 says: "His death was a great shock to me, he being an old and true friend. I have been intimately acquainted with him for more than thirty years."

Surgeon-General Blood, commissioned May 28, 1896, was born in New London, N. H. During the Civil War he served as a corporal in the Eleventh Regiment, New Hampshire Volunteer Infantry. He had succeeded Forster as medical director of the First Brigade, M. V. M., May 2, 1895, and upon his death was promptly commissioned in his place. His first report, 1896, says:

"On assuming the duties of surgeon-general, . . . I beg to report that everything pertaining to the medical department was found to be in the most admirable shape. Nearly all the medical supplies had been forwarded to the various commands. The medical chests not already sent, were filled and ready for shipment. All the details of the office had been carried forward up to the departure of General Forster for Philadelphia, where he had been ordered to attend the meeting of the Society of Military Surgeons, May 11, 1896."

The report goes on to announce that: "The supply or reserve medical chest has been furnished to the several organizations. Mattresses, blankets and furniture for sick bay (ship hospital ward) have been procured and sent to the Naval Brigade.

"The Ambulance Corps is in good working condition. This was to have been expected. With accomplished officers and a fine body of men, I shall look for even better work in the coming years than in the past.

"I would recommend that every recruit have a physical examination at the time of enlistment, or as soon after as practicable.

"I believe, for the benefit of the service, Lieutenant Frederick F.

Osgood, veterinary surgeon, First Battalion Light Artillery, and Lieutenant Austin Peters, First Cavalry, should be promoted to the rank of captain and attached to brigade headquarters, and I so recommend."

In his report of 1897, the following points may be recalled:

"All hospital stewards are registered pharmacists, with the exception of Hospital Steward Knight, First Corps Cadets. He has degrees from Harvard of A. M. and M. D.

"Since my last report the Ambulance Corps has been furnished with four new brown duck tents and flies, . . . Captain Standish and the officers and men of this corps, I am proud to say, are a command second to none in the country, and are worthy of all praise.

"I now come to the most important subject of which I have to treat in this report. That a physical examination of every recruit, who would enter the service of the State as a soldier, should be mandatory, is I think fully recognized by all our surgeons. I believe this to be absolutely necessary, before the militia, of which we are so proud, can become as efficient as we could wish, or as the people, who pay for all this, would expect, were the militia called into active service.

"I do not believe that the State should be called upon to educate men for soldiers, who are not physically able to do the work of soldiers when educated. I am fully convinced that some method can be provided, whereby every man who enlists can have a proper physical examination, and I so recommend."

Surgeon-General Blood called upon his assistants in March, 1898, to prepare a list of papers and subjects for treatment and discussion by medical officers of the State militia, at a medical school to be held April 26. Medical Directors Otis H. Marion of the First, and William H. Devine of the Second Brigade, aided greatly in the preliminary work of selecting subjects, and assigning them to the several surgeons and assistant surgeons. The meeting was quite largely attended, and the papers prepared and read dealt in a practical and exhaustive way with military surgery, camp sanitation, and other subjects relating to the conservation of good health in field and camp, and to the cure of wounds and diseases incident to active service. The surgeon-general felt that the meeting had been a success, not only in its ordinary and official sense, but in the assurance of deep interest in and ability to deal with, the vital and grave duties which were then seen to be impending.

On April 1 the service medical chests, then in the hands of the surgeons of the several organizations, were called in to be replenished and refitted, and these were promptly prepared for immediate service in the field. All medical supplies were put in good order, extra medicines, etc. purchased, and a contract prepared, by the terms of which Messrs. Buzzell and Ball bound themselves to furnish at a few hours' notice all the

splints, bandages, etc., etc., which might be needed in case of a great emergency. The old-style chests were also replaced by others of lighter weight and better pattern.

When war with Spain was actually declared, all the regiments accepted from Massachusetts were furnished with their regular peace establishment outfit, and thereafter with anything which the several surgeons could reasonably demand, and would receipt for. While in some doubt as to whether the United States government would reimburse Massachusetts for medical supplies furnished them after they were sworn into the U. S. service, he "felt it his duty to furnish each regiment with medicines until it could be supplied from the surgeon-general U. S. A., as I thought there was nothing too good for Massachusetts troops that were going to the front for active service."

Later on, Surgeon-General Sternberg, U. S. A., at his request, gave him a letter of instructions, conferring sufficient authority to furnish everything needed. General Blood's letter and Surgeon-General Sternberg's reply, which show very clearly the services performed by the State medical department, follow:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.  
Surgeon-General's office, Boston, May 23, 1898.

Col. C. H. Alden, Assistant Surgeon-General, U. S. A., Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir: Your letter of May 20, was received this morning. In reply will say: Up to the present time I have furnished a complete medical outfit, hospital tents, medical chests, (complete in every way), hospital clothing, such as blankets, mattresses, sheets, etc., to the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, U. S. Volunteers; Second Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers; Sixth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers; Eighth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers.

The Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers, and the Second Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers, have been ordered away, leaving the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, and the Ninth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers, here to be provided for.

I can supply these regiments with everything they may need in the way of medicine and medical supplies as long as they stay in Massachusetts; if you wish me to do so.

Very Respectfully,

ROBERT A. BLOOD, Surgeon-General.

On May 25, General Blood received the following reply from Deputy Surgeon-General Alden at Washington, D. C.:

Surgeon-General Robert A. Blood, State House, Boston, Mass.

Dear Sir: The Surgeon-General directs me to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of May 20, and say in reply, that we would be very glad if you could let the Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, and the Ninth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, continue to use the State field medical equipment until they can be supplied with the United States outfit, which will be very shortly.

Yours respectfully,

C. H. ALDEN, Assistant-Surgeon, U. S. A.

Surgeon-General Blood further says in his 1898 report: "Each regiment, on leaving the State, took quite a large supply of medicines, hospital tents, beds and bed clothing—such as cots, mattresses, blankets, sheets and pillow cases—in fact, everything supplied to regimental hospitals during muster at South Framingham, only in much larger quantities.

"All the regiments, except the First, took into the field two hospital tents. In 1897 Captain Myles Standish had four hospital tents made for the Ambulance Corps, from colored canvas, with the idea of protecting the eyes of the occupants of those tents. They were nicely gotten up and rather expensive. The surgeons that were going to the front were offered those tents, if they preferred them to the usual white ones. Three of these tents were issued to the various commands.

"For a list of the medicines, medical supplies, instruments, etc., issued to the Massachusetts troops, I refer to schedule to be found in this report, (see page 61, A. G. Report 1898.) It is not claimed that this medical outfit was the best possible one, but I would say that it was a very fair supply for what was expected would be needed. Had I known that the medicines furnished to our troops were to be used in other than regimental hospitals, and that this supply was all that would be used in division hospitals for several weeks, the medicines would have been supplied in much larger quantities. I am told that much suffering was alleviated by the medicines taken to the front by our surgeons, (for regimental use) and used in division hospitals.

"In March, 1898, I received instructions from Your Excellency to have all private soldiers of the Massachusetts militia receive a physical examination. This had been recommended by Surgeon-General Burrell, also by Surgeon-General Forster, and by myself in my last annual report.

"On receiving your instructions I at once proceeded to have them carried into effect. Surgeons were ordered to examine their various commands; they were advised as to the proper severity of the examination, and inquiries made of the regular army surgeons as to their mode of procedure in such examinations, and all authorities at hand were consulted as to the matter.

"The declaration of war between the United States and Spain found our troops undergoing a physical examination by our surgeons. In most of the regiments this examination was not finished before the declaration of war came. The physical examination made by our surgeons was more or less severe, and a percentage of the troops examined were unable to pass. According to reports from these officers, in the First Heavy Artillery, thirty men were rejected; in the Second Regiment, out of three companies, eleven men were rejected; in five companies of the Sixth Regiment seventy-five men were rejected; in the Ninth Regiment, out of ten companies, seventy-three men were rejected. Up to this





OFFICE OF SURGEON GENERAL BLOOD, M. V. M., 1898-1900.



time no report of the physical examination of troops has been received from the surgeons of the Fifth or Eighth Regiments at this office.

"The loss of these two regiments from this physical examination, I know to be larger than the reported losses of the other regiments mentioned; so that of the original enrolment of all the regiments, a percentage of well-trained troops was lost to them, and in the filling up of these regiments to 1300 or more, there must have been added thirty to forty percent of new recruits who had received no military training whatever.

"The regiments of the Massachusetts militia called into the service, again had to undergo a physical examination by the surgeon of the regular army and his assistants. Quite a large percentage (I have no means of knowing how large) were rejected by him. Had all the privates and officers of the Massachusetts militia received a physical examination at the time of muster into the service of the State, this thing would not have happened. A great many men were thrown out by this examination who had received years of training to fit them as soldiers.

"I have always been of the opinion that no man who is not physically strong, who has not a good constitution, and is not in good health, should be accepted and mustered into the service of the State or of the nation. When a man is once in the service, and has received three or five years' military training and desires to re-enlist, I would make the examination less severe, and allow the military training to offset some physical defect, the examining surgeon being allowed to use his judgment in regard to these things. (It may be doubted, however, if the regular army surgeons took long service at all into consideration in their examination of the Massachusetts infantry).

"For a history of the Ambulance Corps' work during the past year, I respectfully refer you to the full report of Captain Standish, commander of the corps. In my visits to the various camps of regulars at Montauk, volunteers at Camp Hamilton, Ky., and Camp Meade, Pa., I was privileged to see hospital corps men, and become familiar with their work; and I do not hesitate to say that during those visits I saw no similar body of men, either in the regular army, or in the volunteer army, that would compare in intelligence, drill and general makeup, with the men of our Ambulance Corps.

"On May 1, the surgeon-general was made a member and chairman of a medical board, consisting of Major William N. Richardson, surgeon First Corps Cadets, Captain Burrell, U. S. A., and himself. This board, like its predecessor in the Civil War, examined all the medical officers who sought service in the field with the U. S. Volunteers of the M. V. M." The following gentlemen received commissions, having been appointed by this board:

First Regiment, Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, U. S. V.: Surgeon, Major Howard S. Dearing, Boston, mustered out Jan. 28, 1899; assistant surgeons, William A. Rolfe, Boston, honorably discharged on account of sickness, July 13, 1898; William S. Bryant, Cohasset, promoted brigade surgeon, U. S. Vols., July 8, 1898.

Remarks: The First had very little sickness during its term of service, largely owing, no doubt, to the constant watchfulness and care of Major Dearing and his assistants.

Second Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V.: Surgeon, Major Henry C. Bowen, Springfield, died at Santiago de Cuba, August 13, 1898; Ernest A. Gates, Springfield, mustered out Dec. 7, 1898; assistant surgeons, Ernest A. Gates, promoted surgeon Oct. 24, 1898; John S. Hitchcock, Northampton, mustered out Jan. 23, 1899.

Remarks: Major Henry C. Bowen, surgeon of the Second Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., died of malarial fever at the Second Division General Hospital, near Santiago de Cuba, Aug. 13. "He gave his life for his country; no man could do more." To use the simple encomium of Colonel Clarke, "Major Bowen was an efficient officer, and, until prostrated by disease, worked unceasingly for the good of the regiment." Assistant Surgeon John S. Hitchcock, who succeeded Dr. Gates, promoted surgeon, was also prostrated by illness after faithful and efficient service.

Fifth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V.: Surgeon, Major Charles C. Foster, Cambridge, resigned Oct. 3, 1898; Frederick W. Pearl, Boston, mustered out in 1899; assistant surgeons, Frederick W. Pearl, promoted surgeon Oct. 6, 1898; Frank E. Bateman, honorably discharged Sept. 23, 1898; William E. McPherson, Charlestown, Charles Norton Barney, Boston, mustered out April 3, 1899.

Remarks: The Fifth saw no foreign service, but while under canvas in the winter and spring of 1898-99, was exposed to hardships and epidemics which resulted in much sickness and a number of deaths. That the fatal results were comparatively few was no doubt largely due to the care and good judgment of the commanding and medical officers of the Fifth.

Sixth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V.: Surgeon, Major Otis H. Marion, Boston, resigned July 2, 1898; George Farwell Dow, Reading, mustered out Jan. 21, 1899; assistant surgeons, George Farwell Dow, promoted major and surgeon, July 4, 1898; Frederick A. Washburn, Jr., mustered out Jan. 21, 1899; Herman W. Gross, Brookline, mustered out Jan. 21, 1899.

Remarks: Major Otis H. Marion acted as medical director most of the time while connected with the regiment. Major Dow and his assistants received great praise for their arduous services with the regiment and its detachments while reducing and occupying Porto Rico.

Eighth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V.: Surgeon, Major William Cogswell, mustered out April 28, 1899, and promoted surgeon Forty-Sixth Regiment, U. S. Vols., now serving in Manila; assistant surgeons, Thomas L. Jenkins, Topsfield, honorably discharged July 11, 1898; Frank P. T. Logan, Gloucester, mustered out April 28, 1899; Horace Bird Frost, Boston, commissioned Aug. 26, 1898, mustered out April 28, 1899.

Remarks: Major Cogswell made an enviable reputation during the Spanish-American War, at Chickamauga, Tenn., and Lexington, Ky., and later at Matanzas, Cuba. The medical staff of the Eighth received the highest praise in the reports of the commissioners of the war department, and the surgeon-general and inspector-generals of the United States for 1898-99.

Ninth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V.: Surgeon, Francis T. L. Magurn, Boston, mustered out January 23, 1899; assistant surgeons, William H. Devine, South Boston, promoted major and brigade surgeon, 1st Brigade, 1st Division, 2d Army Corps, U. S. Vols., June 8, 1898; lieutenant-colonel and chief surgeon 2d Division, 2d Army Corps, Aug. 26, 1898; honorably discharged Sept. 26, 1898; Cornelius J. McGillicuddy, Revere, mustered out Nov. 26, 1898; Peter O. Shea, Worcester, mustered out Nov. 26, 1898.

Remarks: Major Magurn, surgeon of the Ninth during the entire service of his regiment, which suffered most heavily from tropical diseases, did everything in

his power to alleviate the sufferings of his comrades, performing his whole duty without sparing himself. Assistant Surgeon McGillicuddy was detailed upon hospital service, while Assistant Surgeon Peter O. Shea remained with the regiment; both gentlemen served faithfully and with credit to the State.

Lieutenant-Commander Gardner W. Allen, surgeon of the Naval Brigade, M.V. M., served with the rank of P. A. surgeon on the S. S. "Prairie." Assistant Surgeon Richard F. O'Neil was stationed on the monitor "Catskill," and Bayman S. Virgil Merritt, held a like rank on the monitor "Lehigh."

In the same report, General Blood felt that due credit should be given Ex-Surgeon-General Burrell, Dr. Robert Bradford, and others associated with them on the hospital ship "Bay State", for their splendid services in caring for the sick and wounded of the Massachusetts troops at Santiago and Porto Rico, and added the following tribute to the general faithfulness and efficiency of the medical staff:

"Finer or better equipped surgeons, were not to be found in the regular or volunteer army. Patriotic, devoted to duty, conscientious, well educated men, they are worthy of all praise. No complaint of these men has ever reached me, and here I desire to express my hearty appreciation of their good work, and to thank them for that work. The Commonwealth has always been fortunate in having good men go forward when needed to serve their country and State, and was never more fortunate in this respect than in the war with Spain."

The history of the Massachusetts Volunteer Aid Association has been given elsewhere in this work. Early in May, Surgeon-General Blood, agreeably to the instructions of Governor Wolcott, formulated a plan for the organization of such an association, assisted by Commissary-General Francis H. Appleton and Colonel William H. Sohler, A. D. C. A list of names of many prominent men was prepared, officers designated, and a name chosen for the organization; all of which were practically adopted when the delegates summoned met at the State House for organization.

In June, Surgeon-General Blood, Dr. Myles Standish and Dr. Morton Prince were made a committee of medical inspection of camps, and for the distribution of supplies to troops, to represent the association. Dr. Prince visited Camp Alger, Va., and his report was duly commented upon and forwarded by the committee. By a committee on medical supplies, on which General Blood was associated with Major Wm. A. Richardson and Charles A. Clough, P. H. G., suitable lists of medical and surgical supplies were prepared, and the "Bay State" furnished with one of the State medical chests and a reserve chest, completely fitted, and in addition twenty-six Massachusetts pattern stretchers, such as are used by the Ambulance Corps.

On May 8, under instructions from Adjutant-General Dalton, to take measures for raising a hospital corps, in answer to a telegram from Surgeon-General Sternberg, Surgeon-General Blood requested Captain

Standish of the Ambulance Corps, to raise a hospital corps of 135 men, with six hospital stewards and six assistants, which he proceeded to do. On May 9, Surgeon-General Sternberg, U. S. A., stated that the order for raising a hospital corps was a mistake, and there was no authority therefor. Over an hundred men who had enlisted were informed that their services were not wanted, and there is no doubt that a grave mistake was made, either through lack of authority to take obviously needed action, or to some less worthy cause. The sad lack of bearers and assistants at the Montauk Hospital would have been wholly obviated had there been an adequate Ambulance Corps.

The failure to provide a sufficient number of trained hospital corps men and nurses was considered one of the principal defects in the management of the hospital at Montauk. A sufficient number of both nurses and men could have been furnished from Boston. The nurses, (Mrs. Doctor Hughes and her assistants) who were finally allowed to go to Montauk from Boston, did most excellent work.

Some hundreds of furloughed volunteers, sick and wounded, were at home in Massachusetts, many of whom greatly needed better medical care and nursing than they were able to afford. On July 25, the following letter was sent to General Sternberg:

Brigadier-General George M. Sternberg, Surgeon-General U. S. A., Washington, D. C.

Sir: Has any provision been made by the medical department, U. S. Army, providing treatment for sick and wounded soldiers, who are home on furlough and need such treatment?

Respectfully yours,

ROBERT A. BLOOD,

Surgeon-General Massachusetts.

The emaciated and suffering victims of the Santiago campaign were now taxing the resources of the government to the utmost, and many deaths, and a terrible sick list, demonstrated the necessity of prompt action, if the lives of many deserving soldiers were to be saved. Having received no answer to this enquiry, Surgeon-General Blood wrote again, July 30, as follows:

Brigadier-General George M. Sternberg, Surgeon-General U. S. A., Washington, D. C.

Sir: Will you kindly give me authority, if necessary, to care for the sick and wounded soldiers, brought here from the front. We can furnish beds in our hospitals for a large number of patients, and, should the occasion call, could fit a hospital expressly for the use of the sick and wounded men. Any information you can give me in regard to our duties in the matter will be thankfully received.

Respectfully yours,

BRIGADIER-GENERAL ROBERT A. BLOOD,

Surgeon-General Massachusetts.

Ten days later, on August 9, the following reply was received:

Surgeon-General Robert A. Blood, Surgeon-General Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Boston, Mass.

Sir: In reply to your letter of the 30th ultimo, regarding authority to care for the sick and wounded soldiers, brought to Massachusetts from the front, and tendering the facilities of your hospitals for the soldiers, I thank you for your gracious and patriotic offer, and inform you that at present we are not in need of additional hospital accommodations for our sick and wounded soldiers.

Your letters have been placed on file, for future reference in case of need.

Yours respectfully,

GEORGE M. STERNBERG,

Surgeon-General U. S. Army.

On August 18 General Blood went to Camp Wyckoff, Montauk Point, L. I., to meet the Massachusetts Volunteers, then due from Santiago. He says: "the next day after my arrival the Second Massachusetts Regiment, U. S. V. was landed from the ship 'Mobile.' This was a sad sight. Never have I seen so many men of one regiment who were so generally used up and sick. . . . The ship 'Mobile' was in bad sanitary condition. I was told she was in fairly good shape when sailing from Santiago, but certainly there were not suitable accommodations for the sick had it been stormy weather. The sick bay was a sorry-looking place."

He procured, through the Massachusetts Volunteer Aid Association, a large supply of milk and eggs for the Second, and remained until the regiment left for home, with most of its men considerably recuperated.

On August 13, he again visited Montauk, under orders from Governor Wolcott as follows:

Surgeon-General Robert A. Blood, Boston, Mass.

My Dear Sir: You are hereby directed to return at your earliest convenience to Montauk Point, and are hereby authorized to purchase whatever food or supplies may in your opinion be necessary, to promote the comfort and speedy recovery of the men of the Second and Ninth Massachusetts Regiments, U. S. V.

It is my desire that no precaution or expense may be omitted, tending to restore to health the men of these gallant commands.

Very truly yours,

ROGER WOLCOTT.

He returned to Montauk and says: "I was present when the Ninth Regiment landed. . . . This regiment was in a very debilitated condition; many of the men were sick; only about three hundred were able to go into camp. Out of this three hundred few men were in good health." . . .

When the Ninth was ordered home, General Blood directed Major Donovan to secure palace cars at New London for the use of his men. In company with Colonel James T. Soutter, assistant inspector-general,

he remained at Montauk for some time. He concluded that on the whole, the hospital camp was well chosen, and, after the first two weeks admirably conducted.

In October a visit was made to the Fifth Regiment, then at Camp Meade, near Harrisburg, Pa. He says:

"I gave this regiment a careful inspection, as to their sanitary condition, food, healthfulness of the men, medical outfit, etc.; in fact I inquired into everything as regarded the officers and men of this command. I think, from a sanitary standpoint, the camp was well located. The sinks were well policed and in admirable shape. There was very little sickness at the time of my visit. . . .

"The cooks were detailed men and not experts; therefore the food was not as palatable as it would have been had it been prepared by thoroughly trained cooks. This was the thing that could have been improved upon. I believe this to be one of the principal faults to be found in the training of our Massachusetts militia. Each company should be taught to prepare its own food in a satisfactory manner. . . . The Fifth Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., as I saw it at Camp Meade, was one of the best regiments I have ever seen."

Later he says of a visit to the Eighth Regiment: "I found the camp of the Eighth Regiment about four or five miles out from Lexington, and in the heart of the blue grass country. This was a most delightful situation, and I think one of the finest locations for a camp I have ever seen.

"I saw no regiment at Camp Hamilton that seemed so thoroughly up to all that goes to make a good regiment as the Eighth. The men were soldierly in their bearing, the grounds were kept in perfect condition, tents were all in order and scrupulously clean. . . . Altogether, this was perhaps the cleanest regiment, excepting the Fifth Massachusetts, that I saw in all my visits to soldiers in the field. I saw almost nothing in the sanitary arrangements of this regiment to criticise. The only thing, as with the Fifth Regiment, which I think could be improved, is the cooking. Of course this will improve in time.

"Of the nearly 9000 troops, at one time or another, encamped at Framingham during the summer, only one serious case of illness occurred. This seems a remarkable record, in view of the great amount of sickness in camps of the U. S. Volunteer soldiers, at Camp Alger, Va., Thomas, in Tennessee, and the camps in Florida. This, I believe, can only be accounted for by the supposition that the sanitary conditions were better at Framingham than at the other camps mentioned, and that there was a better supply of pure water; this was probably true.

"The good sanitary condition of the camp at Framingham, was to a great extent due to the watchful oversight of General Dalton. He had



the cleanliness of this camp constantly in view, and notwithstanding that the troops who were stationed there had been mustered into the volunteer service of the United States Army, he continued to exercise this care, and prevent the camp from being anything but a most cleanly one."

Surgeon-General Blood closed the report of 1898 with the following recommendations:

"I would recommend that each regiment of infantry, M. V. M. have one surgeon, with the rank of major, and two assistant surgeons with the rank of first lieutenant."

This recommendation would give to each battalion of four companies a medical officer, when detached from the regiment.

"I would also recommend that veterinary surgeons Austin Peters and Frederick H. Osgood be made captains, and detailed, one on the staff of the First Brigade and the other on the staff of the Second Brigade."

At present, these officers, whose duties are most important, and cover the inspection and care of all the horses of a brigade, are not assigned to the brigade staff, nor given the rank which their valuable services and personal merit deserve.

"I also recommend that two additional veterinary surgeons be appointed with the rank of first lieutenant."

Surgeon-General Blood's report for 1899 contains the following matters of interest:

"The six regiments which served in the Spanish war of 1898, took a complete medical outfit into the volunteer service. Upon leaving the service, all the medicines and medical supplies then in their hands were turned over to the government. This necessitated a refitting of those six regiments with medicines and medical supplies, such as tents, chests, both field and reserve, operating instruments, orderly pouches, etc., etc. In fact, everything that is supplied to our regiments was purchased. The chests, tents, instruments and pouches were made to order. The tents, eight in number, each had a complete outfit, four beds, four mattresses, sheets, etc. This required much time.

"These duties, with the examination for military aid of soldiers who were in the old war, and those who served in the Spanish-American War, details, and the like, were performed up to the inspections of camp in the summer.

"In April, all the surgeons of the various commands who were not in the Spanish war, were requested to forward their medical chests to this office, where they were overhauled, refitted and then returned the same as last year. All the supplies we carry in this office were put in working shape. The number of examinations for military aid during the year was 246.

"The Second Brigade camp was held August 3 to 9, (at South

Framingham,) and inspected August 5. The sanitary condition of this camp, as a whole, was found to be good; with the exception of sinks, excellent. These sinks were not kept in as good condition as I could wish. This was, in part, due to the use of the camp, by nearly 10,000 troops in 1898. The regimental hospitals were models in every way; I have never found them better.

"The First Brigade, whose camp was held later, August 19 to 25, was inspected August 21. As in the Second Brigade, the principal thing to be criticized was the condition in which I found the sinks; they were in bad shape. With plenty of lime, copperas and earth, it was barely possible to keep them from being a nuisance; but they required a good deal of looking after.

"In the inspection of the First Corps of Cadets (at Hingham,) I have but little criticism to make. The sanitary condition of their camp, as a whole, was first-class. The only thing I should mention would possibly be their sinks, which might be improved. The condition of this camp was a credit to the corps.

"The sanitary condition of the camp of the Second Corps of Cadets (at Boxford, Mass.,) was found to be good. The water supply was apparently pure. The water comes from springs, on the shore of the lake near the camp.

"The inspection of the First Regiment, Heavy Artillery was made August 17, (at Fort Warren, Boston Harbor.) This is a splendid regiment. The hospital tent and tent equipage were found in good condition. . . . There was but little sickness. This was a good camp.

"Very little sickness was found in any of the camps. This I considered due to the excellent quality of the men composing our various commands, and to the intelligent care and forethought of the commanding officers and surgeons.

"The details of the work done by the medical department on the mobilization of the Massachusetts militia, October 14, when we had the honor of escorting Admiral Dewey, was left entirely in the hands of the medical directors, Colonels Marion and Devine. A hospital, complete in every way, was established for each brigade on the Common, where any one who needed surgical or medical assistance could be attended to at once. Two ambulance wagons were hired, one following the First and the other the Second Brigade on their march."

(The details given in the report of Medical Director Marion of the First Brigade, show that two school children, three ladies and one citizen were cared for at the First Brigade hospital, beside eleven enlisted men, most of them suffering from exhaustion or slight ailments. Trooper Nichols of Troop F, thrown from his horse, was attended at the Massachusetts General Hospital. Medical Director Devine, in charge of the

Second Brigade hospital, treated thirteen enlisted men and several civilians and school children. There were no serious ailments or injuries reported.)

"Blanks for the medical examination of all recruits have been furnished to the surgeons of the several commands in sufficient amount, the number being more than 15,000. Examinations of all recruits have been going on during the year, and returns made at this office. This much-needed examination, when fully organized, will be a complete success.

"The pay of the surgeons and assistant surgeons for this duty should be ample. It requires the surgeons at times to travel long distances, and be away from their homes and business for a day or more. I believe this service should receive suitable compensation, and, in my opinion, special duty pay is not a suitable compensation.

"The Board of Medical Officers at present consists of Lieutenant-Colonel Otis H. Marion, president; Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Devine and Major Charles C. Foster, recorder. The duties of this board during the past year have been arduous, as all officers of the militia have to undergo a careful physical examination. Number of meetings held, 28; number of officers examined: medical 13, militia 155. I believe this board should receive at least, per diem pay, according to rank."

In the same report General Blood recommended additional safeguards to the water supply at the State camp ground; a more perfect drainage or sewerage system for the cook houses, and better facilities for bathing. In addition he strongly recommended that the use of a regular ration, and better methods of appetizingly cooking the same, should be made a feature of camp life, and further:

"I would recommend that every regiment of infantry have a surgeon and two assistant surgeons, and the artillery and cavalry battalions to have the same proportion of medical officers; the surgeon to rank as major, and the assistant surgeons to rank as first lieutenant, and after five years of continuous service to rank as captains.

"I would also recommend that two additional veterinary surgeons be appointed with the rank of first lieutenant.

"I would also recommend that every company of infantry in the Massachusetts militia be empowered to enlist a good soldier as cook, and give him the rank of corporal. . . .

"In closing, I would say that the Spanish-American War fully tested the medical service of the Massachusetts militia, whose regiments went fully equipped into the field, and, had they been at first allowed to have their own regimental hospitals, would undoubtedly have cared better for their own men than was done by the overburdened division hospitals of the regular service. I believe the abolishment of the regimental hospital for a time, by the medical department, was a grave

mistake. As to the military surgery and practice which came under my observation, I must say that, while war is a terrible thing, even at its best, the small arms now used, generally inflict far less shock, and wounds easier to heal, than the large calibred rifles of 1861-1865. Aseptic precautions in operating and dressing, have almost averted the intense inflammations and gangrenes, which latter often became epidemic in the Federal hospitals of the last war.

"With the assistance of the editor, Mr. Charles W. Hall, I have tried to set before the people of Massachusetts, the plain facts which show that in every generation, from the first settlement at Plymouth, the medical men of Massachusetts have been as ready in war as in peace to do their whole duty as patriotic citizens, and as worthy representatives of that almost divine art 'whose mission is to heal.'

"I have lived to see the chief desires of my predecessors realized, for to-day every officer and enlisted man of the Massachusetts line undergoes a physical examination as rigid as that of any regular service, when men are needed in the field. This year (1900) I have also seen the food and cooking of the brigades and regiments in camp wonderfully simplified and improved through the energy and plans of Assistant Inspector-General Colonel F. W. Wellington. An almost perfect ambulance corps now supplements a hospital system, which to my best knowledge has no superiors, and until modern surgery and medicine make new discoveries, the field and hospital supplies cannot be greatly improved. Sanitary precautions have reduced the sickness at annual encampments to its minimum, and the best skill of the State is placed at the service of the humblest soldier.

"More than all else, the enterprise, humanity and patriotism of the officers who have led in these reforms has permeated all classes, so that from the general to the enlisted man, almost everyone takes a personal pride and interest in all that tends to make the State militia healthy and happy in peace, and fit for the sternest trials and perils of war."

## CHAPTER XII.

### THE SIGNAL SERVICE.

THE Signal Service of the Massachusetts Militia was authorized by a rather peculiarly worded provision, of Section 4, Chapter 230, of the Acts of the Legislature for 1884, quoted in full as follows:

"Section 3. To each brigade there shall be one brigadier-general, whose staff shall consist of one assistant adjutant-general, one medical director, each with the rank of lieutenant-colonel; one assistant inspector-general, with the rank of major, who shall be paymaster and mustering officer for unattached companies of such brigade; one brigade quartermaster, one engineer, one judge advocate, one provost-marshal and two aides-de-camp, each with the rank of captain. There shall also be allowed to each brigade the following non-commissioned staff officers; viz., one brigade sergeant-major, one brigade quartermaster-sergeant, one brigade hospital steward, one brigade provost-marshal, one brigade bugler, one brigade color-bearer, and two brigade clerks, and a signal corps, to consist of one first lieutenant, one first sergeant, four sergeants and twenty privates. The first lieutenant shall be appointed, and the men enlisted, mustered, and non-commissioned officers warranted by brigade commanders."

Brigadier-General Nathaniel Wales, then commanding the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., established the First Brigade Signal Corps, in 1884, appointing First Lieutenant Charles H. Cutler, of Cambridge, its first commander. Lieutenant Cutler, commissioned December 12, 1884, had a long military record, beginning with his enlistment in Company A, First Battalion Infantry, in 1870, and closing with his resignation as captain in 1883. Nearly twenty years earlier he had served as sergeant in the signal service, in 1864.

Major A. C. M. Pennington, Brevet Colonel Fourth Artillery, U. S. A., ordered to inspect the camps of the Massachusetts militia in 1884, thus remarks upon the first tour of duty of the Signal Corps of the First Brigade at South Framingham, June 19, 1884:

"A signal corps has been added to the 1st Brigade, consisting of an officer and twenty-five enlisted men. Not more than one-third of these, however, were present. They were encamped separate from the rest of the brigade, and near brigade headquarters. They were employed in flagging the record of shots at mortar practice, and showed considerable proficiency. Flagging, and drilling with kits took place daily, and a meteorological record was kept."

It appears from the official report made to Assistant Adjutant-General William L. Olin, by First Lieutenant Henry E. Warner, who temporarily commanded the corps, that it was organized only two weeks before the encampment, and had been unable to secure the full number of men. The smallest number present daily was seven, and the maximum eleven. Very few of the men had ever signalled before, and attention was chiefly paid to instruction in the signal code, and in flagging, with the simpler company movements. The men were interested and intelligent, and at the close of the encampment could signal and read with a good degree of quickness.

In addition, the corps did some practical work in connection with the mortar practice of the First Regiment, one squad being located at the Fort, and another on the hill near the target, which reported the position of each shell as it fell.

Only six kits, out of the ten supplied by the State, had torches, but there was a sufficient number of flags for day signalling. A meteorological record was kept by Private Walter G. Chase.

In 1885, the Signal Corps of the 2d Brigade was organized, equipped, and attended the yearly encampment, having sixteen men present out of twenty-four, under the command of First Lieutenant C. Merton Haley, of Boston, commissioned March 10, 1885.

Major Pennington, U. S. A., who this year again inspected the Massachusetts militia at the annual encampment, commented on this corps as follows:

"The Signal Corps, composed of students from the Institute of Technology, were drilled in flagging; and at night, signalling with torches and the electric light took place. For the latter, the Trouve battery was used, a small incandescent light being attached to the side of the jar, which was placed between the feet, and another on the end of a light rod, and connected with the battery by light flexible wires. The light was sufficiently intense to be seen distinctly for at least a mile. In case of a necessity arising for signalling from roofs of houses in cities, it appears to me that this method would be preferable to the ordinary torch signalling, as there is always danger of fire from the leakage of the illuminating fluid."

The Signal Corps, 1st Brigade, went into camp with twenty-five men, under the command of Lieutenant Charles H. Cutler, who says in his report:

"So far as possible the regular hours of drill were followed. Setting up drill and balance step every morning before breakfast, and during the hours for company and battalion drills, company movements, flag drills, manual of the kit, and flagging from stations. On Wednesday and Thursday nights, about three to five hours were spent in flagging

from stations, by means of torches, with very satisfactory results. On account of an insufficient number of kits, we were able to work but three stations; two more kits should be provided to enable us to work our full complement. The State should also provide turpentine for use in the torches.

"On Wednesday, Captain Strong, Battery B, Fourth United States Artillery, did us the honor to call, and spent several hours with us, and we received much valuable information from him. At the time of his visit, we were working the heliographs. On examining the instruments,



SIGNAL CORPS, 1ST BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1895. FLAG STATION ON STANDPIPE AT ARLINGTON HEIGHTS, MASS.

This station established communication with Lincoln, Lexington and Waltham.

he advised me to discontinue at once the working of them, as they were imperfect instruments, had been condemned by the United States government, and would interfere with our working better instruments, should we ever obtain them."

The attendance at camp duty in 1887 was complete, each brigade signal corps having twenty-five men in camp, and their attendance at drill was only surpassed by the men of the ambulance service. Lieutenant Charles H. Cutler of the First Brigade Signal Corps, resigned December 19, 1887, having served three years, and was succeeded October 23,

1888, by Charles D. Lyford of Cambridge, who had served in the corps two years as private and sergeant.

In 1888 this corps was complimented by Inspector-General Dalton for good attendance at camp.

On October 3, 1889, the 2d Brigade visited Lynn, and among their exercises gave an exhibition of street fighting, in the course of which they attacked and carried a strong barricade, and afterwards cleared the streets beyond. Captain D. Morgan Taylor, U. S. A., who inspected and reported this demonstration, says: "The signal corps was brought into operation here, using for the first time, as I was informed, the new Morse code, and finding it a decided improvement upon the former one."

On April 3, 1889, Lieutenant Hans H. M. Borghardt was commissioned to succeed Lieutenant Lyford, commanding the First Brigade Signal Corps.

In 1890 the corps took part in the field movements of the several regiments of infantry, which, with or without detachments of artillery and cavalry, carried on mimic warfare over rough country, or essayed the attack and defense of towns. For this service the signal corps detailed men who were generally commended for their efficiency.

In 1891 Captain H. M. Kendall, Sixth Cavalry, U. S. A., inspected the camp of the 2d Brigade, and among other things reported: "There were two daily drills of the Signal Corps during the encampment. The men are well instructed in signalling, and take the greatest interest in their duties."

Lieutenant Borghardt resigned the command of the First Brigade Signal Corps, January 3, 1891, and was succeeded February 27, 1891, by First Lieutenant John A. Hunneman of Boston. Henry W. Sprague of Boston, who had been a member of the Signal Corps of the 2d Brigade since 1886, was commissioned lieutenant commanding, April 20, 1891, which position he retains at the present writing.

In 1893 Colonel William L. Chase, acting inspector-general, in an exhaustive report, said of the Signal Corps, which, without especially encouraging surroundings, had kept up a creditable strength and discipline for nine years:

"The work of the Signal Corps in their distinctive sphere has shown decided progress. Their equipment is far from what it should be. Beyond the defects in their signalling outfit, it would seem to me desirable to arm them with carbines. In any active service the position of a signal man may be far to the front, and efficiency consists quite as much in reporting on what he sees of the enemy, as in merely transmitting messages between integral parts of a command. In such work he is likely to run across the advance scouts of the enemy. He should be assured the chance to report this information to the main body. With



the present aggressive weapons of a flag or a leaking oil can, he is somewhat handicapped. With the keenness developed by signalmen, and their acute and instructive observation, with the carbine, they should be a match for the occasional scout or patrol encountered.

"Certainly some arm of defense is desirable. The carbine is the weapon, because there are times when the signal-man will be mounted, or



SIGNAL STATION, 1ST BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1895. FLAG STATION AT RESERVOIR, LINCOLN, MASS.

should be. Again, it is more than likely that bicycles will be introduced in the Signal Corps as a ready means of rapid transportation."

In 1894 Inspector-General Dalton said of the signal corps:

"With indifferent equipments, which cannot be improved, except by the national government, these corps have well performed their work; but unless better facilities be given, with proper equipments for signalling, the work should be turned over to regiments, and the corps consolidated as an engineer corps."

In 1895 Inspector-general Dalton reported:

"Attendance good. Both commands performed their duty well. On account of the limited equipment which can be procured from the general government, the question of transferring signal duty to regiments, and making each of the signal corps, an engineer and pioneer

corps, or consolidating them into one organization of engineers, is worthy of consideration."

Lieutenant-Colonel M. P. Miller, U. S. A., detailed to inspect the Massachusetts troops, reported this year as follows:

"The corps practiced twice daily at flag signalling, and at night at lantern and torch drill. I watched it considerably, and was much pleased at the rapid flagging and apparent efficiency in that respect. At night its torch signalling was firm, of an easy, even motion, and plain of discernment. I should pronounce it very efficient."

Lieutenant John A. Hunneman of the First Brigade Signal Corps, resigned February 16, 1894, and was succeeded on the same date by William M. Tolman of Concord, who had served in the Sixth Infantry from 1888 to 1891, and from the latter year in the corps.

In 1896 Inspector-General Dalton said of the force:

"Signal Corps, 1st Brigade: This corps performed its duty well, and added some field engineering to its other duties.

"Signal Corps, 2d Brigade: This corps performed an excellent tour of duty, and its field engineering work was creditable. In addition to gabions and fascines, it constructed a bridge at the camp ground, which was well made, showing study and application."

Lieutenant-Colonel Jacob Kline, U. S. A., this year reported of the Signal Corps, 1st Brigade:

"Signalling was carried on with the flag at Fort Warren by the First Regiment Infantry. The equipment on hand is: six signal kits, U. S., ten signal lanterns, two heliographs, six signal haversacks, six signal canteens. The men were expert and received messages by flag and torch with commendable celerity."

In 1897 Inspector-General James L. Carter again called attention to the Signal Corps by saying:

"These two corps have suffered from neglect and want of proper equipment. They are well officered and of excellent personnel, and show an earnest desire to excel in their work, in spite of the fact that, up to the present time, they have usually been overlooked in the brigade camps and made but little use of."

At the annual encampment of the 2d Brigade, the Signal Corps, under Lieutenant Henry W. Sprague, had twenty-five present out of a total force of twenty-six officers and men.

In the 1st Brigade the Signal Corps appeared under the command of First Lieutenant George E. Lovett of Boston, commissioned March 27, 1897, in place of First Lieutenant William N. Tolman, resigned March 27, 1897. Lieutenant Lovett, who has ever since commanded the corps, began his service in Company B, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M., March 20, 1865, and later, in several terms of service, finally attained the rank of

captain of Company K, First Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., 1892, which position he resigned in 1896.

#### IN THE SPANISH AMERICAN WAR.

On May 10, 1898, both signal corps became for a time a part of that provisional brigade, which under the command of Brigadier-General Thomas R. Mathews, occupied the coastline of Massachusetts, with posts of observation at Plum Island, Newburyport, and intermediate points to Telegraph Hill at Hull. On May 21, General Wm. A. Bancroft, of the 2d Brigade, relieved General Mathews, the tour of duty ending for the



SIGNAL CORPS, 1st BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1898. FLAG STATION GRANARY HILL, OAK MOUNT, LEXINGTON, MASS.

Signal Corps of the 1st Brigade on May 26, and for the Signal Corps of the 2d Brigade on June 1. It being evident that Spain was too weak to make reprisals on the American coast, the evident value of the Signal Service, M. V. M., resulted in the formation of a company for foreign service, as thus narrated by Adjutant-General Dalton in his report for 1898:

“On the request of General A. W. Greeley, chief signal officer, U. S. A., he being desirous of having Massachusetts represented in the Signal Corps of the United States: this department recommended Lieutenant Thomas F. Clark, Ninth Regiment, M. V. M., he being an expert

at telegraphy, and Lieutenant Henry W. Sprague of the Signal Corps, 2d Brigade, M. V. M., for commissions in the Signal Corps. Lieutenant Clark was commissioned captain and ordered to recruit a company of signal men at Boston."

Captain Clark's report of the Tenth Company, U. S. V., Signal Corps recruited in Boston and vicinity, may be read in extenso on page 214, A. G. Report for 1898, and in effect recites, that, having been promoted from second lieutenant, Company K, Ninth Regiment, M. V. M., then at Camp Alger, he proceeded to Boston to recruit sixty-five men to form the Tenth Company, Signal Corps, U. S. V.

"It required a great deal of careful sifting to secure the right men in the right places, and I think it my duty to my late command to say that they were the pick of their respective professions. Among them were telegraphers, linemen, electricians, cablemen and operators, mechanical experts and several whose attainments were limited only by the opportunities which might present themselves."

Lieutenant Henry W. Sprague joined the command, which was furnished with canvas suits, and on July 27 started for Washington, being the only signal corps which entered Washington wearing uniforms.

The company occupied Washington barracks until July 11, and during its stay had two men transferred to Captain Lamar's Fifth Company, U. S. V., Signal Corps, and nine to Lieutenant Campbell's Balloon Corps, receiving one man in return from Captain Lamar.

On July 11, the command left Washington for Santiago, Cuba, via Tampa, Fla. At the latter port, the men were supplied with khaki uniforms and were drilled daily. On July 22, the command sailed on the U. S. transport "Victor" for Santiago, Cuba, numbering fifty-five enlisted men beside Captain Thomas F. Clark, First Lieutenants Henry W. Sprague and C. H. Martin and Second Lieutenant Don A. Palmer.

On July 27, they reached Santiago, and Captain Clark reported the arrival of his company to General Shafter, commanding the Fifth Corps with headquarters at the palace of the late Spanish commandant. The general informed him that, owing to the prevalence of yellow fever, his men would not be allowed to land, greatly to the disappointment of Captain Clark and his command, and the unmitigated disgust of the chief signal officer at Washington, who had chosen the Tenth Company for this work, on account of their special fitness for line construction and operations.

On June 31, the command was transferred to the transport "Seguranca," about to sail with 159 sick and wounded for the United States. There being an utter lack of medical attendance on board, the entire command volunteered to aid in caring for these unfortunates.

On August 4, the "Seguranca" arrived at quarantine off Egmont

Key, Fla., and on the 7th, Captain Clark was ordered to proceed to Porto Rico with two officers and twenty-four men. Lieutenant Sprague with twenty-nine men sailed for New York on the "Seguranca."

On August 15, however, Captain Clark was ordered to Huntsville, Ala., where the company was joined by the balance of the command with the exception of Lieutenant Sprague, then on sick furlough, and one man discharged in New York. Here the company constructed a complete telegraph and telephone line and connections, which was so thoroughly



SIGNAL CORPS, 1st BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1895. FLAG STATION AT PROSPECT HILL, WALTHAM, MASS.

done that not one delay in the transmission of messages was reported during the stay of the corps at Huntsville.

Sickness, said by the doctors to be due to long confinement on the transports, and the putrid water furnished, became prevalent.

While at Huntsville, the company lost, by transfer and discharge fourteen members, including Lieutenant Martin. On October 3, 1898, it was ordered to Boston, arriving on the fifth instant. The men were furloughed for sixty days, and on December 10, 1898, were mustered out.

Captain Clark's mild expressions of regret at the failure to use this effective command, have a deeper meaning to those who read between the lines:

"It is not meet for me in any way, to attack the actions of my

superiors, but when I think of the wasted efforts of my company, and the numberless opportunities which were to be grasped had my superiors but said the word, I feel deeply for my men. The courage, loyalty, and ability were all there, but the opportunity was lacking—aye, more, at Santiago, it was denied. With a few exceptions, the men were residents of Boston and vicinity, and I think that Boston and Massachusetts have every reason to be proud of their Signal Corps as men and soldiers.

"I am proud to know that such men as my three officers were assigned to my command. Lieutenant Sprague of this state is an able officer, and we were more than fortunate when Illinois and Minnesota temporarily lost to us Lieutenants Martin and Palmer. I wish to thank them, and my entire company, for their unflinching attention to duty, and to join with them in saying that our country's call will again find us in her service."

It is said that during the early part of the Spanish-American War it was realized that the Signal Corps was of too great, and indeed critical importance to be longer left with ancient, insufficient and obsolete equipment, and that a strong effort was made to supply the deficient outfits, with which its patient and ambitious members have struggled from the very organization of the service.

Why this commendable effort came to naught it is needless to enquire, but that a well-equipped signal service is indispensable to any force in the field, or any coast threatened with attack from the sea, is indisputable. In the Civil War, the cavalry



THE FIELD TELEPHONE, 1898-1899.

vidette and the skirmish line could do effective work in locating an enemy and averting an useless waste of life, but even then the signal service was invaluable, and often perceived and signalled unseen dangers, and advices which were in the highest degree conducive to safety and success.

That to-day such a force is even more indispensable no one denies,

for the immense range of modern arms of precision, and the terrible hail of projectiles now directed and sustained on any force in sight, covers an immense belt between hostile forces, in which an individual is safe from capture, if not from death. In this zone the signal officer by means of heliograph, flag, torch, telephone or telegraph, must hereafter play a most honorable and valuable part; full of danger, but of the first importance to his superiors.

A very practical suggestion of Inspector-General Carter is embodied in his report of 1898:

"The suggestions made in the annual report of this department last year, that the two signal corps which are now attached to headquarters of brigades, should be consolidated into a single corps with an organization similar to the Ambulance Corps, is renewed. Under the present arrangement uniformity in instruction and administration is impossible; besides, if the corps were consolidated, many costly articles of equipment, which signalmen must have to be efficient, would not need to be duplicated, as is the case under the present organization."

In 1899, the attendance at camp of the First Brigade Signal Corps was twenty-five officers and men, the whole number enrolled. The Second Brigade Signal Corps also made a good showing, and Brigadier-General Bancroft has recommended that they be suitably equipped and include a number of skilled electricians.

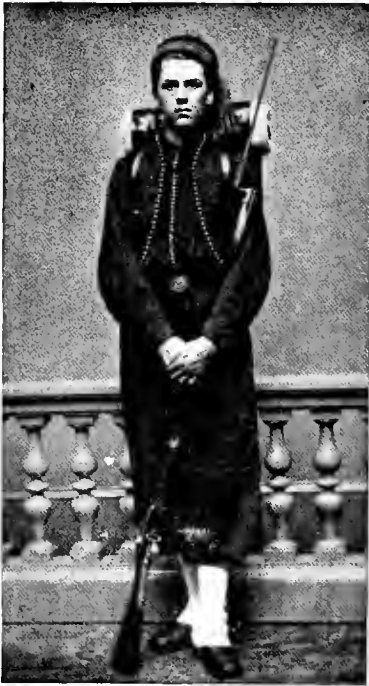
At the last annual encampment of the 1st Brigade, the Signal Corps, under Lieutenant George E. Lovett, wired the camp and established perfect telephone communication between brigade headquarters, the hospital, and the adjutants of the several commands. Less than fifty dollars, and the trained skill and labor of the experts of the neglected Signal Corps, perfected this improvement, which, in the opinion of every officer, was worth ten times its cost.

The art of scientific warfare is to-day a study of all the arts of peace, as well as those of destruction; and this study, when perfected, is a liberal education, such as few men in social or business life may enjoy. The Massachusetts militia, possessing as it does a personnel unrivalled in its intelligence and economic and industrial ability, should not fail to carry into the higher branches of its service that perfection in organization and equipment which is necessary to the highest success and most enthusiastic *esprit de corps*.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### ENLISTMENT, PROMOTION, AND DISCHARGE.

**U**NDER the laws of the colonies, of the loyal province, and of the state of Massachusetts, until the abolition of the rule that all men of the proper age, and not expressly exempt, must do military duty, there was little uniformity in the methods of enlistment and promotion in the active militia and independent military companies of earlier days. A petition for the necessary authorization of a new com-



PRIVATE JONES, B. L. I., 1861.

pany was signed by such men as the gentlemen in charge invited and induced to become members, and these, when duly mustered in, became a kind of socio-military club, which by a majority of votes accepted or rejected later candidates for membership. There was no physical examination of a proposed or accepted recruit, unless an application for discharge was made when every man was needed for immediate service, and then this was generally sought by the applicant to justify his withdrawal, rather than exacted by military usage or the forms of law.

To-day, the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, is as exacting and formal in its recruiting service, as any regular army can be when men are actually needed.

One who wishes to join a certain company, troop, battery, independent corps or the like, will do well first to interview some officer of the body which he wishes to join, preferably the commander, and inform him of his desire. This is not required by the law, but the methods of to-day have practically made it impossible, in some commands, to secure membership against the wishes of the commanding officer. In other bodies, the old rule that the members shall decide as to the moral and social qualities of a recruit, is still in full force and effect. In any event, the candidate must secure the good offices of some member of the corps, who will endorse and present a document, which in all material points, duplicates the following:



## APPLICATION TO ENLIST.

Boston, April 1, 1901.

To the Officers and Members of Company J, Tenth Regiment Infantry,  
Massachusetts Volunteer Militia:

I HEREBY DECLARE, That it is my desire to become a Member of your Company, and to that end have authorized Richard Roe to propose my name as a Candidate for Membership; I am a citizen of the United States, and a native of Hackensack, N. J.; I am twenty years of age; my height is 5 feet, 10 inches; and my occupation is a printer. If admitted to membership I will perform all the duties required by the Laws and Regulations for the government of the Militia of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, and the By-Laws of your Regiment and Company. I will obey the orders of my superior officers, and endeavor to become a good and efficient soldier. I have (1) been previously in the military service, as follows: (2) private Company D, 4th Battalion of Infantry New Jersey National Guard, 1898-1899, discharged on account of removal from the State. That the above is a full and complete statement of any and all service rendered by me and I have only served as stated.

Name, JOHN DOE.

Residence, Chelsea. Place of Business, 14 Federal St., Boston.

Signed in the presence of RICHARD ROE.

I HEREBY PRESENT the name of John Doe as a Candidate for membership in this Company, believing that he is morally and physically qualified to discharge the duties of Membership, and that he will make a good and efficient member.

Name, RICHARD ROE.

Residence, Chelsea. Place of Business, 14 Federal St.

Place, Boston, Mass.

Date, April 1, 1901.

1. Or never. 2. Here state what, if any, service in the Militia of this or any other State of the United States, with cause of discharge from each. If no service has been rendered a line will be drawn through.

Having thus applied and been vouched for, the company, under the direction of some commissioned officer, votes to accept or reject the applicant. When accepted, he signs the enlistment roll or book, giving his name, age, residence, date of enlistment, and the number of years for which he voluntarily enlists. The officer present fills out the roll by signing under the head "By Whom Enlisted," and prepares a Muster-in Roll, showing the result of the election just held. This document is headed:

"Muster-in Roll of recruits for Company J, in the Tenth Regiment of Infantry, 3d Brigade, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia."

Then follows the list of recruits elected, giving their names in alphabetical order, Christian name in full, rank, age, residence, occupation, when enlisted and for what period, with such remarks upon each recruit as seem necessary to further inform the mustering-in officer concerning the character or desirability of each. These Muster-in Rolls are made in triplicate by the recruiting officer (the first Christian name of each man being written in full) and forwarded to regimental headquarters, with a request that the recruits therein named be mustered in. The mustering-in officer, at the time of mustering in the recruits, compares the rolls with the enlistment book, and musters no man who has not

signed that book. The recruiting officer then endorses the triplicate roll as follows:

"I certify on honor, That this muster roll exhibits the true state of recruits for Company J, Tenth Regiment of Infantry in the 3d Brigade, M. V. M.; that each man answers to his own proper name in person; and that the remarks set opposite each name are accurate and just.

IRA COE, Captain.

Date: April 1, 1901. Station: Boston."

As, however, the later laws make officers holding the rank of captain mustering-in officers, the captain of the company, after the recruit has passed the physical examination, generally proceeds to administer the following oath:

(The mustering officer directs each man to stand upright, hold up his right hand and repeat the following oath:)

"I, John Doe, do solemnly swear, that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, and will support the Constitution thereof; and I do solemnly swear that I will faithfully observe and obey all laws and regulations for the government of the Volunteer Militia of said Commonwealth, and the orders of all officers elected or appointed over me. I do solemnly swear that I will support the Constitution of the United States. So help me God."

The officer then makes his final endorsement as follows:

"I certify on honor, That I have carefully examined the men whose names are borne on this roll, and have this day administered to them the oath prescribed by law, and accepted them into the service of the State, for the period set against their names:

IRA COE, Captain, Company J, Tenth Regt., M.V. M.  
Mustering Officer.

Date: April 1, 1901. Station: Boston."

The muster having been completed, and the rolls properly sworn to, the mustering officer forwards one copy direct to the adjutant-general, delivers one copy to the recruiting officer, and the third is placed in the files of the regimental or battalion paymaster.

All terms of service commence at noon on the day of enlistment, if the enlisted man is mustered in within thirty days after his enlistment; otherwise at noon on the day of muster-in.

Under the old regime each member received a certificate of membership, which was often carefully framed and proudly displayed for general inspection. Some of these were quite ornate, as will be seen from the illustrations of this article.

Should the candidate be absent when elected, or for any reason fail to be mustered in forthwith, he can at any time within thirty days after his election present himself for muster. After the thirty days have elapsed he forfeits his right and must seek a re-election.

### PHYSICAL EXAMINATION.

The physical examination of a recruit must be completed before he is mustered into the state service; and it is the intent of the law that he shall be fully up to the physical standard prescribed by the commander-in-chief, and inculcated by the surgeon-general.

This examination, as generally conducted to-day, is as exhaustive and thorough as that of the United States regular army, when a state



CERTIFICATE OF MEMBERSHIP.

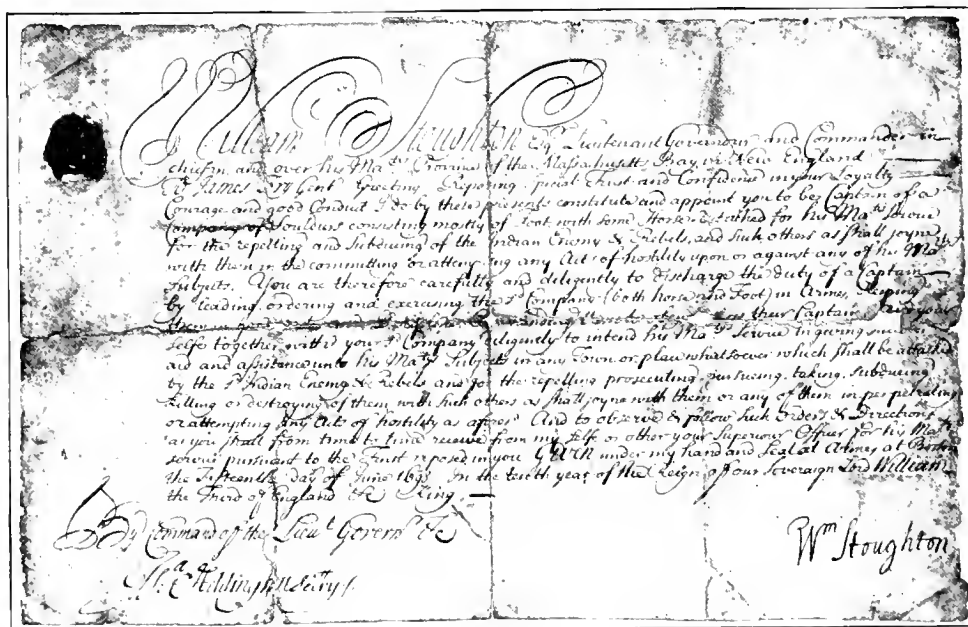
of war exists, and men are really wanted in the field. So far as a soldier fit for active service, can be picked out by a standard of height, weight, sound viscera, strong and supple limbs and general symmetry and due proportion, the present practice gives the Massachusetts Militia a splendid set of men. Sedentary occupations, intemperance in eating and drinking, late hours and dissipations more or less vicious, here and there sap this primal strength and unfit a fairly trained soldier for active service in the field; but it is not too much to say that over ninety per cent of the men in the service to-day, if put into the field and judiciously hardened by degrees, would bear campaigning with any troops in the world.

## PROMOTION.

The earlier commissions were written and sealed, not with the seal of the province, but the "seal at arms" of the governor or lieutenant-governor. The samples given are also printed in full:

## CAPTAIN'S COMMISSION, 1698.

WILLIAM STOUGHTON, Esq., Lieutenant Governor and Commander in chief, in and over his Ma'ty Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England—to James Fry, Gent. Greeting. Reposing special Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and Good Conduct, I do by these presents constitute and appoint you to be Captain of a Company of Souldiers, consisting mostly of Foot, with some Horse attached for His Maj'ty's Service, for the Repelling and Subduing of the Indian Enemy and Rebels, and such others as shall joine with them in committing or attempting any acts of hostility, upon or against any of his Maj'ty's Subjects. You are thereby carefully and dilligently to discharge the duty of a Captain by leading, ordering and exercising the sd company (both Horse and Foot) in Armes, keeping them in good Order and Discipline, Commanding them to obey you as their Captain, and yourself, together with your Company, dilligently to intend his Ma'ty's Service in giving Succor, aid and assistance unto His Ma'ty's Subjects in any town or place, whatsoever, which shall be attacked by the Indian Enemy and Rebels, and for the repelling, prosecuting, pursuing, taking, subduing, killing or destroying of them, with such others as shall joine with them, or any of them in perpetrating or attempting any acts of Hostility as afores'd. And to observe and follow such orders and Directions as you shall from time to time receive from my Selfe, or other your Superior Officer for His Ma'ty's



service, pursuant to the Trust reposed in you. GIVEN under my Hand and Seal at Armes, at Boston the Fifteenth day of June, 1698, in the tenth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord, William the Third of England, &c. King—

WM. STOUGHTON.

By Command of the Lieut. Govern. JAS. ADDINGTON, Sec'y.

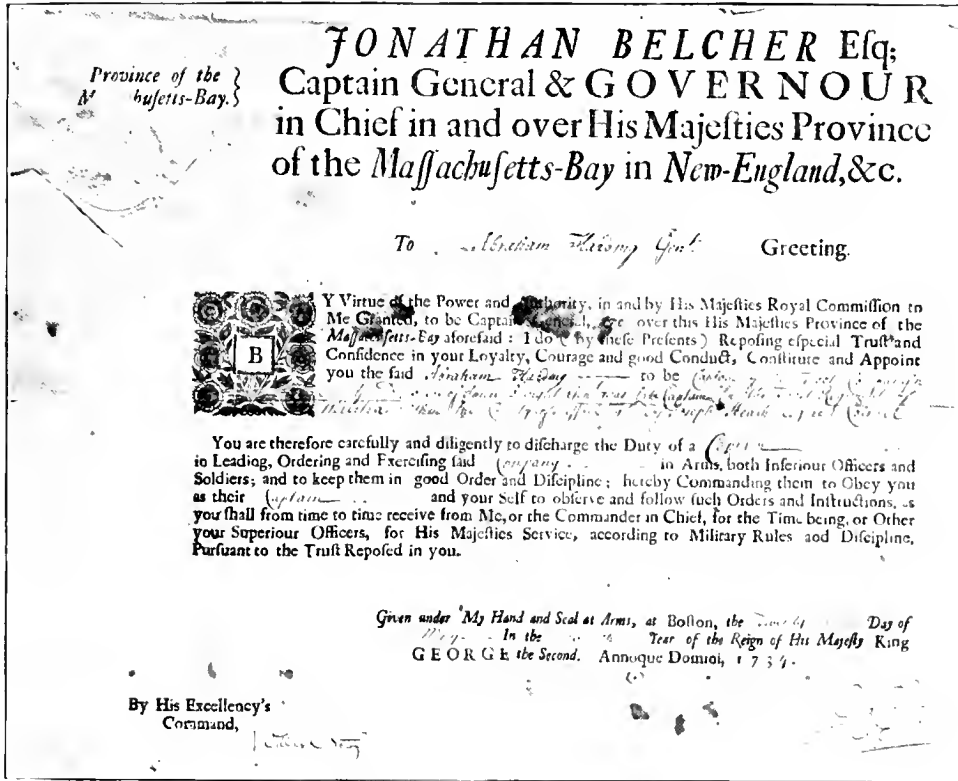
In the 18th century, commissions in printed forms were introduced, one of which is also illustrated, and runs as follows:

CAPTAIN'S COMMISSION, 1734.

Province of the Massachusetts Bay.

JONATHAN BELCHER, ESQ., Captain General and Governor in Chief, in and over His Majesties Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, &c. To Abraham Harding, Gent, Greeting.

By Virtue of the Power and Authority, in and by His Majesties Royal Commission, to Me Granted, to be Captain General, &c. over this, His Majesties Province of



the Massachusetts Bay, aforesaid, I do (by these Presents) Reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and Good Conduct, Constitute and Appoint you, the said Abraham Harding, to be Captain of the Foot Company in Medfield, whereof John Dwight, Gent, was late Captain, in the First Regiment of Militia, within the county of Suffolk, Whereof Joseph Heath, Esquire, is Colonel. You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of a Captain in Leading, Ordering and Exercising said Company in Armes, both Inferior officers and Souldiers; and to keep them in good Order and discipline; hereby Commanding them to Obey you as their Captain, and yourself to observe and follow such Orders and instructions as you shall from time to time receive from Me, or the Commander in Chief, for the Time being, or Other your Superiour Officers, for His Majesties Service, according to Military Rules and Discipline, Pursuant to the Trust reposed in you.

Given under My Hand and Seal at Arms, at Boston, the Twenty-second day of May, In the Seventh Year of the Reign of His Majesty King, George the Second. Annoque Domini, 1734.

J. BELCHER.

By His Excellency's Command, J. WILLARD, Sec'y.

The recruit, although enlisted at first for three years, is from the very date of his endorsement of the rolls in the line of promotion,

and may aspire to any elective or appointive position. The commander-in-chief, alone, holds his high rank and great responsibilities by the vote of a majority or plurality of the people of the Commonwealth. He appoints all the members of his staff, each of whom holds office until his successor is appointed by the governor, or his successor in office. In default of re-appointment, these officials resign or, if qualified, are retired, with or without a higher brevet rank than that appertaining to their service position.

Generals of brigade are elected by the field officers of the several commands forming the brigade, subject however to the approval of the commander-in-chief. A brigadier-general appoints all the commissioned and non-commissioned officers and attaches of his staff.

Colonels, lieutenant-colonels and majors, when commanding officers of regiments, independent corps and battalions, are elected by the line officers of their commands, subject of course to the final decision of the commander-in-chief, and hold office until removed by legislative action, dismissed for cause, or their own resignation. The colonel, lieutenant-colonel or major commanding appoints his staff, which also includes both commissioned and non-commissioned officers. The latest circular treating on this subject and issued by the adjutant-general's office, sets forth Section 26 of Chapter 367 of the Acts of the Legislature, 1893, as amended by the legislature of 1899-1900, which now delimits the personnel of the several bodies constituting the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia as follows:

Section 26. To each regiment of infantry there shall be one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, three majors, and a staff, to consist of one surgeon, with the rank of major; one regimental adjutant, one quartermaster, one paymaster, who shall be the mustering officer, and one assistant surgeon, each with the rank of captain; one assistant surgeon, one inspector of rifle practice, one commissary of subsistence, and three battalion adjutants, each with the rank of first lieutenant; and one chaplain. There shall also be a non-commissioned staff, as follows:—One regimental sergeant major, one quartermaster sergeant, one commissary sergeant, one paymaster sergeant, one hospital steward, one drum major, one chief bugler, and three battalion sergeant majors, who shall hold the same relative rank attached to similar positions in the United States army. There shall also be allowed to each regiment: two color sergeants, one orderly, to rank as private, and sixteen drummers, to be enlisted and mustered as drummers. To each separate battalion of cavalry there shall be one major, and a staff to consist of one surgeon, with the rank of major, one adjutant, one quartermaster, one paymaster, who shall be the mustering officer, one inspector of rifle practice and one assistant surgeon, one veterinary surgeon, each with the rank of first lieutenant, and one chaplain. There shall also be a non-commissioned staff, as follows:—One sergeant major, one quartermaster sergeant, one hospital steward, one chief bugler, and two guidon sergeants. To each separate battalion of artillery there shall be one major, and a staff to consist of one surgeon



*Painting by Chapple.*

WITH WASHINGTON BEFORE THE BATTLE OF MONMOUTH.





with the rank of major, one adjutant, one quartermaster, one paymaster, who shall be the mustering officer, and one assistant surgeon, one veterinary surgeon, each with the rank of first lieutenant, and one chaplain, and whenever a vacancy shall occur in the position of assistant surgeon of the battalion of artillery or the battalion of cavalry, the office of said assistant surgeon shall be abolished. There shall also be a non-commissioned staff, as follows:—One sergeant major, one quartermaster sergeant, one hospital steward, one chief bugler and two guidon sergeants.

Section 2. To each regiment of heavy artillery there shall be one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, three majors, and the staff, non-commissioned staff, headquarter attaches and drummers prescribed for a regiment of infantry, except that in addition to the staff and non-commissioned staff officers specified in section one of this act there shall be allowed to each regiment of heavy artillery the additional staff officers provided for in section five of chapter three hundred and forty-eight of the acts of the year eighteen hundred and ninety-eight.

Section 3. There shall be allowed to each company of infantry, battery of heavy artillery, battery of light artillery, troop of cavalry, signal and ambulance corps, in addition to the officers and men now provided for by law, one quartermaster sergeant, wherever one is not already prescribed, to rank next after the first sergeant, and one chief cook, to rank as corporal, and to each company of the naval brigade one cook, first class. Company quartermaster sergeants and chief cooks shall be appointed and reduced as prescribed by law for other non-commissioned officers, and all chief cooks shall be examined as to their qualifications for the position, in such manner as the commander-in-chief shall direct, before receiving their warrants.

Section 4. There shall be allowed and paid to the chief cooks, and in the naval brigade to cooks, first class, for the duty required in sections ninety-eight, ninety-nine, one hundred and six, one hundred and seven and one hundred and fourteen of chapter three hundred and sixty-seven of the acts of the year eighteen hundred and ninety-three, the sum of four dollars per day: provided, however, that it shall be certified and made to appear, in such form as the commander-in-chief shall prescribe, that in each case the duty of superintending and assisting in the preparation of the food of the company was actually performed by the chief cook in person, during the tour of duty or day of duty for which he is returned for pay; otherwise he shall receive the pay prescribed for other enlisted men of like grade. For duty, other than that hereinbefore mentioned, a chief cook shall receive the pay and allowances prescribed for other enlisted men of like grade.

Section 5. Officers designated in section fifty-eight of chapter three hundred and sixty-seven of the acts of the year eighteen hundred and ninety-three, as recruiting officers of the several corps and commands of the volunteer militia shall also be competent mustering officers for mustering in and administering the prescribed oath of enlistment to all soldiers enlisted by them. Mustering officers shall forward to the commander-in-chief, through the proper military channels, the returns of the enlistment and muster in of soldiers as soon as practicable, and not later

than ten days thereafter. Said returns shall be in such form, and accompanied by such certificates, descriptive lists and other information relative to the recruit, as may be required by law or prescribed in orders by the commander-in-chief. But no recruit shall be knowingly and intentionally accepted who is not eligible for enlistment under the law, or who is physically or otherwise below the standard prescribed by the commander-in-chief; and no recruit shall be accepted contrary to the provisions of section sixty-one of the act cited at the beginning of this section; and no recruit, having been accepted shall be mustered into the service until all the requirements of the statute law, of the militia regulations, and of all proper orders relating to the enlistment and muster in of soldiers have been complied with.

Section 6. First sergeants shall be appointed by the permanent company, battery, troop or corps commanders, without reference to higher authority, from the duty sergeants of their respective organizations, and may be by said permanent company, battery, troop or corps commanders, returned to the grade of duty sergeant at any time without the restrictions imposed by section six of chapter four hundred and forty-eight of the acts of the year eighteen hundred and ninety-seven. First sergeants shall be appointed and returned to the grade of duty sergeant by a company order, a copy of which shall be forwarded at once to regimental headquarters; and the relative seniority of first sergeants shall be determined by the dates of the orders appointing them. Section fifty-five of chapter three hundred and sixty-seven of the acts of the year eighteen hundred and ninety-three, and other acts and parts of acts now in force relating to the appointment and reduction of non-commissioned officers of the volunteer militia, are hereby repealed in so far as they relate to the appointment and reduction or removal of first sergeants and are inconsistent with this act.

Section 7. This act shall take effect upon its passage. (Approved April 3, 1900., By order of the Commander-in-Chief,

SAMUEL DALTON,

Adjutant-General.

The newly enlisted private, for all enlistments must be made to the ranks, is supposed to receive promotion by appointment of the colonel, lieutenant-colonel or major commanding his regiment or battalion, on the written recommendation of his captain. Generally speaking, good attendance, a neat dress, courteous manner, and capacity for drilling men and handling a relief on guard duty, are pretty certain to secure a corporalecy. A large proportion of non-commissioned officers, sergeants included, are picked out by captains without special reference to the equal fitness of other soldiers. Some commanding officers, however, have encouraged all enlisted men to compete for these offices, holding a series of examinations in which written questions are to be answered in writing, and competitions in which every candidate is given a squad to drill, place on guard, relieve, etc., etc. Results are duly marked according to an

established standard, and the best percentage in all regards takes the coveted promotion. Sergeants are of course presumed to know more, and are generally taken from among the corporals. From among the sergeants the captain chooses the first or orderly sergeant, and can at will reduce him to the grade of ordinary sergeant. With this exception, no corporal or sergeant can be reduced in grade, or to the ranks, except by the decision of a court martial, or after a hearing before the colonel and other field officers, at which the defendant must be present and allowed a full defence.

Any private, corporal or sergeant may, however, run for any commissioned position in the company, and it has frequently happened that a formal enlistment has been made, merely as a basis for election to the captaincy. Every captaincy and lieutenantcy is supposed to be filled as soon as possible after the discharge, resignation or retirement of its possessor, and the commanding officer must order an election within a reasonable time after such vacancy.

Personal, verbal or written notice must be given each voter four days before the election, or written notice left at his last known regular place of business or residence. On the other hand, an utter neglect or refusal to hold such election and elect officers to fill the vacancies will be strongly resented at headquarters, and, if it occurs twice in succession, may be punished with the disbandment of the company.

The "Record of Proceedings" at the election of any officer is very carefully made and returned to the officer ordering the election. It is made on a special form which in the case of the election of John Doe to the office of second lieutenant would read as follows:

Record of Proceedings at an election of second lieutenant, Company J, Tenth Regiment Infantry, 3d Brigade, M. V. M., October 1, 1901, under Order No. 10, September 1, 1901, Headquarters 3d Brigade.

Names of Candidates.	First Ballot.
John Doe	28
Richard Roe	20
John Smith	2

Whole number of votes 50.

Necessary to a choice 26.

Candidate elected, John Doe.

IRA COE,  
Captain and Presiding Officer.

In case of a failure to elect on the first ballot, others are taken, the result of each being recorded in the same manner. If two or more vacancies are to be filled a separate ballot and record must be shown. The result of each ballot is announced before another is called. The members vote in regular order, the roster being called at each ballot.

An "Election Return of officers in Company J, Tenth Regiment Infantry, 3d Brigade, M. V. M.," gives the full Christian name of each

officer elected, with his new rank, residence, former rank if any, and the name and cause of discharge of the officer succeeded.

This return is thus endorsed:

I certify, on honor, that the above is a correct return, made from the record of proceedings in each case, of an election held at Boston on the first day of October, 1901.

IRA COE,

Captain and Presiding Officer.

The successful candidate is at once sent this "Notice of Election."

Sir: In accordance with Section 48, Chapter 367 of the Acts of 1893. I have the honor to notify you that you were this day elected to be second lieutenant of Infantry. Your acceptance or declination of that office must be signified to me on the enclosed form within six days from this date.

Very respectfully,

IRA COE, Captain,  
Presiding Officer.

To John Doe, Chelsea, Mass.

Address, Brookline Mass.

The enclosure is a "Notice of Acceptance" which would read as follows:

Chelsea, October, 3, 1901.

Sir: I have the honor to notify you that I accept the office of second lieutenant of infantry, to which I was elected on the first day of October, 1901.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

JOHN DOE,

To Captain Ira Coe, Brookline, Mass.

Address, Chelsea, Mass.

This notice sent by the person elected or appointed, within three days of the date of election or appointment, to the presiding or appointing officer is forwarded with the return of election or appointment, to the adjutant general. With it is also forwarded a form showing the military record of the officer elected or appointed. This gives his name in full, place of birth, age, residence, present rank, date of present commission, and a statement of service in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. Under the last head the officer elect must detail his service as an enlisted man, in what organizations he served, what rank he held in each, when and for what reason discharged.

He must also give a detailed account of any service in the militia of any other state or in the United States, the period served, rank held, and cause of discharge.

His service, if any, during the war of the rebellion, and attendance at any educational institution affording military instruction, must also be fully reported and thus certified:

I certify on honor that the above is a full and correct statement of service rendered by me, and that I am a citizen of the United States.

JOHN DOE.

In due time the following "Notice of Commission" is received by the candidate and would read as follows:

Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Adjutant-General's Office,  
Boston, October 20, 1901.

Sir:—Your commission, as second lieutenant of infantry, has been sent to the office of the Examining Board for officers of the militia, before which I am directed to instruct you to appear without delay, for qualification and examination. The Examining Board will meet at the State House, Boston, on the fourth Wednesday of each month, at 10 o'clock a. m., until further orders.

Under Sections 42 and 54, Chapter 367 of the acts of 1893, you cannot enter upon the duties of your office or exercise any command, until you shall have received notice from this office that you have satisfactorily passed your examination; failing to present yourself for examination within forty days after notice of the date of your election (or appointment) you will be discharged. Four cents per mile for travel to and from the place of examination is allowed.

Very respectfully,

SAMUEL DALTON,

Adjutant-General.

To John Doe, Chelsea, Mass.

At the same time the president of the Board of Examiners is thus notified:

Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Adjutant-General's Office,  
Boston, October 20, 1901.

To the President of the Board of Examiners:

Sir:—I am directed to inform you that the following commission has been issued by the Commander-in-Chief, and the officer has been ordered to appear before your board for examination.

John Doe, Second Lieutenant, Company J, Tenth Regiment Infantry.

Respectfully yours,

SAMUEL DALTON, Adjutant-General.

The Board of Examiners, whose decision must confirm or reverse all the proceedings thus far taken, courteously receives the newly elected officer, and seats him at a big table, in a commodious and comfortable apartment of the State House. Each candidate is furnished with a list of questions, which is one of many such lists previously prepared and already aggregating thousands of questions.

In the case of John Doe, only such lists as contain questions fairly relative to the duties of a second lieutenant of infantry will be given him. Inasmuch, however, as in case of the absence of one or more of these officers, their duties may devolve upon him, questions concerning some of the duties of the first lieutenant and captain, will naturally be presented. Details of setting-up drill, the manual of arms, squad and company movements, the most effective methods in rifle practice, camp guard, outpost and police duty, and possibly something of the use of the Colt or Gatling gun, furnish suggestions for a vast number of questions, to say nothing of those connected with the records of expenditures, and care of public property, which must be studied by every officer.

To be able to pass this examination successfully, the candidate should carefully read the basic laws and text books of his service. Where the legislature of Massachusetts, or the adjutant-general's office has decided a question or prescribed a military text book for general use, the written answer must conform to the rule thus established. Further study should next attack the text books adopted by the United States army, giving of course the most attention to those dealing with the candidate's special arm of the service. It is not desirable that the subaltern, unless he possesses an extraordinary talent and love for military science, should greatly extend the scope of his reading for an impending examination, beyond what he is justly expected to know in the office to which he aspires or has been elected.

What he must know, and is likely to practice as a second lieutenant, should receive his close attention and become clear, easy and natural in his mind, so that when he attempts to write an answer, his words are only a plain statement of what he has seen done, and knows to have been correctly performed.

If, however, a soldier determines to secure promotion to still higher rank, the recent developments of military science require courses of reading and study, necessitating many textbooks, and a comprehension of the powers and duties of every other branch of the service. The cavalryman of to-day must be a mounted rifleman, and the infantry of any army may at any time be forced to become horsemen, artillerymen, signal men, bicyclists, boatmen, tram and construction men, etc., etc. A very completely practical knowledge of sanitation, field and camp cooking, judgment of distances and ranges, and a host of details connected with the care of men, and their sustenance and direction in active service, must also be acquired by the modern officer who would rank high in his profession.

When John Doe has filled out the answers to the list of questions allotted him, the examination papers are filed and passed upon at a later meeting of the board. If he has answered a certain percentage correctly, the board reports favorably to the adjutant-general, and he is assigned to duty. If he has failed, he is notified of the adverse decision of the board, and informed that he has ten days within which he may appeal to the commander-in-chief from their decision. Such appeals have been taken, but no one thus far has ever succeeded in obtaining a reversion of the decision of the board.

In such case, John Doe will do well to study hard, and drill with greater perseverance for six months longer, when, if physically qualified, he can seek another election to be again examined, and it is to be hoped, accepted.

Each additional promotion entails a physical and professional examination, the latter becoming more extended, and varied as he rises



*Painting by Wood*

CONTRABAND OF WAR.

ENLISTED ON THE QUOTA OF MASSACHUSETTS, 1862-1865.



*Painting by Wood*

IN THE UNITED STATES VOLUNTEERS.

ENLISTED ON THE QUOTA OF MASSACHUSETTS, 1862-1865.





in rank. No mere personal popularity will help him after he has secured the votes of his associates or subordinates, for only merit and a good constitution, "a sane mind in a sound body" can now secure promotion in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. His commanding officer cannot sit on the Board of Examiners, to aid or injure him, and beyond the imperfection of all human judgment, a just and practical decision is assured.

Beyond a doubt, the methods of physical and written examination, now established and conducted, ensure as good results and secure as good officers as are turned out in any service, within certain limitations. They cannot, it is true, enjoy the comprehensive education bestowed upon the students of West Point and other military colleges, and are therefore generally competent in one branch of the service only, and in that branch, and especially the cavalry and artillery, handicapped by a lack of practice, which should be more liberally provided for. But they are inestimably better qualified and taught than those militia officers of the Civil War, who, in their several metiers became leaders of infantry, cavalry, artillery and engineers, whom the world has never surpassed, and whose descendants have not lost the sterling qualities which more than compensate for the lack of merely theoretical knowledge.

Where rank is bestowed by appointment, the following form is substituted for the record of election:

## STAFF APPOINTMENT.

Headquarters Third Brigade, April 1, 1901.

General: I have the honor to report that I have this day appointed John Doe of Chelsea, Mass., (second lieutenant of infantry) as adjutant, with the rank of first lieutenant, on the staff of this regiment, in place of James Low, resigned at date of March 20, 1901, and request that he be commissioned in that office.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

DONALD STEWART,

Colonel Tenth Regiment, Infantry, M. V. M.

To the Adjutant-General of Massachusetts, Boston.

## TRANSFER AND DISCHARGE.

Any enlisted man in the Massachusetts militia may apply for transfer to any other company, troop or battery in which he may prefer to serve. His application must set forth some valid reason for his transfer, although a preference for another arm of the service; or desire to learn more than is practiced in his own organization, or to secure better facilities for attending drill and the like, if sincerely alleged, are generally accepted. This application, made to his captain or lieutenant commanding, must be by him approved or disapproved, and forwarded to the commanding officer of the corps. He, in return, will endorse it favorably or unfavorably, and forward it to the office of the adjutant-general. If all these officers have approved the transfer, it is then forwarded to the commanding officer of the organization to which transfer is sought, with a request that he "will take action according to custom, in regard to

recruits, and if the soldier is decided to be eligible to admission, will endorse the fact upon this application and return direct to this office."

If the application is returned to the adjutant-general's office, endorsed "with the request that the transfer be granted" a special order is issued, authorizing the transfer.

It will be seen that at every step, the rights of the soldier to secure more favorable conditions, and the right of every company to exclude undesirable recruits is carefully safe-guarded. In practice there are few refusals to desirable men.

The Massachusetts Volunteer Militia is strongly held together, chiefly by its esprit de corps and the sense of honor of its officers and enlisted men, and the experience of many vicissitudes of peace and war has shown that severity of punishment is not necessary to deter men from desertion and disobedience. The call to arms has always met with a ready response from the greater proportion of those actually in the service, and their retired and discharged comrades have eagerly pressed forward to recruit company and regiment to the maximum war footing.

Practically, there is no deterrent punishment for desertion, or such neglect or refusal of duty as amounts thereto, in this service; beyond the disgrace of a dishonorable discharge, and the loss of respect of one's comrades and friends. The report of the judge advocate general for 1898, thus bears testimony to the extraordinary loyalty and discipline of the State militia.

Judge Advocate General's Office, Worcester, Mass., December 18, 1899.  
Major-general Samuel Dalton, adjutant-general, State House, Boston.

General: I have the honor to submit my report for the current year. Such matters as have been referred to me for examination I have duly reported upon, and my opinions are now on your files.

The year has been unusually free from any court-martial cases, sent to me for review. It seems as if an effect of the late war with Spain was to purify the militia from any such imperfections, and to leave the organizations filled with officers and men who have been inspired by a conscientious desire to do their duty, and maintain the high honor that our volunteers won when our regiments went into the United States service.

Very respectfully

ROCKWOOD HOAR, Judge Advocate General.

Three enlisted men only, were court-martialed and dishonorably discharged in 1899.

This showing is one which deserves more than passing attention, inasmuch as it demonstrates that in this service a very high degree of discipline and affectiveness is maintained among a force, which at its full strength consists of 476 officers, and 6,116 enlisted men, and last year sent to camp and naval practice over 5,500 men and officers.

Under the provisions of Section 68, Chapter 359, of the Acts of the Legislature for 1898, "No enlisted man can be discharged before the expiration of his term of service, except by order of the commander-in-chief, and for the following reasons: To accept promotion by commis-

sion; upon removal of residence from the State, or out of the bounds of the command to which he belongs, to so great a distance, that in the opinion of his commanding officer he cannot properly perform his military duty; upon disability, established by the certificate of a medical officer; upon conviction of a felony in a civil court; when in the opinion of the commander-in-chief the interests of the service demand such discharge; to carry out the sentence of a court-martial; upon application to his commanding officer, approved by superior commanders."

Section 69. "Dishonorable discharges, or discharges in such form as to forbid re-enlistment, shall be given only in accordance with sentences of courts-martial."

Section 70. "Every soldier discharged from the service of the Commonwealth shall be furnished with a certificate of discharge, which shall set forth his rank, and state clearly the reason for such discharge."

Whenever neglect of duty, incompetence, or personal ways and acts satisfy a commanding officer that an enlisted man should be discharged for the good of the service, he may so represent to the commanding officer. Recommendations for the discharge of several men are often made on the same form, as follows:

Company J, Tenth Regiment, 3d Brigade, M. V. M.

Boston, December 20, 1901.

To the Adjutant-General of Massachusetts.

Sir: I have the honor to make application for the discharge of the following enlisted men of my command, for the reasons given in each case:

Names.	Rank.	Date of muster-in.	Reasons.
Thomas Reamer,	Corp.,	Dec. 20, 1898,	Expiration of term of service.
John Jones,	Private,	" " "	Removal beyond limits of command.
Selmar Brown,	Private,	" " 1900,	Expiration of term of service.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

IRA COE, Captain.

This form is duly endorsed and forwarded to the commanding officer at headquarters, who may approve or disapprove any or all of the discharges requested. If approved by him, and later endorsed and approved by the general of the brigade, the discharges are usually granted, and a special order of the commander-in-chief relieves them from further service. If any injustice is done, by or through any officer who has procured or approved a discharge, he is liable to be called before a court-martial for his abuse of discretion.

In 1899, 2,290 enlisted men were discharged by order, 115 by promotion and 21 by death; in all, 2,426 enlisted men. Besides this, the provisional militia were disbanded, losing 1407 by order of discharge, and 66 by promotion; in all, 1,473, making a total of 3,899 men. In 1898 the

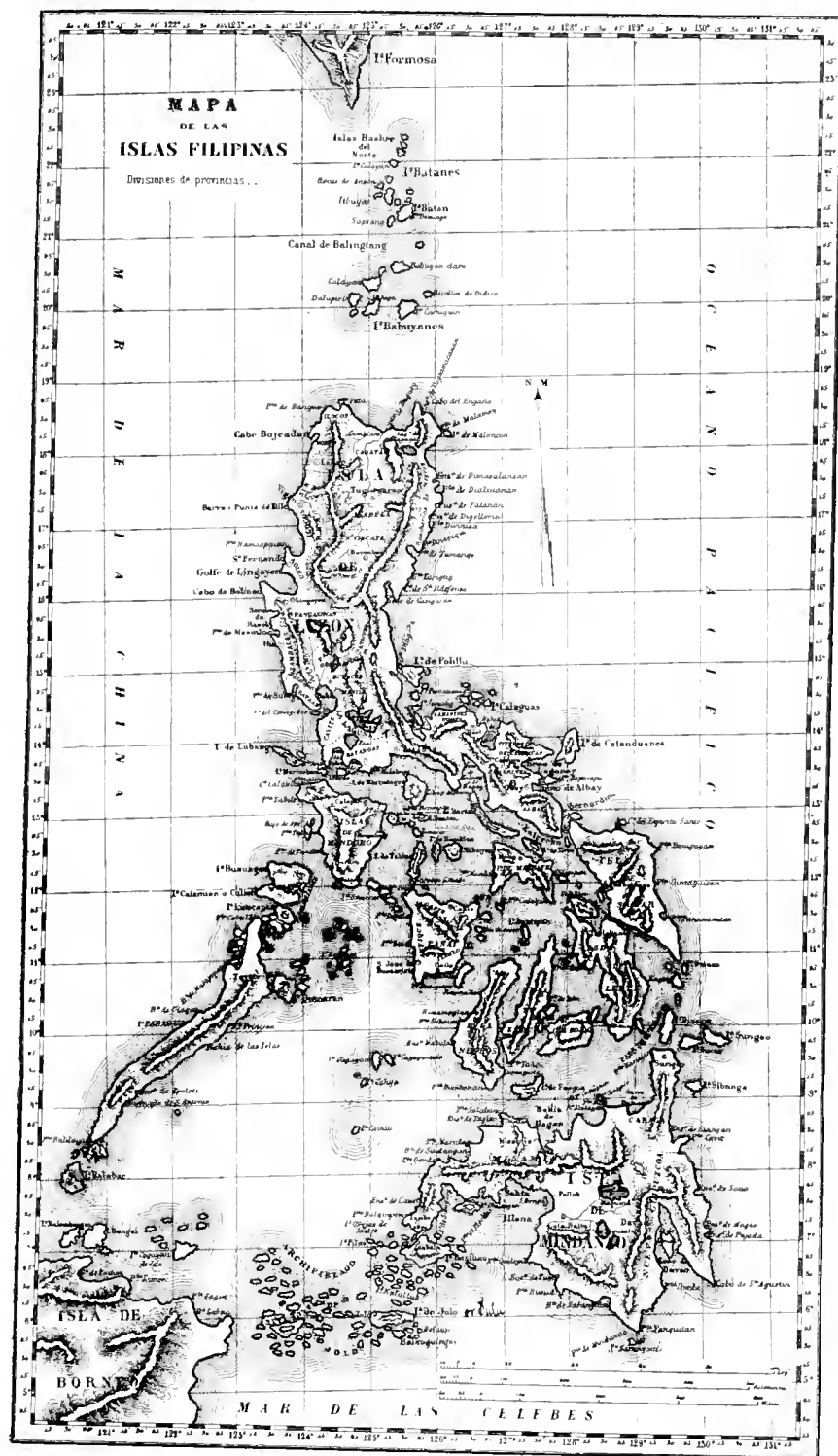
militia lost by discharge, 1,112; by promotion 47, and by death 107; in all, 1,266 men, besides 174 lost to the provisional militia; a total of 1,440 men. In 1897 there were discharged on order 1,415 enlisted men; for promotion 55, and by death 17; a total of 1,487 men. It will be seen that the yearly loss to the service from these causes approximates thirty per cent of the actual force.

"A commissioned officer may be discharged upon the order of the commander-in-chief, upon either an address of both houses of the legislature, or to carry out the sentence of a court-martial, after a fair trial, pursuant to the laws of the Commonwealth, and the regulations for the government of the militia for the time," or;

"An officer who, in the opinion of his commanding officer, is incompetent, or is impairing the efficiency of the organization to which he is attached, by mismanagement, neglect or misconduct in civil life, for which he is not amenable to a court-martial, may, upon the request of his commanding officer, be ordered to appear before a board of examiners, to consist of not less than three, nor more than seven officers, none of whom shall be of less rank than the officer under investigation." This board, having been organized with due regard for the rights of challenge of the officer investigated, must proceed according to the general practice of a court-martial, but with less formality, giving the accused every right and privilege necessary to secure him a fair hearing. The report of this board may result in an order that the officer charged be brought before a court-martial, or quietly discharged from the service, but does not amount to a conviction or acquittal of any offence.

Every officer may tender his resignation at any time, when not on duty, but he remains at the service of the State until this is accepted, and he is formally notified thereof. Resignations between May 1 and November 1 are discouraged, as that is the period of active duty in camp and elsewhere; but as a general rule the resignation of a lax and inefficient officer is welcomed at any time. On the other hand, the resignation of a good and faithful soldier is accepted with hesitation and regret, but will seldom be refused or delayed, if the best interests of the officer demand his retirement from the service.

In 1897 commissioned officers, who had rendered continuous service for periods of ten years and upwards in the Volunteer Militia of the Commonwealth, were privileged, upon their own applications, to be placed on the retired list. In 1899 this privilege was further extended to every commissioned officer "who was in the militia service on the first day of July, in the year of 1897, and who served in the army or navy of the United States at any time during the War of the Rebellion, and was honorably discharged." Officers thus retired are privileged to wear the uniforms of their rank, and may be called into service without further com-





mission, as they continue to hold their old rank, and in some cases were retired with promotion to a still higher grade. Sixty-six officers, the larger number of whom had seen service in the Civil War, had availed themselves of this privilege at the close of the year 1899.

The civilian reader will understand from the foregoing article, that the strict and formal machinery of the administration and organization of the Massachusetts militia, has, in peace, no penalty of fine, imprisonment or corporal punishment to sustain its discipline, or hold together its thousands of officers and enlisted men. Patriotism, honor, an innate love of military life, and a generous emulation for deserved promotion and command, are the subtle, but efficient mainsprings of individual behavior and action, which have for nearly three centuries made the Massachusetts militia a source of just pride in peace, and her sure dependence in times of internal disorder, and civil and foreign war.

• \* • • •

It has been suggested by various officers that a list of military and naval text-books, and works for collateral reading and reference would be of great use to members of the militia who are really anxious for advancement; who, in fact, wish not only to obtain promotion, but to attain a broad and comprehensive knowledge of the art military. Such a list has been prepared by Lieutenant Robinson, military instructor at Harvard College, and additions to his list have been suggested by other officers, and the result will be found at the end of this volume.

It is hardly necessary to state that candidates for immediate examination should closely limit their reading to the regulations and manuals affecting the school of the soldier, company and regiment, in that arm of the service in which they propose to serve. But for the man who has an innate taste and desire for military knowledge, this list, long as it is, cannot and does not cover all which must be learned in a profession, which requires not only courage, strength and military discipline, but a profound and comprehensive knowledge of all the interests and developments of human life and effort, and all the varied conditions affecting the same.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE PROVISIONAL MILITIA OF 1898.

THE enrolled militia of Massachusetts, have from the earliest settlement of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay, been liable to be called to the defense of the state, and nation. None are exempt, except those specially relieved from military duty by law, and in the last resort, even these may be compelled by special legislation to serve against the common enemy, or repress riot and rebellion. The active militia are, and of course always have been, liable to be called into active service, within the limits of the state, and may be placed at the disposal of the general government to serve outside the state for a limited period.

In case of a foreign war, it has always been the practice to raise soldiers by volunteering, or, if necessary, by draft, whose company, line and staff officers are commissioned by the executive, after which the regiment, battalion or battery is mustered into the service of the nation. Such was the custom during British domination, under the royal governors, although sometimes departed from by the British army officers, and such has been the custom unto this day.

To a very great extent the active militia, which turns out into private life from twenty to twenty-five per cent of its rank and file yearly; is the basis of the earlier levies, and later on the nucleus of new organizations, so that during the rebellion a single militia company has sent two and even three companies into the service, chiefly composed of past and present members of the parent organization and their friends.

At an early date in the Spanish-American War, the whole infantry force of the State of Massachusetts, had either entered the volunteer service of the United States, or was preparing to do so. To furnish an equal number, ready to repel invasion at home, or to reinforce their comrades abroad, the legislative and executive action embodied in the following General Order, was taken:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

Adjutant-General's Office, Boston, May 18, 1898.

General Orders No. 8.

I. In accordance with Chapter 428 of the Acts of the Massachusetts Legislature, approved May 13, 1898, all commissioned officers of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia entering the military or naval service of the United States subsequently to the 20th day of April, 1898, are hereby granted leave of absence until thirty (30) days after their discharge from said service.

II. All enlisted men of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia entering the military or naval service as above, are granted furloughs until not later than thirty (30) days after their discharge therefrom, or until such time as their service in the militia



shall have expired, if such terms shall expire at an earlier date than their discharge as above.

III. All officers and enlisted men in the First Regiment, Heavy Artillery and the Second, Sixth, Eighth and Ninth Regiments of Infantry and Naval Brigade, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, excepting the paymasters and paymaster's sergeants, who have not entered the service of the United States under the recent call, are relieved from duty until further orders.

IV. Under Section 6, Chapter 428 of the Acts of the Legislature, approved May 14, 1898, it is ordered that provisional companies be raised at the discretion of the Commander-in-Chief, which may be assigned to provisional battalions or regiments, to receive such designations as may hereafter be directed. Enlistments into these companies shall be for a period not longer than thirty (30) days after the declaration of peace, and the commissions of all officers elected or appointed for such provisional organizations shall expire not later than thirty (30) days after the close of the war.

V. Officers and men relieved by the provisions of Paragraph III. of this order may elect to enter the Massachusetts Provisional Militia.

VI. By Section 8 of the Act already referred to, the formation of companies of the Provisional Militia is authorized only in cities and towns in which are situated the armories of companies of the active militia entering the service of the United States. The recruitment and organization will be under the rules and regulations governing the militia of the Commonwealth, the equipment of the same to be determined later.

VII. Blank enrolment lists will be forwarded to authorized persons in said cities and towns on application to the adjutant-general.

VIII. Officers and men of the companies entering the Provisional Militia will be subject to physical examinations (the officers before being commissioned, and the enlisted men before being mustered into the service of the Commonwealth), and no company will be mustered in until it is recruited to its maximum of fifty-eight (58) enlisted men ready for muster.

IX. Brigadier-General James L. Carter, Inspector-General, is charged with the supervision of the inspection and muster of the provisional companies under this order, and of the four (4) permanent companies for the Naval Brigade authorized by law. He will report the organizations when completed and mustered, and will request orders for the elections of officers.

X. The armories in cities and towns, vacated by the companies entering the service of the United States will be used by the companies of Provisional Militia for recruitment and muster, and will be occupied by them during their term of service unless otherwise ordered.

XI. Petitions for raising companies under this order may be forwarded to His Excellency the Governor and Commander-in-Chief, and, as required by the statutes, must be accompanied by the approval of the mayor and aldermen of cities or the selectmen of towns in which a majority of the petitioners reside.

Brigadier-General James L. Carter, Inspector-General, M. V. M. hastened to raise these companies and found a large number of patriotic and effective helpers. Within ten days after the signing of this order; G. O., No. 9, dated May 28, 1898, contained the following announcement:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

Executive Department, Boston, May 28, 1898.

Upon the recommendation of the inspector-general's and adjutant-general's departments the following-mentioned petition for a company is hereby approved, and the same will be mustered into the military service of the state, viz:

Charles E. Beals, and others of Stoneham, Mass.

(Signed) ROGER WOLCOTT,

Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

An order of even date approved the petition and ordered the muster of a company raised by Wm. J. Howard and others, of Stoneham, Mass.

Following these were sundry orders, among which appear the following:

III. Brigadier-General James L. Carter, Inspector-General, will arrange for the muster-in of the company at Stoneham named in the petition of Charles E. Beals. If notice is waived, he will hold an election for officers. He will assign the company at Stoneham to the armory recently occupied by Company H, Sixth Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M., first obtaining the approval of the selectmen of Stoneham. This company will be known as the First Company of Infantry, Provisional Militia.

IV. Brigadier-General, James L. Carter, Inspector-General, will arrange for the muster-in of the company named in the petition of William J. Howard. If notice is waived, he will hold an election for officers and will assign the company to the armory recently occupied by Company I, First Regiment, Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., first obtaining the approval of the mayor of Brockton. This company will be known as the Second Company of Infantry, Provisional Militia.

Other orders followed announcing the approval, and directing the muster of like companies until August 18, 1898, when it was announced in General Order No 16:

V. No further petitions for the organization of companies for the Provisional Militia will be received. Such companies as have been accepted and mustered into the militia of the Commonwealth will continue to occupy the armories assigned them until further orders, and they will be supplied with arms and equipments upon the recommendation of the inspector-general.

VI. All enlistments in the Provisional Militia will cease from this date in companies already mustered as well as those accepted and not mustered.

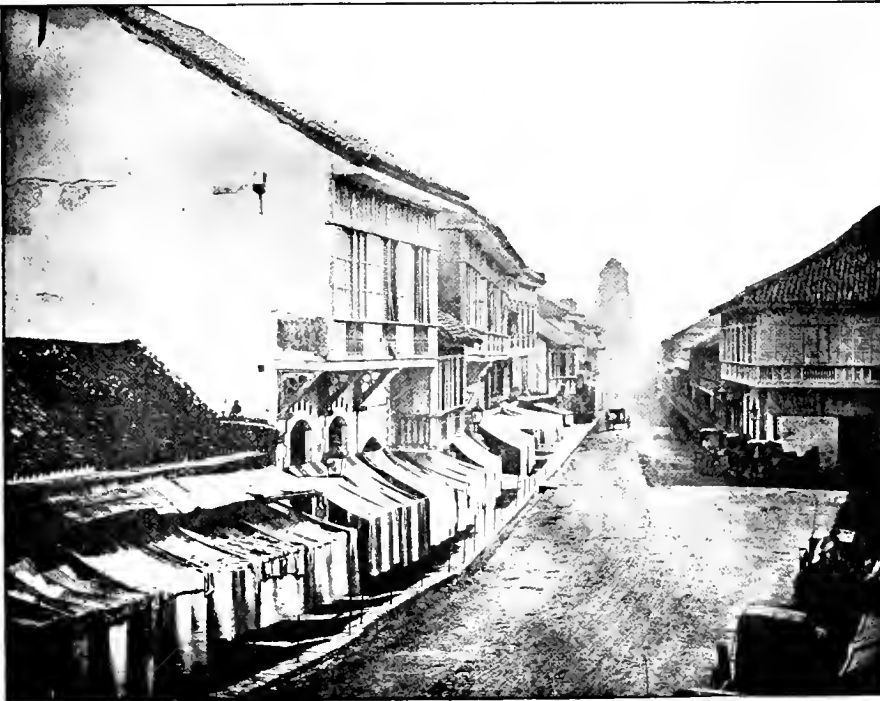
The following petitions had been received and acted upon in the following order:

- |  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| 1. Charles E. Beals and others of Stoneham.  | 16. John M. Cotter, Boston.        |
| 2. William J. Howard and others of Brockton. | 17. Charles L. Young, Springfield. |
| 3. Henry W. Pitman and others of Somerville. | 18. A. E. Perry, New Bedford.      |
| 4. Benj. H. Jellison, Haverhill.             | 19. A. Edward Crombie, Beverly.    |
| 5. Robert Treat Paine, Jr., Boston.          | 20. Charles E. Story, Gloucester.  |
| 6. Samuel H. Borofsky, Boston.               | 21. Frederiek Childs, Holyoke.     |
| 7. Isaac H. Marshall, South Framingham.      | 22. John H. Harding, Lowell.       |
| 8. Edwin R. Gray, Orange.                    | 23. William E. Gray, Wakefield.    |
| 9. Geo. L. Fowler, Lowell.                   | 24. Egbert I. Clapp, Northampton.  |
| 10. Clement G. Morgan, Boston.               | 25. David M. Crotty, Boston.       |
| 11. Valentine T. Sellers, Lawrence.          | 26. Charles H. Cutler, Cambridge.  |
| 12. John Breen, Lawrence.                    | 27. Thomas F. Cordis, Springfield. |
| 13. John D. Munroe, Fall River.              | 28. David W. Colburn, Fitchburg.   |
| 14. Horace E. Whitney, Milford.              | 29. Arthur A. Hall, Adams.         |
| 15. George E. Garity, Lowell.                | 30. Horace N. Conn, Woburn.        |
|  | 31. Daniel A. Hazen, Boston.       |
|  | 32. William W. Cann, Lynn.         |
|  | 33. William H. Winship, Malden.    |
|  | 34. S. F. Pratt, Braintree.        |

On June 23, 1898, General Orders No. 12, A. G. O., assigned the First, Second, Fifth, Sixth and Seventh Companies of Infantry, Provis-



VILLAGE OF CORREGIDOR, MANILA BAY.



LA ESCOLTA, THE PRINCIPAL STREET OF MANILA.  
UNITED STATES VOLUNTEERS IN THE PHILIPPINES.



ional Militia, to the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Thos. R. Mathews commanding, and the Third Company of Infantry, Provisional Militia, to the 2d Brigade, Colonel Jonas H. Whitney commanding.

On August 18, 1898, General Orders, No. 16, A. G. O., assigned the Eighth, Ninth, Tenth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-first, Twenty-second; Twenty-third, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-seventh Companies of Infantry, Provisional Militia, to the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Thomas R. Mathews commanding; and the Fourth, Twelfth, Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-fifth and Twenty-sixth Companies of Infantry, Provisional Militia, to the 2d Brigade, M. V. M., Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Oakes commanding.

On July 18, the recommendations of the inspector-general and adjutant-general as to the Twentieth Company, Charles E. Story and others of Gloucester, Mass., were revoked and a company raised by Alexis E. Frye and others of Boston took its place. On August 10, 1898, Company Eleven, Valentine T. Sellers and others of Lawrence, Mass., was replaced by a company organized by Thomas L. Comstock and others of Greenfield.

On July 20, 1898, Inspector-General Carter was "authorized to assign staff officers of the 1st and 2d Brigades, M. V. M., for the inspection and muster of provisional companies," and "to notify brigade commanders when such assignments are made."

By the same order, the directions formerly given "brigade commanders to detail medical officers for the physical examination of recruits for provisional companies" was rescinded, and in lieu thereof it was ordered that "Recruits will furnish mustering officers with certificates from reputable physicians of their physical ability to perform military duty."

It will be seen by the above orders and details, that thirty-four companies were duly recruited, examined, organized, officered and mustered into the service of the state between May 28 and the end of August, 1898. That these companies were recruited to the militia maximum from men who for the most part were subjected to severe physical examination, and that the officers passed a like physical examination, and the usual written examination to which all officers of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia are subjected.

In the numerous towns and cities where no regular state armories had been erected, it was ordered (General Orders No. 13) that:

"Allowance of rent will cease July 1, 1898, where companies have entered the United States service. Any city or town which has provided an armory for a provisional company will have the rent continued. Any city or town providing an armory after July 1, 1898, for a provisional company, if the company is located therein before August 1, 1898, will have rent of armory continued."

V. "Officers and enlisted men of the militia, who have not volunteered, cannot

claim to occupy the armories after July 1, 1898, or after the armory has been assigned by the city or town to a provisional company. Officers and enlisted men left in the militia, whose commands have gone into the United States service, will govern themselves accordingly."

It is not so generally known that the larger part of these officers had previously seen long service in the state militia, or in the regular army of the United States or some other power, and that the men had largely profited by like service, or instruction in public or private institutions of learning, where military drill and discipline were effectively taught.

It should also be said that most of the companies when enlisted, fully expected to take the field on foreign or sea coast service against the Spaniard, and that, when the prospect of realizing this patriotic purpose grew dim, large numbers withdrew from the Provisional Militia and enlisted when the companies of the volunteer regiments were recruited to the war standard of 106 men. Nearly three full regiments were thus replaced by volunteers whose officers and men can be best judged by the following statements made by gentlemen commanding several of the companies.

THIRD COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

Captain Henry W. Pitman of Somerville, who headed the petition for enlistment, says:

"Seventy-five men responded, meeting at the armory of Company M, Eighth Regiment, M. V. M., and signed the petition. Many hoped to have their services required (on active service) and when it was determined that the state militia should furnish the whole quota, many of the petitioners individually enlisted in Company M, Eighth Regiment; Company B, First Heavy Artillery; Companies B and H, Fifth Regiment, and other volunteer organizations. Thus twenty-seven men were lost from our muster-roll. Nevertheless, the regular organization was perfected June 14, 1898, when forty-seven enlisted men were inspected by Inspector-General James L. Carter assisted by Colonel James T. Soutter, A. I. G., the men having previously passed a rigid physical examination under Major George W. Mills, surgeon First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M. The morale, as well as the physical condition of the command was of a high order.

"The officers elected had all had military training in the state militia. Captain Henry W. Pitman had been a member of Company M, Eighth Regiment, M. V. M., at its organization in 1886, when he was elected first lieutenant, and commanded it from 1888 to 1889. First Lieutenant Arthur W. Furlong, had served first in Company B, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M., and afterwards as corporal and sergeant in Company M, Eighth Regiment. Second Lieutenant Corril E. Bridges had served in the Second Infantry, and later, from 1894 to 1897, as captain and aide-de-camp on the staff of General Benjamin F. Bridges commanding the 1st Brigade, M. V. M.

"Over forty new members later joined those duly mustered in, and took part in all matters relating to the company, but nineteen men eventually joined the regiments in the field. It was a matter of some regret that there was not that degree of encouragement from the office of the adjutant-general which the members had been led to expect, but the Third fared better than most of its associates and was furnished rifles and equipments early in September. Drills were maintained on Monday and Thursday evenings of each week, and considerable social interest was kept up through the fall and winter.

"Beyond the formal approval of the company and its occupancy of the armory, the city of Somerville took no immediate interest in the company, nor did any civilians actively promote its welfare. Its officers and men, however, were resolved to do all in their power to have a strong organization. At the funerals of two of the volunteers of the Spanish-American war the company acted as escort, and later paraded at the welcome extended to Company M, Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., on its return from Cuba. After the disbandment of the Third Provisional Company many of its members enlisted in Company M."

Very truly,

HENRY W. PITMAN, Captain.

SEVENTH COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

Captain Isaac N. Marshall of the Seventh Provisional Company says:

"I recruited the Seventh Company, M. P. M., in Framingham. I had solicited recruits previously to receiving papers from the inspector-general, so that when ready, enlistment was made at once, May 31, 1898. Headquarters were established in the armory of Company E, Sixth Regiment. Isaac N. Marshall, who was elected captain, had seen military service in Company C, Sixth Regiment, in the three months' campaign of 1861 as corporal, and in the nine months' campaign of 1862-63 as lieutenant. He was captain of Company E, Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., 1897-98; captain of the Seventh Company, M. P. M., in 1898, was commissioned captain of Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., 1899-1900, and is now a major in the Sixth Regiment. In business he was connected with the Boston & Lowell, Boston, Clinton & Fitchburg, Old Colony and New York, New Haven & Hartford railroads since 1863, and has been superintendent of division since 1885.

"Herbert O. Benner, elected first lieutenant, had no previous military experience except as an enlisted man for some months. He is a practicing physician in Framingham.

"William E. Reed, medical student, elected second lieutenant, had had some previous military experience at Chauncy Hall School, and on the training school ship 'Enterprise.'

"Of seventy-six men enlisted, sixty-four appeared on the day of examination; sixty-one passed examination, fifty-eight appeared on notice June 21, 1898, and were mustered in by General J. L. Carter, inspector-general. All were of American birth, and their physical and moral characteristics were of the highest character. All were students, clerks or professional men. More than twenty-five per cent had seen service in the State militia, many others had received military instruction in the public schools, and probably twenty-five per cent had had no previous military instruction.

"No uniforms were furnished. We were provided with arms and equipments and had regular drills each Monday evening. The company had obtained a good degree of proficiency, both in the manual of arms and in marching movements, when relieved from duty.

"The municipality of Framingham was ready at all times to furnish any aid required. The business men were also very favorably disposed toward the company. Two weeks before the close of the rifle season I found that my command would be allowed under the law to qualify as marksmen, and in the two weeks twenty-seven men were thus qualified.

"When the Sixth Regiment, U. S. V., sent recruiting officers home to recruit

these companies to the full number allowed by law, four men of the Seventh Company enlisted in Company D, and are still members of that company."

Respectfully yours,

ISAAC N. MARSHALL.

EIGHTEENTH COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

The Eighteenth Provisional Company, accepted by G. O. No. 11, June 18, 1898, was recruited by Major Arthur E. Perry (retired) of the law firm of Knowlton & Perry, New Bedford, Mass., who says:

"As a rule the men were all Yankees and had either been formerly connected with the militia, or had served in the local High School Cadets and were an unusually good class of men, socially rather above the average of militiamen and of good size and morals.

"The men were furnished with caps, roundabouts and rifles, had drills regularly once a week, took a great deal of interest in the company and attended very regularly at drills. While no actual aid was received from the city, or from any particular organization, yet we had the goodwill of the city government; were furnished with an armory, heating, lighting, etc., by it, and we were assured by a number of individual citizens that if we needed any personal aid we could have all we wanted.

"Captain Arthur E. Perry enlisted in Company E, First Regiment, Infantry, M. V. M., in March 1886, was elected second lieutenant in May, 1886, promoted first lieutenant, April, 1889, and made captain in March, 1891. He was retired with the rank of major June 2, 1896.

"Zaccheus C. Dunham was chosen first and Edmund E. Baudoin second lieutenant, all these being residents of New Bedford. The Eighteenth was assigned to the 1st Brigade August 10, 1898, and relieved from further duty November 10, 1898."

NINETEENTH COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

This organization was recruited in Beverly, Mass., by A. Edward Crombie and others, whose petition was prepared in the latter part of May, 1898. The Thorndike Street Armory, just vacated by Company E, of the Eighth Regiment, was made headquarters, being turned over to Mr. Crombie by the joint standing committee on public property, Hon. Asa F. Lee chairman. A full company, whose members were for the most part of American birth, and possessing a high standard of physical, mental and moral ability, was recruited. About one-half the entire force had previously served in the State militia.

Out of seventy signers only five failed to pass the physical examination conducted by Assistant Surgeon Charles Green of the Second Corps Cadets, and the official inspection in June by Colonel Soutter, assistant inspector-general, was favorable to the acceptance of the organization as the Nineteenth Company of Infantry, M. P. M. On June 22, Inspector-General James L. Carter mustered the greater part of the company into the State service.

The following officers were elected:—Captain, A. Edward Crombie, had served about seven years in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia as private, non-commissioned and commissioned officer. Was also connected





FILIPINOS AWAITING A CHARGE.



FILIPINO PRISONERS BEING BROUGHT INTO CAMP,  
U. S. VOLUNTEERS IN THE PHILIPPINES.



with the Masons, Odd Fellows, Knight of Pythias, Knights of the Golden Eagle, etc. First lieutenant, Charles M. Titcomb, had served about four years in Company B, Eighth Regiment, M. V. M., two years as sergeant. Second lieutenant, Fred H. Lowe, had served six years in Company E, Eighth Regiment, M. V. M., as private and corporal.

Weekly drills were held every Tuesday evening, and later twice a week, when rifles and equipments were eventually furnished by the State. Colonel Gordon Dexter, A. I. G., of Governor Wolcott's staff, inspected and favorably reported upon the company in August. Although the time was brief, fifty-three men qualified at the rifle range as sharpshooters, etc. At an early date the company was tendered the governor for service in the field, and was one of the few reserved to serve until April 15, 1899. The Beverly city government, local press and many citizens took a strong interest in the welfare of the company.

TWENTIETH COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

9 Concord Sq., Boston, Mass., June 22, 1900.

Mr. C. W. Hall, Editor, 91 Bedford St.

Dear Sir: In response to your communication of June 15th, I submit the following account of Company No. 20, Provisional Militia.

In response to a circular sent out by three members of the Park Street Club, a young men's debating club of this city, to its members and friends, a number of us met early in July and decided to form a company. The men were examined July 19, 1898, and mustered in, July 20, 1898, by Colonel Gordon Dexter (then assistant inspector-general).

Our headquarters were the rooms of Battery K, First Regiment Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., (then in the United States service,) in the South (or Irvington St.) Armory, Boston. The following officers were elected:

Captain Alexis Everett Frye was formerly captain of a company at San Bernardino, Cal., and later military instructor of the Harvard College companies in the spring of 1898. After the war he was commissioned a lieutenant in Company K, First Regiment, Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., but was placed in charge of the United States school system in Cuba, which he is now organizing and promoting. His national reputation was first established by the publication and introduction of Frye's Geography and other educational works.

First Lieutenant James Alexander Stetson was trained in the Boston High School Battalion and that of the Institute of Technology. Second Lieutenant, William Everett Smith. The roster showed three commissioned officers and fifty-seven enlisted men.

The company was composed of first class material in all respects, due largely, as I think, to the influence of the aforesaid Park Street Club. Nearly all the members were young and prominent business men in Boston, and most of them had had some previous military training in school, college, or the volunteer militia, including several members of the old Battery K, First Regiment.

The company drilled every Monday night and successfully passed inspection preparatory to the issuance of arms; but the return of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia to its quarters put an end to the organization.

Very truly yours,

JAMES. A. STETSON.

TWENTY-FOURTH COMPANY, PROVISIONAL MILITIA. (NONOTUCK GUARDS.)

"The war fever that swept over the country as a result of the destruction of the battleship 'Maine', struck in forcibly at Northampton, and on February 25, ten days after that terrible catastrophe, City Clerk E. I. Clapp called for volunteers to serve in the impending struggle. There was an enthusiastic response, and on February 28, Mr. Clapp sent to Governor Wolcott this telegram:—'Have enrolled over fifty volunteers who will respond if their services are necessary in Spanish war.' This gave Northampton the distinction of leading the state in offering men for the nation's defense. The enrolment continued until 130 names were on the list, including youths and Civil War veterans, and men who had served as United States regulars or in the British army. They were organized as the Nonotuck Guards on April 6, and later these officers were chosen: Captain, Harry A. Moulton; first lieutenant, Clinton F. Smith; surgeon, Dr. C. S. Cutler. Drills were held regularly in Father Matthew Hall.

"In the latter part of May, City Clerk Clapp began enlisting men for a company to be organized under the act of the Legislature creating a provisional militia, and quickly secured the desired number of volunteers. On July 2, Mr. Clapp's company was accepted, and was designated the Twenty-fourth Company of Infantry, Massachusetts Provisional Militia. It took possession of the armory and drilled regularly until Company I was mustered out of the United States service. In accordance with the special act that created it, the Provisional Militia was disbanded April 15, 1899, immediately after the treaty of peace was signed.

"The officers were as follows: Captain, Egbert I. Clapp; served through the Civil War from 1861 to 1865, enlisted as a private, afterward commissioned second lieutenant in Thirty-first Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry; took part in all the campaigns in the Gulf department, including the captures of Fort Jackson and Saint Philip, the La Teche and Red River campaigns, the siege of Port Hudson, Miss., and the siege of Mobile, Ala.; and has been city clerk of Northampton, Mass., for seventeen years past. First Lieutenant, Harry A. Moulton; was formerly for several years first lieutenant of Company I, Second Regiment, M. V. M. Second Lieutenant, Clinton F. Smith; was formerly second lieutenant, Company I, Second Regiment, M. V. M.

"The whole number of men enlisted in the Twenty-fourth Company, M. P. M., was seventy-two. With but four exceptions, the company was composed of men of some trade or profession; they were of good education and character and exceptionally strong physically.

"The petition for acceptance of the company was forwarded to General James L. Carter, inspector-general, on June 13, 1898; the company was inspected on June 22, 1898, by Colonel F. W. Wellington, assistant inspector-general, and accepted July 2, 1898.

"Every man who signed the enlistment roll did so understanding that he was to go to the front and into the United States service if needed; otherwise he was not accepted by the promoter. About one-third of the organization are now in the regular army, and many of them in the Philippine Islands.

"The company was drilled twice weekly, from August 3 to November 14, inclusive. Arms and equipments were recommended furnished by General Carter on August 30, though the order was not carried out through failure of the State government to furnish the same.

"The company had no assistance in organizing or in meeting their necessary expenses outside of their own membership. Neither the city nor its inhabitants contributed one dollar to that end."

EGBERT I. CLAPP,

Late Captain Twenty-fourth Company, M. P. M.

## TWENTY-EIGHTH COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

The enlistment of this company was begun at Fitchburg by David W. Colburn and others August 2, 1898. Forty-five men were enlisted, and after passing a rigid physical examination, were mustered into the State service and occupied the State armory at Fitchburg, drilling once a week.

The officers elected had all seen service in the militia as follows: Captain David W. Colburn, commissioned August 20, 1898, had held commissions in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia since 1885. First lieutenant Edward A. Bruce, enlisted in 1885, had served twelve years. Second lieutenant H. Nelson Lawrence, enlisted 1886, and had served eight years.

Several citizens of Fitchburg aided materially the work of raising this company, which was relieved from duty by G. O. No. 18, A. G. O., dated November 10, 1898.

## THIRTY-THIRD COMPANY, MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

Captain William H. Winship of Malden, Mass., says in effect:

"Began enlistments June 18, 1898. Our headquarters were the armory on Mountain Avenue vacated by Company L, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M.

"The officers were elected August 9, 1898: Captain William Henry Winship, bookkeeper and salesman, Malden, Mass., was second lieutenant, Malden High School Cadets in 1884-85, captain 1885-86, major and organizer, Malden High School Battalion 1886-87. First lieutenant, Andrew H. Breen, buyer, Malden, was second lieutenant, Malden High School Battalion 1892-93. Second lieutenant, Trueman R. Hawley, Harvard student, Malden, sergeant school battalion 1894; resigned commission to become principal of the High School of Dartmouth, Mass. Edward S. Stevens was elected acting second lieutenant, but the state failed to order a legal election and he was not commissioned; also of school battalion 1894.

"Eighty-seven men signed the original enlistment list. Their moral and physical character was first class. Forty-two had attended the Malden High School and three others the Institute of Technology, three the Boston Latin High School, three Harvard and one Bowdoin College. Two were doctors, two sons of ex-mayors of Malden, and eight were ex-members of Company L, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M. The highest age given was 34, and the lowest 16, the average being 22 years and 3 months. The avocations given included thirty-one clerks and salesmen, twenty-five students, three doctors, one printer, one nurseryman, one surveyor, one civil engineer, one mechanical engineer, three machinists, two teamsters, one motorman, etc.

"On July 27, Colonel Frank L. Locke, assistant inspector-general, inspected the company and made a favorable report of its members, who on August 1 were examined physically by Major John F. Harvey, surgeon of the First Battalion of Cavalry, M. V. M., who accepted over forty recruits. On August 7, Colonel Locke mustered forty-seven officers and men into the service of the State.

"The company drilled every Monday night, wholly under its own officers, in setting-up drill, school of the soldier, manual of arms, the bayonet exercise and company movements. The state officers failed to physically examine and muster in many recruits, who, however, presented themselves at drill and served faithfully; and were

finally, by direction of the adjutant-general, physically examined by Dr. Carroll C. Burpee of Malden, a member of the company.

"The city government of Malden permitted the company to use the muskets formerly belonging to the High School Battalion, paid the salary of the armorer, and in other ways aided and encouraged the company, which received neither arms nor uniforms from the state. The sum of \$63.20 was however paid by the state, which on the return of Company L, of the Fifth Regiment of Infantry, Massachusetts Volunteers and its re-absorption into the militia, was voted to and paid over to that company toward the purchase of a piano for the armory.

"The commissioned and non-commissioned officers of the Thirty-third Company, Massachusetts Provisional Militia, formed the staff for F. E. Benjamin, marshal of the parade which welcomed home Company L, of the Fifth Regiment, April 3, 1899, Captain Winship acting as chief of staff. The Thirty-third was discharged from the service of the state April 10, 1899.

"Past members now serving in various organizations: Second sergeant, W. E. Brown, first sergeant Company B, Eighth Regiment, M. V. M.; Privates, J. C. Jacobs, F. C. Pickering, W. E. Mitchell, Benj. O. Dawes, D. M. Sarkesian, W. D. Clark and A. F. Pearson, Company L, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M.; corporal H. E. Smith is now quartermaster's sergeant, Company I, Forty-Third Regiment, United States Volunteers, serving in the Philippines. Jacobs is now sergeant and Pickering and Mitchell corporals."

Other companies presented features of interest, and indications of that readiness to exchange the arts of peace for the perils of war, which has always been characteristic of the people of New England, when the cause for which they muster commends itself to their sense of right and justice.

The First Company was raised and commanded by Rev. Charles E. Beals of Stoneham, since chosen chaplain of the Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M. The Fifth was raised by Robert Treat Paine, Jr., of Boston, a well known member of the Suffolk bar, who had during the last of May raised 120 men in three days at his recruiting office, No. 14 Merchants Row, taking no man who measured less than five feet, seven inches, and securing many men and officers who had served in the English, German and American regular and marine service, the Canadian mounted police, etc. These expected to be taken for active service, and when in June this hope was gone, many went into the regiments in the field. The Fifth were furnished quarters in the South Armory, were armed with Springfields and attained good proficiency in drill. Captain Paine had served in the First Corps Cadets, M. V. M., and First Lieutenant Henry A. Ballou in the Sixth Regiment and the United States Marine Corps.

The Sixth Company was recruited by Samuel H. Borofsky, from among the Hebrew population of Boston, and was composed wholly of Jews. Some of them had served in European armies, but most of the members had acquired their knowledge of military drill in the school battalions of Boston.

The Tenth Company, Captain Robert C. Wilson, was a colored



VOLUNTEERS AND THEIR CHINESE CARRIERS



BATTERY KNOLL, MANILA, MEMORIAL DAY, 1899.  
U. S. VOLUNTEERS IN THE PHILIPPINES.





company, and included descendants of men who had first become soldiers in the Civil War, and the years of freer thought and action which immediately followed it. It numbered fifty-eight enlisted men and three officers. Captain Wilson had served six years in Company L, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M. First Lieutenant Wm. A. Lewis, a native of Virginia, and a lawyer, had had some military training at Amherst. Second Lieutenant Robert I. Teamoh, a journalist on the staff of the Boston "Globe," had also served in Company L. of the Sixth, as had about one-third of the enlisted men. The physique of the men was notably excellent, and there were very few who could not claim more than usual proficiency in useful callings, and well-paid lawyers, doctors, dentists, stenographers, journalists, reporters, chemists, caterers, clerks, salesmen, barbers, etc., etc., were found in the ranks. The company occupied the armory of Company L, Sixth Regiment, received Springfield rifles, and drilled every Friday evening.

On November 10, 1898, General Orders, No. 18, thus practically ended the existence of the Massachusetts Provisional Militia:

III. The First, Second, Fifth, Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-First, Twenty-Second, Twenty-Third, Twenty-Fourth, Twenty-Fifth, Twenty-Seventh, Twenty-Eighth, Twenty-Ninth and Thirty-First companies of the Provisional Militia are hereby relieved from further duty until mustered out of the service as required by law. Company commanders will at once apply by letter to this department for orders to turn over all United States or State property in their possession.

IV. The Acts of the Legislature require the discharge of all provisional companies of the militia when peace is declared. Certificates of discharge will be issued to provisional companies at that time; but any officer or enlisted man desiring to be discharged before that time, can be by resignation of officer, or application for discharge to company commanders by enlisted man. The Commander-in-Chief desires to thank the officers and men of the Provisional Militia for their prompt response to duty in an emergency.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief,

SAMUEL DALTON,

Adjutant-General.

The Third, Nineteenth, Thirtieth, Thirty-Second and Thirty-Fourth companies awaited until a later date the return of those companies still in the fields, whose armories they had occupied, and with a soldierly spirit continued to perform duties, which no longer promised to lead to martial service, or even a continuance in the State militia. They saw the administration, foiled in its attempt to substitute a great standing army for its militia volunteers, compromise upon a corps of United States Volunteers, with no State traditions or influences to make it anything more or less than a regular force, enlisted for a briefer period; and felt that their labors and sacrifices had been almost wholly in vain.

They had raised nearly three full regiments of officers and men, all of whom passed the usual tests of physical and military fitness, at a

time when each recruit knew that he was almost sure to face the perils of a foreign campaign, and fatal pestilences which had already claimed as their victims numbers of his friends or fellow citizens. Public apprehension and the military experts of the day anticipated foreign difficulties, if not invasion and pillage, and this they prepared to meet with weapons and resources, which were already known to be utterly inadequate, and in many things hopelessly obsolete. Many proved their genuine military ardor by later enlistments and service, in which some have died for the flag; and others have wrought nobly in the work of regenerating our new territories. Of their merit and true patriotism there is no more doubt than of that of the bravest company, which under the State flag fought in Cuba or Porto Rico.

Therefore this chapter seeks to keep in remembrance their labors and faithful services, as well as those of the officers, who so quickly and thoroughly organized a strong and reliable reserve, ready to serve the State at home, and the nation abroad. The following roster of company officers is taken from the adjutant-general's report of 1898-99:

#### ROSTER MASSACHUSETTS PROVISIONAL MILITIA.

First Company—Captain, Chas. E. Beals; first lieutenant, Sidney F. Hodge; second lieutenant, James Alfred Patch, all of Stoneham.

Second Company—Captain, William J. Howard of Whitman; first lieutenant, Joseph Hewitt; second lieutenant, Henry S. Saville, both of Brockton.

Third Company—Captain, Henry W. Pitman; first lieutenant, Arthur W. Furlong; second lieutenant, Corril E. Bridges, all of Somerville.

Fourth Company—Second lieutenant, Carlos E. Palmer, Haverhill.

Fifth Company—Captain, Robert Treat Paine, Jr.; first lieutenant, Henry A. Ballou; second lieutenant, Edmund Billings, all of Boston.

Sixth Company—Captain, Samuel H. Borofsky; first lieutenant, William Morris; second lieutenant, Morris Silverstein, all of Boston.

Seventh Company—Captain, Isaac N. Marshall, of South Framingham; first lieutenant, Herbert O. Benner, of South Framingham; second lieutenant, William E. Reed, of Saxonville.

Eighth Company—Captain, Edwin R. Gray; first lieutenant, Fred S. Weymouth; second lieutenant, Willie B. Smith, all of Orange.

Ninth Company—Captain, George E. Worthen, Lowell; first lieutenant, Arthur D. Colby, Lowell; second lieutenant, George L. Fowler, Jr., Lynn.

Tenth Company—Captain, Robert C. Wilson; first lieutenant, Wm. H. Lewis; second lieutenant, Robert T. Teamoh, all of Boston.

Eleventh Company—Captain, Thos. L. Comstock; first lieutenant, Frederick B. Felton; second lieutenant, Henry H. Cutter, all of Greenfield.

Twelfth Company—Captain, John Breen; first lieutenant, Eugene A. McCarthy; second lieutenant, Thos. H. Redmond, all of Lawrence.

Thirteenth Company—Captain, first lieutenant, James T. Cummings; second lieutenant, Chas. E. Chace, all of Fall River.

Fourteenth Company—Captain, first lieutenant, Edward H. Ingram; second lieutenant, John J. Welsinger, both of Hopedale.

Fifteenth Company—Captain, Geo. E. Garity; first lieutenant, Frederick A. Estes; second lieutenant, Patrick J. McDermott, all of Lowell.

Sixteenth Company—Captain, John Mitchell Cotter; first lieutenant, Wm. F. Henderson; second lieutenant, Patrick J. Smith, all of Boston.

Seventeenth Company—Captain, first lieutenant, Wm. E. Moses; second lieutenant, Wm. G. Adams, both of Springfield.

Eighteenth Company—Captain, Arthur E. Perry; first lieutenant, Zaccheus C. Dunham; second lieutenant, Edmond E. Baudoin, all of New Bedford.

Nineteenth Company—Captain, A. Edward Crombie; first lieutenant, Chas. M. Titcomb; second lieutenant, Frederick H. Lowe, all of Beverly.

Twentieth Company—Captain, Alexis E. Frye, Boston; first lieutenant, James A. Stetson, New Bedford; second lieutenant, William E. Swift of Boston.

Twenty-First Company—Captain, Thos. Rae, Jr., of Holyoke.

Twenty-Second Company—Captain, George D. Kimball; second lieutenant, Burton W. Farnham, both of Lowell.

Twenty-Third Company—Captain, Wm. E. Gray, Reading; first lieutenant, John L. Orr; second lieutenant, Arthur E. Stone, both of Wakefield.

Twenty-Fourth Company—Captain, Egbert I. Clapp; first lieutenant, Harry A. Moulton; second lieutenant, Clinton F. Smith, all of Northampton.

Twenty-Fifth Company—Captain, David M. Crotty; first lieutenant, James V. O'Hara; second lieutenant, James B. Goggin, all of Charlestown.

Twenty-Sixth Company—Captain, Chas. H. Cutler; first lieutenant, John E. Winslow, both of Cambridge.

Twenty-Seventh Company—Captain, Thomas F. Cordis, Longmeadow; first lieutenant, Paul J. Norton; second lieutenant, Sayward Galbraith, both of Springfield.

Twenty-Eighth Company—Captain, David W. Colburn; first lieutenant, Edward A. Bruce; second lieutenant, H. Nelson Lawrence; all of Fitchburg.

Twenty-Ninth Company—Captain, Arthur A. Hall; first lieutenant, Fred F. Busby; second lieutenant, Frank E. McNulty, all of Adams.

Thirtieth Company—Captain, John M. Portal, Woburn; first lieutenant, Arthur C. Wyer, Woburn; second lieutenant, James C. Hanson of Boston.

Thirty-First Company—Captain, Daniel A. Hazen, Medford; first lieutenant, John F. Currie; second lieutenant, Chas. H. Tibbetts, both of Boston.

Thirty-Second Company—Captain, Henry B. Goodridge; first lieutenant, Wm. W. Cann; second lieutenant, Warren I. Chase, all of Lynn.

Thirty-Third Company—Captain, Wm. H. Winship; first lieutenant, Andrew H. Brown, both of Malden.

Thirty-Fourth Company—Captain, Lyman W. Morrison; first lieutenant, Chas. H. Rice; second lieutenant, Wm. J. Buckley, all of Braintree.



CALOOCAN, WHERE THE WAR WITH THE FILIPINOS BEGAN.

## CHAPTER XV.

### THE HOOKER GUARDS.

*"They also serve who only stand and wait."*

THE martial and patriotic spirit, called forth by the announcement of war with Spain, and consequent call for troops by the President was universal throughout the country, and Massachusetts stood in the front rank in that respect, true to her past record. Offers to raise companies and regiments came thick and fast from various societies and individuals in different sections of the state, but upon the announce-



MAJOR-GENERAL JOS. HOOKER.

ment that no authority could be given for raising troops in anticipation of actual calls, all such movements but one subsided, or were held in abeyance, and that one, which resulted in what was known as the "Hooker Guards Regiment," alone materialized into the actual organization and drilling of companies. As many of the principal movers were past officers and members of the Massachusetts militia, it would seem appropriate that a short sketch of this unofficial organization should be included in this work.

Weeks before the declaration of war, the veterans were eagerly propounding to each other the query "What ought we to do for Uncle Sam in case of war?" A group of these in Boston and vicinity decided that they ought to prepare to organize a regiment which should represent them, and, at the request of many comrades, Captain Isaac P. Gragg, on March 8, 1898, filed with Governor Wolcott a request for authority to raise a regiment of infantry. Early in April plans were well under way for raising companies under the auspices of the Regimental Associations of the First, Eleventh and Sixteenth Massachusetts Volunteers, formerly of General Hooker's brigade of the 3d Army Corps, and several posts of the Grand Army of the Republic; a public call was prepared and held awaiting the action of Congress, so that when the wires on the 19th of April flashed the tidings that the die was cast for war, all that remained to be done was to send to the Boston newspapers copies of the following notice for a meeting of the veterans of Hooker's Brigade, to give their sanction for baptizing the movement as the "Hooker Guards Regiment."



WILLIAM G. BIRD  
1ST MASS VOLS ASSO



ALFRED D. CHANDLER.  
TREASURER



CAPT. WILLIAM H. BROWN.  
11TH MASS VOLS. ASSO.



CAPT. ISAAC P. GRAGG.  
CHAIRMAN



SERGEANT JAMES NICOL.  
16TH MASS VOLS. ASSO



LIEUT. L. EDWARD JENKINS.  
SECRETARY.



MAJOR WILLIAM A. SMITH  
COMMAND J-U-V-U-

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE of the HOOKER GUARDS COMMITTEE



## HOOKER'S OLD BRIGADE TO RAISE A LOCAL REGIMENT.

Wednesday, April 20, 1898.

The following call has been mailed to the surviving members of the First, Eleventh and Sixteenth Massachusetts Volunteers that formed a part of the brigade commanded by General Joseph Hooker during the late war.

Boston, April 19, 1898.

Comrades: While the great majority of the veterans of 1861-65 are incapacitated by age or infirmities from active service in the impending war with Spain, the nation fully appreciates that their hearts are as loyal and their desire to be of service to the country as keen as it was in the old days.

In demonstration of these sentiments and at the request of a large number of comrades, the survivors of Hooker's Old Brigade are requested to meet at the American House, Boston, on Friday evening, April 22, at 7.30 o'clock, to indorse a plan for raising a regiment of volunteer infantry for the war, to be known as the "Hooker Guards."

The proposition is to raise a regiment to be composed entirely of young men, physically fitted for arduous service in the field, between 20 and 30 years of age, field officers to be selected by the governor; the regiment to be raised under the auspices of Hooker's veterans, assisted by the G. A. R. organizations in the localities where the several companies are to be raised.

The following basis of organization has been suggested, and meets the approval of many comrades and other military men:

Company A, Richardson Rifles, Cambridgeport. In honor of Lieut.-Col. Samuel W. Richardson, Sixteenth Mass. Vols.

Company B, Lawrence Rifles, East Boston. In honor of Brevet Brig.-Gen. Wm. Lawrence, aide to Gen. Hooker.

Company C, Blaisdell Rifles, Boston. In honor of Brevet Brig.-Gen. Wm. Blaisdell, Eleventh Mass. Vols., killed at Petersburg, Va., June 23, 1864.

Company D, Warren Rifles, Roxbury. In honor of Capt. Moses H. Warren, First Mass. Vols., killed at Spottsylvania Court House, Va., May 12, 1864.

Company E, Kelren Rifles, South Boston. In honor of Color Sergt. Wm. Kelren, First Mass. Vols., killed at Gettysburg, Pa., July 2, 1863.

Company F, Cowdin Rifles, Boston. In honor of Brig.-Gen. Robert Cowdin, colonel First Mass. Vols.

Company G, Forest Rifles, Boston. In honor of Sergt. Gordon Forest, First Mass. Vols., killed at Blackburn's Ford, Va., July 18, 1861.

Company H, Mandeville Rifles, Chelsea. In honor of First Sergt. John D. Mandeville, First Mass. Vols., killed at Second Bull Run, Va., Aug. 26, 1862.

Company I, Rand Rifles, Boston. In honor of Capt. Charles E. Rand, First Mass. Vols., killed at Chancellorsville, Va., May 2, 1863.

Company K, Stone Rifles, Dorchester. In honor of Capt. Benj. Stone, Jr., Eleventh Mass. Vols., mortally wounded at Second Bull Run, Va., Aug. 29, 1862.

Company L, Chandler Rifles, West Roxbury and Brookline. In honor of Major Charles P. Chandler, First Mass. Vols., killed at Glendale, Va., June 30, 1862.

Company M, Wyman Rifles, Boston. In honor of Col. Powell T. Wyman, Sixteenth Mass., killed at Glendale, Va., June 30, 1862.

Turn out with full ranks in honor of the flag, the Commonwealth and Fighting Joe Hooker! Young men desirous of joining the proposed regiment are also invited to be present.

ISAAC P. GRAGG.

The meeting of April 22 was a large and enthusiastic one, the project was favorably received and unanimously indorsed. It was voted to organize a central committee, consisting of five from each organization participating; resolutions were adopted sustaining President McKinley in his course; and a committee consisting of Colonel Charles C. Rivers, Captain Isaac P. Gragg, Major Jonas F. Capelle, Major George E. Henry, Captain William H. Brown, Major William A. Smith and Henry C. Hall were appointed to wait on Governor Wolcott and tender the services of the veterans of Hooker's brigade in support of Captain Gragg's previous petition.

Headquarters were opened at the American House the next morning, and a few days afterward the general committee was organized by the selection of Captain Isaac P. Gragg as chairman, Captain L. Edward Jenkins, secretary; Alfred D. Chandler, Esq., treasurer; and an executive committee of one from each organization. Formal action to raise companies was taken as follows: April 18, Post 26, Roxbury, Company D; April 20, Post 68, Dorchester, Company K; April 21, Post 30, Cambridgeport, Company A, and Post 35, Chelsea, Company H; April 26, Post 23, East Boston, Company B; April 29, Post 2, South Boston, Company E; May 2, Post 92, Brighton, Company M; May 3, Post 143, Brookline, Company L; May 5, Command 9, U. V. U., Boston, Company C; May 6, Post 15, Boston, Company I; May 25, First Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry Association, Boston, Companies F and G. Recruiting officers were selected to take charge of the enrollment and drilling of recruits; public meetings were held in several localities, at which Mayor Quincy of Boston, Mayor Littlefield of Chelsea, the selectmen of Brookline and other prominent citizens participated, and Mayor Sortwell, in a communication to the Cambridge city government, announced the prompt formation of Company A.

The several companies held regular drills in citizen's dress, without arms, at the post halls and in ward rooms. The men passed a physical examination at the hands of competent local physicians, who volunteered their services; company officers received temporary appointments, pending official action; frequent meetings of the Veterans' Committee and company officers held at the American House, and as much progress made as was possible under the circumstances, toward putting the regiment into shape for promptly responding to any call for troops in which they should be included. In addition to the representation of five on the Central Committee, most of the local organizations increased their recruiting committees to ten or more members, including many prominent civilians. Several companies attended Memorial Day church services with the G. A. R. posts.

Although the general committee and his own Post had voted reso-



lutions favoring Captain Gragg for colonel of the regiment, the committee, at his request, adhered to the original plan of leaving the governor untrammelled in selecting the field officers in case the regiment was called for. The veterans, from their own past experience, realized the great responsibility they were taking in raising the organization; many of their sons were enrolled in it, and in several cases more than one son had signed the rolls, and for their sakes and the welfare of all the men, they were resolved that personal ambitions should at least pass the scrutiny of merit and ability.

It is, however, but justice to Captain Gragg to state that immediately preceding the call for troops by President McKinley, on April 26, wherein was expressed a preference for the organized militia, the military advisers of Governor Wolcott had furnished him with a list of six persons whom they recommended as competent to command a regiment, from which he was to select three to organize three regiments of volunteers and that Captain Gragg's name was included in the list submitted. Communications recommending his appointment were received by the governor from Major-General Daniel E. Sickies, Major-General Daniel Butterfield, Brigadier-General N. A. M. Dudley, Brevet Brigadier-General Henry S. Russell, Brevet Brigadier-General Thomas Sherwin, Hon. John Conness and others.

Massachusetts' quota on both the first and second call for troops having been filled by the militia regiments, reorganized as volunteers, Captain Gragg forwarded to the war department a request to have the regiment accepted as United States volunteers, and again offered it for service in the Philippines. On July 1 the Executive Committee, accompanied by the recruiting officers of the companies, waited on Governor Wolcott and renewed their request for active service, offering to go into camp pending the uncertainty of a third call. Meanwhile, most of the companies had recruited 125 to 150 men, and, as the prospect for immediate service seemed uncertain, several hundred men had withdrawn and enlisted in other organizations, principally in the Seventh U. S. Infantry, Second U. S. Artillery, Fifth and Ninth Massachusetts Volunteers, with scattering men in many other organizations; so that as a preliminary school for discipline, setting up drill and company movements, something was contributed toward the general service, and this patriotic work was fully appreciated at state headquarters and by the authorities at Washington. In all, some 1600 men were enrolled in the Hooker Guards, and a number of its original members were included among the killed, wounded, and those who died in Cuba.

Finally, on July 29, the general committee held a meeting, at which it was admitted that the prospect for being needed was slim, but while leaving with each company the matter of continuing drills, they

decided not to disband the organization until peace was assured, and not until August 17, when the preliminary peace protocol had been signed and hostilities suspended, was it voted to dismiss the companies and the central organization dissolved, the veterans feeling that President McKinley's apt quotation, "They also serve who only stand and wait," could honorably be claimed as part of the record of the Hooker Guards. The following editorial in the Boston Journal of August 18 was about their only public recognition for duty well performed, but they were not looking for reward. The veterans were conscious that once more they had stood true to "Old Glory," and the members of the regiment had done all they could in offering to risk their lives and health in the service of their country.

#### A FAITHFUL RESERVE.

There was no chance for the Hooker Guards—peace came too soon and no more troops were needed—but the patriotic zeal of the organizers of this Massachusetts volunteer command, which has just been disbanded, will not pass without recognition by their fellow-citizens.

The Committee of Arrangements, which has had the affairs of the regiment in charge, was composed of representatives of nine Grand Army posts of Boston and its suburbs, of the Union Veterans and of Hooker's old brigade of the Army of the Potomac. They were far-seeing men, were these old soldiers, and even before the war broke out they had their preparations well in hand. Captain Isaac P. Gragg, the energetic chairman of the committee, made prompt offer of his volunteers at the State House and a full regiment was quickly raised. Although it could not go on the first call nor yet on the second, because the organized militia of the state was not yet exhausted, the command was held together in readiness until now, giving free and generous discharge meanwhile to all of its men who wished to enter the volunteer or regular service.

The public spirit which has animated Captain Gragg and his comrades is admirable. Fortunate events have unexpectedly shortened the war, but these gentlemen are none the less deserving of gratitude. Their regiment was a good one. It had a large number of the sons of veterans of 1861-65 within its ranks, and their fighting blood would have told if the Hooker Guards had ever had an opportunity.

#### THE HOOKER GUARDS REGIMENT COMMITTEE.

##### *Executive Committee.*

Isaac P. Gragg, chairman; L. Edward Jenkins, secretary; Alfred D. Chandler, treasurer; William G. Bird, William H. Brown, James Nicol, George H. Innis, James F. McKenzie, Andrew P. Fisher, John E. Gilman, George S. Evans, William A. Prescott, Francis H. Dove, Austin Bigelow, Charles E. Hapgood, William A. Smith.

##### *Finance Committee.*

Isaac P. Gragg, George S. Evans, William A. Smith, George H. Innis, Andrew P. Fisher.

##### *General Committee.*

(N. B. Length of Service Noted Refers to Militia Only.)

#### FIRST MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER INFANTRY ASSOCIATION.

George E. Henry—Captain 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry, brevet major U. S. Vols., first lieutenant and adjutant V. R. C. Militia; private, sergeant Co. F. 2d Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Three years.



P. N. S. V. C. GEO. H. INNIS,  
Post 2, G. A. R.



ADJT. JAMES F. MCKENZIE,  
Post 15, G. A. R.



COM. ANDREW P. FISHER,  
Post 23, G. A. R.



P. D. C. JOHN E. GILMAN,  
Post 26, G. A. R.



P. D. C. GEORGE S. EVANS,  
Post 30, G. A. R.



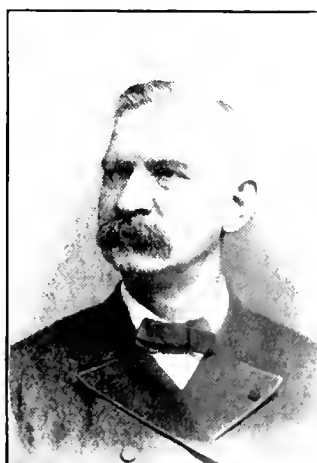
P. C. WILLIAM A. PRESCOTT,  
Post 35, G. A. R.



COM. FRANCIS H. DOVE,  
Post 68, G. A. R.



P. C. AUSTIN BIGELOW,  
Post 92, G. A. R.



P. C. CHARLES E. HAPGOOD,  
Post 143, G. A. R.

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE OF HOOKER GUARDS COMMITTEE.



- Joseph H. Dalton—First lieutenant 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Isaac P. Gragg—Corporal 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; first lieutenant 61st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; brevet captain U. S. Vols. Militia: private, sergeant, captain, Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Thirteen years.  
 William G. Bird—Private 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: private, corporal, sergeant Co. A, 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M. Twenty-eight years.  
 L. Edward Jenkins—Sergeant 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; first lieutenant 2d Regt. Mass. Vol. Heavy Artillery. Militia: private Co. B, 2d Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; first sergeant Co. H, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Four years.

## ELEVENTH MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER INFANTRY ASSOCIATION.

- William H. Brown—Captain 11th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Peter F. Rourke—First sergeant 11th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: first lieutenant 9th Infantry, M. V. M. Five years.  
 Allan P. Mason—Private 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; sergeant, second lieutenant, 11th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 John L. Parker—First lieutenant 11th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Frank W. Thompson—Private 11th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.

## SIXTEENTH MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER INFANTRY ASSOCIATION.

- Jonas F. Capelle—Captain 16th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; brevet major U. S. Vol. Militia: private Co. A, 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M. Nine years.  
 James Nicol—Sergeant 16th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Henry C. Hall—Private 16th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 James R. Harrison—Corporal 16th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Henry E. Wright—Private 16th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.

## DAHLGREN POST 2, G. A. R.

- Commander Fredolin Kramer—Landsman U. S. S. "Pontoosuc."  
 P. C., J. Payson Bradley—Bugler 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Heavy Artillery. Militia: chief bugler, sergeant major, 1st Battalion Artillery, M. V. M.; sergeant-major, adjutant 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M.; sergeant, color bearer, adjutant, commander Ancient and Honorable Artillery; colonel staff of Governor Wolcott. Twenty-eight years.  
 N. S. V. C., George H. Innis—Private 10th Mass. Vol. Light Battery. Militia: first lieutenant Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.  
 P. C., Henry S. Treadwell—Private 53d Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.  
 P. C., Charles S. Clerke—Private 5th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.

## JOHN A. ANDREWS POST 15, G. A. R.

- Commander Charles W. Robbins—First sergeant Battery E, Rhode Island Vol. Light Artillery.  
 John Loughrey—Private 62d Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Albert Fitzmeyer—Private 62d Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; private 2d Mass. Light Battery, M. V. M.  
 James F. McKenzie—Private 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: first sergeant, second lieutenant, first lieutenant Co. A, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; adjutant Battery A, Light Artillery, M. V. M.  
 James A. Penfield—Lieutenant-colonel 5th Regt. New York Vol. Cavalry.

## JOSEPH HOOKER POST, 23, G. A. R.

- Commander Andrew P. Fisher—Private 29th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.  
 Joseph H. Barnes—Lieutenant-Colonel 29th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; brevet brigadier-general U. S. Vols. Militia: sergeant, second lieutenant, first lieutenant Co. H, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M., and Co. B, 3d Battalion Infantry, M. V. M. Four years.  
 Edward Preble—Corporal 13th Regt., Maine Vol. Infantry.  
 Michael Killion—Private 6th Regt., Penn. Vol. Cavalry.  
 Ainsley R. Hooper—Private 40th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.

## THOMAS G. STEVENSON POST 26, G. A. R.

- Commander Frank H. Bell—Private 19th Mass. Vol. Infantry.

- P. C., William M. Olin—Private 36th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: colonel governor's staff; lieutenant-colonel 1st Brigade staff, M. V. M. Nine and one-half years.
- P. D. C., John E. Gilman—Private 12th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Lost right arm at Gettysburg, Va.
- P. C., David L. Jones—Sergeant 22d Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.
- P. C., Edwin R. Jenness—Corporal 13th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia; private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant, second lieutenant, Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Five years.

## WILLIAM H. SMART POST 30, G. A. R.

- P. D. C., George S. Evans—Private 56th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: private Co. B, 4th Battalion Infantry, M. V. M. Three years.
- P. C., Benjamin F. Hastings—Private 38th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: sergeant Co. B, 4th Battalion Infantry, M. V. M. Two years.
- P. C., Horace J. Gray—Seaman U. S. Navy, U. S. S. "Sagamore."
- P. C., Eben W. Pike—Musician 22d Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; first sergeant 56th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; sergeant 7th U. S. Cavalry.
- P. C., George A. Dietz—Private 8th Regt. Kansas Vol. Infantry.

## THEODORE WINTHROP POST 35, G. A. R.

- P. D. C., Joseph W. Thayer, Private 12th Regt., Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: Private Co. H, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Three years.
- P. C., William P. Drury—First lieutenant 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; captain 61st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: private Co. F, 7th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. One year.
- P. C., Henry T. Holmes—First lieutenant 50th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Militia: private, 4th lieutenant, first lieutenant Co. F, 7th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; first lieutenant Co. H, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Eight years.
- P. C., William A. Prescott—Master's mate, ensign U. S. Navy U. S. S. Port Royal, Arizona, New London.
- John M. Mason—First class fireman U. S. Navy, U. S. S. "Nipsic."

## BENJAMIN STONE JR., POST 65, G. A. R.

- Commander Francis H. Dove—Private 1st Regt.; Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: private, corporal, Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry M. V. M. Three years.
- Thomas W. Shapleigh—Private 45th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.
- George E. Wood—Private 42d Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.
- Winthrop B. Robinson—Private 2d Regt. Mass. Vol. Heavy Artillery.
- Franklin T. Prince—Corporal 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Cavalry.

## FRANCIS WASHBURN POST 92, G. A. R.

- P. C., Austin Bigelow—Corporal 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.
- P. C., Sammel H. Mitchell—Corporal 39th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.
- P. C., Archibald B. Collier—Corporal 23d Regt. New York Infantry; Corporal 10th Regt. New York Vol. Cavalry.
- George F. Gordon—Private 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.
- P. C., Josiah Rhodes—127th Regt. New York Vol. Infantry; 54th Regt. New York Vol. Infantry.

## CHARLES L. CHANDLER POST 113, G. A. R.

- Commander Elward F. Allen—Private 13th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry.
- Charles E. Hapgood, P. C.—Colonel 5th Regt. New Hampshire Vol. Infantry.
- Jacob P. Bates—Corporal 4th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.
- Nathaniel Conant—Civilian.
- William G. Nash—Civilian.

(This post appointed two civilians on its committee.)

## GENERAL JOSEPH HOOKER COMMAND 9, U. V. U.

- Commander Charles P. Battelle—Private 50th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; sergeant 59th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; lost left leg at Fort Stedman, Petersburg, Va.; Militia: Private Co. C, 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M. Three years.
- Dennis Linnehan—Sergeant 28th Regt., Mass. Vol. Infantry; lost left arm at Ream's Station, Va.



Capt William L. Fox



Capt Sumner H. Foster



Capt Franklin A. Shaw



Capt Oliver D. Greene



Capt Joseph H. Barnes Jr



Capt Winthrop M. Merrill



Capt Edward H. Cowan



Capt John Duncan



Capt Humphrey C. Sullivan



Capt Paul D. Shepard

CAPTAINS OF COMPANIES, HOOKER BRIGADE





Thomas W. H. Kelley—Private 3rd Regt., Rhode Island Vol. Heavy Artillery.  
 P. C., William A. Smith—Corporal 1st Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry; captain 40th Regt. Mass. Vol. Infantry. Militia: Private Co. F, 7th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; captain Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; major 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Five years.  
 Thomas E. Ross—Private 6th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.

*Roster of Company Officers.*

Company A—Captain, Paul D. Shepard, private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant Co. B, 4th Battalion Infantry, M. V. M.; private Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; private Co. B, Mass. Naval Brigade; sharpshooter. Total service ten years. First Lieutenant, Henry S. Keyes, private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant Co. B, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; color sergeant 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; sergeant major 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M.; first sergeant Battery A, M. V. M. Total service nine years. Second lieutenant, Henry J. Stackhouse, private Co. B, 5th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M., four years; private Co. F, Fifth Regt., Mass. Vol. Infantry in war with Spain.

Company B—Captain, Joseph H. Barnes, Jr., second lieutenant Boston High School Regt. First lieutenant, Constantine D. Tutein, ensign, junior lieutenant Co. A, Naval Brigade, M. V. M. Total service two years, four months. Second lieutenant, Thomas H. Dalton, second lieutenant Boston High School Regt.

Company C—Captain, Humphrey J. Sullivan, cadet U. S. Military Academy. Two years. First lieutenant, Otis E. Dunham, lieutenant Hyde Park High School Battalion. Second lieutenant, Timothy J. McCarthy, lieutenant Dorchester High School Battalion.

Company D—Captain, Oliver D. Greene, private, corporal, first sergeant, first lieutenant Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; private Co. A, 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M.; private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant Co. D, 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M. Total service fourteen years. First lieutenant, James W. Dana, private Co. B, 1st Battalion Infantry, M. V. M.; private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant, second lieutenant Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry and 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M. Total service twelve years, three months. Second lieutenant, Frederick W. Karcher, private, corporal, sergeant Co. D, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; private Co. D, 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M. Total service eight years, three months.

Company E—Officers not appointed.

Company F—Captain, Winthrop M. Merrill, private, corporal, Co. D, 1st Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M.; bugler 2d Brigade, M. V. M.; sergeant-major, captain and engineer, staff 2d Brigade, M. V. M.; sharpshooter; member Mass. Rifle Team in England. Total service thirteen years. First lieutenant, Charles H. Swanton, private 1st Corps Cadets, M. V. M. Nine years. Second lieutenant, Benjamin D. Hyde, private 1st Corps Cadets, M. V. M. Three years.

Company G—Officers not appointed.

Company H—Captain, John Duncan, private Co. H, 8th Regt. M. V. M.; private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant, second lieutenant, first lieutenant Co. H, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Total service eight years, four months. First lieutenant, Henry T. Parsons, private, Co. H, 8th Regt. M. V. M.; private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant, second lieutenant Co. H, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Total service eight years. Second lieutenant, Edward F. Putnam, private Co. K, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Two years.

Company I—Captain William L. Fox, musician Co. I, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; musician, private, sergeant, second lieutenant, first lieutenant, captain Co. B, 4th Battalion and 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; first sergeant, first lieutenant, captain Co. G, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. (Natick); captain Co. H, 5th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Total service sixteen years, one month. First lieutenant, Samuel W. Mendum, lieutenant Boston Latin School Battalion; military instructor Woburn High School. Second lieutenant, Phillip J. Flanders, private, corporal, sergeant, first sergeant, second lieutenant, first lieutenant Co. A, 6th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Total service fourteen years, eight months.

- Company K—Captain, Franklin A. Shaw, Private 1st Corps Cadets, M. V. M.; 1st lieut. Co. L, 1st Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; private A. and H. Artillery Co.; private Old Guard, New York City; captain staff Albany Burgess Corps; sharpshooter M. V. M.; held highest score offhand M. V. M., two years; held for six years highest score for 200 consecutive shots U. S. A. or any State militia. Ten years. First lieutenant Charles H. Stevens. Second lieutenant, Cyrus H. Stowell, sergeant and sergeant-major Dorchester High School Battalion; private Battery D, 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M.
- Company L—Captain, Sumner H. Foster, captain Brookline School Battalion; sergeant-major Mass. Institute Technology Battalion. Militia: Private and corporal 1st Corps Cadets, M. V. M. Four years. First lieutenant, Harry D. Cormerais, private, corporal Co. B, 5th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; quartermaster sergeant 5th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M. Four years. Second lieutenant, Harold L. Pope, captain Peekskill Military Academy Battalion.
- Company M—Captain, Edward H. Cowan, sergeant and first lieutenant University of Maine Battalion. Militia: Sergeant 20th Co. Prov. Militia; private Battery K, 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M. First lieutenant, John J. Hannon, Captain Brighton High School Battalion. Second lieutenant, Edward W. Raymond, first lieutenant Boston High School Battalion. Militia: Private Co. A, 5th Regt. Infantry, M. V. M.; sergeant 20th Co. Prov. Militia; corporal Battery K, 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M. Four years.

At the last meeting of the committee it was voted to give every member of the regiment a certificate showing that he had volunteered to go to the war, and following the disbandment several of the veteran organizations gave complimentary dinners in honor of the company they had organized. The following letters were among many received in commendation of the organization of the regiment:

Executive Mansion, Washington, April 26, 1898.

Dear Sir: I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 23rd instant, embodying a copy of resolutions adopted at a recent meeting of the survivors of Hooker's Old Brigade, tendering their military services, and to state that it has had the President's attention.

By the President's directions your communication has been forwarded for the consideration of the Secretary of War.

Very truly yours,

JOHN ADDISON PORTER, Secretary to the President.

MR. CHARLES C. RIVERS, Chairman, &c., Boston, Mass.

United States Senate, Washington, D. C., May 10, 1898.

My Dear Sir: I have received your letter and read with great interest your account of the organization of the Hooker Guards Regiment. At the present moment of course our quota is full and the government can accept no more men, but if more men should be needed it is an admirable thing to have organizations like the Hooker Guards all prepared to come forward in answer to the call. Such an organization is a strong proof of the patriotic spirit in which we all rejoice at this time.

Very truly yours,

ISAAC P. GRAGG, Esq.

H. C. LODGE.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE MILITARY COMPANY OF MASSACHUSETTS, NOW KNOWN AS THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

THE members of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company are not a part of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, nor does the company appear at any time in its history to have taken the field as a part of the colonial, provincial or state troops. But it is the oldest military society in the United States, and epitomizes in its history every important incident of the wars, weapons, armor, uniforms, personnel and achievements of the Massachusetts militia. It is impossible in the brief space allotted to this history to give anything like that complete record of this ancient and honored society, which Whitman in 1820 and 1842, and Roberts in later days have illuminated with such a wealth of biographical and historical incident. It will be necessary to recite certain leading facts in these lines, but it will be the chief purpose of this article to demonstrate, through the history of this association, the principal changes in the tactics, equipment, weapons, armor, uniforms of the Massachusetts militia, and the more important parts taken by individual officers and members of the company in the war record of Massachusetts.

The company was, so far as can be known, projected by certain of the colonists who had been members of that still more ancient society, "The Honourable Artillery" of London, England: founded by Henry VIII. of uxorious and cruel memory, who on August 25, 1537, chartered certain members of the "Fraternity of St. George" as "a Gaylde of Artillery. For the better encrease of the defense of this Realme, and mayntenance of the Science and Feate of Shoteing with Longbowes, Crosbowes and Hlandegonnes."

With unusual liberality they were permitted to choose and admit their own members; to elect officers; to have a common seal and establish by-laws; and were given perpetual license to shoot with the longbow,

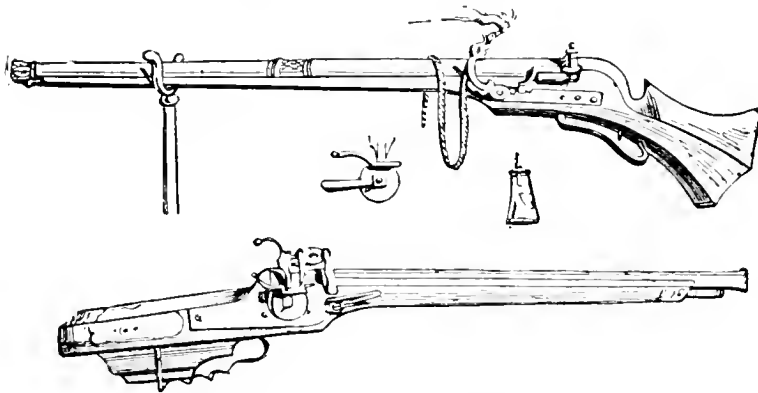


GENERAL OFFICER, 1610-1690.  
Wore a buffcoat for defensive armor, and  
carried a leading-staff and sword.

crossbow and handgun, not only in London and its suburbs, but in any part of the "Realme of England, Ireland, Calais and Wales." Their chief officers were excused from all inquest or jury duty, and, without their consent, no other association could be chartered with like duties and privileges.

During the reign of Queen Elizabeth, many leading citizens of London became members, and the training they received enabled the authorities, during the perils of the Spanish Armada to organize and exercise those formidable trainbands of London, whose numbers, equipment and discipline astonished the military critics of that era.

At the the time of its formation, as its charter shows, the association made great use of the longbow, at all times between the Norman Conquest and the general adoption of firearms, the special weapon of the English soldiery. With a minimum of cost, the skilled English archer brought into the field a weapon, whose shafts were effective at 400 yards, and very destructive to horse and foot at 240 yards. Each areher carried twelve arrows or more, and many of these were recovered after a victorious battle or foray. An expert could easily loose six shafts in a minute; and at long range a thousand bowmen could shoot at once, without danger to the archers in the foremost ranks. For over an hundred years the English company used the longbow, for the London Gazette of November 2, 1670, in describing a great pageant, which traversed the principal streets of London on October 29, 1670, speaks of the "brave appearance of the company of archers to the number of 350, armed with longbows, and halfpikes, under the command of Sir Robert Peyton Knight, then



**MATCHLOCK.**

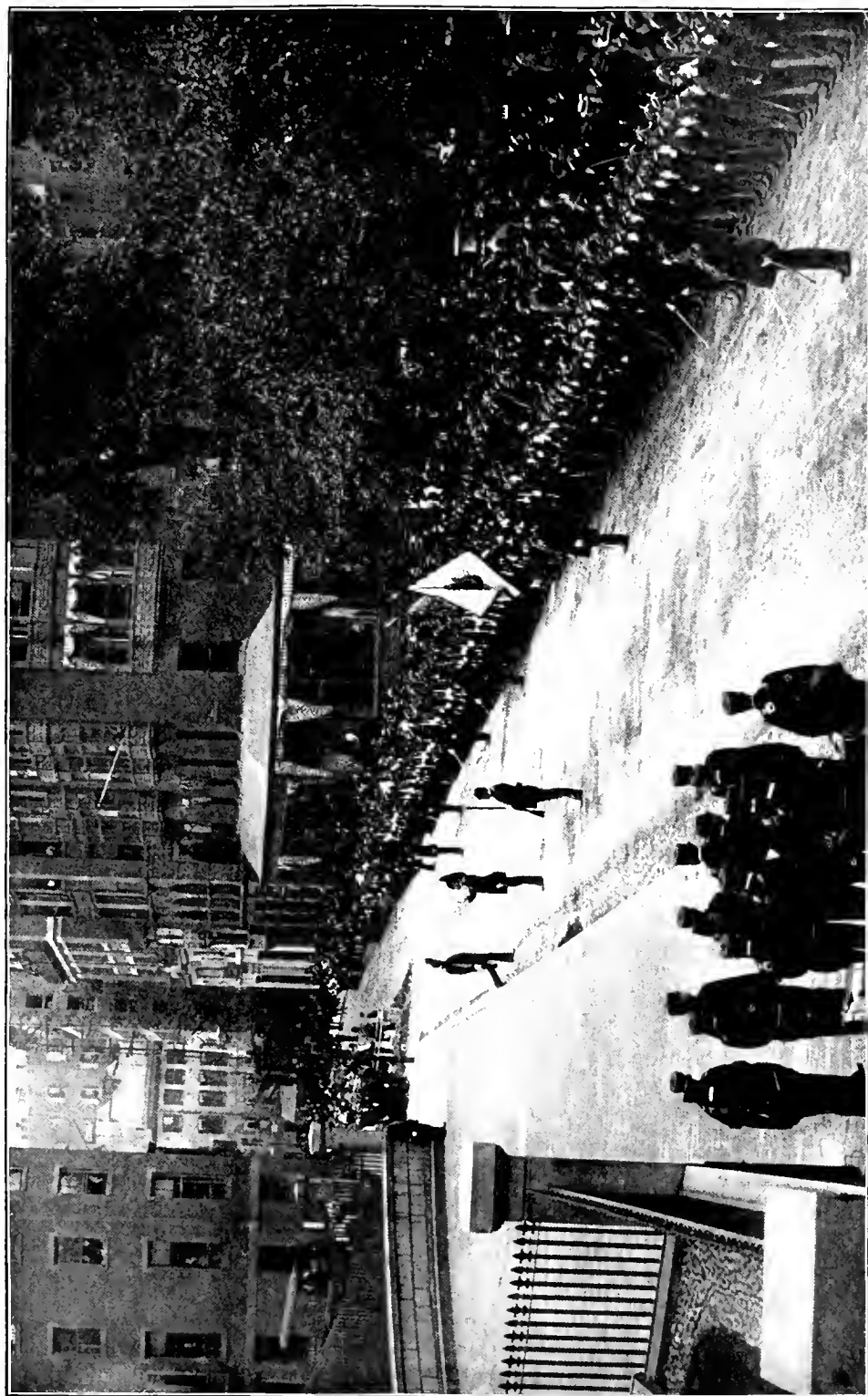
Matchlock with rest, match cocked and lighted. Used 1500-1675.

**WHEEL-LOCK.**

Wheel-lock with wheel revolving against a flint; butt was placed against the mailed breast of the soldier when discharged. Used 1517-1675.

captain." Clad in buff coats, with white plumes in morion and bascinet, the Honourable Artillery, probably for the last time, paraded as a body of archers "in effer of war."

Still, only twenty-seven years earlier, Bariffe's "Young Artillery Man" had advocated the continued employment of soldiers armed with bow and pike, and later still, one Neade had warmly urged the use of his



*Photo by J. J. J.*

TWO HUNDRED AND SIXTY-SECOND ANNIVERSARY, ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, 1864, GOVERNOR'S REGIMENT FARUHL, BEACON HILL





FRENCH PIKEMEN, 1594-1690.

The cut illustrates the following orders: 1st. Take your pike by the point. 2d. Present your pike, palming it.  
3d. Place your pike against the right foot, and draw your sword.

"double-armed man," carrying a long pike to which a longbow was looped, so that "a stand of pikes" could at once receive a charge of horse on a hedge of steel and mow them down with flights of clothyard arrows. Montrose, only six years before, in his wonderful invasion of Scotland, had employed some hundreds of archers, and it seems with good effect. But the longbow in Western Europe was doomed, although the Finnländers, Turks and Tartars of Eastern Europe continued to employ archers until the middle of the eighteenth century. The arbalist or crossbow, with its wooden stock and steel bow, which no man could bend without a lever or a combination of windlass and metallic pulleys, could send its quarrels or short heavy arrows through mail, armor plate and shields with fatal effect. The more powerful ones launched arrows, weighted with "wild fire" and balls of fiercely burning combustibles, on the roofs of besieged cities and the sails and upper works of hostile fleets, and as late as 1630 were a part of the equipment of English garri-sons, armies and fleets.

The handgun had already passed the test of military use. At first, a round bar of bronze or iron, rudely bored out and fitted with a vent

to which a live coal or rude match was applied, it had been from time to time improved, until in 1537 the matchlock, with which the Spanish had defeated Francois I. at Pavia in 1525, had been adopted by every considerable military power of Europe. Its barrel, four and a half to five feet long, carried a ball of from eight to sixteen to the pound, propelled by a handful of coarse powder, at first so poor and weak that two ounces were measured out for an ounce ball. Each charge of powder was usually carried in a separate case of tin or wood, covered with leather and tightly stoppered, twelve of which were attached by leather thongs to a broad shoulder belt; with a priming box or flask of very fine powder for priming, a priming wire and other small implements of the musqueteer's calling. A long rest or staff, forked at the top, and sharply shod with steel, sustained the cumbrous weapon, which at first had a short stock which was braced against the breastplate when fired. No special aim was taken, the soldier being trained to level his piece breast high, and discharge it in as soldierly and erect an attitude as possible. About six

feet of match was carried between the fingers of the left hand, both ends being lighted when going into action. One of these ends, when loosely confined in the jaws of "the dog," or what is now the hammer of the piece, was brought down at the touch of the "tricker" or trigger into the pan, and discharged the musket.



ARQUEBUSIER IN ARMOR.  
With sword and wheel-lock, 1589-1690.

In 1517 the Germans had invented the "snaphaunce" or wheel-lock, discharged by a wheel of steel, forming a part of the pan, and wound up with a key or "spanner," and bearing its milled edge against a flint, cornelian or other fire stone set in a hammer. The wheel was revolved and the flint brought against it by two springs, which were simultaneously released by the action of the trigger, and the sparks flew directly into the powder. This gun, of smaller size and calibre, was at first given out to the cavalry, or owned by wealthy officers or the "soldiers of fortune" or mercenaries, who then formed a considerable part of the armies of Europe. For a century or more the matchlock was the chief weapon of the old world "artillerist." In 1623 the Honourable Artillery of London had their

armory rebuilt, and fastened on its walls, with more ancient weapons, 500 stands of splendid arms; all of which disappeared in the vortex of the Civil War.



With these weapons, then, the English company taught its members and new recruits, as they in turn taught the trainbands and auxiliary regiments of London and the surrounding counties. Archer, arbal-



FRENCH MUSKETEERS, 1494-1680.

The cut illustrates the following orders: 1st. Open the charge with your teeth. 2d. Draw your scouring stick in three motions. 3d. Give fire!

estrier and musketeer, each carried a sword and generally a dagger, with iron-pointed staves to set in the ground when a charge of horse was imminent. But it was also necessary in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries to teach every officer the use and discipline of the pikeman, then the chief arbiter of stricken fields, when arrow and missile had done their worst, and armies joined in the final struggle for victory.

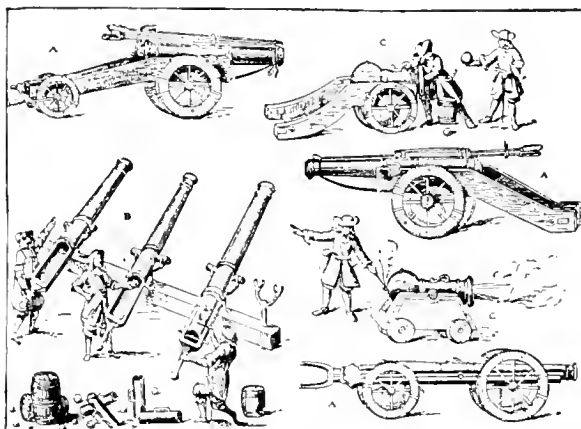
A pikeman wore half armor and an open morion, with plumes or gay ribbons, and carried a sword and a pike of from five to seven yards long, whose staff for some four feet below the keen head was guarded with steel plates, against the edge of sword and war axe. He was generally chosen for stature and strength, according to William Garrard's rule, who in 1567 wrote: "To a tall man, a pike; to a meane stature, a halberd, and to a little, nimble person, a peece;" a rule evidently in force when Sir John Falstaff ordered Bardolph to furnish Wart with a caliver, that is, a light matchlock suitable for a small man.

The proper ordonnance of pikemen and musketeers in each company, battalion and regiment, was of the first importance in an age when the weak fire of the musketeer could not penetrate first class armor at over thirty to sixty yards, and he had no bayonet to avert the headlong charge

of mailed horse or the stern and serried array of the enemy's pikes. On the other hand, the pikeman was helpless under the fire of archery and musketry, unless the musketeers were ready to take post in front and rear and on either flank, to return it.

It will be seen, therefore, that the armament and tactics of that age rendered it necessary that the governors and officers of the "Artillery Garden" should teach the use of these weapons, and the involved and artificial tactics of a military practice much less simple than that of the present day.

In addition to these portable arms, the Honourable Artillery Company, in later generations, took up, to some extent, the study and practice of that more modern arm, field artillery. In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, and indeed well into the eighteenth, the cannon used in battle were pieces of position; long, heavy, slow of motion and utterly helpless against an attack in flank or rear. Round shot at long, bar and chain shot at medium, and grape and langrage at short ranges were employed, but shell were only used in mortars, and schrapnel was unknown; although there were curious and ingenious attempts which came very near solving the problem of direct shell-fire, even as there were breech-loading, double and triple cannon, revolving guns or swivels, and rude mitrailleuses made of many musket-barrels. Certainly the most beauti-



CANNON AND PATERAROS, 1600.

- A. Cannon and carriage.
- A. do. with extra wheels on the trail.
- A. do. Long culverin mounted for transportation.
- B. Three pateraros or breech-loading swivels. The ball, or bag of pebbles, or musket balls, etc., is first inserted, then the breechpiece, loaded with powder and fastened with an iron key. The swivel is aimed with the left hand, and the right applies the match.
- CC. A curious Portuguese 54-lb. howitzer; bore 18-in. deep; charge, 10 lbs. of powder; vent in the rear of the piece. Note the loose ammunition, and extra "chambers" or breech-pieces

ful cannon ever made were cast in those ancient days, and their extreme length, long considered a weakness, is strikingly revived and even exceeded in the most modern guns of to-day. Under Louis XIII. of France, culverins thirty-five feet long, found among the artillery cast in former reigns, were sent to the royal foundries.

In 1598, the Honourable Artillery Company was 600 strong, and bore on its rolls the names of the commanders and commissioned officers of the London train bands and auxiliaries. In 1637, the New England

colonists began to prepare themselves for an Indian war, the ravages of pirates and privateers, and the even greater danger of formal invasion and conquest. They had already armed themselves with the various weapons above described, including a fair proportion of artillery, but most of their men were untrained to war, and especially in field evolutions. Among them, however, were several who had served in the Artillery Garden of London, and who naturally thought it wise to found in the new world a military society, which in time might prove as great a school of warlike discipline and science as its English prototype. Robert Keayne, a merchant of considerable means who emigrated from London in 1635, was one of the most active in organizing a society of which Governor Winthrop writes in his diary as follows: "Divers gentlemen and others, being joined in a military company, desired to be made a corporation, but the council considering, from the example of the Praetorian Band among the Romans, and the Templars in Europe, how dangerous it might be to erect a standing authority of military men, which might easily in time overthrow the civil power, thought it best to stop it betimes; yet they were allowed to be a company, but subordinate to all authority." But these fears were futile, and on March 17, 1638 it was "Ordered: that the military company of Boston may present two or three (names) to the council to chose a captain therefrom." It is also recorded later that "Captain Keayne and the military company have power to exercise where they please, and to make use of so many of the common arms as they need, and a warrant from any of the Council is sufficient for the delivery of them unto Captain Keayne or such as he shall appoint."

Previously, on March 13, 1638, the charter of the new company had been granted, and runs as follows:

"Orders for the Military Company, made by the Governor and Councill and confirmed by the General Court: Whereas divers Gentlemen and others, out of their care for the public weal and safety, by the advancement of the military art and exercise of arms, have desired license of the Court to join themselves in one company, and to have the liberty to exercise themselves as their occasions will best permit; and that such liberties and privileges might be granted them as the Court should think meet for their better encouragement and furtherance in so useful an employment; which request of theirs, being referred unto us of the Standing Council:

"We have thought fit upon serious consideration, and conference with divers of the principal of them, to set down and order herein as followeth:

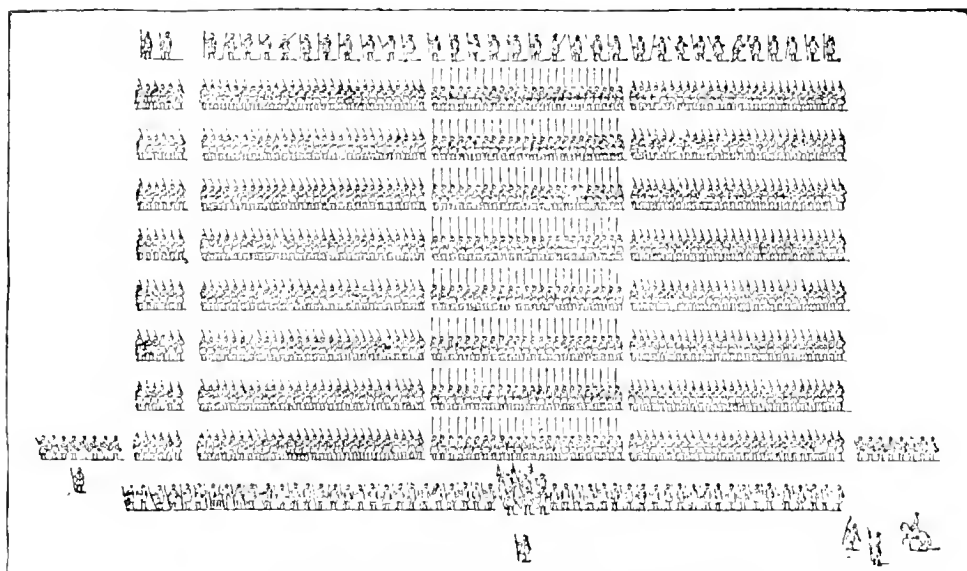
"Imprimis. We do order that Robert Keayne, Nathaniel Duncan, Robert Sedgwick and William Spencer, Gentlemen; and such as they shall from time to time take unto their Company, shall be called the Military Company of Massachusetts.

"2ndly. They or the greater number of them, shall have liberty to choose their Captain, Lieutenant and all other officers. Their Captain and Lieutenant to be such as the Court or Council shall allow of; and no officer to be put upon them, but of their own choice.

"3rdly. The First Monday in every month is appointed for their meeting and exercise, and to the end that they may not be hindered from coming together, we do hereby order that no other training in the particular towns, nor other town meetings shall be appointed on that day; and if that day prove unseasonable for the exercise of their arms, then the sixth (day) of the same week is appointed for supply. This not to extend to Salem or the towns beyond, nor to Hingham, Weymouth, Dedham nor Concord.

"4thly. They have liberty and power to make orders amongst themselves for the better managing of their military affairs (which orders are to be of force when they shall be allowed by the Court or Council), and they may appoint an officer to levy any fines or forfeitures, which they shall impose upon any of their own company, for the breach of any such order: so as the same exceed not twenty shillings, for any one offence.

"5thly. The said Military Company are to have one thousand acres of land (in some place as may not be prejudicial to any plantation) to be granted by the Court to some of the said Company for the use of the present Company, and such as shall



BATTALION OF MUSKETEERS AND PIKEMEN, 1592-1630.

Sixteen companies, 50 strong, have each 12 pikemen and 38 musketeers, formed in eight ranks, two companies front; the 24 pikemen forming the centre, with 58 musketeers on either hand. On the right wing the 17th company (grenadiers) is ranged in ranks of six men each.

succeed in the same: To be improved within a time convenient, for providing necessities for their military exercises, and defraying of other charges, which may arise by occasion thereof.

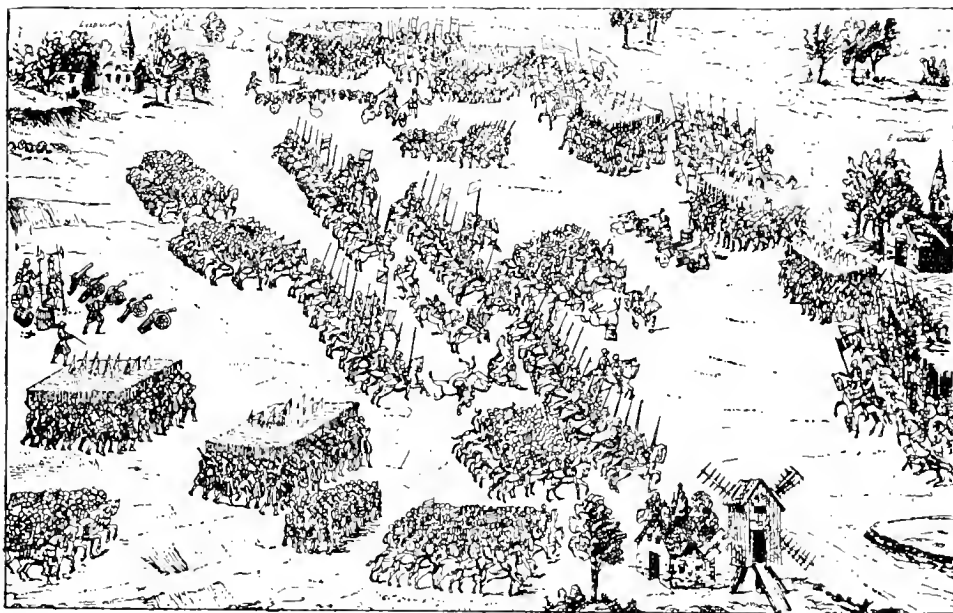
"6thly. The said Company shall have liberty at the time appointed to assemble themselves for their military exercises, in any town within their jurisdiction, at their own pleasure. Provided Always; that this order, or grant, or anything therein contained shall not extend to free the said Company, their persons or estates, from the Civil Government and Jurisdiction here established."

The company thus chartered, was organized on the first Monday of June, 1638, by the election of the following officers: Commander,

Captain Robert Keayne, of Boston; lieutenant, Captain Daniel Haugh or Howe, of Lynn, and ensign, Joseph Weld of Roxbury.

A glance at the military science of that period and the condition of the Colonial militia will aid us in comprehending the arms and history of the company.

There were then fifteen towns in the patent, viz: Boston, Charlestown, Dorchester, Roxbury, Hingham, Weymouth, Concord, Dedham, Saugus or Lynn, Watertown, Newton, Cambridge, Ipswich, Salem and Newbury, most of which had a "train band" like those organized in London and other English cities. They mustered every man able to bear arms, one-third of whom were armed with pikes, and, if able to purchase



ADVANCE AT THE BATTLE OF DREUX, 1562.

Showing bodies of musketeers and pikemen and the immovable artillery of that era.

it, wore armor, generally of the plain "black" finish and consisting of a morion or open helmet, gorget, breast and back pieces and pistol proof tasletts covering the front of the thighs. There was by no means that utter lack of military display of crimson or white plumes, white linen bands and ruffs, gold fringed colors, etc., which is generally ascribed to our Puritan ancestors, but, compared with some of the illustrations given, their array was very plain and even severe in tone.

The musketeers were principally armed with the heavy matchlock above described, and wore armor or the heavy buff coats then slowly coming into use. A few of the better class probably owned "snaphaunces" or wheel-locks, and the bandolier was the military way of carrying ammu-

nition, although the flask and bullet-bag were used by those who mustered with long fowling pieces, carbines or pistols. When the train-band was in line the pikemen formed the center of the array, with an equal number of files of musketeers on their right and left. In the wars of Europe the infantry, for the most part, formed in masses much like the "close column by division" much favored by tacticians in the Civil War. Great leaders prided themselves on their ability to form perfect squares, and the "leading staff" or "baton," which was then a special insignia of high rank, was often embossed or engraved with plain figures, showing at a glance the proper arrangement of any number of men likely to be formed in any "battle" or battalion.

In beginning a battle, the musketeers opened fire and the pikemen endured the return fire as best they might. If the horse of the enemy or his pikemen charged, the pikemen formed a hollow square within which the musketeers took refuge.

Girolamo Colanoso, who wrote about 1584, says that a pikeman required seven feet of space when using his long spear, viz: three feet in front, three behind him, one to stand on, and two feet between his shoulders and those of his comrades on either side. His armor was supposed to be musket-proof at ten or twelve score feet, and besides his pike of fifteen to twenty-two feet long, he carried a sword, often a dagger, and sometimes a "dag" or short pistol. A leather thong aided him to carry and steady his pike, which in marching was generally balanced across his shoulders.

In attack, pikemen moved in close order from four to six files deep, gripping their pikes with both hands, the rearward files advancing their pikes over the right shoulders of the men before them. Sometimes the battalion was eight to sixteen files deep and the point was not always the pikeman's chief dependence. One Montluc, a famous leader of pikemen, said to his followers just before a charge which won the battle of Cerisoles, in 1544: "Comrades! If we use the pike at full length depending on the reach of the point, we shall be defeated, for the German pikemen are more dexterous than we are at that game. Take then your pikes by the middle, like the Swiss pikemen, and strike them on the head to confuse and drive them before us."

When awaiting a charge of horse or foot, pikemen stood from four to six files deep, the front rank kneeling, the second stooping, and the others standing upright, each with the left foot advanced, the butt of the lance against his right foot and its shaft over the right shoulder of the man in front of him; the sword was often drawn at the same time.

Until Vauban introduced the ring bayonet in 1670, the musketeer and pikeman were inseparable parts of one harmonious whole, each necessary to the other and almost helpless when separated in battle. As said Will-

iam Garrard in his "Arte of Warre," published in 1567, and afterwards re-published in effect as Davies' "England's Trainings" in 1619:

"Wherefore, a Souldier must either accustom himself to bear a peece or a pyke. If he beare a peece, then must he learne to hold the same; to accommodate his matche between his two foremost fingers and his thumbe, and to plant ye greate ende on hys



THE MELEE AT THE BATTLE OF DREUX, 1562.

The French pikemen shelter their musketeers in the centre and keep at bay the Huguenot dragoons and pistoliers, who seek to break their ranks. The French pikemen and musketeers, in the right hand upper corner, advance to succor their comrades.

breste with a gallant souldier-like grace; and, being ignorant, let him acquainte himself firste with the firing of tutch powder in his pan, and soe by degrees, both to shoote off, to bowe and bear uppe hys bodye, and so consequently to attaine to the leuell and practyse of an assured and serviceable shot; readily to charge and, with a comely couch, discharge, making choyse at the same instante of his marke with a quicke and vigilant eye.

"Hys flaske and tutch-boxe must keepe hys powder; his purse and mounthe hys bulletts; in skyrmysh, hys lefte hande must hold hys match and peece, and the righte hande use the office of charging and discharging.

"Being against the enemy, whether withe an indented (irregular) course he dothe traverse his playne (level) grounde, or else takes advantage of his place and invasion, as under the safe-guard of a trench, the backe of a ditche, olde wall, tree or such lyke, let him ever fyrste loade hys peece with powder out of his flaske, then with hys bullett and laste with amuring (wadding) and tutch powder, foreseeing ever that the panne is clear, the cover close, and the tutch-hole wide, or else well proyned, (cleared with a priming pin or wire). So that still observing modest order in hys traverse; neither too slow nor over-speedy, to the intent he become not each man's marke through his sluggishnesse, nor run himsele out of breath through his owne rash-

nesse, for the moste parte keeping hys side towards the enemy. Let hym discharge going, but never standyng; so shalle he the better shunne the enemies' shot, and chuse hys assured advantage.

"A Souldier ought to be carefull that hys furniture be good, substantiall and staunch from raine; the charge for hys flaske juste for hys peece, and the spring quicke and sharpe; the pipe of his tutch-boxe somewhat wide that the powder may have free passage, which otherwise woulde choake up.

"In tyme of marching and travailing by the waye, let him keepe a paper in the panne and tutch hoale, and in wette weather have a case for hys peece somewhat portable, or else of necessitie he must keepe the same from wette under his arm-hoale or cassocke, or by some other invention, free of damage from the weather, and hys matche in hys pocket, only except that he burnes, and that lykewise so close in the hollow of hys hande, or some artificial pipe of pewter hanging at hys girdle, as the coale by wette or water go not out.

\* \* \*

"If the stocke of hys peece be crooked hee ought to place the ende (butt) preste before (and) above hys left pappe; if long and straight as the Spaniards use them, then upon the point of his right shoulder, using a stately, upright pace in discharge.

"The musket is to be used in all respects lyke unto the harquebuse, save that in respect he (the musket) carries a double bullet, and is much more weighty. He useth a staff breast-high; in the one ende a pyke to pytch in the grounde, and in the other an iron forke to reste hys peece uppon, and (with) a hoale a little beneath the same in the staffe, wherennto he doth add a string which tyed and wrapp'd aboute hys wrest yields hym commoditie to traine hys forke or staffe after hym, whilest he in skyrnish dothe charge hys musket afresh with powder and bullet.

"Both the harquebussier and pykeman must wear a short rapier and a small poinardo (poignard or dagger)."

The halberds of the sergeants and the halfpikes, (literally half length pikes) of the captains and lieutenants were used in fight like the weapons of "the meaner sort." Indeed, officers in that day were trained to "act the man" like that brave Lord Willoughby, who in the old ballad says:

*"Stand to it noble pikemen  
And look you all about;  
And shoot you right you bowmen,  
And we will keep them out.  
You musquet and caliver men  
Do you prove true to me;  
I'll be the foremost man in fight,"  
Says brave Lord Willoughby.*

The most dangerous enemy of the combined arms were the horsemen, most of whom had given up the lance for the long, heavy, straight sword, with pistols, dragon or blunderbuss, hackbut or carabine. The pistols used by the Plymouth Colony Horse and those of the Bay Towns probably measured from twenty-eight to thirty-four inches long and carried balls of twenty to twenty-four to the pound. They were discharged by wheel-locks, and were rather formidable weapons.



The "Commentaries" of Sir Francis de Vere record that, in 1579, "at the battle of Tournehoult, the pistoliers charged the enemies' pikemen; not breaking through them at the first push, as it was anciently used by the men-at-arms with their barded horses; but as the longe pistols, delivered at hande had made the ranks thinner, so thereupon the rest of the horse got within them."

The blunderbuss, or dragon, was much used by the Dutche, but the carabine or carbine, caliver, hackbut, and other short small-arms, with wheel-locks, were given out to the cavalry, because a matchlock could not be effectively used on horseback. The carbine had a small bore and was often rifled, or at least furnished with straight grooves, which made it easier to force the close-fitting ball down upon the powder.

It was the purpose of the founders of the Military Company of Massachusetts to learn and practice these and like methods of drill and tactics, fitting the nascent armies of the English colonies to meet the trained soldiers of France, Spain and Holland; who at any time might make war upon the mother country and seek to invade the colonies. There were few Spanish, French and Dutch or Portuguese colonies which had not been attacked by English musketeers and pikemen; it was not to be expected that Boston should escape reprisals on the part of these ancient foemen.

So the Military Company of Massachusetts, in 1638, gathered at Boston many of the officers of the outlying train bands; Lieutenant Nathaniel Duncan and Ensign John Holman, of Dorchester; Captain William Jennison of Watertown; Captain George Cooke and Lieutenant William Spenser of Newton; Ensign Richard Walker, of Saugus; Lieutenant Richard Davenport, of Ipswich; Captain John Underhill, Lieutenant Edward Gibbons and Ensign Robert Hardinge of the great Boston train band, and other worthies, "divers gentlemen and others," merchants, landed proprietors and the like.

They were allowed to use the armor, pikes, halberds, half-pikes and matchlock muskets of the colony to furnish forth their array, but most of the members came in their half armor or buff coats, with weapons of price, not a few of which had a record of good service in late and ancient wars. Especially noticeable were the swords, for a good blade in those



A CARBINEER. 1600 1690.

days was a precious possession, and all the more precious to its owner that stern and bloody work had notched its blade, and worn smooth the lighter ornamentation of hilt and pommel. There are records which show that in that age \$2,500 was paid for a single sword. "There is no direct record that the company ever drilled with pikes," says Roberts in his history, but there is every evidence that pikemen were not only a third part of the foot soldiers of the colony, but that they were sent on the first military expeditions.

Thus pikemen went with the force sent under Endicott to Block Island, in 1636, and doubtless were a part of the 200 men raised for service against the Dutch under Generals Sedgewick and Leverett in 1654. Isaac Marvell, or Morrill, of Dorchester (1638), left, at his death, a musket, fowling-piece, three swords, a pike, half-pike, a corslet and two bands of bandoliers. The Salem Light Infantry, (Company H, Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M.) still display in their armory over sixty pikes, which have been handed down from ancient times and undoubtedly belonged to the "Salem train band." Even in the valley of the Connecticut, the prevailing military fashion, and the necessity of compliance with the militia law, in supplying arms for servants and apprentices, made the pike a popular weapon, as shown by the account books of the Pyncheon estate, 1656-1683, in which the following prices are charged: a pikehead, three shillings; a powder-flask, five shillings; do. horn, eight pence; a musket, twenty to thirty shillings; a fowling-piece, twenty-five shillings; match, from twopence to sixpence per fathom; flints, so much for a certain weight or number not specified.

Until 1666, therefore, the train bands of Massachusetts differed little from those of Europe, and the laws provided that two-thirds of each company should be musketeers, each of whom should have a musket with priming-wire, worm, scourer and a mold for bullets; a sword, rest, bandoliers, one pound of powder, twenty bullets and two fathoms of match. The pikemen were to furnish themselves with "a pike, corslet, head-piece, sword and snapsack." Later, in 1666, each pikeman was allowed his choice of defensive armor, and might wear either a steel corslet or a buff coat or quilted coat, which would turn arrow-point or sword-stroke, but not bullets.

Old prints of the battle of Dreux, fought December 19, 1562, between the Huguenots under Admiral de Coligny and the Catholic French commanded by the Constable de Montmorency, show in the first, two hostile armies in time of battle, with their cumbrous cannon in position, their mixed battalions of musketeers and pikemen, and their only mobile forces of heavy and light horse. In the second scene, at the height of the melee, the military reader will note the useless artillery, the attempts of the Huguenot horse to break the French pikemen, the unbroken battalions

of Montmorenci advancing to their assistance and the general confusion of a field in which the foot and artillery were unable to move rapidly and support each other.

Such were the conditions of civilized and scientific warfare for a hundred years later, and the military experts and amateur warriors who founded and joined the Military Company of Massachusetts, studied the same text-books and sought to solve the same problems as did Henry of Navarre, Turenne, Cromwell, Richelieu, Monk and other great leaders of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.

In 1637, the company had but twenty-four members, but under the new charter of 1638 fifty-seven more were secured. Twenty-one joined in 1639, twenty-four in 1640 and twenty-two in 1641; 148 members in the first five years.

Among these were many whose soldierly record links closely together the military history of the old and new world. Deputy Governor Thomas Dudley, who signed the charter and never joined the company, but was its friend and well-wisher, had been captain of an English company of musketeers and pikemen in the army of Henry of Navarre at the siege of Amiens, in 1592.

Of those joining in 1637, Thomas Hutchins or Hucken removed to Barnstable, but returned into England before the Civil War, and became ensign of Rainsborough's Regiment of Horse under Cromwell.

Israel Stoughton, first captain of the Dorchester train band, went to England in 1642, was made lieutenant-colonel of Rainsborough's Horse, but died at London July 17, 1644.

Major Thomas Savage, one of the incorporators, went against King Philip in 1666 as next in rank to Major-General Dennison, and had under his special leadership the companies of Captains Paige, Hinchman, Moseley and Prentiss. War was barely averted at this time, but in 1675-76 he again served against King Philip.

John Underhill, an English soldier of fortune, served in the Netherlands. He was hired to train the forces of the colony, but was not in touch with the religious and social strictness of life around him. He removed to Stamford, Connecticut, in 1643, defeated with great slaughter a large number of Indians at Greenwich in 1644, and died at Oyster Bay, L. I., in 1672.

William Rainsburrow, or Rainsborough, (1639) of Charlestown, returned into England before the Civil War, and was made colonel of a regiment of horse, serving against King Charles I. Israel Stoughton, (1637) was lieutenant-colonel; Nehemiah Bourne, (1638) major; John Leverett (1639) captain, and Thomas Hutchins, (1637) ensign. He commanded a brigade at the storming of Bristol, was made one of the commissioners to receive the surrender of the city, and later put on a commission sent to treat with King Charles I. Later, he was admiral of a parliamentary squadron, but the sailors mutinied and set their officers ashore. He was assigned a command in Yorkshire with headquarters at Doncaster, near Pomfret. A Captain Paulden, in the Royalist service, with twenty-four picked horsemen, made his way at night into his lines, and with four troopers arrested Rainsborough in his own tent, brought him out and ordered him to mount a led horse. He hesitated for a moment, and then tried to fight his way through to liberty. A lieutenant and sentinel were killed in defending him and at last he, too, was run through the body and slain, October 29, 1648.

Richard Morris, of Roxbury, (1637) had also served in the Netherlands, but does not appear to have been engaged in active service thereafter.

Nehemiah Bourne (1638) went to England in 1643-44 and became a major of

horse under Rainsborough. After Stoughton's death in 1644 he returned to Boston, but in 1646 went back in a ship built here and heavily armed. In 1646 he commanded a frigate on the Woolwich station, was promoted in 1650 to the frigate "Speaker" of 52 guns and 270 men, and in 1652 was made rear admiral of the Commonwealth's fleet, commanding the ship "St. Andrew" of sixty guns. In 1652 he became a commissioner of the navy and held a command in the Kent Militia. After the Restoration he fled to the continent but later returned to London, where he died in 1691.

Captain Thomas Hawkes, Dorchester, helped De La Tour against D'Aulnay in 1643. In 1645, he built the "great ship Seafort of 400 tons, with much ordnance and ornamentation," in which he sailed for England, but was cast away on the coast of Spain. After another shipwreck in a chartered vessel, he returned home and died in 1648.

Edward Hutchinson (1638) was mortally wounded by Indians near Brookfield, and died at Marlboro August 19, 1675.

Benjamin Keayne, Jr., (1638) the son of the projector and first captain of the company, returned to England in 1644, and became major of Stephen Winthrop's Regiment of Horse, serving under the Earl of Manchester. He died in England in 1668.

Richard Davenport (1639) was the ensign of the Salem train band in October, 1634, when Captain John Endicott cut the cross of St. George out of the colors with his sword. Davenport so approved the action that he named a little daughter "Truecross," in memory of the event. He went with Endicott on the Block Island expedition to avenge the death of Mr. Oldham, and with Mason and Traverse against the Pequots in 1637, and was wounded in the battle. He was made commander of the fort at Castle Island, and killed therein by lightning on July 15, 1639.

John Leverett (1639) captain of the company in 1652, 1663 and 1670 went to England in 1644-45 and was made captain of a troop of horse under Rainsborough, returned to America, but again went to England and was a captain of cavalry under Cromwell in 1656. After the Restoration, he regained the favor of Charles II., who knighted him in 1676, but this was not known in America until after his death, March 16, 1678. He was major-general of the colonial militia and was buried with great state and formality March 25, 1678, his armor being carried in the funeral procession by friends chosen from among the principal men of the colony.

Herbert Pelham, of Cambridge, (1639) returned to England, and became a member of Parliament. He died in 1673.

Wentworth Day (1640) returned to England and became one of the "Fifth Monarchy Men" who looked for the establishment of God's Kingdom on earth, preceded by the battle of Armageddon, and like trials of the people of God.

Thomas Marshall, of Lynn (1640) went to England and received a captain's commission under the parliament. He returned and was captain of a Lynn company in King Philip's War, 1675. He died December 23, 1689.

James Oliver (1640) served against King Philip and was in the Great Swamp fight of December 19, 1675. He died in 1682.

Samuel Shepherd, of Cambridge, (1640) was a colonel under Cromwell. He survived the perils of the Restoration and died in 1673.

Colonel Stephen Winthrop, (1640) fourth son of Governor Winthrop, became a colonel of horse under Cromwell, who held him in great esteem, and would have made him major-general in place of Major-General Harrison, but for his decease in 1656.

Robert Selling, Watertown, (1642) who was a lieutenant in the Pequot war, led the New Hampshire Grant forces raised to accompany the expedition of Generals Sedgwick and Leverett against the Dutch, and was probably killed a generation later in King Philip's War.

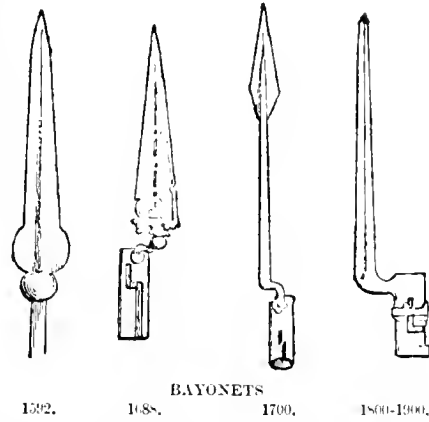
John Plympton, Dedham, (1643) removed to Deerfield in 1673, and became captain of the local train band. On September 19, 1677, he was taken alive by the Indians and carried toward Canada. Tradition says he was burned alive at the stake near Chambly in 1677.

William Phillips, Charlestown, (1644) removed to Saco, Maine, where he became magistrate and captain. In 1675, he beat off an attack by the Tarratine Indians, but lost by fire nearly everything he possessed.

Joshua Hobart, Hingham, (1641) was captain of a troop of horse in 1680, and is said to have been a captain in King Philip's War. He died July 28, 1680.

During this period other military associations of like nature were projected. In 1645, "certain gentlemen and others of Middlesex" petitioned for the privilege of forming a military company. Another petition from "gentlemen of Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Salisbury and Hampton," was received the same year. Both petitions were granted, and on May 19, 1662, the "Artillery Company of Middlesex" petitioned that 1000 acres of land might be granted them.

Many of the earlier members of the Boston "Military Company of the Massachusetts" were also officers of horse, which since 1517, when the Germans invented the snaphaunce or wheel-lock, had steadily regained its ancient prestige in the field. Pistols, invented as some say at Pistoia, Italy, but according to others so called because the bore would receive a silver pistole, were at one time "a fad" with continental horsemen, of whom Henri Estienne wrote "They are not contented to carry as many as six or eight pistols about their saddles, but they stuff with them their clothes and boots." The colony cavalry were content to carry a single brace, but these were long, heavy and of large calibre, almost musket-bore in fact.



It was not until September 7, 1657 that the first bylaws of the company were formally approved by the General Council, and it was thirteen years later that the tract of land granted to the company by its charter was finally delimited, and specially granted September 11, 1670.

In 1670, the matchlock musket had become practically obsolete abroad. France only, in spite of severe defeat at the hands of the Spanish infantry, who carried straight-stocked snaphaunces fired from the shoulder, kept her infantry armed with the clumsy matchlock until 1676.

The pike, still used in Europe, had lost ground greatly although veteran soldiers still strongly expressed their preference for "the white weapon." As early as 1646-48 the military world had heard of the bayonet, or, as our fathers called it, "baggonet", said to have first been made at Bayonne, in France. The first made were pike heads or knife blades; furnished with a tapering wooden handle, to be inserted in the muzzle of the musket. Marshal Puysegur, in his "Art of War," probably describes the earliest improvement of this crude device: "Before the siege of Nimeguen (1652), I had seen a regiment which carried swords that had only a hilt and a ring of leather in place of the guard, with another at the pommel, which rings they passed over the barrel of the fusil and held it firm."

The flintlock had also made its appearance, and was probably in the possession of some of the richer colonists at this period. Cartridges were used in 1670 to some extent, especially by the horse, but the powder-horn and bullet-pouch were the cheapest and probably the most common equipments of the suburban militia.

In 1665 Major-General John Leverett, appointed to reconstruct the fortifications of Boston, reported that besides the works at Castle Island, then being improved, the Sconce or South battery at Fort Hill, (near present site of Rowe's Wharf,) mounted thirteen guns, presumably of heavy metal for those days, and was "the compleatest work in America." At Merry's Point, (near Battery Wharf,) there was an earthwork faced with logs, mounting seven guns, and at the Neck the narrow causeway was barred by two strong gates, one for vehicles and the other a wicket for foot passengers, flanked by brick walls, which were pierced for several sakers or small guns, and guarded day and night. In 1671 Roger Clap (1646) was made commander of the "new castle", which was of stone with four bastions, mounting thirty-eight guns and sixteen culverins of larger calibre, and a small water battery of six guns covered the lower part of the islet and its approaches. There are records which indicate that the Artillery Company visited the castle and other works and exercised and discharged their cannon; but in the first century of its existence there is nothing to show that the company had any cannon, big or little, under its exclusive or even general control.

The most that can be inferred from the records is, that the Artillery Company, like the First Heavy Artillery Regiment of the present day, had the privilege of using the great guns of the several forts when they chose to practice that part of their military exercises. This, however, was but natural in an age when the soldier was, at the caprice of his superiors, given a command of foot, the leadership of a cavalry regiment, a vessel or squadron, or the conduct of the siege of a strong fortress or city.

An officer sent by the English government in 1675 thus reported the military strength and defensive preparations of the colony: "There are men able to bear arms, between thirty and forty thousand, and in the town of Boston about four thousand. Their trained bands are twelve troops of horse and six thousand foot. Each troop consists of sixty horses besides officers; all are well mounted and completely armed with back, breast, headpiece, buffcoat, sword, carbine and pistols; each troop distinguished by their coats.

"The foot are also well furnished with swords, musket and bandoliers. There are no pikemen, they being of no use in the wars with the Indians. The governor, Mr. Leverett, is the only old soldier in the colony; he served in the late rebellion under the usurper, Oliver Cromwell, as a captain of horse."

He goes on to describe the Castle, also "the South Fort, two tier of guns, six in each," and the "North Fort of five demi-culverins and some smaller guns." He reports that there is a powder mill at Dorchester, and that the powder made is equal in quality to the best English powder; that saltpetre is made in great quantities from the guano taken from outlying islets on the coast, and from under the great pigeon-roosts in the swamps. He also tells of the iron works and of the excellent quality of the iron produced.

Two years previous, in 1673, the general court had empowered Mr. Hezekiah Usher to purchase in England "500 new snaphances or fire-lock muskets." There was reason for this purchase, for it is recorded that the Indians were generally armed with wheel-lock, and even firelock or flintlock muskets which they procured of the Dutch and French, and also of the English free-traders. It was ordered (September 17, 1673) "that parties who have correspondence in Bilbao and the trade, shall, and hereby are desired to write their correspondents to procure and purchase thirty or forty great guns, whole culverins, demy culverins and sakers."

Later it was further provided: "As an addition and explanation of ye order hereunto affixed, referring to great artillery, the Deputies' judgment is that instead of thirty or forty guns there be sixty sent for, and yt ye denomination of ye said guns be as follows, viz: 12 whole culverins, 12 demy-culverins, 20 demy-culverins (cutts), 16 sakers; or as near these proportions as can be provided. Thirty or forty shots (round) proportionable to guns (to) be also sent for." On April 5, 1675, the by-laws of the Artillery Company were for the first time formally approved by the council.

The comparatively peaceful period of Massachusetts settlement and development was ended, and thereafter in every generation the roll of the Artillery Company was a record of many names of veterans who served in the great struggle between the confederated Indian tribes of New England and the colonists, known as King Philip's War.

This began in the usual way in which Indian wars have generally been initiated; by the insolent and probably unauthorized raid of a small body of Wampanoags on the little settlement of Swanzy or Swansea, in the south-western border of the Plymouth colony, June 21, 1675. Insults and menaces were followed by the killing of cattle in the fields and the plundering of undefended farm-houses. At last a settler killed one of the marauders, and in the affray and massacre which followed eight colonists were killed and much property destroyed.

Governor Leverett, informed by Governor Winslow, of Plymouth, of the new peril June 24, at once ordered that aid should be sent direct to the beleaguered town. A company of mounted musketeers and troop of

horse under the supreme command of Gen. Daniel Dennison, (1660) were to rendezvous at the market-place, now the head of State street, where stood the new town hall, market and armory of the artillery company.

Here, on the evening of the 25th, Captain Henchman, (1638) mustered 100 mounted musketeers, made up of small detachments from the train bands of Boston, Charlestown, Cambridge, Watertown, Roxbury, Dorchester, Braintree, Weymouth, Hingham and Malden. They wore armor or buff coats, and were undoubtedly largely armed with the new firelocks lately purchased by the colony or owned by themselves. Captain Thomas Prentiss or Prentice commanded the troop of horse made up of detachments from his own Middlesex county troop, Captain William Davis' Suffolk county troop, Captain George Corwin's Essex county troop and possibly the Independent county troop raised in Suffolk, Essex and Middlesex, then commanded by Lieut. William Hasey, (1652). Some Indians from Natick and Punkapoag were in these detachments.

Without delay Dennison led his little army out across the causeway and through Dedham to the Neponset river, where they halted for an hour, refreshed themselves and their horses, and marched through moonlit forest roads to "Woodcock's Garrison," on the present site of Attleboro, arriving at Swanzy early on the morning of June 27.

Captain Samuel Moseley, (1672) of Charlestown, a cooper by trade, had previously sailed to Jamaica, where it was rumored he had made some money in privateering, and gained the reputation of being a brave and resolute man. This reputation he had just increased by going down to the coast of Maine with the armed ship "Antohny" and the ketches "Salisbury" and "Swallow," and capturing certain Dutch "pyrates" who in the ship "Edward and Thomas" and the shallops "Penobscot" and "Philip," were carrying on private war against fisherman and settler. He had entered Boston harbor with his prizes April 2, 1675, and although the condemnation to death of the five principal men was never carried out, and the amount of prize money was not large, he was at that time at the flood-tide of popularity. He held no military rank, but the masses admired and believed in him, and so when he began to beat up for recruits to march against the Indians the roll of his drums called together a motley but athletic throng. There were many of his recent crew, amphibious New England coastmen, at once farmers, fishermen and mariners, dead shots with their long Spanish ducking guns, and equally at home in the forest and on the ocean; adventurous young colonists; stout apprentices, glad to get a holiday; purchased servants, the unhappy prisoners of England's civil Scotch and Irish wars; grim Cromwellian veterans and Fifth Monarchy men, who longed once more to cry their ancient war-cry "The sword of the Lord and of Gideon;" low-voiced and light-footed rangers of the inland forests, with their trained hounds, best of scouts for



ambushed Indians. They gathered at the summons as men to a feast, and in three short hours Moseley found himself at the head of 110 men arrayed for war and ready for the march. Before midnight he, too, was leading his men through the moon-lit wood-paths to the southward, and joined Henshman and Dennison on the afternoon of the 27th. That same night the whole force marched upon Swanzy, joining on the 28th the Plymouth forces there encamped under Major Cudworth.

That the war had really begun was but too evident. Beyond the river, spanned by a rude bridge, the bank, bordered with tangled foliage, was lined with Indian marksmen, whose bullets flew into the camp and against the walls of Milton's garrisoned log house. A dozen of Prentice's horse, under Quartermaster Joseph Belcher and Corporal Gill, volunteered to drive them off, and guided by one Willis Hammond and accompanied by Benjamin Church of Plymouth and another civilian, the little squadron cantered down to the bridge and at a gallop charged across it watched with anxious interest by their commander and comrades. A volley broke from vine-hung stump and bramble-hidden boulder, and with fatal effect. Belcher's horse, shot through the vitals, faltered in his stride and then rolled over dead. His rider lay with a wounded knee beside Hammond, the guide, who pitched forward shot through the head. Gill also fell, knocked out of his saddle by the bullet which, thanks to a stout buff coat and several thicknesses of paper under it, had failed to draw blood. One volley was sufficient to send the little party to the right about carrying the dead and wounded, while the Indians, just out of gun shot, celebrated with fierce yells and obscene and insulting gestures their little victory.

Major Thomas Savage, (1637) started from Boston on the 27th, with instructions to act as second in command to General Dennison. He was escorted by Captain Nicholas Paige (1693) with a body of horse, and arrived at Swanzy during the night of the 28th.

The advance was begun on the 29th by Prentice's Horse, supported by the fire and charge of Moseley's volunteers. The Indians fled, making almost no resistance, and for a long summer's day the Massachusetts and Plymouth musketeers drove the quiet woods of the Neck without seeing a single foe. This futile scouting was continued until July 5, when Colonel Hutchinson came express from Boston, ordering the Massachusetts troops to march into the Narragansett country. This they found almost deserted, meeting only a few ancient chiefs, who, with bland diplomacy, negotiated a treaty of peace, which Canonchet contemptuously repudiated a few weeks later.

Meanwhile the Plymouth troops had discovered that Philip had retreated to the Pocasset swamps, which, surrounded on three sides by the sea, was easily guarded on the land side by a comparatively small force.

On the return of the Massachusetts troops, July 18, they attempted at nightfall to enter the swamp, but an unexpected volley killed five and wounded seven men, and the undergrowth and mud were so impassable that they were glad to abandon this mode of attack.

It was then agreed that all the Massachusetts troops should return to Boston except Captain Henehan and his mounted musketeers. Major Savage, with Paige's troop, and Mosely's volunteers took the nearest road, while Prentice scouted toward Mendon but found no enemy. The force left at Pocasset to starve Philip into a surrender had completed a garrison-house called Fort Leverett, when, on July 29, they learned that Philip, with all his fighting men and most of his people had escaped by water, how, no one knew. Pursuit was made and conducted far into the Narragansett country, but no considerable number of Indians was found, and early in August Captain Henehan was recalled to Boston.

Meanwhile, on the western frontier, Captain Ephriam Curtis had visited the disaffected Nipmuck Indians with apparently good results. Later, Captain Edward Hutchinson, (1638) escorted by Captain Thomas Wheeler, of Concord, commanding a troop of horse, went with Curtis from Sudbury July 28, marched nearly to New Norwich and returned to Brookfield August 1. Here they learned that the Nipmucks had gathered in a dense swamp eight or ten miles away, and Curtis and others went on an errand of peace to the Indian chief, who met them with little civility but finally agreed to hold a conference at a certain place the next day. Hutchinson and his party found no one at the rendezvous, and determined, against the remonstrances of their Indian guides, to visit the swamp, but at a narrow pass were ambuscaded. Eight men were killed outright and five wounded, including Hutchinson and Captain Wheeler, whose son saved his father's life at the cost of being twice wounded.

Hardly had the survivors reached Brookfield and given the alarm, when the pursuing Indians came in sight. All the settlers and soldiers were gathered in one garrison, which with great difficulty they made good against hundreds of painted and yelling savages. On the night of August 4th the Indians were trying to burn the house by means of a kind of long-handled wheelbarrow made of a barrel and long poles loaded with dry hay, shavings and pine knots, but were prevented from setting fire to the garrison by a tremendous thunder storm which extinguished and drenched the combustibles, and by its incessant lightning revealed the Indians as they glided about the beleaguered house. At the height of the storm the veteran major, Simon Willard, of Cambridge, then in his seventieth year, broke through the besiegers to the garrison and was admitted. On the morning of August 5th, the Nipmucks, warned of the near approach of other relieving forces, raised the siege and departed, leaving Brookfield in ashes and taking with them great booty of goods and cattle.

Later, Captain Thomas Lathrop, of Beverly, Richard Beers, of Watertown, and Moseley with sixty dragoons came into Brookfield to be joined by Henchman's Mounted Infantry, the Connecticut Dragoons of Captain Thomas Watts and a body of twenty-seven horse and ten Indians under Lieutenant Thomas Cooper of Springfield. Then followed constant and wearisome scouting for several weeks, in which an occasional petty skirmish alone indicated the menacing presence of unseen foes, although again and again they struck heavily at the outlying frontier towns. On September 1, at Deerfield, every house but one was plundered and burned, and on September 2, the Northfield farmers, busy at their harvest, were attacked and many massacred in the fields and as they fled to the garrisons.

On September 3, Captain Richard Beers, of Watertown, started from Deerfield with thirty-six men to bring off the Northfield garrison and people. Knowing nothing of the attack of the day before, he was ambushed September 4, at Sawmill Creek, and was slain with over half his men.

On September 18, Captain Thomas Lathrop of Beverly, set out from Deerfield for Hadley with a number of carts loaded with Indian corn. Careful scouting the day before had failed to discover any Indians, and they went along the narrow road, in fatal security. They had scarcely marched five miles when they were ambushed at "Bloody Brook" near what is now South Deerfield. Lathrop and most of his men were slain or carried off to die by torture. The names of nearly seventy soldiers and teamsters, who were cut off in this surprise, have been preserved.

Captain Moseley heard the firing and came down swiftly upon the assailants, but too late to save his comrades. He struck the Indians in flank and rear and "charged them through and through" several times, driving them seven miles, but too far at last for his own safety. His men were getting weary, and the reinforced Indians became more numerous and persistent in their attacks. Gradually Moseley, in turn, was forced back and being surrounded, when Major Treat's Connecticut Horse and friendly Indians broke through and brought them safely off, having lost but two men killed and eight or nine wounded.

Still, these severe defeats and losses depressed the colonists, and when, early in October, Springfield was attacked and nearly destroyed, it was determined to stand on the defensive until winter made it possible to attack the principal villages of the hostile tribes. The Narragansetts, for their winter stronghold, had fortified an island of five acres or more in the heart of a deep swamp, near the present site of Kingston, R. I. Through friendly Indians it was learned that it was strongly fortified after the Indian manner; surrounded by deep water and treacherous bogs, passable only by a bridge formed of a single fallen tree. Five hundred lodges

were within its defenses, besides great stores of corn, dried meats, ammunition, etc., etc.

The United Colonies of Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth and Connecticut agreed to send an army to reduce this fortress. Massachusetts mustered on Dedham Plain, Major Samuel Appleton's Ipswich Company of Foot, Moseley's Volunteers, two Salem companies under Captains Joseph Gardiner and Nathaniel Davenport, and Captain James Oliver's Boston Company; 465 musketeers in all, with Captain Prentice's Troop of (seventy-three) Horse; 538 picked men.

General Josiah Winslow, governor of Plymouth and commander-in-chief of the allied troops, took command and marched from Dedham late in the afternoon of December 9, 1675, to Woodcock's Garrison, arriving at Seekonk, R. I., on the evening of the 10th. Here Major Richard Smith, commanding a garrison at Wickford, R. I., was waiting with a vessel, and took Moseley's company thither in advance of the main force which joined by Major William Bradford's and Captain John Gorham's Plymouth companies, were ferried over to Providence, December 11. After two days of scouting and marching, to little purpose, the army reached Wickford, where they found that Moseley, Oliver, Benjamin Church and others had burned many wigwams and captured a number of Indians whom they sold to profit. "Stonewall," or "Stonelayer John," a half-civilized Narragansett, at this point, had the address to pretend to negotiate a treaty, until a sufficient force of Narragansetts were ready to throw off the mask and observe and annoy the advance.

The last halt before the attack on the fort was to be made at Pettisquamscott, or Tower Hill, now South Kingston, R. I., where "Jireh" or Jerry Bull held a strong stone garrison. Captain Prentice with his horse sent forward December 16, to prepare Bull for Winslow's arrival, reached Pettisquamscott only to find the garrison a smoking ruin, and the ghastly remains of fifteen of its occupants. On Friday, December 17, the Connecticut force under Major Treat arrived at Pettisquamscott, bringing the companies of Captains Seely, Marshall, Gallop, Mason and Watts; in all about 300 English and 150 Mohegans and Pequot Indians. On Saturday evening, December 18, General Winslow also arrived from Wickford, and the united forces, about 1,000 fighting men in all, encamped around the ruins of Bull's garrison.

The army was thus constituted and officered:

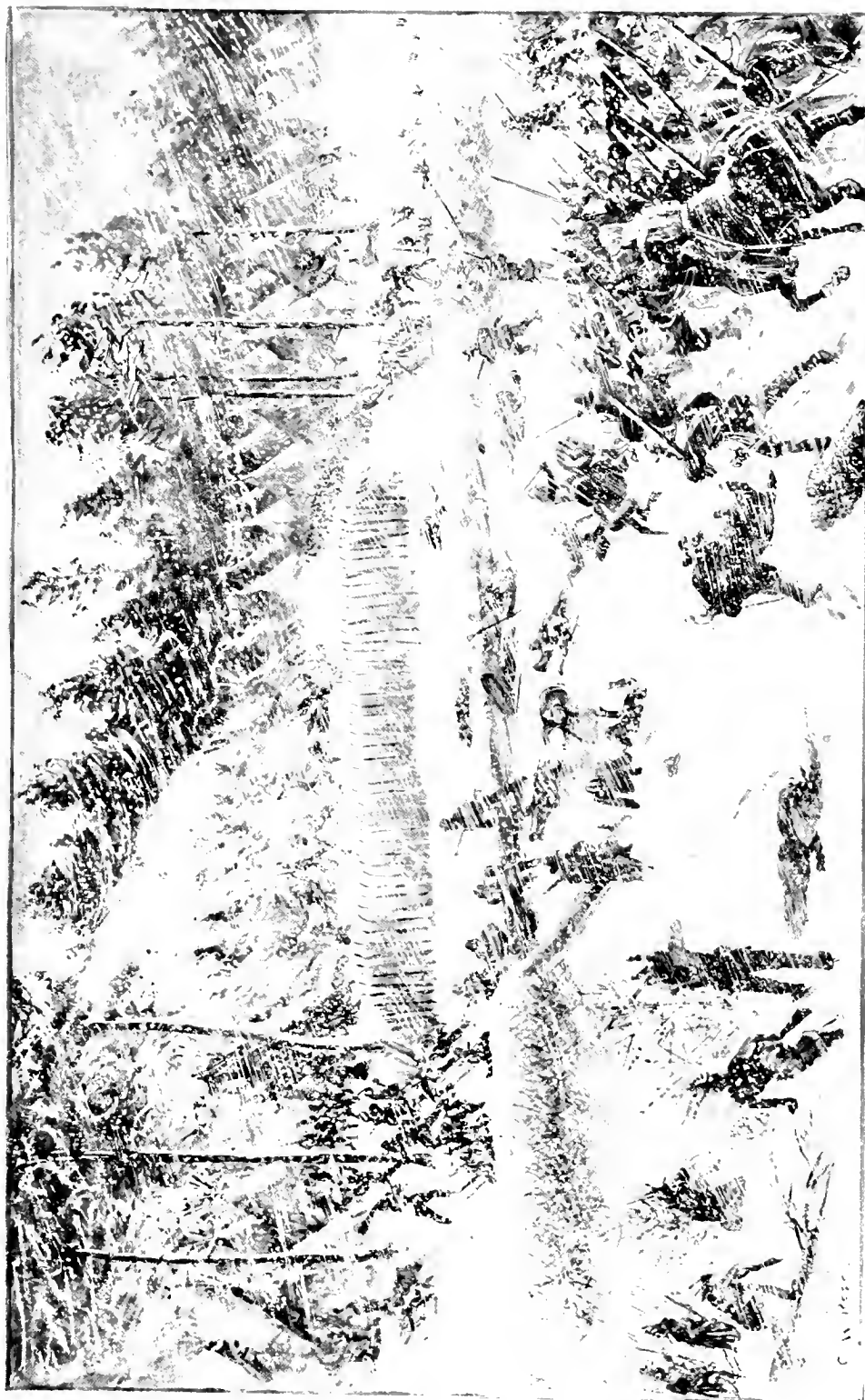
Commander-in-Chief—General Josiah Winslow, governor of Plymouth Colony.

Staff—Daniel Weld, Salem, surgeon; Joseph Dudley, Boston, Chaplain; Benjamin Church, Little Compton, R. I., A. D. C.

#### MASSACHUSETTS CONTINGENT.

Major Samuel Appleton, Ipswich, commanding.

Staff—Richard Knott, Marblehead, surgeon; Samuel Nowell, Boston, Chaplain; John Morse, Ipswich, commissary.



STORMING THE NARRAGANSETT SWAMP FORT, SUNDAY, DECEMBER 10, 1855



First Company—Captain, Samuel Appleton; lieutenant, Jeremiah Swan; first sergeant, Ezekiel Woodward.

Second Company—Captain, Samuel Moseley; lieutenant, Perez Savage.

Third Company—Captain, Isaac Johnson; lieutenant, Phineas Upham; ensign, Henry Bowen.

Fourth Company—Captain, James Oliver.

Fifth Company—Captain, Nathaniel Davenport; lieutenant, Edward Tyng; ensign, John Drury.

Sixth Company—Captain Joseph Gardiner; lieutenant, William Hawthorne; ensign, Benjamin Sweet; first sergeant, Jeremiah Neal.

Horse—Captain, Thomas Prentice; lieutenant,

#### PLYMOUTH REGIMENT.

Major William Bradford, Marshfield, commanding.

Staff—Dr. Matthew Fuller, Barnstable, surgeon; Thomas Huckins, do, commissary.

First Company—Captain, William Bradford; lieutenant, Robert L. Barker, Duxbury.

Second Company—Captain, John Gorham, Barnstable; lieutenant, Jonathan Sparrow, Eastham; first sergeant, William Wetherell.

#### CONNECTICUT REGIMENT.

Major Robert Treat, Milford, commanding.

Staff—Rev. Gershom Bulkeley, surgeon; Rev. Nicholas Noyes, chaplain; Stephen Bartlett, commissary.

First Company—Captain, John Gallop, Stonington.

Second Company—Captain, Samuel Marshall, Windsor.

Third Company—Captain, Nathaniel Seeley, Stratford.

Fourth Company—Captain, Thomas Watts, Hartford.

Fifth Company—Captain, John Mason, Norwich.

Accompanying the expedition, or sent later to care for the disabled, were the following physicians and surgeons: Jacob Willard of Newton, John Cutler of Hingham, and John Clarke and William Hawkins of Boston.

A severe snow storm raged all night, and amid great discomfort and much suffering the colonists awaited the coming of the earliest light.

On Sunday, December 19, 1675, the army started at daybreak on its march of between fifteen and eighteen miles, through from two to three feet of newly fallen snow. They arrived at the great swamp at about 6 o'clock p. m., and at once moved to the attack. The fort consisted of a low, clay wall protected by a kind of natural hedge averaging a rod in width. The face of this wall was broken on the north, and the gap was filled only by the trunk of a great tree, supported several feet above the ground and covered by a rude but substantial blockhouse. On either flank rude blockhouses or breastworks of logs gave shelter to the Indian musketeers whose fire was to rake the face of the long breastwork. They were armed with wheel-locks or firelocks, and shot slugs or buckshot in preference to bullets. The engineer of this nearly impregnable position was probably Joshua Teffe, or Triste, who helped to defend it, and was taken and slain after its capture.

Captains Davenport and Johnson led their companies to the attack, and without waiting to fire repeated volleys, charged, with sword and mus-

ket butt. The fire was too deadly, and they gave way to Moseley and Gardiner, who nearly carried the barricade, but were compelled to fall back or throw themselves on their faces to escape the vortex of that deadly fusillade. Major Appleton and Captain Oliver, following close behind, formed a solid phalanx twelve files deep, which carried everything before it, drove across the ice-covered fosse, passed the great tree-breastwork and falling upon the Indians in the left-hand flanker, filled it with musketeers who opened a furious fire on the Narragansetts in the blockhouse and opposite flanker.

Captain Davenport, pierced by three balls, fell in the assault, and calling to his lieutenant, Edward Tyng, (1668) gave him charge of his company, adjured him to give his gun to the person of whom he previously had spoken, and so died.

Captain Isaac Johnson (1645) fell at the head of his Roxbury musketeers, as they tried to carry the same fatal approach, and his lieutenant, Upham, succeeding to the command, was badly wounded just as he entered the fort.

General Winslow now ordered Major Treat with his Connecticut companies to support the others, and with great loss they succeeded in crossing the bridge and parapet. Once within the fort the battle raged with redoubled fury, for the Indians fought like fiends in the uncaptured flanker, and hundreds of lodges, which nearly impervious to musketry, were occupied not only by the aged and feeble, but by many warriors, gave the Narragansetts a great advantage. Well within the fort, Captain Gardiner was instantly killed and many were wounded, until after three hours of fierce fighting it was decided to fire the wigwams as fast as they were taken.

This was done; and to the constant roll of musketry, the hoarse cheers and horrid yells and warwhoops of the combatants, were added the crackle of burning bark and poles, the roar of flames driven by the north-east wind, the screams and groans of hundreds of victims consumed alive in the flames. Under the great cedars the red flames rolled onward, above a horror of war and conflagration such as the world has seldom equalled in ancient or modern history. Mercy could not be shown, for when night came and the last warrior fell amid the ashes of his home and the blackened corpses of his loved ones, the victors felt little exaltation when they realized the perils and hardships of their own condition.

Three of the Massachusetts companies had lost their captains, for Davenport lay dead at the first barrier, and Johnson and Gardner before the burning block-house. Four lieutenants, Upham, Savage, Swan and Tyng, after rude surgery, were awaiting the terrible journey back to the harbors of the Sound. Major Treat of Connecticut had lost four out of five captains, for Gallop, Marshall and Seely had been killed outright,



and John Mason lay between life and death, with a wound which ended his career within the twelvemonth.

Nearly one-third of the English were dead, or wounded and without shelter; for since the fort and its lodges were now destroyed they could not remain out in the snow storm, which had already shrouded the dead in its smothering *pouderie*. The Mohegan Indians from Connecticut, who had done little besides surrounding the swamp, and keeping up a desultory and ineffectual fire, told of large bodies of gathering warriors close at hand, and no man cared to face the chances of being shut in by snow-drifts and raging savages, with the desolation and death which they had wrought.

So preceded by scouting Indians and horse; taking another way through the trackless snows to avoid being ambuscaded on the broad trail of the advance; urging along hundreds of fettered warriors, and trembling women and children, doomed to a hasty trial and military execution, or at best to slavery remediless; with wagons and horse litters freighted with their dead and wounded, and themselves utterly weary, foot-sore, frost-bitten, and falling sick by the way, the victorious colonists started on their return: Major Treat, it is said, being the last man to leave the still-burning fortress.

The column reached Pettisquamscott about 2 o'clock Monday morning, December 20, having marched and scouted from thirty to thirty-five miles in a driving snowstorm, besides taking the fort. Twenty-two men died of their wounds on the way, and thirty-four were buried under one tree near the blackened ruins of Bull's garrison.

At Warwick, R.I. every endeavor was made to remove the wounded to places of comfort and safety, and to rest and recruit the forces for further service. The Rev. Joseph Dudley, whose letters to the Massachusetts Council proved that the chaplain was an important member of the "board of strategy" in that era, wrote to demand, in addition to recruits, "blunderbusses and hand granados (grenades,) and armor if may be, and two armorers to mend arms," broken by opposing the butts of the English musket to the war club, tomahawk and lance.

The order of the council "to the Committee of Militia of Boston, Dorchester and Roxbury," dated January 11, 1675, (page 270, Vol. 1.) shows that this order to procure armor for the troops was carried out as far as possible. The Indian fire had been too fatal to be borne by men in buffcoats.

About a month was spent in preparations for another advance, and in useless parleyings with the now utterly implacable Narragansetts. General Winslow at last made a long march into the Nipmuck country, his men suffering from the inclement weather and insufficient food, and unable to overtake their light-footed foes. On February 6, General Win-

slowly arrived in Boston with the remnant of the Massachusetts contingent, of which over one-fifth had been killed or wounded.

Both parties prepared for a fierce struggle, which the Indians initiated February 10, 1676, by the destruction of the larger part of Lancaster. On April 18, Marlborough, already partially destroyed, was again attacked. On the same day, Captain William Wadsworth marched from Boston with about seventy men, and passed through Sudbury on the evening of the 20th, and although a great number of Indians were on the war-path near-by, reached the lower garrison at Marlborough Sunday night, left some boys and exhausted men, and with Captain Brocklebank of Rowley, who had leave to return home, set out with about eighty men for Sudbury. They were ambuscaded, but retiring to a wooded hill, held out for several hours, until the Indians set fire to the woods and drove them from their cover. None escaped with life save thirteen, who got to Noyes' Mill and held it until rescued by Captain Thomas Prentice, who with his troop of horse and forty Praying Indians, charged the Indians and rescued them.

Lieutenant Richard Jacob, of the Sudbury garrison, also surprised some of the hostiles sleeping by their fires, and killed several.

On March 8, Northampton was unexpectedly recruited by Major Treat's Connecticut musketeers and Mohegan Indians, and in the early morning of the 14th was attacked by the allied tribes, who were defeated with heavy loss. After this the Indians retreated in great numbers to the upper falls of the Connecticut, where they were accustomed to gather in the spring for the purpose of catching shad, salmon and other fish then ascending the river to spawn.

Captain William Turner, of Dorchester, one of the founders of the First Baptist Church of that town, had been imprisoned as a schismatic in 1670, but had borne persecution manfully and had been finally made a captain of foot. He had long held Hatfield with his company. Samuel Holyoke was his lieutenant, and with them were Ensigns Isaiah Tay or Toy and John Lyman. Turner was ill, had left his family in poor circumstances, and his men, like himself, lacked pay and sufficient food and raiment; but he decided that a surprise at "the Falls" would be fatal to the savages; as a failure to surprise them would be ruin to himself. A successful raid on the live stock of the Hadley settlers, May 12, 1676, which drove off seventy head of kine and oxen, decided him to attempt this daring enterprise.

He marched from Hatfield, May 18, with about 150 men guided by Experience Hinsdell and Benjamin Waite; passing through the woods and along the roads where Beers' Plain and Bloody Brook reminded his men of two great disasters of the year before; through ruined Deerfield, and crossed the Connecticut in a heavy thunder storm at Sheldon's Brook,

above the usual ford. Thence they silently traversed the Greenfield meadows, forded Green river east of Ash Swamp Brook, worked around the Great Swamp in the darkness, and just before daylight reached the highland south of Mount Adams. Turner crossed Fall river, and creeping up a steep hill saw before him the Indian camp, in which, gorged with a great feast of milk and beef and fat salmon, hundreds of hostile Indians slept unguarded. Neither sentinel nor dog alarmed the doomed sleepers, and the muskets of the English were fired point blank into the very doors of the lodges and the bodies of their inmates. Those who fled sprang into their canoes, but, half asleep and without paddles, many were swept over the falls; and so great was the slaughter that Lieutenant Holyoke is recorded to have killed five with his own hand. Only one Englishman was killed outright, and he fell by the mistake of a comrade, and the few wounded were able to keep the saddle, when the enemy, mustering on all sides, warned Turner that he must retreat at once to Hatfield, which after destroying many canoes and lodges, with food and ammunition, he essayed to do.

Hundreds of warriors waylaid their path and beset them on flank and rear. Captain Turner was killed while crossing Green river, and Lieutenant Holyoke, who by constant fighting finally brought his command into Hatfield, left forty-six men on the road, of whom forty never returned. This blow at the Indian fishing rendezvous, where they considered themselves too strong to be attacked, greatly discouraged the Indians, who, however, made a furious attack on Hadley, June 12, intending to utterly destroy the settlement and its defenders. Fortunately, on the night of the 11th, Major Talcott, with 500 English and Indians, had reinforced the several garrisons, and when the Indians attacked they were repulsed with great loss. He followed them down into the Narragansett country, and on July 2, came upon a large company in a swamp which he almost extirpated.

With the death of the Wampanoag, Queen Weetamoo, and the slaying of King Philip, August 12, this great Indian war ended, although its embers now and again blazed up on the frontiers, especially in New Hampshire and Maine, for years thereafter.

In 1678, Rev. Samuel Nowell, who had himself taken part in the Swamp Fight, preached the annual election sermon; his subject being "Abraham in Arms." In 1679, Samuel, afterwards Judge Sewall, David Waterhouse, one of the captors of Governor Andros in 1689, and in 1680, John Nelson, who led the humiliated governor from his captured stronghold at Fort Hill, were admitted. In 1681, Captain John Cutler of Hingham, who served in King Philip's war, and Joseph Lynde, who in 1695 pursued the Indian assailants of Billerica, became members, with Richard Sprague captain, of an armed vessel in "the Dutch War" of 1674. In

1682, Captain John Jacobs of Hingham, who served in 1675, and lost a son in the Swamp Fight, was admitted.

In 1683, certain measures were taken by the council relating to the colony militia. The Indian war, following the short period of unfriendliness with the Dutch in 1674, had shown the colonists that the traders of Holland and France had supplied the Indians with the most modern firelocks, ammunition and flints, and that France at least, countenanced the Indians in raiding the New England frontiers. Also, in France, the pike had been formally suppressed. In October, 1675, the council had ordered that all troopers should furnish themselves with carbines, (firelocks) and all pikemen with fire arms. The locks of many of the better class of match-locks were changed to new devices, as the firelock was changed to percussion in the nineteenth century.

Despite bitter prejudice, it was also realized that the authority and countenance of the English nation must be maintained and recognized. Therefore, in 1683, it was ordered "that captains of companies should provide a flag for their respective commands, the field or flight thereof to be green, with a red cross with a white field in the angle, according to the ancient custom of our English nation, and the English plantations in America, and our own practice in our ships and other vessels." Judge Sewall, like other pious protestants of his time, still considered the cross in the flag a symbol of idolatrous worship. His diary of August 20, 1686, recites: "Read tenth Jeremiah; was in great exercise about the cross to be put in the colonies' flag, and afraid if I should have a hand in it, whether it may not hinder my entrance into the Holy Land." Owing to this doubt, he resigned his commission November 11, 1686, "on account of an order to put the cross in the colours."

In April, 1689, John Winslow (1692) brought news of the landing of William of Orange at Torbay, and his proclamation to the English people. Governor Andros, having demanded a copy and been refused, imprisoned Winslow, "for bringing into the country a traitorous and treasonable libel." The drums were beaten, the train bands and troops assembled, and the Artillery Company, then comparatively dormant as an association, was well represented among the citizens who took up arms. The captain of the frigate "Rose" was taken prisoner. Capt. James Hill, (1677) escorted the venerable Bradstreet and Danforth to the Town House, where they drew up and sent to Andros a summons to surrender the government and fortifications. Of the fifteen principal citizens who signed it John Richards (1644), Isaac Addington (1652), John Foster (1679), David Waterhouse (1679), Adam Winthrop (1642), John Nelson (1680), Wait Winthrop (1692), and Samuel Shrimpton (1670), were members of the Artillery Company. John Nelson (1680) served this summons, April 20, 1689, and backed by the forces of the colony, arrested Governor Andros and con-

fined him in the house of Colonel John Usher (1673). Having added twenty-two others to the first fifteen, these were made "a council for the safety of the people and conservation of the peace," whereof Bradstreet was president; John Foster and Adam Winthrop, treasurers; Wait Winthrop, commander-in-chief and Isaac Addington, clerk.

A ship arrived from England, May 26, 1689, with an order "to the authorities on the spot" to proclaim the accession of King William and Queen Mary to the English throne. This was done with great pomp and rejoicing; a cavalcade of the authorities and chief citizens, escorted by the trainbands and troops of horse, went to a banquet at the townhouse, and wine was freely distributed among the militia and the populace.

The company re-established its field day on Monday, April 7, 1691, and this anniversary was unbrokenly observed until the Revolution in 1775, with the exception of 1721, when the town was ravaged by the smallpox.

In the unfortunate expedition of Sir William Phips against Quebec, in 1690, sailed Major John Walley (1671), as commander-in-chief of the land forces. The colonies sent 2,000 men on this fatal enterprise, which defeated by both storm and battle, resulted in the loss of several vessels and at least 300 men.

In 1693, Nicholas Paige, captain of a troop of horse in King Philip's war was received into the company. On September 2, 1700, the company revised the by-laws of 1657, and in this year the Council discussed the matter of making "baggonets" a part of a soldier's equipment.

In 1701, the General Court ordered that the Boston Regiment should be furnished with "a goose-necked bayonet, with a socket, instead of a sword or cutlass." The sword, however, was still carried by infantrymen for over a hundred years after, for the fashion of carrying "the knightly sword" died hard, and still lingers in the retention of the light, straight sword of the orderly sergeant. On the other hand, the carrying of a light fusil, carbine or rifle in place of the esponton or half-pike was common among officers at this date, when on service.

The substitution of the bayonet for the pike greatly simplified the martial array of company and regiment, as the pikemen were no longer changing ground to be by turns defended by the musketeers from the enemy's shot, or to defend their marksmen from a charge of horse or foot. But the old fashion of heavy lines of battle from four to six and eight files deep, and of massing regiments into solid squares or columns of men, was little changed; and this military legacy of the old days of pike and matchlock has in every war since that day survived, to needlessly waste life and courage in the senseless exposure of men to a musketry and artillery fire, which has with every generation increased its scope of destruction.

The grenadiers, soldiers chosen for height and strength, who carried a bag containing from ten to fifteen small iron shells, fitted with a suitable fuse, had for some years been found useful, in attacks on field works, the assault of fortified places, and other defenses. These grenades, the fuse being first lighted, were thrown by hand, or by a kind of holder which acted on the principle of a sling, and gave a longer range of action. Their effect when exploded in a dense body of men was immensely destructive, as well as demoralizing. Until late in the 17th century the grenadier had had no other arms except sword, dagger or pistol, but about this time he was given a light fusil to be carried by a sling when using his grenades.

The weight and cumbrousness of all hand weapons were greatly decreased with the growing disuse of armor, and the adoption of more active tactics in general. These and like military innovations were naturally of interest to the Company at this era.

In 1702, the first French war, known as Queen Anne's war, was declared. William Dummer, later made Governor in 1729, was made a member of the company, which, under Samuel Sewall, then captain, had target practice on the common, the mark being the effigy of a man. Charles Hobby (1702) and William Tailler (1712) were made colonels of the two Massachusetts Regiments sent to capture Port Royal, and Hobby was made deputy-governor of the town, re-christened Annapolis-Royal.

In 1711, nearly all the officers of the militia were, or had been, in the Artillery Company, and Colonel Giles Dyer (1680) and Captain Francis Clarke (1702) were in the committee in charge of the Neck fortifications then re-constructed.

In 1712, Daniel Goffe, merchant, joined. His son, Daniel, in 1740, raised a company for service at the siege of Cartagena under Admiral Vernon. He escaped with life here, but went on the expedition to Guantanamo, Cuba, in 1742, and died there. Also Colonel William Tailler of Dorchester, who was lieutenant-governor from 1711 to 1715, when he became acting governor.

On March 10, 1728-29, Hon. Thomas Fitch, of Boston, notified the people in town-meeting assembled, "That he did Present to the Town Two Hundred and Fifteen Firelocks, with Bayonets fitted to them, to be for the Use of the town forces." Elisha Cooke (1699), Wait Winthrop (1692), and John Baker (1703) were deputed to convey to Mr. Fitch the thanks of the town. The use of the bayonet became general before the first siege of Louisburg (1744-46), and it is claimed that Colonel Benj. Pollard (1726) first furnished the Cadets with bayonets when he commanded the corps, in 1741.

Captain Caleb Lyman (1732), of Boston, had, in 1702, raided with five friendly Indians a camp of hostile Indians on the upper waters of the



*Painted by Wagenaar.*

UNDER GENERAL WILLIAM PETERRELL AT LOUISBURG, 1745.





Connecticut, killing and wounding eight of their number. Joseph Goldthwait was adjutant of the Second Massachusetts Regiment at the siege of Louisburg. Captain Samuel Watts (1733), of Boston, figured prominently in fortifying Boston during the first Louisburg expedition. Joseph Dwight, of Hatfield, lawyer and judge, (1734), was elected colonel of the Artillery Train in 1744, and brigadier-general under Shirley against Louisburg (1745). He led a brigade in 1756 to reduce Ticonderoga, and constructed Fort Massachusetts.

In 1739, John Storer, of Charlestown, lieutenant-colonel, and captain of the Third Company, and William Warren, captain of the Second Company, First Massachusetts Regiment, of the Louisburg expedition, were elected members.

In 1740, Benj. Goldthwait, Captain Fourth Company, Third Massachusetts Regiment, and Jonathan Carey, Captain Ninth Company, Seventh Massachusetts Regiment, at the siege of Louisburg, were made members.

On July 2, 1745, the authorities at Boston learned of the wonderful success of the expedition against Louisburg. This was publicly announced on the morning of the 3d "by three volleys of musketry fired by the Boston trainbands, banquets, artillery salutes, bonfires and illumination." The following additional members of the Artillery Company took part in this great achievement:

First Mass. Regt., John Butler (1745), lieutenant Second Company; John Bridge (1751), ensign Ninth Company Second Mass. Regt.; Christopher Marshall (1724), captain Third Company; Estes Hatch (1711), captain Tenth Company Fifth Mass. Regt.; Benjamin White (1722), adjutant Eighth Mass. Regt.; William Williams (1733), lieutenant-colonel and captain Second Company; Nathaniel Thwing (1736 and 1761), major and captain Third Company; Ninth Mass. Regt., Samuel Jackson (1733), ensign, artillery; Joseph Dwight (1734), colonel; Joseph Sherburne (1745), storekeeper of ordnance; Dr. William Rand (1732), surgeon. Construction Department; Matthew Barnard, gentleman, (1734), captain. Volunteers, John Adams (1740), Third Company; William Moor, (1749), sergeant Fifth Company, First Mass. Regt.

Governor Shirley returned from the scene of his triumph to Boston, November 8, 1745, and was received with great enthusiasm, although the siege had cost Massachusetts some three thousand men and exhausted her resources. In September, 1764, the British government repaid this and other expenditures, by delivering 215 chests and 100 casks containing silver coin to the value of 183,649 pounds, 2 shillings and seven and one-half pence sterling.

In 1746, an expedition to reduce Canada fell through, owing to the failure of England to send ships and men, and 2,000 militia were kept under arms until October, 1747, at a cost of 68,000 pounds sterling. D'Anville's armada sent to destroy the English colonies excited great alarm, and at one time all the colony forces from 8,000 to 10,000 men were summoned to defend Boston, except the Essex trainbands, which rendezvoused at Salem. The Brookfield company made the seventy miles'

march in two days, each man bringing on his shoulders from forty to fifty pounds of food. Samuel Hendley, distiller, of Charlestown, a colonel of foot in the Revolution, joined this year, as did Samuel Swift, a lawyer, of Boston, who planned a general rising against General Gage in 1774.

In 1747, Josiah Waters, painter, Boston: served as a captain in the siege of 1775. In 1748, a Boston town meeting was held on the regular field day of the Artillery Company, but declared void as infringing its charter. Dr. Samuel Dunbar, of Stoughton, who delivered the election sermon this year, had served as chaplain in the Stony Point expedition.

In 1749, was admitted William Moor, Boston, sergeant in the First Massachusetts Regiment at Louisburg, 1745, lieutenant-colonel in Cranes' Regiment through the Revolutionary War, commanded in the United States Army, 1787, and died in the service in 1791. All property of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery was formally released from taxation this year. In 1750, Isaac Royal, merchant of Medford, later founder of the Royal Professorship of Law at Harvard, commissioned brigadier-general (the first American of that rank) in 1761, later Tory and refugee in 1775, was admitted. This year the last Massachusetts troops returned from Louisburg.

In 1752 was adopted the Gregorian Calendar, beginning the year on January 1, instead of the Julian, which dated from March 26. The change was made by counting September 3, 1752, as September 14, giving the month of September, 1752, but nineteen days, the shortest month in history. All dates to this point of this history are "old style."

War was declared with France in 1754, and in the several expeditions against France in 1755, 1756, and 1758, from four to seven thousand Massachusetts men took part. In 1759, eight companies went against Quebec. In 1761 and 1762, several thousands served in the final operations, which resulted in the conquest of Canada in 1763. In 1762, a force under General Israel Putnam took part in the reduction of Havana, Cuba.

David Mason (1754), painter, Boston, lieutenant in French War, commanded a battery when Fort William Henry was taken by the French; removed to Salem, and in 1775 had seventeen cannon belonging to the provincial army in course of repair. He concealed them when Colonel Leslie with 300 men marched from Boston to seize them, became lieutenant-colonel of Knox's Artillery Regiment in 1775, was wounded at Dorchester Heights, and founded the Springfield Arsenal in 1778.

In 1755, came news of Braddock's defeat. Two thousand stand of arms were received at Boston from England, and the Acadians were forcibly expelled from Nova Scotia. Isaac De Coster (1755) served at the second siege of Louisburg, 1755-56.

William Bell (1756), bricklayer, Boston, presented the company with two espontons, or spontoons, as they were called in the British ser-

vice. These, after the Revolution, were carried by the captain and lieutenant instead of the half-pike. The only remnant of defensive armor now worn in the colonial service was the gorget, heavily gilt, worn below the throat, one of which is still in the possession of the company. Benjamin Brown (1756), tanner, Boston, served (as colonel) in the Revolution, as did Edward Proctor, merchant, active in the Boston Tea Party demonstration.

In 1758, Sir Jeffrey Amherst, with his fleet and army, rendezvoused at Boston and began the campaign which insured the conquest of Canada. In 1759, Joseph Gale, tin-plate worker, Boston, joined; later he was captain of Parsons' Sixth Connecticut Regiment at the siege of Boston. In 1760, Benjamin Edes, printer, journalist, patriot and publisher of the "Boston Gazette," was admitted. In 1775, he escaped in a boat with his press and type to Watertown, where he continued its publication. In 1761-2, all the officers of the Boston Regiment except two lieutenants and two ensigns, were or had been officers of the Artillery Company. Thomas Marshall, tailor, colonel of the Tenth Massachusetts Regiment in 1776, served through the war; Joseph Webb, ship chandler, lieutenant-colonel of the Boston Regiment in 1781; Caleb Champney, Dorchester, who served in the Revolution, and Adino Paddock, who in 1762 transplanted the "Paddock Elms," joined this year. Rev. Thomas Balch, who preached the election sermon, (1763), was a chaplain in the Louisburg expedition of 1744-46.

In 1764, John Winslow, yeoman, of Marshfield, colonel in the expedition to Nova Scotia in 1755, and the unwilling captor and exiler of the Acadians, joined. He was in 1740 one of the captains who went on Vernon's disastrous expedition to Cartagena, and was on duty at Fort William Henry in 1756. He was made a major-general in the British service and died at Hingham, Mass. in 1774. In 1765, Thomas Crafts, painter, who became active in preparing to defend Boston in 1777, and rendered other services in the Revolution; Zephaniah Hartt, one of the founders of Hartt's shipyard, where the grand old frigates "Boston" and "Constitution" were constructed, and William Heath, yeoman, of Roxbury, appointed major-general by the Provinces, 1765, fought at Lexington, in New York, was made major-general by Congress in 1775, and was general of the day when Washington took command at Cambridge and when he bade farewell to his army at the close of the war. He died at Roxbury, January 24, 1814. Also Christopher Marshall, Boston, minuteman at Bunker Hill, later captain in Colonel Thomas Marshall's regiment, present at Andre's execution, and served seven years. William Perkins, Boston, in Callender's Artillery Company at Bunker Hill, served in Knox's and Crane's regiments, was made major and held important commands, having charge at Castle Island until ceded to the United States in 1798. Samuel Searle, tailor, Boston, served as lieutenant in Crafts' Regiment in the Revolu-

tion. Jonathan Stoddard, another member, and John Stutson also became captains in the Revolution.

This year the Stamp Act was passed, and the popular indignation ran very high. In 1766 it was repealed, but a feeling of distrust remained, and the Ancient and Honourable Artillery was pretty nearly divided against itself. There was a strong, wealthy and intolerant clique of conservative members who cried "treason" and "disloyalty" at every expression of opinion on the policy of the king, and a large number of adverse, independent and active patriots. John Popkin, Jr., tailor, Boston, who was received this year, became a captain in Gridley's Artillery, was at the battle of Bunker Hill, later was made lieutenant-colonel of Crane's Artillery, and fought through the Revolution.

In 1768, Boston was occupied by the Fourteenth and Twenty-Ninth Regiments of the British Army. The uniform of the Fourteenth at this time was a scarlet coat, facings and cuffs of yellow, with white lace, scarlet waistcoats and breeches, white garters and cravats, and buff belts and pouches. The drummers wore buff and scarlet. Their grenadiers wore cloth caps with the king's cipher and crown in front, the White Horse of Hanover and the motto "*Nec Aspera Terrent*" on the flap, and the number of the regiment behind.

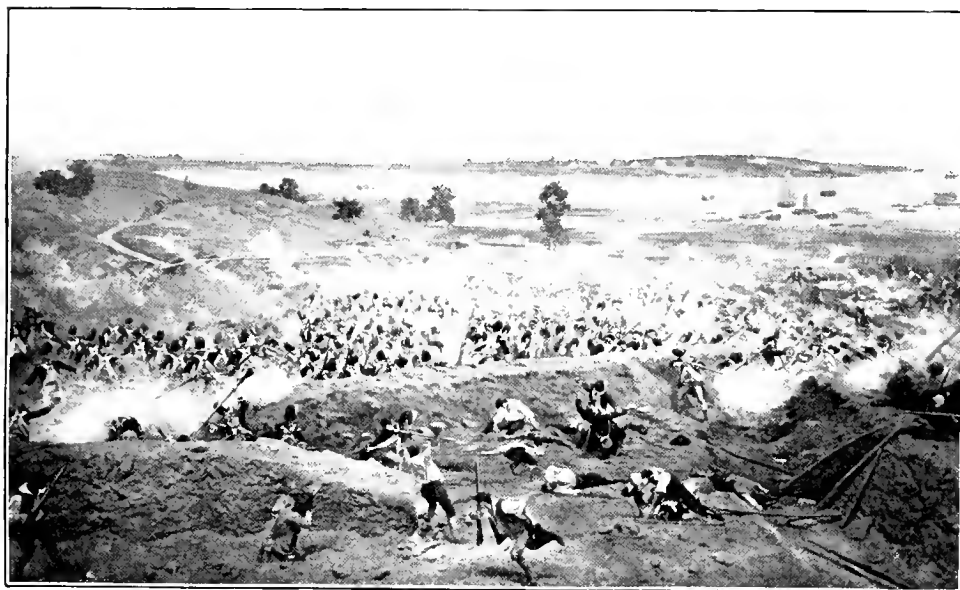
The brigantine "Abigail" brought out for Major Paddock's artillery train two brass guns, recast in London, and later to be known as the "Hancock" and "Adams." William Dawes, Jr., farmer, of Boston, later a very active patriot who divided with Paul Revere the honors and dangers of the "Lexington Alarm," and afterward fought at Bunker Hill, joined this year.

In 1769, John Boyle, a Boston bookseller, later a colonel in the Revolution, became a member, as did Joseph Pierce, merchant and founder of a Provincial Grenadier Corps and its second captain, and John Simpkins, of the Revolutionary "Committee of Correspondence." In 1772, John Hinkley, auctioneer, captain and major in the Revolution; Abraham Hunt, merchant, member of the Boston Tea Party, adjutant of Colonel Vose's Regiment at Ticonderoga, and later agent of Captain Haysted Hacker's letter of marque "Buckaneer;" Edward Kneeland, captain; John Spear, blacksmith and patriot, and Obadiah Wetherell, miller, a major in the war for liberty, were admitted.

The uniform of the Artillery Company, as adopted this year, was a blue coat with wide lapels and yellow buttons, and cocked hats, the wig or hair to be clubbed and powdered. The muskets must have iron ramrods and leather slings for carriage, in the old French fashion. The Boston Regiment and Major Paddock's Artillery Train rehearsed a most realistic sham battle on Boston Common, this summer. A detachment of each organization under Captain Jabez Hatch, with two brass guns and a



THE CHARGE OF PITCAIRN'S MARINES AT THE REDOUCET.



THE BRITISH GRENADIERS ENTERING THE BREASTWORK  
SCENES FROM THE CYCLOPAMA OF BUNKER HILL.



mortar, displayed French colors from Fox Hill near the south-west boundary. The Boston Regiment and Paddock's guns attacked these with a furious fire, ending with an assault preceded by a heavy discharge of toy grenades.

During the years from 1740 to 1770, English uniforms, arms and equipments were at times quite largely furnished to American levies, and certain regiments of the regular army were principally recruited amongst and named after the "Loyal" and "Royal" Americans. On the other hand, the militia when levied in large numbers, preferred their own long ducking guns, rifles and weapons taken from Spaniard, Frenchman and Indian, with powderhorn and bullet bag, to the cumbrous and generally inferior arms and equipments sent out from the royal arsenals.

As a result, the levies which fought at Louisburg, Quebec, Ticonderoga and other sieges and battles in the French wars, were generally lacking in uniform garb, arms and equipments, and presented to the military critic a very unsatisfactory spectacle. Their weapons, however, except that they often lacked bayonets, were as a rule of superior efficiency, their morale and endurance of a more sterling and lasting character, and their knowledge of the war of the wilderness, self-reliance and deadly skill with firearms altogether superior. In general, the art of war had seen little change during this generation, but as we have seen, a great number of officers and men from Massachusetts and also the other "loyal provinces" had fought against the best troops and generals of France and Spain, under British commanders of high rank and in some cases acknowledged military genius, and had proved every resource of scientific military operations, and every device and "deviltry" of savage warfare. No service in the world had given the officer and soldier such trying, varied and valuable experience, as had during this generation prepared a large number of our forefathers to resolutely withstand the haughty courage and exquisitely perfect discipline of the selected and veteran levies of the British Crown.

Indeed the fatal obstinacy of Braddock, the vaporings, arrogance and inefficiency of Lord Loudon, the foolish pride and insolence of many subordinate English officers, and the slavish subserviency and lack of self-reliance displayed by the rank and file, had given the provincial campaigners as great a contempt for "the reg'lar," as the regular had for his sober garb and homely equipments.

This feeling was aggravated by that insensate policy which impelled the British government to decree for the officers of her regular service, a superior rank to any militia officer, whatsoever may have been their rank, achievements or social position. It was an error, which, unfortunately, has not yet been eliminated from the official mind, either in monarchies or republics, to ignore the increasing value of individual skill

in arms, and strategy in modern warfare, as compared with machine-like precision, and the acquisition of fine spun theories and exquisitely correct mathematical conclusions. It undoubtedly threw many swords into the scale for liberty and against the king, whose owners, had they been treated and rewarded according to their deserts, would have remained loyal at whatever cost.

But the wars of the Succession, and the conquest of Canada, had sown among the Colonial levies the dragon's teeth of military preparation, which were to array against their ancient allies, and even neighbors and friends, myriads of men who were by no means novices in modern warfare, and were in many things the best infantry on earth. Nothing, but the lack of arms, munitions and supplies at critical periods of the Revolutionary struggle, ever reduced the Continental forces to the terrible reverses and helpless suffering, which at times threatened to defeat the hopes of our fathers.

In 1773, the Boston Tea Party emphasized the unalterable determination of the people of Massachusetts to live and die free men. Ten members of the company, it is claimed, took part in the destruction of the cargoes. Among them was Joseph Eaton, a hatter of Boston, who joined this year, as did William Walker, of Milton, a soldier of the Revolution. On June 17, Paddock's Artillery had target practice on the Common, and "made many excellent shots."

In 1774, the Boston Port Bill was enforced. The regular meetings of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery were discontinued until, in 1782, near the close of the Revolutionary struggle. The British troops, including the Fifty-Ninth, Forty-Third, Fifth, and Thirty-Eighth Regiments of Foot and the Welsh Fusileers held the city, under General Gage, and Governor Hutchinson, having failed in his treacherous policy, left for England, receiving the loyal regrets of one hundred and twenty-four Boston merchants and twenty-four lawyers, — a significant commentary on the traditional conservatism of men of these callings. This year Nathaniel Coll, carpenter, later captain of pioneers, and Joseph Spear, Jr., captain in Craft's Regiment, were added to the company.

In 1776, Boston had in the Continental service 535, in the State service 206, and the sea service 166 men; in all 907 men. Of 269 men raised by conscription, 38 belonged to the company.

In 1782, Colonel Edward Proctor (1756) notified the men on the "Alarm List" of Boston that each man must be provided as follows: "1. A good firearm, with steel or iron ramrod, and a spring to retain the same. 2. A worm, priming wire, and brush. 3. A bayonet, fitted to the gun, a scabbard and belt, a pouch holding not less than fifteen rounds cartridges, six flints, one pound powder, forty lead balls fitted to his gun, a knapsack and blanket, a canteen or wooden bottle holding one quart."





*Painted by Chapple.*

WITH GENERAL WAYNE AT STONY POINT, JULY 15, 1779.



In 1785 the military spirit, for a season dormant after an exhausting war, revived in Boston. On August 3, a "company of Independent Cadets, comprised chiefly of young gentlemen in the mercantile line," had been formed, and on August 25, a company of grenadiers and a troop of light dragoons were organized at the American Coffee House. In 1786, the "Independent Light Infantry," afterward the famous "Independent Boston Fusiliers," began active drill. A less pleasant condition was the general discontent which finally resulted in Shay's Rebellion and its repression. Major Bell (1760), commanding the Ancient and Honorable Artillery, and Captain Otis, of the Independent Light Infantry, offered the services of their respective corps to the government, as did the Independent Cadets. On Tuesday, October 31, the governor reviewed at Cambridge the Ancient Artillery Company, Major Bell; the Independent Cadets, Lieutenant-Colonel Bradford; the Light Infantry, Captain Otis; Major Gibb's Light Horse, Major Spooner's Roxbury and Colonel Badlam's Dorchester Artillery. New members in 1786 were:

Ebenezer Battelle, Jr., who served at Bunker Hill and elsewhere in the Revolution; John Brooks, physician, of Medford, captain of the Reading Minute-men at Lexington, later lieutenant-colonel of Jackson's Regiment, the Eighth Massachusetts, and in 1789 major-general of the Middlesex Division of the Massachusetts Militia, and governor of Massachusetts from 1816-1823; Robert Davis, merchant, a Son of Liberty, member of the Boston Tea Party, and an officer in Colonel Craft's Artillery Regiment during the siege of Boston; Samuel Gore, brother of Governor Christopher Gore, one of the tea destroyers, who helped to save the guns of the artillery train for Washington's army; Francis Green, glazier, served in Paterson's and Vose's Regiments in the Revolution, 1777-1783; Zechariah Hicks, saddler, Boston, was a soldier of the Revolution; John Johnson, portrait painter, Boston, lieutenant in Gridley's and Knox's Artillery Regiments, wounded and taken prisoner on Long Island, discharged 1777; Benjamin Lincoln, yeoman, Hingham, the celebrated General Lincoln who received the surrender of the British arms after the fall of Yorktown. (When in 1788 he introduced into the militia laws of the United States the clause to preserve the ancient privileges and customs of such independent corps as were then created by charter or otherwise, General Blount of South Carolina, a member of the committee, opposed the proposition vehemently. When General Lincoln stated the origin and claims of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Blount sneeringly asked: "And pray, who in h—l commands this Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company?" General Lincoln calmly replied: "Your very humble servant," after which there was no further opposition). Also John Lucas, baker, who, in 1784, raised money to improve the common and plant trees upon it; John May, colonel of the Boston Regiment in 1784, had risen from the rank of adjutant and saw service under Rochambeau at Rhode Island; Henry Prentiss, merchant, was a spectator of the Boston Massacre and a captain in the Revolutionary army; Thomas Wells, wine merchant, served as second lieutenant in Knox's and a captain in Crane's Artillery Regiments, and was discharged in 1780, having served over five years; John Winslow, merchant, Boston, was a lieutenant under Montgomery in the disastrous assault on Quebec, captain of artillery at Saratoga, served at Ticonderoga, and filled many military and civil offices of trust with zeal and fidelity; Dr. John Warren, brother of General Joseph Warren, was made the first surgeon of the company this year.

On April 7, 1787, an independent company of cavalry, called "The Governor's Horse Guards," was formed. Colonel James Swan, their first captain, paraded them June 17, 1787, in scarlet uniforms faced with blue. Dr. John Bartlett (1769) paraded his "Republican Volunteers" for the

first time May 25. Their uniforms were scarlet with black facings. This company dissolved Nov. 17, 1789.

In January, the following report on uniforms was presented and adopted:

"The committee appointed to consider what, in their opinion, would be the most proper uniform for the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, having attended to that duty, beg leave to report: First, the coats to be made of deep blue cloth and faced with buff, lapelled and straps on the shoulders to secure the belts, with hooks and eyes at the skirts, the buttons plain, yellow, double-washed; second, buff vest and breeches, buttons uniform with the coats; third, a plain, black hat, with a black button, loop and cockade, cocked soldier-like and uniform as possible; fourth, white linen spatterdashes to fasten under the foot and come part up to the thigh, with black buttons and black dashes to buckle below the knee; fifth, white stock; sixth, bayonet and pouch belts—white—two and a half inches wide, to be worn over the shoulders; seventh, the pouches to be uniform; eighth, the hair to be clubbed; ninth, the guns to be as nigh uniform as possible; tenth, white ruffled shirts at wrists and bosom; eleventh, your committee recommends that our standard have a device and motto, and that a committee be appointed for that purpose; twelfth, that the drum's and fife's uniforms be the same as the company coats reversed."

On April 19, Major Otis paraded his Independent Light Infantry, and on July 24, a corps formed of former non-commissioned officers of the old Boston Regiment appeared in uniform for the first time.

In 1788, the company was very largely represented in the militia. On February 12, in obedience to the orders of General Benjamin Lincoln, commanding the First Division of Massachusetts Militia, the independent Boston companies formed a battalion to celebrate the ratification of the Federal Constitution. The line was formed from right to left, as follows: Captain Tyler's Horse, of Roxbury, Otis's Independent Light Infantry, Spooner's Roxbury Artillery, the Independent Cadets, Boston Fusileers, Republican Volunteers, Boston Artillery, Boston Light Infantry, all under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Bradford.

Among many new members were John Bray, founder of the North End or "Columbian Artillery;" Joseph Hall, Jr., lawyer, who, when a boy, went out to Roxbury to warn General Warren of the Lexington and Concord raid; William Hull, lawyer, Newton, served through the Revolution, being discharged as colonel in 1805, was governor of Michigan Territory, and in 1812, being over-persuaded, took command on the frontier, and later surrendered Detroit to the English, for which he was court-martialed and sentenced to death, but was pardoned by Madison and in later years was more leniently judged; Joseph Loring, jeweler, served as a captain in the Revolution; Benjamin Russell, printer, Boston, as a boy, followed Lord Percy's troops across the Neck when he marched to relieve the British at Lexington, and was later in the Continental army, but from 1776 to 1783 was principally connected with the quartermaster's department; Ebenezer Thayer, yeoman, Braintree, active in the Revolution and became major-general of militia February 21, 1792.

In 1789, the chief event of the year was the reception of President Washington in October. One new member, Jonas S. Bass, tanner, Boston, was a private in the Rhode Island expedition in the Revolution.

In 1790, the day of the Annual Election being inclement, Governor Hancock directed Lieutenant-Governor Adams to receive the insignia of the retiring officers and to present them to those newly elected. Captain Robert Jenkins (1756) respectfully refused to allow of the substitution, and finally Governor Hancock received the company at his house and installed the officers in due and ancient form.

In 1792, was admitted Daniel Messinger, hatter, Boston, founder of the Winslow Blues, and their first commander, and one of the original members of the Massachusetts Charitable Association.

On October 14, 1793, the company took part in the great funeral procession of Governor John Hancock. Joseph Loring, merchant, Boston, who joined this year, became colonel of the Fortieth Regiment of Infantry, U.S.A., in 1813, and served until the close of the war.

In 1795, joined William Alexander, cabinetmaker, Boston, a soldier of the Revolution.

In August, 1797, the Boston and Chelsea militia companies were organized as a "legion," a term time-honored on account of its frequent use during the revolutionary period, but sometimes also called a "legionary brigade." The nine companies of the First Boston Regiment had increased to sixteen, and four of these companies formed a "sub-legion," each commanded by a Major. The commander of the legion had the rank of lieutenant-colonel. The Boston Light Infantry made its first public parade this year under Captain Daniel Sargent, Jr. The company voted this year to admit candidates on trial by ballot, putting them on probation before final and complete admission to membership; to furnish themselves with knapsacks duly lettered, with canteens painted blue with buff hoops, and with a priming wire and brush suspended by a chain, which latter seem to have been a novelty.

On May 28, 1799, the Company visited President Adams at his home in Braintree; a visit returned in due form at the annual election of 1800. On Saturday evening, January 14, 1800, the company at a special meeting, expressed the universal sorrow which followed the decease of General George Washington. It was unanimously "voted, That in testimony of the high respect, and veneration of the character of the illustrious deceased, General Washington, the Company will appear upon their parade-days and all special occasions upon which they may be on duty during the present year, and their officers on Sundays during that time, with the usual badge of mourning."

In 1801, John Binney, a merchant of Boston, became a member. He was captain of the North End Artillery Company, in 1806-1808, when he became lieutenant, Fourth Regiment Infantry U. S. A., commanded the forts at Wiscasset, Me., and in 1813, was engaged in several skirmishes on the Vermont frontier.

This year the regulations were amended, each member being required to be armed and equipped with "a good musket and a sufficient bayonet, a cartridge box, priming wire and brush, twenty-four round of cartridges and two flints." The sergeants were to have yellow silk shoulder-knots and sashes worn around the waist, and to carry halberds, and "hangers" or short swords, worn in white shoulder belts. Cocked hats, with gold loops, uniform buttons, and a black ribbon cockade with an eagle in the centre; a deep blue broadcloth coat with buff facings and trimmings, and blue straps to hold the belt, with single breasted waistcoat, and knee breeches of buff cassimere, was the uniform prescribed.

In April, 1802, Generals Heath (1765), Lincoln (1786), Brooks (1786), and Hull (1788) at the request of the Secretary of War, inspected Fort Independence and reported its condition and the repairs needed.

On July 7, 1803, General Elliott issued an order authorizing the Washington Light Infantry, and Joseph Loring, Jr. (1793), was made its first captain. On July 18, the company appointed a committee to report on the expense of fitting up the loft of Faneuil Hall for an armory. This was estimated to cost \$77.67, and was, with the consent of the selectmen, effected. Rev. Jedidiah Morse, author of the first school geography published in this country, preached the election sermon.

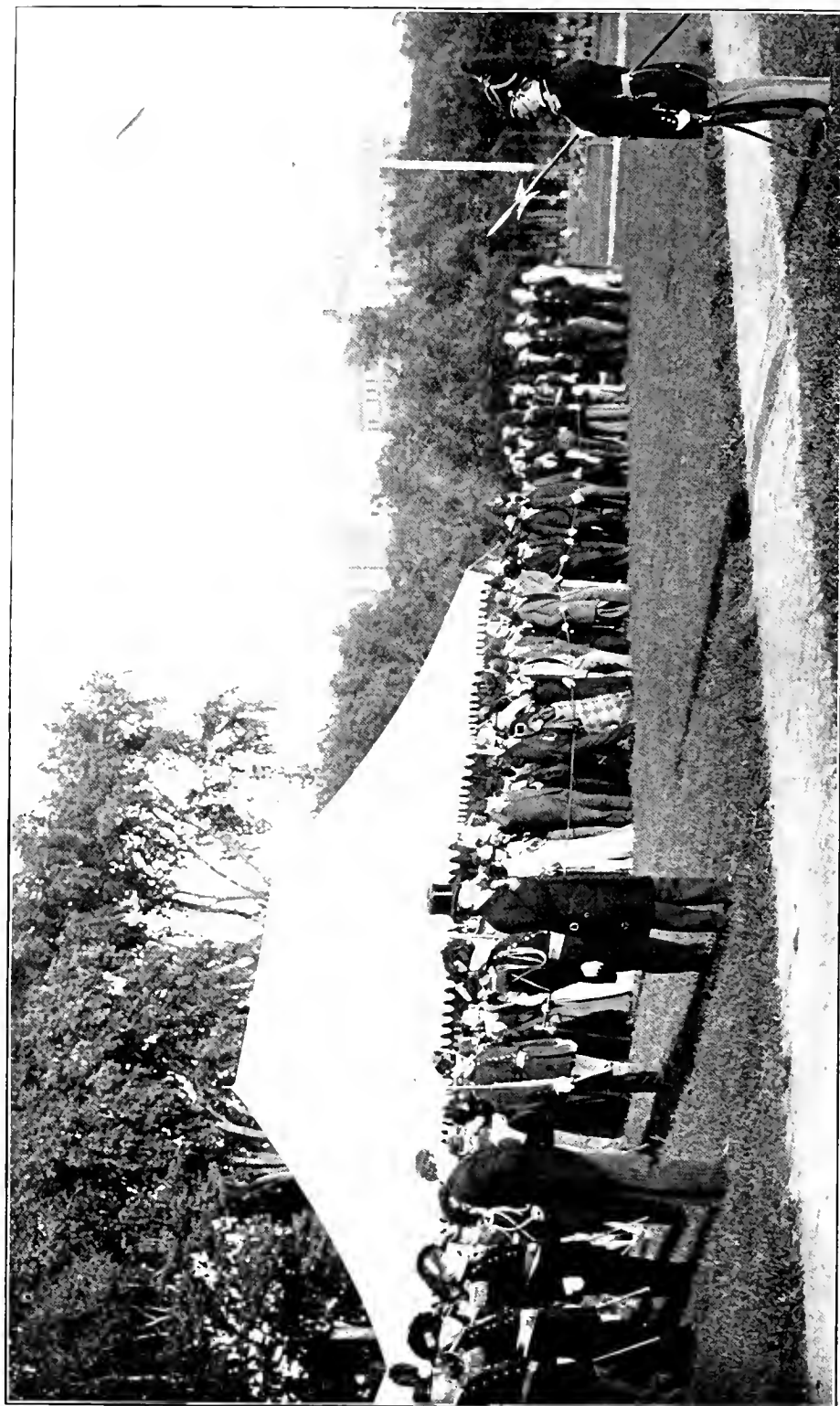
On Tuesday, October 30, 1804, the "Legionary Brigade," commanded by General John Winslow (1786), was reviewed on Boston Common. The line from left to right was composed of Purkett's Troop of Horse, a sublegion of light infantry, under Captain John Bray (1788), the Winslow Blues, Captain Daniel Messinger (1792), the Boston Light Infantry, Captain Davis, the Boston Fusileers, Lieutenant John Howe, Jr. (1792), and the Washington Light Infantry, Captain Joseph Loring, Jr. (1793). Three sublegions of four companies each were commanded by Major Peter Osgood (1797), Major Stearns, and Captain Charles Clements (1795).

In 1806, Faneuil Hall was enlarged to its present dimensions, and the company was admitted to a more commodious armory.

It admitted this year William Bowman, hatter, Boston (1806), served as ensign in 1812, particularly distinguishing himself at Fort Erie and Bridgewater, and was promoted captain in Mill's Regiment; Thomas Dean, printer, Boston, served as a major in the war of 1812-14.

In 1810, Hon. Josiah Quincy exerted himself to organize and equip the Boston Hussars, of which he was the first captain. His splendid uniform, imposing presence, and milk white charger, "Bayard," filled the Boston of that day with admiration, and were talked of long after the Hussars were disbanded. Bayard was later sent to Hayti, where he became the favorite horse of King Christophe.

The Hussars numbered about fifty officers and men, principally



*Photo by Mann*

GOV. W. MURRAY CRANE COMMISSIONING THE OFFICERS ELECT. TWO HUNDRED AND SIXTY SECOND ANNIVERSARY, ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, 1900.





drawn from the elite of Boston, every one of whom was to provide, and if possible own, a horse not less than 14 1-2 hands high, with saddle, saddle cloth, holsters with bearskin covers, curb-bridle, etc., etc. His arms were a Prussian sabre and pair of horsemen's pistols; those of Captain Phelps, preserved at the Old State House, are brass-barrelled. His uniform, also there shown, consisted of greyish-brown riding breeches, embroidered with sage green and pale brown silk, tucked into heavy horsemen's boots. A green jacket, embroidered with gold, was covered by a gold embroidered Hussar's pelisse, or riding jacket of crimson, trimmed with black fur, worn on parade only on the right arm and held in place by a silk cord tied at the neck. His tall cap was of black cloth, bell-crowned, gold-laced, and having a panache or flat plume of green feathers, covered by a black cockade over a brass centre plate, the vizor was brass bound, and the chin strap defended by over-lapping brass scales.

Yellow cord was substituted for gold lace on the uniforms of the private soldiers, and green overalls were worn with the service suit, when the gay pelisse was for the time discarded. Officers' outfits in this corps are said to have cost as high as one thousand dollars. Every endeavor was made to organize a corps equal to the elite of the Prussian Hussars, after which they were patterned, and Hon. William Phillips, uncle of Captain Josiah Quincy, gave the company a splendid standard painted by John M. Penniman. It was not until 1811 that they were ready to parade, and at an early date the political prejudices of the day became a cause of dissension in the new company. Although many in the company were strong Federalists, a majority voted to offer to escort Governor Elbridge Gerry, a violent Anti-Federalist, on his official journey from Cambridge to Boston. Captain Quincy resigned and Captain Charles Porter Phelps succeeded to the command.

In 1812 the Hussars offered their services, and were on duty at Boston, ready to take the field. In July, 1817, the corps, with the Boston Dragoons, under Major Phelps, received President Monroe at Boston Neck with drawn sabres and a flourish of trumpets. They appeared once more under Major Phelps July 6, 1817, on Boston Common. This was his last appearance, and the Hussars did not long survive his resignation, disbanding in the winter of 1817-18.

In 1810 were admitted: William King, hatter, Boston, was a subaltern and later captain in the United States army in the War of 1812; Zachariah Gardner Whitman, lawyer, Boston, took an active part in the financial administration of the company, and was its first historian. His first history, published in 1820, was made by him the basis of a much larger and more valuable revision, which, after his death in 1840, was given by his widow, Asenath Jones Gardner, to the company. A donation of one hundred silver dollars was presented in return. This was published in 1842, and is a valuable and somewhat rare work.

This year a new uniform was adopted,—red facings and white lin-

ings for the blue coat, with a diamond traced on each skirt, and white convex buttons bearing the arms of the State and the word "Commonwealth." A white Marseilles single-breasted waistcoat with a standing collar, white cassimere knee breeches with silver buttons at the knee, and white linen gaiters reaching to the kneecap, with black velvet knee straps and black buttons, completed a striking costume. Laced low-quartered shoes were worn, the long hair was braided, turned up, and powdered, and surmounted by a *chapeau de bras*, set forth with a silk cockade, silver loop and button, and a full black plume eighteen inches long.

Robert Clarke (1811), merchant, Boston, became a subaltern in the United States army, and died in service during the War of 1812.

In 1812, the inclosed square in which the election ceremonies have ever since been protected from public intrusion was first set up. This year the company made an effort to secure some light guns for artillery drill, but for some reason the project was abandoned.

Asa Tisdale (1814), hatter, Boston; was in 1815, as a practical joke, elected on the same day to the captaincy of the Ann Street company and the ensigncy of the Federal Street company of the Boston Regiment. He set up a dozen of wine for both delegations, but held on to the captaincy of the Ann Street company for many years.

On September 18, the company, knowing that the coast cities were threatened by English fleets, had been strongly re-enforced by its active and even veteran members who volunteered to serve. They paraded in fatigue uniform; viz., blue or black coats, pantaloons tucked into long boots, with round hats bearing only the company's cockade. Maltby's "Elements of War" was adopted as the standard of drill, and a very large proportion of the then active militia officers about Boston were members of the company.

September 25 and 26, 1816, witnessed a very impressive review of three regiments of infantry, besides cavalry and artillery, commanded by Brigadier-General Thomas Wells (1811).

In 1817 was admitted Ebenezer Mattoon, yeoman, Amherst, with three other students at Dartmouth, in 1775-76 joined the Canadian expedition, serving in a New Hampshire Regiment, was made adjutant and saw much hard service. He was appointed adjutant-general of Massachusetts in 1816. James Monroe, President of the United States, was made an honorary member June 39, while on a visit to Boston.

According to the request of the company, Governor Brooks, July 12, directed the quartermaster-general to furnish the company with two six pound cannon, it being understood that the "Adams" and "Hancock" formerly owned by Paddock's Artillery Train, and later used in many battles of the Revolution should be selected. On Friday, May 8, the company, with the guns with which they had paraded a generation before, practiced both infantry and artillery drill, and firing, on the common.

In 1819, joined Elijah Crane, farmer and inn-holder, Canton; born in 1754. He marched at the Lexington Alarm, April 19, 1775, and was Major General, First Division, of Massachusetts Militia, 1809-1827. An officer despairing of promotion, is said to have proposed the following toast at a public banquet "Major-General Crane. May he be eternally rewarded in Heaven for his everlasting services on earth." It was at the Dedham camp, under his command in 1826, that the celebrated "striped pig" showman evaded his order, that no liquor should be sold in the camp.

Monday Sept. 16, the Company honored with a marching salute seventeen gentlemen who had been members previous to the revolution. Major Thomas Bumstead (1764) invited these, with all the members of the company to a collation, and the great Burgoyne punch-bowl, which held ten gallons and had paid Adino Paddock's bet with Bumstead, that Burgoyne had not surrendered, was filled and drained in honor of the occasion. Major Bumstead (1764), 79 years old; Captain Joseph Pierce (1764), 74 years; Samuel Belknap (1773), 68 years; Captain William Todd (1773), 72 years; Lieutenant William Homes (1766), 78 years; Captain John Simpkins (1769), 79 years; Captain Joseph Eaton (1773), 70 years; and Captain Nathaniel Call (1774), 74 years, took part in the festivities.

The contract for the anniversary dinner in 1820, furnished by a Mr. Forster at Concord Hall, is somewhat Homeric as measured by modern standards of "a good spread." "Six rounds of a la mode beef, 120 lbs.; six rumps, four second cuts beef roasted, 150 lbs.; six fillets of veal stuffed and roasted, 70 lbs.; five hams boiled five do roasted, 120 lbs.; fifteen pigs, 180 lbs.; salpetred beef, 25 lbs.; salmon boiled, 100 lbs.; tongues boiled, 175 lbs.; total, 940 lbs.;" besides forty puddings, potatoes, asparagus, gravies, rolls, brick-loaves, crackers, cheese, butter, radishes, salads and condiments were to be provided.

On July 1, the following companies met under arms in the Faneuil Hall armory: Ancient and Honourable Artillery, 64 guns; Cadets, 70 guns; Fusileers, 45 guns; Boston Light Infantry, 73 guns; Washington Light Infantry, 40 guns; Winslow Blues, 40 guns; "Soul of the Soldierly," 40 guns; Rangers, 64 guns; New England Guards, 100 guns; nine organizations and 532 guns.

On September 6, 1820, it was voted that officers of the militia should henceforth be allowed to wear their militia uniforms while on duty with the company. A large number of new members were secured thereby. On Monday, October 2, while at practice in South Boston, the "Adams" six pounder burst, happily without accident to the gunners.

In 1821 were admitted: William Adams, yeoman, North Chelmsford, enlisted at sixteen and served fourteen months in the Revolution, and witnessed the execution of Major Andre at West Point, New York; Winslow Lewis (1821), merchant, was owner of the Boston privateer "Abaleno," commissioned by Madison, December 10, 1814.

During the war he was taken prisoner by the British, and later he commanded the Boston Sea Fencibles.

This year the company suppressed the office of ensign, electing instead a third lieutenant, and also permitted the wearing of black stocks instead of white, and the disuse of powder on the hair. At the annual election 100 muskets and 16 artillery men paraded. Of those on duty 92 were or had been officers of the militia. August 7, the company, with Captain Thomas J. Lobdell's (1821) Boston Artillery, escorted the selectmen to the Neck and fired salutes in honor of the West Point Cadets. On September 10, through a contract to secure military music at fair rates, the company, with other corps, secured the formation of Fillebrown's Boston Brigade Band. In 1835 it combined with the "Green Dragon" Band, becoming Edward Kendall's Boston Brass Band, which, under Eben Flagg, was dissolved in 1861.

William L. Foster, 1822, Boston, was second lieutenant, Ninth Regt., U. S. Infantry, in 1812, promoted first lieutenant and captain in 1813, and was severely wounded at Lundy's Lane, July 25, 1814.

In 1822, a third lieutenant was elected, the rank of ensign having become obsolete in the land service. Russia leather was substituted for the white belt and military slings hitherto in use. At the annual election 192 members, including 23 artillerymen, armed with short Roman swords, were in line.

In 1824-25, the visit of General Lafayette was duly honored by the association, but his numberless engagements did not permit him to meet with the company. At the banquet of October 3, 1825, three veteran members, Captain John Simpkins (1769), aged 85 years, Captain Nathaniel Call (1774), aged 80 years, and Mr. Thomas S. Boardman (1774), aged 80 years, were present, and with manly energy and enthusiasm told "of great old houses, and fights fought long ago" under the banners of the Continental Congress and the red-cross flag of the ancient province of Massachusetts Bay.

In 1827, Samuel Chandler, innkeeper, Lexington, an ensign on the frontier in the War of 1812, joined. In 1828, applicants were few, and for a year the fee was reduced to five dollars. Citizen members were allowed to parade in ordinary dress with uniform hats and cockades, and only three drills per year were made obligatory. Rev. John Pierpont, who preached the election sermon, became the first chaplain of the Twenty-Second Massachusetts Volunteers in 1861.

In 1829 was admitted: John C. Park, lawyer, Boston, became active in enlisting men in 1861-62, joined the Roxbury Reserve Guard, and was on duty six days during the Draft Riots of 1864.

In 1830 was admitted: Judah Alden, yeoman, Duxbury, born Oct. 3, 1750, was ensign and lieutenant in Cotton's Regiment, 1775, captain in Bailey's Regiment, 1776, discharged as brevet-major, 1783, and died March 2, 1845, aged 94 years.

In 1832-33 were admitted: Joseph Porter, carpenter, Dorchester, removed to Maine and commanded nearly 1,000 volunteers on the Aroostook River, in the North-eastern Boundary troubles, February, 1839; Richard Sullivan Fay, lawyer, Boston, raised and equipped a company (the Fay Guards), Thirty-Eighth Mass. Vols., in 1861-62; John McNeill, surveyor, Boston, as brevet lieutenant-colonel led the Eleventh Regt., U. S. Infantry in the bayonet charge which decided the day at the battle of Chippewa, July 5, 1814, was severely wounded at Lundy's Lane, but became colonel of the First Regt., U. S. Infantry, resigning in 1830.

In 1835: William S. Lincoln, lawyer, Worcester, lieutenant-colonel 34th Mass. Vols., was wounded and captured at Newmarket, Va., May 15, 1864, but escaped, was promoted colonel Oct. 4, and discharged as brevet brigadier-general, June 16, 1865.

On August 3, of this year the company, eighty-four strong, visited Worcester as guests of the Worcester Light Infantry.

In 1836 was admitted: Edward Everett, divine, scholar, diplomatist, statesman and orator, was governor of Massachusetts 1835-1838, minister to England in 1840, president of Harvard College, 1846-1849, secretary of state, 1853, and United States senator. He died in 1865. Also, Levi Hawkes, Cambridge, served in 1861-65 in the 5th, 3d and 18th Mass. Regts., taking part in most of the great battles of the Army of the Potomac. (See biography, Vol. I., page 537.)

In 1837, were admitted Robert Cowdin, lumber dealer, Boston, colonel First Regt. Mass. Vols., 1861-62. Promoted "for gallant and meritorious conduct at the battle of Williamsburg, Va.," October 1, 1863; died, July 9, 1874. Joseph Holbrook, Boston, served on the privateer "Reindeer" in 1812.

In 1839, was admitted William Sutton, merchant, Salem. As senior major-general M. V. M., in 1861, he had charge of the rendezvous at Faneuil Hall, and in 1862, with Dr. Winslow Lewis (1862), made a tour of inspection of camps and hospitals in New York, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, etc., in the interest of Massachusetts soldiers.

In 1840, was admitted John B. Dale, naval officer, Harvard, who served on the "Vincennes," brig "Consort," sloop "Cyane," and frigate "Constitution." He died at Beirut, Syria, in 1848. Zachariah Gardner Whitman (1820), lawyer, Boston, and for many years the clerk and historian of the company, died this year.

On April 20, 1841, the company fifty strong paraded in the great funeral procession in honor of President William Henry Harrison. The first rank was composed of its oldest members, two of whom had served over fifty years. On the October Field Day, Comrade Jarvis Braman (1837) wore a Continental uniform, consisting of "a Washington coat, blue, faced with buff, buff small clothes, black gaiters with metal buttons, and a cocked hat." This was adopted as the infantry uniform, the artillery men continuing to wear dark coats and white pantaloons as heretofore.

On Sept. 16, 1842, Captain Samuel A. Lawrence (1842) paraded for the first time his "Washington Light Guards," forty-three guns, all "Washingtonians," as the teetotallers of that day were called.



GRENADIER, 1804-1850.

In 1843 joined Charles L. Holbrook, commission merchant, Boston, later served long in the militia, and as colonel 43d Regt. M. V. M., in North Carolina, in 1862-63, died Sept. 13, 1887, aged 71 years; Henry L. M. Whitman, merchant, Boston, served in Caleb Cushing's Mass. Vols. in the Mexican War. On June 7, the company led the fourth division of the great parade at the dedication of the Bunker Hill Monument.

Many members joined in 1844, including Joseph Andrews, cashier, Boston, who became brigadier-general in the State Militia and long had charge of the troops at the recruiting rendezvous of Fort Warren, in 1861.

In 1845 were admitted Thos. E. Chickering, pianomaker, Boston, became colonel of the 41st Regt., Mass. Vols., later 3d Mass. Cavalry in the Department of the Gulf, 1862-1864; Nathan A. M. Dudley, Lexington, commissioned lieutenant 9th Regt. U. S. Infantry, 1855, was colonel 30th Regt. Mass. Vols. at New Orleans, 1862, commanded the Fourth Brigade Cook's Division, in the Red River Campaign, served in the Armies of the Potomac and Cumberland, and was retired as colonel of the First U. S. Cavalry in 1889; Joseph A. Goldthwait, Salem, lieutenant 23d Mass. Vols., in 1861, became Gen. Foster's chief commissary of subsistence in N. C., was promoted captain, discharged August 15, 1865; Thomas Herbert, Lynn, was captain Co. I, 8th Regt. M. V. M. 1862-63, and in the 3d Mass. Heavy Artillery 1863-1865; Francis J. Parker, Boston, was lieutenant-colonel 32d Regt. Mass. Vols., promoted colonel August 6, discharged Dec. 27, 1862.

In 1846 was admitted Charles R. Train, lawyer, Framingham, volunteered in 1862 on the staff of General Gordon, and served at the battle of Antietam, Md.

On May 18 of this year the Company visited the great State Camp at Concord, and held an impressive service at the Battle Monument.

In 1847 were admitted: Colonel George Clarke, Jr., Boston, indefatigable in preparing and inspecting volunteers in 1861, was colonel 11th Regt., Mass. Vols., from May 11 to Oct. 14, 1861; John A. Felt, served as captain in Cushing's Regiment in the Mexican War, died in Mexico and was buried by the company Nov. 18, 1847; Albert E. Proctor, Boston, was lieutenant in the 42d Regt., M. V. M., 1862-63, and served in various capacities of trust until the close of the Rebellion; Isaac Hull Wright, who was Cushing's lieutenant-colonel in the Mexican War, succeeded to the colonelcy, and served through the war.

In 1848 were admitted: Ben Perley Poore, editor, author, politician and patriot, was a remarkably enthusiastic friend of the State militia, organizing and commanding the famous 1st Rifle Battalion, which was the first organization to offer its services to President Lincoln, and was major and later colonel of the 6th Regt., M. V. M., in 1861; William Schouler, editor, Boston, was adjutant-general of Massachusetts, 1860-1866, author of "Massachusetts in the Civil War," and needs no eulogy, as an efficient and tireless patriot and friend of the soldier.

In 1849 were admitted: Henry Merritt, watchmaker, Boston, lieutenant-colonel of the 23d Regt., Mass. Vols., was killed at the taking of Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862; William B. Oliver, clerk, Boston, served in the 40th Regt., Mass. Vols., and died of mortal wounds at Whitehouse Landing, Va., June 10, 1864. Edwin L. Bird, coach-painter, Boston, was a captain in the 47th Regt., M. V. M., 1862-63; William W. Bullock, served as lieutenant-colonel of the 30th Regt., Mass. Vols., 1862-63.

In 1850 Dr. Frederick S. Ainsworth; served as surgeon of the 22d Regt. Mass. Vols., was made first colonel U. S. Vols. and discharged July 27, 1865; Jefford M. Decker, hotel proprietor, adjutant 42d Regt. M. V. M. in Louisiana 1862-63; John W. Fletcher, Chelsea, lieutenant 43d Regt. M. V. M., 1862-1863, captain 36th Regt. U. S. Colored Vols., 1863-64; Oliver Hapgood, orderly sergeant 19th Regt. Mass. Vols., 1861, killed at Glendale, Va., June 30, 1862; William W. McKim, merchant, Boston, served with the greatest ability in the quartermaster's department, holding the most onerous positions, and handling many millions' worth of government property from August 3, 1861, to March 8, 1866; George A. Meacham, Jr., lieutenant-colonel 16th Regt. Mass. Vols. 1861-1862; George H. Pierson, blacksmith, Salem, served in Civil War, as lieutenant-col. 5th Regt. M. V. M. 1861, colonel 1862-63, and again in 1864; Benj. B. G. Stone, Boston, second lieutenant 1st Regt. Mass. Vols. 1862-63; Edward A. Thwing, painter, Boston, lieutenant in Cushing's Mass. Vols., Mexican War 1847-1848; John B. Whorf, bookbinder, Boston, captain Co. G 22d Regt. Mass. Vols., wounded and captured at Gaines' Mills, Va., re-signed in 1862.

At the invitation of the Town of Concord and other municipalities, the company joined in celebrating the anniversary of the battle of April 19th, 1775. The occasion was one of great enthusiasm and interest. August 6, it paraded at the funeral procession in memory of the late President Zachary Taylor, in New Bedford. The fall field day was held at Cambridge, October 7, with the usual target and drill practice.

New members in 1851, included: Frederick J. Coffin, Newburyport, col. 8th Regt. M. V. M., 1862-63, in North Carolina; Caleb Cushing, lawyer, judge, soldier, diplomat and politician, minister to China 1843-45, judge Mass. Supreme Court 1845, U. S. attorney general 1853-57, U. S. counsel Geneva Award 1873, minister to Spain 1874-77; col. Mass. Vols. in Mexican War, June 15, 1847, brigadier-general April 14 to July 20, 1848, died January 5, 1879; Albert S. Follansbee, Salem, captain Co. G 6th Mass., commanded the four companies attacked in Baltimore, Md., April 19, 1861, lost 4 killed and 36 wounded, colonel 6th Mass. 1862-63 in East Virginia, and for three months in 1864; Charles W. Fuller, Lawrence, served in Cushing's Regt. Mexican War; Abel H. Pope, Feltonville, first lieutenant and captain 13th Mass. July 16, 1861, to Oct. 5, 1864; George F. Tileston, clerk, Boston, 11th Mass., major June 13, 1861, colonel Oct. 13, 1861, killed at Second Bull Run, Aug. 29, 1862; David K. Wardwell, painter, Boston, Cushing's Regt., Mexican War 1847-48, captain 5th Mass. and 22d Mass. 1861, major and lieutenant-colonel 38th Mass. 1862, resigned June 24, 1863. George M. Whipple, Salem, captain Company F, 23d Mass. Vols. Oct. 8, 1861, served in North Carolina, discharged May 2, 1863.



CHASSEUR, WITH FLINTLOCK AND HANGER, 1832.

On January 23, 1851, the company voted to petition the legislature to exempt its members from jury duty, to secure modern field artillery, and to hold a military ball; all of which were ultimately effected.

The 213th anniversary was memorable for the presence of Major-General John E. Wool, U. S. A., who reviewed the Company. On June 30, General Caleb Cushing splendidly entertained the company at Newburyport. At the October parade the Hon. Daniel Webster was saluted by the company at the Revere House, and addressed the members.

In 1852, among many new recruits were: Dexter H. Follett, Jr. merchant, Boston, captain 3d Mass. Light Battery, Sept. 5 to Nov. 7, 1861; Jonas H. French, recruited 30th Mass. Regt., and was acting lieutenant-colonel Nov. 1, 1861, to March 27, 1862, on staff of Generals Butler and Banks at New Orleans, as provost-marshal, and under Governor Shepley as provost-marshal general; William Gibbs, Waltham, 1st Mass. Cavalry, captain, Oct. 21, 1861, to Feb. 3, 1862, Ebenezer W. Pierce, farmer, Freeland, brigadier-general in Virginia in 1861, colonel 29th Mass. Regt., Dec. 31, 1861, lost right arm and was captured at White Oak Swamp, Va., June 30, 1862, but escaped; mustered out, Nov. 18, 1864.

In 1853, Faneuil Hall was enlarged, the rooms above being des-

troyed to make room for galleries, and the companies using them as armories were notified to vacate them. The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company strongly remonstrated against being deprived of quarters, which were, in some sense, their inheritance. They were given the rooms then occupied by the New England Guards and Washington Light Infantry, since then greatly improved and refitted.

In this year (1853) were recruited: Benjamin F. Butler, lawyer, soldier, and statesman, one of the most striking figures in the public life of his century. As a brigadier-general of the Massachusetts militia in 1861, he was assigned to command at Annapolis, Md., occupied Baltimore and was made major-general, department of Eastern Virginia, occupied New Orleans May 1, 1862, and defended it against attack from foreign intrigues and pestilence, was retired by General Banks, and Nov. 2, 1863, commanded the Department of Eastern Virginia and North Carolina until Jan. 7, 1865; was a member of Congress from 1866 to 1875, and again from 1877 to 1879, and governor of Massachusetts in 1882; Andrew Elwell, Gloucester, lieutenant-colonel and colonel 8th Mass. Regt., April 30 to Aug. 1, 1861, lieutenant-colonel and colonel 23d Mass. Regt., Oct. 24, 1862, to Sept. 20, 1864; David A. Granger, civil engineer, Boston, 11th Mass. Regt., second lieutenant, first lieutenant, captain, Sept. 20, 1861 to Oct. 27, 1864, at which date he died of wounds received at Hatcher's Run, Va.

The fall parade, October 2, 1853, included an excursion to Bellow's Falls, Vt., where the company received a most hospitable reception.

On March 30, 1854, the remains of Jonathan Harrington, the last survivor of the men who were in arms at the Lexington fight, were borne to an honored grave by a vast concourse. A detail of the company, with its commissioned officers in full uniform, took part in the burial of the last Minute-man.

In 1854 the following members were admitted: James G. Miller, builder, Boston, quartermaster-sergeant 1st Mass. Regt., May 25, 1862, 27th U. S. Vols., captain and colonel Oct. 19, 1863, to Nov. 22, 1864; Samuel N. Neat, trunks, Boston, 13th Mass. Regt., first lieutenant July 16, 1861, captain, June 28, 1862, to Feb. 1, 1863, died Oct. 5, 1866; John A. Nye, druggist, Boston, 13th Mass. Regt., July 16, 1861, captain 79th U. S. V., colored, mustered out July 28, 1864; Isaac F. Shepard, bank treasurer, Boston, assistant adjutant-general, Missouri, 1861, on staff of Generals Sweeny and Lyon, was severely wounded at Wilson's Creek, lieutenant-colonel 19th Missouri Regt., Aug. 30, 1861, colonel 3d Missouri Regt., Jan. 19, 1862, colonel 57th U. S. Vols., colored, May 8, 1863, brigadier-general Oct. 27, 1863, died at Bellingham, Mass., Aug. 25, 1889; "Dan" Simpson, born Sept. 29, 1792, the veteran drummer of the company, drummed for Captain Spencer's Company in Windsor, Me., in 1800, went with the New England Guards on coast defence in 1812, only drummer marching with the troops in the Broad Street Riot, 1836; drummed continuously for the New England Guards over fifty years, kept the Green Dragon Tavern, and died July 8, 1886, when nearly ninety-six years old. George A. Batchelder, Boston, 22d Mass. Regt., lieutenant and captain Oct. 1, 1861, to Oct. 17, 1864, paymaster, with rank of major, U. S. Vols., March 7, 1865, to Oct. 5, 1865, died May, 1875; Joseph A. Dalton, tanner, Salem, 40th Mass. Regt., major, Aug. 20, lieutenant-colonel Sept. 2, 1862, discharged Jan. 25, 1864; Edward W. Hinks, painter, Cambridge, 8th Mass. Regt., lieutenant-colonel and colonel 1861, colonel 19th Mass. Regt., 1861, brigadier-general Nov. 19, 1862, brevet major-general U. S. Vols., March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious services during the war, resigned June 30, 1865, lieutenant-colonel 40th U. S. Infantry July 28, 1866, breveted colonel and brigadier-general, U. S. A., and retired Dec. 15, 1870, having been actively engaged in fourteen battles and wounded four times, died Feb. 14, 1894; John G. Hovey, Boston, 13th Mass. Regt., first lieutenant and captain, July 16, 1861, to Jan. 7, 1864; Edward F. Jones, manufacturer, Binghamton, N. Y., colonel 6th Mass. Regt., led the march to Washington, through Baltimore, April 19, 1861, raised 26th Mass. Regt., colonel Aug. 28, 1861, to July 27, 1865, breveted brigadier-general.



dier-general U. S. Vols., March 13, 1865; Josiah F. Kennison, merchant, Boston, 28th Mass. Regt., lieutenant Aug. 9, 1862, to Oct. 12, 1863, engaged in ten great battles, Army of the Potomac.

In 1854, twenty members volunteered to serve the new artillery pieces, which were completely furnished with limbers and caissons. They were armed with the short Roman sword of the United States Artillery, and wore a dark coat, pantaloons, and uniform hat. The new armory



*Painted by Chapple.*

WITH TAYLOR IN MEXICO.

*From an old engraving.*

rooms were occupied on April 10. On the 216th anniversary there were forty-four men on parade besides the artillery department.

In 1855, these recruits were secured: Moses G. Cobb, lawyer, Charlestown, raised Cobb's (2d Mass.) Light Battery in 1861. He was succeeded by Ormond F. Nims, druggist, Boston, captain 2d Mass. Battery, July 31, 1861, to Jan. 7, 1865. Through the efforts of General B. F. Butler his splendid services in the Department of the Gulf were recognized, and Captain Nims was promoted (1866-67) major, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel, U. S. Vols., "for gallant and meritorious services during the war"; James A. Fox, 13th Mass., captain, July 29, 1861, to Aug. 14, 1842; Edward J. Jones, lawyer, Boston, 11th Mass. Battery, captain, 1861-65, brevetted major "for conspicuous gallantry" at Fort Stedman, Va., March 25, 1865; Forrester A. Pelby, Boston, sergeant, lieutenant, captain, 1st Mass. May 24, 1861, to Sept. 25, 1863; Eben P. Stanwood, 48th Mass., captain, Sept. 12, 1862, lieutenant-colonel, July 2 to Sept. 3, 1863; Moses P. Stanwood, West Newbury, 19th Mass., captain, Aug. 22 to Oct. 21, 1861; Charles B. Stevens, Cambridge, 47th Mass., lieutenant, Oct. 27, 1862, discharged, Sept. 1, 1863, died, Dec. 30, 1896; Porter D. Tripp, Eastern SS. Co., Boston, 11th Mass., captain, June 13, 1861, major, Oct. 11, lieutenant-colonel, Aug. 30, 1862, mustered out, June 24, 1864.

At the 217th annual election, June 4, 1855, seventy-five members paraded, including the "Light Artillery Detachment."

In 1856, these were elected members: Hawkes Fearing, Jr., clothing, Boston, lieutenant colonel 4th Regt. M.V.M., in 1861, was colonel 8th N. H., Sept. 24, 1861, to Jan. 18, 1865, wounded at Bisland, La., in April, 1863; Atherton H. Stevens, Jr., grocer,

Boston, 1st Mass. Cavalry, captain, major, Sept. 16, 1861, to May 7, 1865, served on staff under Generals Terry and Weitzel, received the formal surrender of Richmond, Va., from Major Mayo, and raised his company's guidons as the first national colors flown after its capture, April 3, 1865, died, Nov. 12, 1872.

The 218th annual election and anniversary was celebrated in due and ancient form June 2, 1856. The original ode, composed by Thomas Parsons, Jr. (1861), was especially imbued with the spirit of the founders of the company, and was based on the following texts of Scripture:

*"For the builders everyone had his sword by his side and so builded."* — Nehemiah.

*"Except the Lord build the house, they labor in vain that build it."* — Psalms.

"Ancient of Days! at thy command  
Our fathers girded on their swords;  
And so, with armor nigh at hand,  
Builded the fabric they had planned,  
And the fair fabric was the Lord's.

"Oh, may New England never need  
Those armed architects again!  
We pray for peace. But if to lead  
Again be ours where thousands bleed,  
Ancient of Days! be with us then.

"To us, as to our fathers, be,  
O God! a buckler and a spear.  
Thou who hast made us great and free,  
Still keep us strong, still true to Thee.  
Give us the faith which knows not fear.

"Go from God's dwelling-place in peace,  
Ancient and honorable band.  
But ever till the last release,  
When man's and nature's strife shall cease,  
Go! with your armor close at hand."

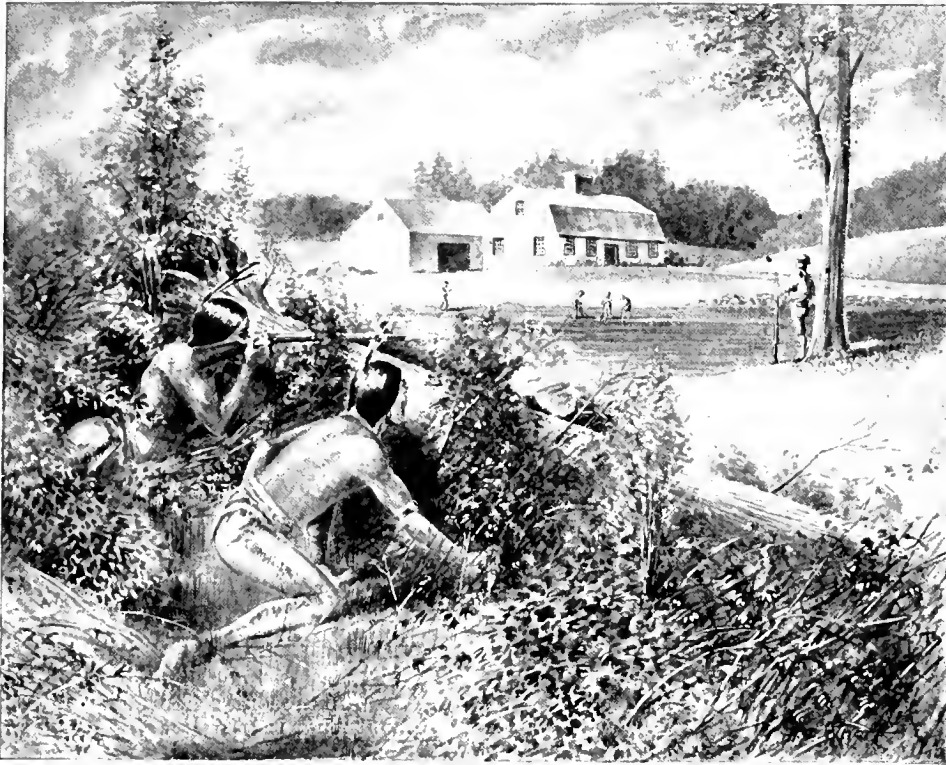
The inauguration of the Franklin statue in front of the City Hall, Boston, September 17, 1856, was attended by sixty members, with side-arms only, acting as escort to the city government.

In 1857 were admitted: J. Franklin Bates, painter, Boston, 99th New York, captain, major, Jan. 17, 1862, to 1864; Joseph H. Bennett, Boston, 10th Mass., lieutenant, June 22, 1861, to Nov. 25, 1862; David H. Bradlee, clerk, Boston, 13th Mass., adjutant, May 30, 1862, to Aug. 1, 1864; James C. How, M.D., Haverhill, surgeon of Kentucky Cavalry, 1861, 3d N. Y. Heavy Artillery, 1862-65, who was wonderfully beloved by his comrades, both officers and men, throughout the entire regiment, died Oct. 6, 1888; Carlos P. Messer, grocer, Haverhill, captain, served three months in 1861 in 50th Mass., colonel, 7th Mass., July 1, 1862, colonel, 50th Mass., Nov. 7, 1862-63; Abner B. Packard, Quincy, 4th Mass., colonel, April to July 22, 1861; Daniel J. Preston, Danvers, 35th Mass., lieutenant, captain, Aug. 12, 1862, to Dec. 6, 1863, major, 36th U. S. V., (colored) to Aug. 29, 1864; Samuel K. Williams, Jr., merchant, Boston, 22d Ohio, lieutenant, Aug. 22, 1861, 43d Ohio, lieutenant, June 21, 1862, 2d Independent Bat. Ohio Cavalry, captain, Nov. 12 to Aug. 1, 1864, captain, 8th Veteran Reserves. Discharged on account of wounds received in action, April 18, 1865.

The company bylaws were again revised and adopted, April 29, 1857.

The 219th anniversary was held June 1, 1857. Commander Marshall P. Wilder had addressed a letter to the Prince Consort Albert, then captain-general of the Royal Artillery Company of London, setting forth the foundation and brief history of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery, and asking for any facts which would demonstrate the ancient connection between the two Companies. This letter, and Prince Albert's courteous reply were read at the annual banquet, by Commander Wilder, who concluded by offering the following toast:

"The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, of Boston, to the Honourable Artillery Company, of London, sendeth greeting. Filial salu-



"FOR THE BUILDERS, EVERY ONE HAD HIS SWORD GIRDED BY HIS SIDE AND SO BUILT."

—Nehemiah, iv., 18.

tations and regards, pledges of fidelity and endeavors to honor the high prerogative of our birth. Prosperity to the present Company and its Royal Commander."

Amid the applause which greeted the adoption of this sentiment, the venerable General John S. Tyler (1822), proposed "That the present commander of the Honourable Artillery Company of the city of London, H. R. H. Prince Albert (then captain-general) be constituted an honorary member of this Company." This resolution was carried by acclamation, and the greatest enthusiasm, and Prince Albert was duly notified of the

action of the Company. It added to an already honorable roll the name of a prince, whose integrity and wisdom were in strong contrast to the records of most of the men who have, as king or consort, headed the Royal Family of England. It also opened up a fraternal interchange of visits and good offices, between the two most ancient military associations of England and America.

In 1858, among other recruits were admitted: Francis L. Harding, Boston, 99th New York Regt., Jan. 17, 1822, Feb. 20, 1863; Walter Miles, expressman, Charlestown, 1st Mass. Cavalry, first lieutenant Oct. 3, 1861, to March 10, 1861; Andrew A. Richmond, North Adams, organized the 10th Mass. Regt., in 1861, but died before he received his commission as colonel, May 22, 1861; Edward H. Staten, Salem, 7th Mass. Regt., captain May 1, to July 1, 1861, captain July 1, to Dec. 31, 1862, 6th Mass. Regt., captain, July 15, to Oct. 27, 1864.

The Company paraded 150 members on its 220th anniversary, June 7, 1858.

In 1859, a very large accession included: Pickering D. Allen, Salem, 41st Mass. Regt., lieutenant Feb. 20, 1862, to June 2, 1863, killed in action at Brashear City, La.; Davis W. Bailey, Chelsea, 42nd Mass. Regt., captain Sept. 24, 1862, to Aug. 20, 1863; Nathaniel P. Banks, lawyer, soldier and statesman, Waltham, Mass., Speaker of the House 1854, governor of Massachusetts 1857-59, major-general 1861, commanding 5th Corps, Army of the Potomac, relieved Butler at New Orleans 1862, relieved in May, 1864, resigned and was member of Congress 1864-1877, excepting 1872; in 1888 again elected to Congress, died Sept. 2, 1894, and was buried at Waltham, Sept. 4; William R. Bennett, Boston, 1st Mass. Cavalry, commissary sergeant, lieutenant and commissary Dec. 17, 1861, to Oct. 24, 1864, commissioned captain U. S. Vols., Oct. 25, served on Sheridan's staff and was brevetted major for faithful service Aug. 28, 1865, died Oct. 10, 1874; Edwin R. Frost, 13th Mass. Regt., lieutenant July 10, 1861, to July 22, 1862, 3d Mass. Regt., May 25, 1863, to March 13, 1865, brevetted captain "for meritorious service during the war;" Richard H. Kimball, Boston, 12th Mass. Regt., captain June 26, 1862, to Aug. 30, 1862, killed at Second Bull Run, Va.; Francis S. Lee, colonel 4th Battalion, M. V. M., May 25, to June 1, 1862, organized 44th Mass. Regt., which he commanded in North Carolina Aug. 29, 1862, to June 18, 1863, and mustered for service in the Boston Draft Riots in July of that year, died at West Point, N. Y., Sept. 2, 1886; Joseph B. Leonard, mason, Boston, 7th Mass. Regt., captain June 15, 1861, major Oct. 25, 1862, to June 27, 1864; Thomas J. Little, Portland, Me., 13th Mass. Regt., sergeant-major, lieutenant, first lieutenant July 17, 1861, to March 3, 1863, wounded at Second Bull Run, 2d Heavy Artillery, stationed at Fort Warren, captain June 4, 1863, to Sept. 12, 1865; Edward J. Minot, woolens, Boston, 44th Mass. Regt., captain Sept. 26, 1862, to July 7, 1863, served in North Carolina; Peter H. Niles, clerk, Boston, 23d Mass. Regt., second lieutenant Oct. 8, 1861, promoted first lieutenant in U. S. Signal Corps in 1862, brevetted captain, mustered out Aug. 12, 1865.

In 1860, among many others were admitted: George F. Austin, 8th Mass. Regt., first lieutenant May 18, to Aug. 1, 1861, captain 24th Mass. Regt., Sept. 2, 1861, to Sept. 1, 1862; George Bush, Boston, 13th Mass. Regt., lieutenant and captain July 16, 1861, to April 30, 1863, killed at Fitzhugh's Crossing, Va.; Joseph Davis, Roxbury, 5th Mass. Regt., private May 1, to Aug. 1, 1861, 30th Mass. Regt., hospital steward, second lieutenant, first lieutenant and adjutant Jan. 2, 1862, to Feb. 13, 1865; John F. Dunning, Boston, 6th Mass. Regt., fourth lieutenant April 22, to Aug. 2, 1861, recruited "Everett Guards," 22nd Mass. Regt., captain Oct. 1, 1861, to June 27, 1862, killed at Gaines' Mills, Va.; William T. Eustis, 3d, broker, Boston, 1st Corps Cadets, private in U. S. service at Fort Warren May 22 to July 1, 1862, 5th Mass. Regt., first lieutenant and adjutant Oct. 8, 1862, to July 2, 1863.

The 222d election was held Monday, June 5, 1860. Governor N. P. Banks appeared in a dark blue dress coat whose collar was heavily embroidered with gold, and wore black pantaloons and a black chapeau. His

staff wore like coats, omitting the laced collar, with buff breeches and Hessian boots. The governor wore a sash of blue silk, and the staff broad bands of gold lace.

On the fall field day, October 12, the company, 125 strong, was received at Nashua, N. H., by the Amoskeag Veterans, visited the State Camp Ground, and witnessed a review of the New Hampshire militia.

On October 18, with 139 guns and 112 sabres, under the command of General John S. Tyler (1822), the company escorted the city govern-



THE EIGHTH REGIMENT, M. V. M., ON THE MARCH TO WASHINGTON, 1861.

ment to the Common, where Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, then the guest of the city of Boston, reviewed a strong detachment of the Massachusetts militia.

On February 5, 1861, the admission fee of five dollars was raised to ten dollars.

In 1861 were admitted Austin S. Cushman, New Bedford, lawyer, etc., 3d Mass., adjutant, May 1 to July 22, 1861, 47th Mass., captain, Sept. 19, 1861, major, Nov. 8, 1862, mustered out, Sept. 1, 1863; George B. McClellan, U. S. A., at West Point, 1842-46, as Lieutenant of Engineers, served in the Mexican War, 1847-48, was promoted captain for distinguished services at the capture of the city of Mexico. In May, 1861, commanded in West Virginia, after Bull Run, July 21, 1861, was appointed commander at Washington, and Nov. 1, 1861, commander-in-chief of the Union armies. He was

relieved Nov. 7, 1862, he resigned Nov. 8, 1864, was elected Governor of New Jersey in 1877, and died Oct. 29, 1888.

On April 22, the letter of Commander Jonas H. French (1852) to Governor Andrew was read, offering the services of the company in defence of the city and State. It was unanimously voted "that all members of the company engaged in active service or volunteering be granted furloughs," and also, on motion of General Tyler (1822), "that so far as may be, the company provide for the families of those of the company engaged in the war."

The whole community felt the revival of the war spirit which had never reached its extreme fervor since the period of the Revolution, and the services of the 223d anniversary, Monday, June 3, 1861, held in the First Church on Chauncy street, had a new and solemn significance. Two companies appeared in the Continental uniform, and after the sermon by Rev. S. D. Lathrop, an ode by A. Wallace Thaxter, and a hymn by Oliver Wendell, were sung, both of which were inspired with that strangely mingled religious fervor and stern military devotion, which has always been characteristic of the soldiery of Massachusetts.

The fall field day, October 7, was spent at North Cambridge. On November 18, it being announced that Commander Jonas H. French, (1852) was about to leave for the seat of war, a committee was chosen through whose efforts a charger, thoroughly equipped, was presented to him.

The Civil War found the people of the North but poorly prepared for actual operations in the field. Although the percussion lock had been in use by sportsmen and European soldiers for many years, and the German Needle Gun, Minie, Enfield, Whitworth, Colt, Sharpe, Maynard and other military and breech-loading arms of precision had come into vogue, the Massachusetts Militia had only the old smooth bore muskets, which had been converted from flintlocks for their use, only nine years before, in 1852. These obsolete guns were, in course of time, replaced by rifles of varying make and calibre, but many of these were the refuse of European arsenals, and the condemned trash of inefficient contractors.

No regimental uniformity existed in the matter of uniforms, and at first there was considerable ingenuity wasted in designing even more striking and showy specialties.

The artillery and cavalry companies alone were fairly well armed and equipped according to the military standard of the era.

Notwithstanding these drawbacks, the spirit of the officers and men surmounted all these serious deficiencies, as their intelligence and self-reliance later on enabled them to attempt any task, and carry out any enterprise. The rebuilding of the railway to Washington by the Eighth Massachusetts in 1861, and the repairing of a disabled engine by one of

its men, were only a foretaste of what was afterwards achieved along mechanical, engineering and administrative lines by Massachusetts men.

During this struggle the Springfield and Enfield rifles were in a few instances replaced by the Sharpe and other breech-loading rifles, discharged by a cap or primer, and later the Henry and other rifles, using copper cartridges, were introduced and used with effect.

In artillery the progress made was more marked, and the Wiard, Whitworth, Blakely and Parrot rifles, Hotchkiss shells and like artillery and projectiles rapidly supplanted the Dahlgren and Rodman smooth bores, except those immense pieces which were used in the monitors, and placed in position on the large fortresses.

The tactics and strategy of this war differed little from that of the preceding ones, except that (after heavy losses) the solid massing of infantry, and even the battle line of two ranks, was avoided as much as possible, and the skirmish-line, duly strengthened and relieved from time to time, made the real fighting line in many actions.

In 1862 was admitted: John B. Norton, 5th Mass. Regt., lieutenant and captain May 1, to July 31, 1861, 36th Mass. Regt., captain Aug. 12, 1862, lieutenant-colonel Aug. 28, 1862, mustered out July 30, 1863.

The 224th anniversary was celebrated June 2, 1862, General John H. Reed (1860) presiding in place of Captain Jonas H. French (1852) at the front. Of 225 rank and file, forty appeared in the Continental uniform; there were 160 muskets and sixty sabres, with the artillery detachment and two cannon.

On August 27, the Company, with detachments of the Forty-Third, Forty-Fourth and Forty-Fifth Regiments, M. V. M., assembled on the Common at 2 p. m., and paraded through the principal streets, returning to the Common, where a great demonstration in aid of prompt enlistments was held and addressed by Governor John A. Andrew, Honorable Edward Everett (1836), Honorable Robert C. Winthrop (1830), Charles G. Green (1857), Honorable A. H. Rice and others.

On August 29, Brigadier-General Michael Corcoran, late colonel of the Sixty-Ninth New York Volunteers, visited Boston and was escorted on arriving by the First Battalion, Light Dragoons, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Everett Guards, the Columbian and Montgomery Associates and many local societies and leading citizens. A mass meeting on the Common was addressed by Governor Andrew, General Corcoran and others. September 15, the Company adopted as a fatigue uniform, blue flannel pantaloons, with a red stripe, and a blouse "with 1638 buttons of the Cahill die," donated by Mr. Thomas Cahill (1847). The fall parade was held at Malden, October 7, 1862, where a splendid American flag was raised, and the banquet was spread in the mammoth "Yale tent" owned by Rufus M. Yale (1861).

In 1863 was admitted Frederick A. Heath, 1st Battery Light Artillery, M. V. M., first lieutenant, May 18 to Aug. 2, 1861.

The 225th anniversary, June 1, 1863, was noticeable for the great strength of the company, which paraded 300 men. Five companies of infantry, four of artillery, and twenty-four men representing an association formed from Cook's Battery, with two brass Napoleons, were in line. The religious services were in the First Church, on Chauncy Street, and the banquet in Faneuil Hall was supplied by the famous colored caterer, J. B. Smith. Colonel Robert Cowdin (1837), late of the First Massachusetts Volunteers, was later in the day elected to the command of the company. On July 11, the company, with the Roxbury Reserve Guard, the Fusileers, and City Guard, received and escorted the returning Forty-Second Massachusetts Volunteers, Lieutenant-Colonel Stedman commanding. The fall field day, October 4, was spent at Ipswich, Mass.

In 1864, among many others, were admitted George D. Allen, merchant, Boston, recruited the 1st Mass. Battery Light Artillery, in September, 1861, was made first lieutenant Sept. 28, 1861, promoted captain Jan. 25, 1862, honorably discharged Oct. 17, 1862; Charles M. Jordan, 1st Mass., first lieutenant, May 23, 1861, captain, July 18, 1862, mustered out May 25, 1864; Horace C. Lee, merchant, Springfield and Boston, made colonel 27th Mass. Vols. Sept. 20, 1861, appointed acting brigadier-general July, 1863, and later provost-marshal North Carolina and Virginia, returned to his regiment May, 1864, captured at Drury's Bluff, Va., imprisoned at Libby Prison, Va., and Camp Ogelthorpe, Ga., and placed under the Union fire at Charleston, S. C., was exchanged Aug. 2, and mustered out Sept. 27, 1864, and promoted brevet brigadier-general U. S. Vols. March 13, 1865; Augustus N. Sampson, 18th Mass., second lieutenant Co. B, July 16, 1861, first lieutenant, June 28, 1862. Honorably discharged, Nov. 16, 1862. (See Biography, Vol. I., page 497.)

The First Massachusetts Regiment, Mass. Vols., returned from three years' service May 25, 1864, and were received at the Boston & Albany depot by a strong escort, of which the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, under General Robert Cowdin (also first colonel of the First Massachusetts Regiment), formed a part. The regiment was escorted to Faneuil Hall, where Governor Andrew gave them welcome.

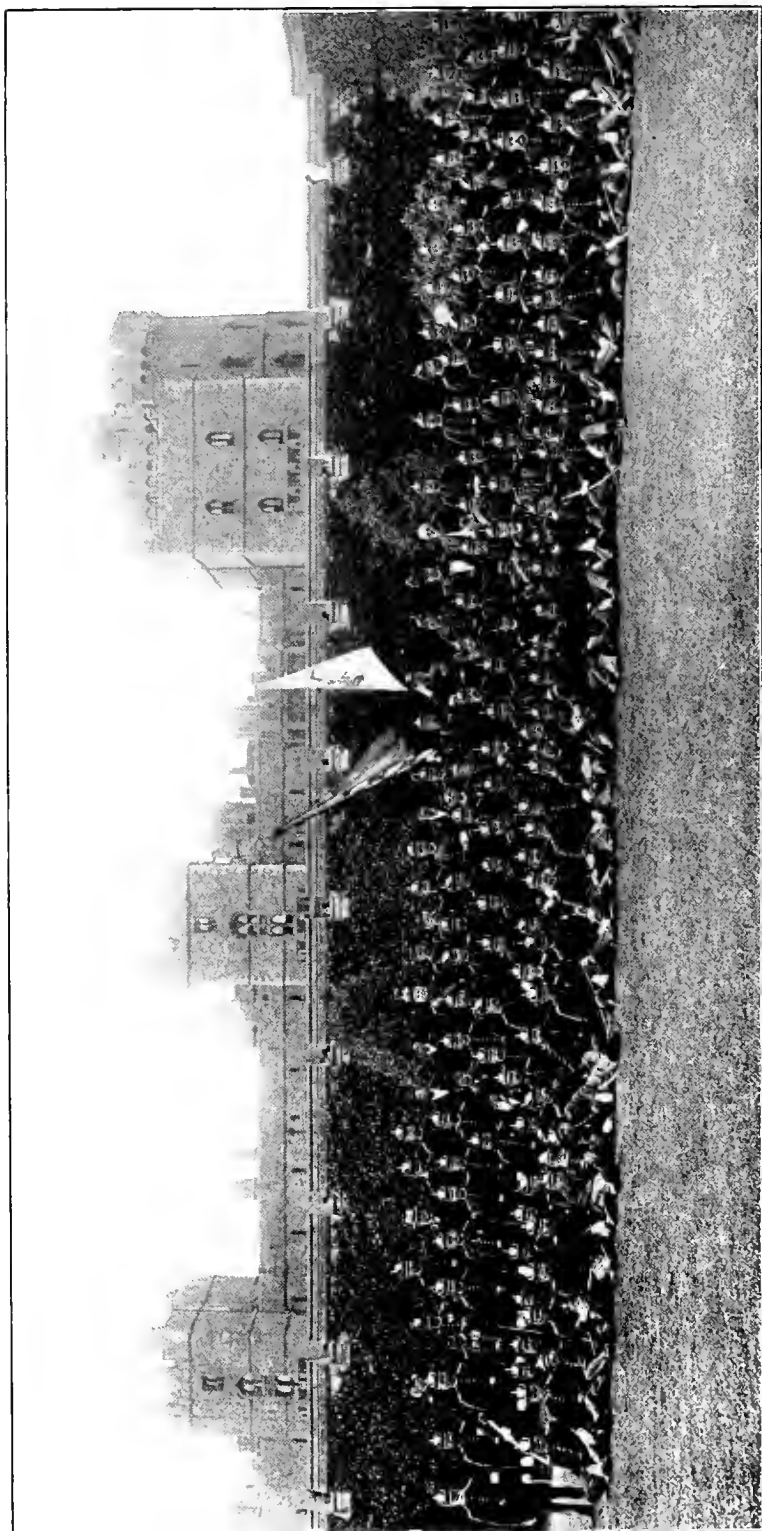
On the 226th anniversary, the Company, about 200 strong, listened to a sermon by Rev. Thomas B. Thayer, who said in closing:

"Soldiers of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery: When it comes to this, (the suppression of the Rebellion) when the era of union, peace and prosperity sets in, you will have just cause of pride in the thought that you have contributed your mite to the beneficent result. More than one hundred of your number are, or have been, in the armies of the republic, mostly as officers; and whatever the post they have occupied, they have held it with honor to you and themselves, and aided by the knowledge, experience and soldierly qualities which distinguished your patriotic Company, they have done the country faithful and efficient service.

The fall field day, October 3, 1864, was spent at Plymouth.

In 1865 were admitted: George M. Barnard, Boston, 18th Mass.; first lieutenant, Aug. 20, 1861; captain, Nov. 1, 1862; mustered out Sept. 2, 1864. Brevetted





*Photo loaned by J. Payson Bradley.*  
THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF MASSACHUSETTS, WINDSOR CASTLE, ENGLAND, JULY, 1896.



major U. S. Vols. for gallantry in the battle of the Wilderness; lieutenant-colonel for services in front of Petersburg, Va.; colonel, for the same at Fredericksburg, Va., and Gettysburg, Pa., all to date March 13, 1865; A. Parker Browne, Salem, 40th Mass.; first lieutenant Aug. 26, 1862; adjutant Sept. 25, 1862; major Aug. 6, 1863; discharged March 5, 1864; Abiel G. Chamberlin, served in Cushing's Mass. Vols. in the Mexican war. Captain 1st. Mass. May 22, 1861, resigned Nov. 10, 1863; promoted lieutenant-colonel 37th U. S. Vols., and resigned June 16, 1865; breveted brigadier-general U. S. Vols.; Patrick S. Gilmore, born near Dublin, Ireland, Dec. 28, 1829, came to Boston in 1849-50. He first played the cornet in the Charlestown band; succeeded Kendall in the Suffolk band, John Bartlett of the Brigade Band, and Jerome Smith of the Salem band, in 1858 instituted Fourth of July concerts on Boston common, in 1861 went with the 24th Mass. to the field, in 1862 with the 43d Mass. at Readville camp, in 1863 was placed by General Banks in charge of all the army bands in Louisiana. His Grand National Concert at New Orleans in 1864, National Peace Jubilee, Boston, 1869, and Musical Jubilee of all Nations, Boston, 1872, will never be forgotten by those who attended them. In 1886 and 1887 he conducted the music at the St. Louis Exposition. For the Knights Templars convention at St. Louis in Sept., 1892, he organized a mammoth band of 2,000 musicians and gave a concert attended by 180,000 people. It was the last great work of a man of strikingly grand conceptions and remarkable musical achievements. He died at St. Louis, Saturday, Sept. 24, 1892. Henry B. Jones, 44th Mass., sergeant, Sept. 12, 1862, to June 18, 1863, 3d Mass. Heavy Artillery, lieutenant Oct. 1, 1863, Dec. 22, 1864; William C. Pfaff, Boston, was under General Walker in Nicaragua, in 1857, also served in the 13th Regt. Mass. Vols.; J. Dixwell Thompson, broker, Boston, First Corps Cadets, at Fort Warren May 26 to July 2, 1862, 45th Mass. in North Carolina, lieutenant Oct. 7, 1862, to July 7, 1863.

On May 15, 1865, it was decided to elect a quartermaster, and Captain Charles S. Lambert (1835) was first chosen to hold that position.

The 227th anniversary was announced Monday, June 5, 1865, as usual, by the venerable drummer "Dan" Simpson (1854), and "Si" Smith, whose life had served the company so many years. Gilmore's band of thirty-six musicians, wearing for the first time the splendid uniforms presented them by the merchants of Boston, led the parade.

The Fall parade, October 4 and 5, 1865, was spent at Barnstable and Harwich. The Cape Cod branch of the Old Colony Railroad had just been opened to the latter town.

In 1866 the anniversary was observed as usual. Several members who had lately returned from service in the Civil War took part. On Wednesday, October 3, the Company observed their fall field day, visiting Newburyport, where the Newburyport Veteran Artillery Company and the Amoskeag Veterans banqueted them.

Forty-four new members were admitted in 1866. These had seen military service: Captain Nathan Appleton, see biography, Volume II.; Greely S. Curtis, Henry R. Dalton, John Kent, John W. Mahan, Charles B. Stevens, Wm. S. Tilton, Stephen M. Weld, Charles H. Hovey, Samuel C. Lawrence, Henry P. Shattuck, M. D., Charles W. Thompson, Aaron F. Walcott.

In 1867, Major-General Nathaniel P. Banks, the "Little Iron Man" of Waltham, was elected commander. The occasion was notable for the large number of members who took part in the parade. In September the Company secured 100 Springfield muzzle-loading rifles, to replace the old smooth-bore muskets hitherto used. These rifles, firing a fifty-five one hundredths calibre Minie bullet, had an extreme range of 1,000 yards,

but were sighted only for 500 yards. With them were used poorly made paper-cased cartridges and military caps, being in fact the characteristic weapon of the Federal infantry in the Civil War. A number of new light artillery sabres and equipments were also bought for the artillery wing.

On October 4-5 the company spent its field days at Providence, where Governor Ambrose E. Burnside, formerly lieutenant-general commanding the Army of the Potomac, received them with an escort of the Marine Artillery and Providence Light Infantry. General Burnside entertained the company at Narragansett Park on the 4th.

October 7, the company took part in the great military and civil ovation to Major-General Phil Sheridan, which included the parade of thousands of veterans of the Civil War.

In 1867, among ninety-seven recruits, these had served in a military capacity: Francis Bush, Jr., Chas. W. Chamberlain, Lucius Cummings, Wm. H. Cundy, Nathan A. M. Dudley, Wm. H. Lawrence, Caleb E. Niebuhr, Patrick A. O'Connell, M. D., Calvin R. Page, Chas. H. Porter, Henry B. Rice, Capt. Wm. B. Sears, (see biography Vol. 1, page 624); Benj. F. Talbot, Charles C. Holbrook, David Whiston.

The June anniversary in 1868 was largely attended, Governor Alexander H. Bullock conferring the new commissions. On September 18, the company amended the By-Laws, which had hitherto elected a candidate by a two-thirds vote, by providing that five black balls should reject any candidate for membership. October 5, the fall field day, was spent at Springfield, Mass., where a great ball in the evening was also attended by the Governor's Foot Guard of New Haven, Ct.

In 1868, these members having a military record, were admitted, there being in all 146 recruits enrolled: John F. Bacon, Sergt. David O. Clark, Co. K, 5th N. H. Inf., Caspar Crowninshield, Chas. G. Davis, Geo. B. Drake, Walter Everett, Capt. John W. Fletcher, 36th U. S. Colored Infantry, Lieut. Francis Gould, Co. H, 40th N. Y. Inf., Lowell W. Hiscock, 22d and 72d Illinois Inf., Geo. H. Johnson, Samuel H. Leonard, Gen. Josiah Pickett, Worcester (see biography, Vol. I., p. 644), Jacob Silloway, Jr., John R. Stitt, Edw. E. Allen.

In May, 1869, the membership fee was raised from \$10 to \$20, and an elaborate certificate of membership engraved costing \$800. The parade at the June anniversary was very satisfactory. The fall field days, October 4-5, were devoted to a visit to Portland, Me., where banquets and sightseeing were as usual the order of the day.

In 1869 the company received seventy-eight members, including the following members with a military record: Joseph N. M. Bertram, Capt. Frank W. Bigelow, 4th N. Y. Cavalry, Geo. W. Calef, Ellerton S. Dorr, Sergt. Chas. E. Fox, 1st R. I. Cavalry, Wm. F. Hadley, Loring W. Muzzey, John B. Ordway, M. D., Geo. W. Rand, Edwin A. Robinson, Henry A. Smith, Henry H. Sturgis, Ansel D. Wass, J. Henry Wyman, John Sullivan, assistant surgeon 13th N. H. Vols.

At the June anniversary of 1870 the Rev. W. H. H. Murray ("Adirondack Murray"), then at the zenith of a great popularity, preached the election sermon. The parade was a great success; Brigadier-General George H. Pierson commanding the Second Brigade, M. V. M., being chosen commander, the company escorted Governor Claflin to his camp, September 8.

The fall field day, October 4, was stormy, and a small detachment only went to Newport, R. I., where they were received by the Newport Artillery Company, to whom they gave a banquet.

In 1870 these officers are noted among forty-five new members; Chas. E. Rice, Chas. E. Spaulding, Ezra J. Trull.

The parade in 1871 exceeded in numbers any hitherto made by the company. On September 18, the company escorted the city government at the dedication of the superb Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument on Boston Common. The fall field day was spent by 350 members at Spy Pond, where target practice and a banquet were duly enjoyed. On November 17, the survivors of those members who on October 3, 1850, had voted to raise \$1,000 to aid in the erection of a new monument to commemorate those who fell at Lexington voted to direct the treasurer of the company to deposit the amounts collected and increased by interest in the Suffolk Savings Bank, there to be held until the corner-stone of such monument shall be laid and the monument in process of erection.

In 1871, out of forty-four new members, the following have a military record: Allston G. Bouvé, Chas. A. Fox, Geo. W. Pierce, Samuel J. F. Thayer, Col. Austin C. Wellington (see biography, Vol. I., p. 610).

Rev. Phillips Brooks preached the anniversary sermon, June 3, 1872, to a very large number of the company members. On August 23, the company was received at Providence, R. I., by the Providence Veteran Infantry and a detachment of the Putnam Phalanx of Hartford, Ct., dining at Rocky Point. On the fall field day, October 7, the company visited Duxbury to celebrate the formal laying of the corner-stone of the Standish Monument, and escorted the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, F. A. M., from Boston to Duxbury and back. A special convocation of the Grand Lodge duly acknowledged this courtesy.

The following gentlemen of military experience became members in 1872, there being only 38 recruits; Samuel Abbott, Jr., John F. Bolton, Robert B. Henderson, John D. Parker, Jr.

On April 7, 1873, the company voted \$100 toward the cost of a suitable monument to the memory of William Schouler, Adjutant-General of Massachusetts, 1861-66, deceased. On the anniversary, June 3, Major Ben Perley Poore was chosen commander, the officers being commissioned by Governor Washburn. On July 30, the company went to Providence, and there joined in a grand union parade with the First Light Infantry Regiment, the Veteran Light Infantry of Providence, the Amoskeag Veterans of Manchester, N. H., the Newburyport (Mass.) Veteran Artillery, and the Putnam Phalanx of Hartford, Ct., ending with a dinner at Rocky Point.

In September the fee for membership was raised to \$50, except for officers in the militia, who were still assessed but \$25. On October 3, the

fall field day, the company were invited by their commander, Major Ben Perley Poore, to Indian Hill Farm, where dinner was served under a mammoth tent. In the afternoon they went to Newburyport, and gave a grand ball in compliment to the Veteran Artillery Company and their lady friends.

In 1873 there were seventy-five new members, of whom these had a military experience: Lewis J. Bird, Alfred W. Brigham, Jas. Brown, Thos. W. Cazmay, Benj. F. Field, Jr., Wm. S. Frost, Brownell Granger, Joseph W. Hayward, M. D., Natt Head, Gen. Augustus P. Martin (see biography, Vol. I., p. 520), George B. Martis, Chas. E. Munroe, asst. surg. 174th Ohio Vols., Capt. George O. Noyes (see biography, Vol. I., p. 508), Nicholas W. Noyes, Wm. H. Pattee, Chas. R. M. Pratt, Chas. T. Robinson, Col. George Clark, (see biography, Vol. I., page 709.)

The June anniversary, 1874, was a success in every respect. There was a great concourse on the Common, and Faneuil Hall was crowded at the dinner. In September, the Ancients entertained the Providence Light Infantry Corps, at the American House, expending one thousand dollars. The fall field days, October 3-4, were spent at Manchester, N. H., where the Amoskeag Veterans royally entertained them. On the evening of the 3d the two companies gave a great ball at Smyth's Opera House, and on the 4th the Ancients banqueted their hosts in Agricultural Hall.

But two new names appear on the roll of recruits for 1874, neither of them having a military record. The higher fees for membership seem to have stopped the growth of the society, although the members kept up the record of the corps for lavish hospitality.

On April 19, 1875, the Ancients, 242 strong, took the right of the line in the parade at the centennial celebration of the Battle of Lexington. At the banquet, held in an immense tent, speeches were made by President Grant, Vice-President Henry Wilson, ex-Governor Wm. Gaston, Chief Justice Gray, General N. P. Banks and other distinguished guests and members.

The annual election, on June 7, was attended by 180 members on parade, and the election sermon, preached by the Rev. M. J. Savage, was followed by a banquet in Faneuil Hall. A thunder shower during the conferring of the commissions by Governor Gaston thoroughly drenched all the participants.

On June 17, the Ancients, by virtue of their seniority, took the right of the line of the brigaded veteran military organizations from Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, Virginia and South Carolina. These organizations afterward dined in a big tent on the Common, Major-General Banks presiding. They visited Concord on October 4, their fall field day.

In 1875 sixteen new members joined the company. The following officers were among them: William B. Atkinson, Arthur Fuller, George H. Maynard, Wm. Roberts, chief engineer, U. S. N.

In 1876, Lieutenant-Colonel John R. Farrell, chief organizer and first lieutenant-colonel of the Ninth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., with great pains and at much expense, reproduced in one large lithograph, the various uniforms then adopted and worn by the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.

Much could be said on the subject of uniforms, which indeed were not universally adopted by government troops until well into the eighteenth century, although a certain degree of uniformity was enforced in separate commands or integral parts thereof.

It may be said, generally, that until shortly before the Revolution the British service was the pattern generally copied by such independent companies as could afford to indulge in military pomp and display. During the Revolution our French well-wishers and allies were more or less closely copied, and the hatred of the "red coat," for many years discouraged the imitation of English types.

The Crimean War did not encourage any return to British uniforms, largely owing to the fact that the French Zouaves, Chasseurs, Turcos and Tirailleurs, had adopted tactics and uniforms which appealed most strongly to American ideas, and were largely treated of by Captain George B. McClellan, who was sent to observe the features of military service in the European armies. His influence, and especially when he became commander-in-chief of the Union Armies, together with the vogue of the famous Ellsworth Zouaves, and like associations, continued the influence of French types when the armies of the Civil War settled down to a uniformity of garb and equipment. The uniform then worn in the greatest battles of the war became naturally endeared to the American people, and is still largely copied. The Franco-Prussian War in 1870 was not favorable to the dominance of French military ideas, and the large German population of the United States strongly favored the adoption of the helmet (*pickel haube*) of the Prussian victors. Other nationalities were to some extent imitated in details of military costume, but the Prussian head covering with or without plumes was a very prominent feature. The adherence to old types, and some suggestions of modern English styles will be also noted by close students of Lieutenant-Colonel Farrell's valuable lithograph, the portraits of which are by no means the least valuable part of an unique composition.

Elsewhere in the company histories will be found several illustrations of uniforms and headgear once popular with the Massachusetts militia, many of which are obsolete, and obviously cumbersome and unimposing. Others, which may appear undesirable, were very effective and gave a magnificent appearance to a company in line or on the march. Lieutenant-Colonel Farrell's work on this subject and the key thereto are here inserted.



Published by J. E. Farrell, Boston, Mass.

KEY TO MILITARY PLATE.

Copyrighted in the year 1911, by J. E. Farrell.

IN HONOR OF THE MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER MILITIA AND ITS COMMANDERS,  
AND THE ONE HUNDREDTH YEAR OF AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE.

No.	1.	Tenth Regiment Infantry,	Worcester,	2d Brigade.
"	2.	Second Battalion Infantry,	Boston,	1st Brigade.
"	3.	Ninth Regiment Infantry,	Boston,	1st Brigade.
"	4.	Third Regiment Infantry,	Fall River,	1st Brigade.
"	5.	Ninth Regiment Infantry,	Boston,	1st Brigade.
"	6.	First Regiment Infantry,	Boston,	1st Brigade.
"	7.	Fifth Regiment Infantry,	Boston,	2d Brigade.
"	8.	Sixth Regiment Infantry,	Lawrence,	2d Brigade.
"	9.	Second Battalion Artillery,	Lawrence,	2d Brigade.
"	10.	Second Regiment Infantry,	Northampton,	3d Brigade.
"	11.	Second Corps Cadets,	Salem,	
"	12.	Eighth Regiment Infantry,	Lynn,	3d Brigade.
"	13.	First Corps Cadets,	Boston,	
"	14.	Latin School Battalion,	Boston,	
"	15.	Roxbury Horse Guards,	Roxbury,	1st Brigade.
"	16.	Company F. (unattached cavalry)	Chelmsford,	2d Brigade.
"	17.	William T. Miller, colonel commanding Boston School Regiment.		
"	18.	4th Battalion Infantry, 1st Brigade, Boston.		
"	19.	Brig.-Gen. I. S. Burrill, commanding 1st Brigade, Boston.		
"	20.	Prescott Light Guards, Charlestown.		
"	21.	Maj.-Gen. B. F. Butler, commanding Division, Lowell.		
"	22.	Col. B. F. Finan, commanding Ninth Regiment Infantry, Boston.		
"	23.	National Lancers, Boston, 1st Brigade.		
"	24.	Boston Light Dragoons, Boston, 1st Brigade.		
"	25.	Col. Isaac F. Kingsbury, assistant adjutant-general, Newton.		
"	26.	Brig.-Gen. Robert H. Chamberlain, commanding 3d Brigade, Worcester.		
"	27.	Col. James M. Drennan, commanding Tenth Regiment Infantry, Worcester.		
"	28.	Col. Melvin Beal, commanding Sixth Regiment Infantry, Lawrence.		
"	29.	Maj.-Gen. James A. Cunningham, adjutant-general, Boston.		
"	30.	Col. Bradford D. Davol, commanding Third Regiment Infantry, Fall River.		
"	31.	Col. Thomas F. Edmonds, commanding 1st Corps Cadets, Boston.		
"	32.	Maj.-Gen. N. P. Banks, Com'd'g Ancient and Honorable Artillery, Waltham.		
"	33.	Capt. John G. Rice, commanding 5th Battery, Light Artillery, 3d Brigade.		
"	34.	Gov. A. H. Rice, commander-in-chief, Newton.		
"	35.	Brig.-Gen. George H. Pierson, commanding 2d Brigade, Salem.		





*By Permission of Lieutenant-Colonel John R. Farrell, Ninth Regiment, M. V. M.*

UNIFORM OF THE MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER MILITIA, 1876.



- No. 36. Lieut.-Col. Alfred N. Proctor, com'd'g First Regiment Infantry, 1st Brigade.
- " 37. Col. Ezra J. Trull, commanding Fifth Regiment Infantry, 2d Brigade.
- " 38. Col. Benj. F. Peach, commanding Eighth Regiment Infantry, 2d Brigade.
- " 39. Maj. George Curtis, commanding 1st Battalion Cavalry, 1st Brigade.
- " 40. Maj. George S. Merrill, commanding 2d Battalion Artillery, 2d Brigade.
- " 41. Col. A. Parker Brown, commanding 2d Corps Cadets, Salem.
- " 42. Maj. Austin C. Wellington, commanding 4th Battalion Infantry, 1st Brigade.
- " 43. Col. Joseph C. Parsons, commanding Third Regiment Infantry, 3d Brigade.
- " 44. Maj. Dexter H. Follett, commanding 1st Battalion Artillery, 1st Brigade.
- " 45. Maj. Lewis Gaul, commanding 2d Battalion Infantry, 1st Brigade.
- " 46. Capt. Christopher Roby, commanding Company F, Unattached Cavalry.
- " 47. 1st Light Artillery, Boston, 1st Brigade.
- " 48. 5th Light Battery, Worcester, 3d Brigade.
- " 49. Ancient and Honorable Artillery, Boston.

June 5, 1876, was stormy, and the parade included only sixty infantry and 110 artillerymen. Albert A. Folsom was elected captain. Governor Rice presented the commissions in the afternoon, the weather having cleared up. Some 200 members went on the fall field day, October 2, to Worcester, where the Worcester Continentals escorted them and gave a ball in their honor. A street parade on the 3d, and a banquet given by the Ancients ended a very enjoyable outing.

On November 27, the membership fee was reduced to \$25, but too late to induce large additions that year. There were only ten new members in 1876, all from civil life.

In 1877, fifty infantry and 130 artillerymen turned out at the anniversary parade. October 1, the Ancients visited Hartford, Conn., and paraded, escorted by the Governor's Foot Guard, a battalion of the First Regiment, C. N. G., and the Putnam Phalanx. A great ball that night and a banquet on the night of the 2d made up a most enjoyable excursion. At the May meeting the membership fee was again reduced to \$10.

Sixty-four new recruits were admitted in 1877, among whom were the following: Edward P. Blasland, Colonel J. Payson Bradley (see biography, Vol. II.), Edward P. Brown, Raymond S. Ryan, Capt. Aaron A. Hall (see biography, Vol. I., p. 661), William Hatch Jones, Joseph F. Lovering, chaplain 17th Maine Vols.; John McDonough, Charles W. H. Sanborn, Albert E. Smith, William A. Smith, (see biography, Vol. I., p. 685), George B. Spaulding, Nathaniel Wales, Col. Henry Walker (see biography, Vol. I., p. 668), Melville E. Webb, M. D., Sullivan B. Newton (see biography, Vol. I., p. 589).

On June 3, 1878, 103 infantry and 143 artillerymen paraded, and 575 plates were laid at the Faneuil Hall banquet, at which, by an unanimous vote, H. R. H. Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, was made a special honorary member. In September was founded the present library and museum of the Company. On the October field day Honorable John D. Long and a civic procession welcomed the Ancients to Hingham, Mass., where they decorated the graves of ex-Governor John A. Andrew, General Benjamin Lincoln and Colonel Samuel Thaxter, the two latter having formerly commanded the company.

There were 142 members admitted in 1878, including the following officers: Brig.-Gen. Fred W. Wellington (see biography, Vol. I., p. 516), Isaac S. Burrill, Chas.

W. Dyer, Eugene A. Holton, G. Howard Jones, M. D., Lucius K. Marsh, Geo. S. Merrill, Eugene H. Richards, Wm. L. B. Robinson, 2d Lieut. Henry E. Smith, 193d N. Y. Vols., Capt. Albert E. Proctor (see biography, Vol. I., p. 692), Surg. Geo. W. Mills (see biography, Vol. I., p. 615).

In 1879 the annual parade, on June 2, included 110 infantry and 175 artillerymen. Governor Talbot presented the commissions. On June 17, the commissioned officers, with a detachment, in response to an invitation of the citizens of Hanover, Mass., took part in the dedication of the Soldiers' Monument there erected.

The fall Field Day, October 6, was spent at Lowell, Mass., where the Mechanic Phalanx received them. The Ancients gave a banquet to the Phalanx, the city government and leading citizens October 7.

Out of fifty-five recruits in 1879 the following officers were admitted: Thos. L. Churchill, acting first assist. engineer, U. S. N., Isaac D. Dana, Col. Samuel Adams Drake, 7th Kansas Infantry, Maj. Geo. B. Dyer, 9th Maine Vols., Col. G. F. Frost (see biography, Vol. I., p. 648), Capt. Robbins B. Grover, 13th Maine Vols., Samuel C. Hart, Edward J. Jones, Col. Leonard C. Lane (see biography, Vol. I., p. 546), John G. Miller, master-at-arms, U.S.N., John Scates, Wm. T. Soule, Russell Sturgis, Jr., Edward E. Wells, Horace P. Williams, Major James P. Frost.

On May 12, 1880, the Ancients voted to increase the membership fee to \$20. at which figure it has ever since remained. On May 26, the Worcester Continentals were given a collation at Faneuil Hall, and the officers later dined with the Continentals at the Brunswick. The annual parade, June 7, was made with full ranks, Governor John D. Long presenting the commissions. On July 9, an informal reception and collation was given the Continental Guards of New Orleans, La., then visiting Boston. On September 17, at the 250th anniversary of the settlement of Boston, celebrated by the city, the Company escorted the city government. At a dinner in the armory, Past Commander John C. Park, Colonel Seth J. Thomas and other veteran members were present. On the fall field day, at Concord, N. H., Governor Natt Head reviewed the Company, which was also received by the city government. There was a concert and ball, and on the following day a banquet attended by Governor John D. Long and staff, Ex-Governor Smythe of New Hampshire and other prominent guests. On November 18, the officers in uniform attended the 250th anniversary of the First Church of Boston, Berkeley, corner of Marlboro street.

In 1880, out of fifty-nine recruits, the following officers were admitted: Charles P. Fisher, William H. Ford, Samuel E. Guild, acting third assistant engineer, U. S. N.; William Greene Howe, Capt. David W. Lewis, 9th Vermont Vols.; Capt. Andrew McCullum, Staff General O. B. Wilcox, George W. Morse, Major Nicholas W. Norcross, paymaster U. S. A.; Col. John W. Patterson, brevet brigadier-general, U. S. Vols.; John A. Pingree, chief engineer, U. S. N.; Col. Alfred N. Proctor, (see biography, Vol. I., p. 692), Capt. Chas. W. Knapp (see biography, Vol. I., p. 513), Wm. G. Sheen, Chas. H. D. Stockbridge, Otis E. Weld.

In 1881, the annual parade June 6, was notable for the large muster and fine weather. Governor John D. Long commissioned the newly

elected officers, and at the banquet was elected an honorary member. The usual salute on the Common was omitted, at the request of the family of a very sick person residing on Beacon street. The fall field day at Wellesley, October 3, was somewhat saddened by the emblems of mourning worn for the deceased President Garfield. The colors were draped and furled, and all the officers and commanders of companies wore the usual insignia of mourning. In the evening there was a band concert and informal dance in the hotel parlors, and on the 4th, target practice in the forenoon preceded the afternoon banquet. On December 22, Faneuil Hall was crowded to witness the final sealing of a box to be kept in the Company archives, and opened by the then Company commander, in 1980. Special articles, describing and illustrating the life of that generation, prepared by gentlemen of the first prominence and ability, were the chief contents. These, with a bottle of wine and an hermetically sealed box of cigars, emblematic of the hospitality of the corps to their, as yet unborn, successors, and other suitable enclosures, were sealed up, while many speeches, music and singing entertained the audience.

In 1881 only twenty-six members were admitted, among them there were Eldridge H. Grover, acting third asst. engineer, U. S. N.; Herbert E. Hill, 8th Vt. Vols.; Capt. John W. Wolcott, Battery A, Md. Vols., John D. Long, governor of Massachusetts and commander-in-chief, M. V. M.

About 300 members paraded June 5, 1882. Governor Long again commissioned the officers. On the fall field day the Company, at the invitation of the Webster Historical Society, escorted President Chester A. Arthur and the members of his Cabinet to Marshfield to celebrate the centennial of the birth of Daniel Webster. President Arthur warmly acknowledged the honor, and was later elected an honorary member of the corps.

Only thirty-six members were admitted in 1882. Among them these: Lieut. Col. W. H. D. Cochrane, quartermaster U. S. A., Frederick Dexter, Col. Michael T. Donohue, 10th N. H. Vols., Brev. Brig. Gen. U. S. Vols., Wm. H. Fessenden, Sergt. Maj. Melville C. Grant, U. S. Engineers, Calvin B. Prescott, Capt. Walter S. Sampson (see biography, Vol. I., p. 556), Chester A. Arthur, President of the United States.

On June 4, 1883, 97 infantrymen and 101 artillerymen paraded, the latter in their new dress uniform—blue dress coats and trousers with scarlet facings. Governor Benjamin F. Butler attended and spoke at the banquet and commissioned the new officers. On June 15, the Continental Guards of New Orleans were banqueted in the armory. On October 1, the fall field day, the Ancients went to New York via Fall River. The 2d was stormy, but in the afternoon there was a banquet at the armory of the Old Guard, and the Ancients received in return in the evening. There was a parade on the 3d, under escort of the Old Guard, a review by the Mayor and a banquet at Irving Hall, which was as usual largely attended and a most enjoyable occasion.

Forty members were admitted in 1883, including the following: Henry S. Briggs, Henry M. Cross, Col. Frederick G. King (see biography, Vol. I., p. 676), Wm. A. Hardy, Wm. B. Hathaway, Col. Geo. A. Keeler (see biography, Vol. I., p. 719).

On their anniversary, June 2, 1884, the Company paraded with 150 infantry and 110 artillery members, accompanied by the Old Guard of New York; eighty-five guns, and the band of the Twenty-Second Regiment, N. Y. N. G., sixty pieces. After the banquet the officers were commissioned by Governor Robinson. On the 3d the Ancients took their guests down the harbor, calling at Fort Warren and Deer Island. A splendid collation was served on the steamer.

On the fall field day they were received by the City Guard of New Bedford with a parade and collation, ending with a banquet at the City Hall. A uniform overcoat of dark blue was adopted this year.

In 1884 there were forty-eight recruits. Among them were Lieut. Col. John H. Ammon, 16th N. Y. Artillery, Sergt. Howard J. Byrne, 15 Maine Vols., Wm. F. Hall, John Hayes O'Donnell, U. S. N., Joseph W. Smith, Joseph L. White, U. S. N.

In 1885, the Ancients visited Washington to attend the dedication of the Washington monument. They left Boston February 18, with 169 members and the band, arriving at Willard's Hotel on the 20th. In the evening they gave a band concert in the rotunda, and at 9.30 p. m., were most cordially received at the White House by President Arthur, who was pleased to reciprocate the courtesies shown him in 1882. On the 21st, the Ancients were assigned as escort to President Arthur, in the great procession at the dedication of the monument. On the evening of April 8, the Company in full uniform escorted Governor Robinson to the opening of the Carnival and Fair in aid of the Soldiers' Home. Over 350 members of the corps paraded or officiated in various capacities at this charitable festival. At the anniversary, June 1, there paraded 148 infantry and 87 artillery men in the ranks. Colonel Ezra R. Trull was chosen commander. On August 3, the decease of General U. S. Grant occasioned a special meeting, at which suitable resolutions were passed and a committee of a dozen members appointed, who attended the church services at New York city. On the fall field day, October 5, the Ancients were received at New Haven, Conn., by the entire military force of that city, paraded and were reviewed by Governor Harrison, General J. R. Hawley, the mayor and others. The ball given that evening in honor of the ladies of New Haven was attended by 2,500 persons. A committee of the corps received the Albany Burgesses Corps, October 8, with an excursion in the harbor, a collation at Deer Island and an evening camp-fire in Faneuil Hall.

In 1885, there were fifty-three admissions, among whom were: Charles Clark Adams, bugler 11th U. S. Infantry; William L. Blanchard, Capt. J. Henry Brown, (see biography, Vol. I., p. 542), Capt. George A. Bruce, 13th N. H. Vols.; Stephen B. Clapp, landsman, N. S. N.; Major-General John M. Corse, U. S. Vols.; Major Robert M. Cross,

commissary department of Ohio: Wesley A. Gove, Emery Grover, Elmar A. Messinger, Thomas G. Sandland, Capt. Edw. B. Wadsworth, Myron P. Walker.

In 1886, Colonel Ezra J. Trull, then commander, died, April 29. His funeral from his late residence, Monument Square, Charlestown, on May 2, was attended by the Ancient and Honorable Artillery in strong force. The military escort also included the Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., of which he had been colonel, field and staff Eighth Regiment, field and staff Ninth Regiment; Company L, Sixth Regiment, Boston Light Infantry Association; detachments of officers and men from the Providence Veteran and Active Light Infantry; Putnam Phalanx and Veteran City Guard, Hartford, Conn.; Charlestown High School Cadets; First Regiment, M. V. M.; past officers of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia; National Lancers. The pall bearers were officers representing the various military and civic associations of which Colonel Trull had been a member. Ten past commanders of the Ancients formed a guard of honor, and the hearse was followed by the Roxbury Horse Guards, the Sir Knights of Boston Commandery, Knights Templars, relatives and friends in carriages, and several societies on foot. The interment in the family tomb at Mount Auburn was succeeded by the usual military honors, the Fifth Regiment firing three volleys of musketry. On May 24, resolutions, fitly expressing the sorrow of the corps and its sympathy with the family of the deceased commander, were passed and duly transmitted and recorded.

The anniversary parade, June 7, was very satisfactory. First Lieutenant Henry E. Smith, as acting commander, presiding at the banquet. Past Commander Major-General N. P. Banks returned to the governor the insignia of office of the late Colonel Trull.

An excursion to the White Mountains, October 4 and 5, comprised the fall field day outing. On November 20, at a special meeting, the Ancients detailed the officers and ten members to attend the funeral of ex-President Chester A. Arthur, an honorary member, who died November 18. Suitable resolutions were passed and recorded.

In 1886, among forty-two admissions, these are noted: Col. Henry W. Wilson (see biography, Vol. I., p. 622) and Lient. Geo. E. Lovett (see biography, Vol. I., p. 634).

In 1887, the anniversary parade, June 6, was attended by 127 infantry and 83 artillerymen, besides officers, non-commissioned officers and musicians. At the dinner, which was very largely attended, Commander Thomas F. Temple read an invitation (just received from the Secretary of the Honourable Artillery Company of London) to the officers and a delegation of members of the Ancients to be present July 11, 1887, at the celebration of the 350th anniversary of the London Company. A delegation, under the leadership of Commander Henry Walker, was empowered to attend this anniversary, and was received with the utmost hospitality and

courtesy. A delegation from the London Company accepted the invitation to return this visit in 1888. Governor Oliver Ames (1888) commissioned the officers, Colonel Henry Walker being chosen commander.

The fall field days, October 3 and 4, were, for the first time in the history of the corps, signalized by a peaceable invasion of Canada. They visited Montreal, were escorted by the Canadian Volunteers, and on the 4th gave a banquet to the officers of the militia and city officials, returning by night train.

In 1888, the 250th anniversary, election, parade and banquet took place Monday, June 4, and was attended by Lieutenant-General Sir Frederick Middleton, Major Durrant, and other members of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company of London, England, then visiting the corps. The banquet was especially notable as the occasion of a most hearty and enjoyable reunion of representatives of Old and New England's civil, social, political and military life.

The city of Boston having appropriated \$2,500 for the entertainment of the Ancients and their guests, a steamboat excursion took place Tuesday, June 5, the party visiting Fort Warren and Long Island, where dinner for five hundred persons was served. In the evening, Governor Oliver Ames gave a reception to the Ancients, their guests, and the commissioned officers of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia at his residence on Commonwealth Avenue. An exquisite collation and fine music gave eclat to the occasion.

On June 6, Lowell was visited, on the invitation of the city government, an excursion on the Merrimac being a part of the journey thither. The Martin Luther Club of Lowell entertained the party at their headquarters on Tyng's Island with a collation and "many fanciful and merry conceits." Keeping down the Merrimac a salute of seventeen guns, fired by Squad I, Troop F Cavalry, under Adjutant Bearce, and the strains of "God Save the Queen" (or "America") greeted them, which was duly reciprocated. At Lowell a civic and military parade awaited them, in which the Second Corps Cadets, Putnam Guards, Meehanic Phalanx and Welch Guards took part. Lowell was in gala dress, and her crowded streets bore testimony to the hearty greeting extended to the English visitors. The dinner at Huntington Hall was attended by many civic and state officials, and the speeches were full of hospitality and good-will.

The English visitors, on June 7, were entertained by St. Andrew's Royal Arch Chapter, F. A. M., the Central Club, State authorities, city government and Columbian Lodge, F. A. M. On June 8, by invitation of the First Light Infantry of Providence, R. I., and other cities, the Ancients and their guests visited the Rhode Island capital, where a parade, an excursion in Narragansett Bay and a Rhode Island clambake at Crescent Park were greatly enjoyed. On Saturday, June 9, eight of the Eng-



lish visitors were shown over the American Watch Factory at Waltham, where lunch was served. Other members of the party were otherwise entertained. The visitors gave a farewell banquet at the Victoria to 100 representatives of the various organizations which had so hospitably received them, and on Sunday left for New York.

The fall field day, October 1, 1888, was very stormy, and the visit of the corps to Saratoga, via Rutland, Vt., was wholly one of indoor enjoyment. At Rutland the Kingsley Guards extended their courtesies and a collation at the Bates House. At Saratoga the Ancients were escorted by the Saratoga Citizens' Corps (stopping at the Soldiers' Monument to formally decorate the same) to the American Hotel, where the evening banquet awaited them. The next day was comparatively pleasant and was spent in an informal way in Saratoga and vicinity.

In 1888, among others, were admitted Lieut. John A. Hunneman (see biography, Vol. I, p. 58), Capt. John C. Potter (see biography, Vol. I, p. 664), Lieut. Col. Alonzo L. Richardson (see biography, Vol. I, p. 370).

On April 29, 1889, the Company, under Commander Henry E. Smith, left for New York to attend the centennial celebration of the inauguration of General Washington as the first President of the United States. The Fifth Regiment, M. V. M., also detailed for this duty, and a delegation of the Old Guard of New York, escorted them from the depot to the Grand Central Hotel.

In the grand parade and review of the next day, in which from 50,000 to 60,000 men took part, Massachusetts was represented by the Fifth Regiment, Colonel Wm. A. Bancroft, First Corps Cadets, Colonel Thomas F. Edmands, Second Corps Cadets, Colonel J. Frank Dalton, the Signal Corps, Second Brigade, M. V. M., and the Ancient and Honorable Artillery, which had 152 officers and members present.

The 251st anniversary, June 3, 1889, was a pleasant day and the parade was largely attended. At the annual dinner a letter from Major Durrant of the London Company conveyed the thanks and congratulations of himself and his associates. The election for commander resulted in the choice of Lieutenant Edward E. Allen of Watertown. The election sermon, by Rev. D. O. Means, was a magnificent tribute to the military strength of the American people. Among other things, he said: "Other things being equal, a true republic will not allow a standing army. . . . The order of the militia belongs to a republic. The standing army means war as a profession; the militia means war only in an emergency as self-protection. . . . Royalty has its standing army, while democracy has its citizens ready to defend themselves and their State."

The fall field days, October 7, 8 and 9, embraced a trip to Albany, where the corps joined the Albany Burgesses' Corps in celebrating their

56th anniversary, and returned home via. the Hudson River and Fall River Line and railway connections.

Among others were admitted this year: Maj. Lawrence N. Duchesney (see biography, Vol. I. p. 657), Lieut. Wm. H. Hennessey, Lawrence (see biography, Vol. I., p. 650).

The 252d anniversary, June 2, 1890, was very pleasant and the Company paraded with full ranks. The election sermon was preached by Rev. Wm. H. Savage of Watertown. The dinner at Faneuil Hall was notable, not only for the large number present, but the reception of many letters of regret and congratulation from all over the country. Lieutenant Wm. Hatch Jones of Roxbury (now of Winthrop, Mass.), was elected captain. The commissions were conferred by Governor Brackett.

The fall field day was celebrated by a short parade in Boston, October 6, and a trip to Philadelphia. Including ladies and the band—forty-five persons in all—250 participated. They were escorted to the Continental Hotel by Companies B, D, F and H, Second Infantry Penn. N. G. and the armed Guard of Post 2, G. A. R., where a collation was served. The United Service, Union League, Art and Manufacturers' Clubs also opened their doors to the visiting Ancients.

The Ancients gave a reception and dinner in the evening, at which guests and hosts were alike gratified, not only by the creature comforts provided, but by sentiments and speeches of the highest interest.

Col. Augustus H. Goetting, Springfield (see biography, Vol. I., p. 645), and George A. Foxcroft joined (with other recruits) this year.

The 253d anniversary, June, 1891, was rather too warm for comfortable marching. Many of the infantry wore the new black uniform with scarlet facings and silver trimmings. Rev. DeWitt Talmage delivered the election sermon. Commander Jones, in presiding at the annual dinner, recommended two extra meetings previous to the spring parade and one before the fall field day as obviously necessary to prepare the most of the members for creditable service. He also recommended that carriages be provided for the older members, who, however incapacitated by age, still possess "all that freshness of heart and buoyancy of spirit which animates the youngest of our recruits." Lieutenant J. Henry Taylor of Chelsea was elected commander, and Governor William E. Russell commissioned the officers-elect.

At a special meeting, February 16, 1891, fitting resolutions were adopted with reference to the recent decease of General Wm. Tecumseh Sherman, U. S. A., and Admiral David D. Porter, U. S. N. The fall field days, October 5, 6 and 7, were spent among the White Mountains of New Hampshire. Monday evening and night were pleasantly spent at Fabyan's, and on Tuesday, after the excursionists had returned, the annual banquet was enlivened by eloquence, poesy and song.

Smoke talks were held this year—at the American House, November 11, the United States Hotel, December 18, the American House, January 22, 1892, the United States Hotel, February 22, 1892, and at the American House, March 17, 1892, the latter being the anniversary of the date of the charter of the Ancients (March 17, 1638) and also of the evacuation of Boston by the British (1776).

With many others Lieut-Col. William H. Oakes, Charlestown (see biography, Vol. I., p. 346), William H. Best (see biography, Vol. II.), and Lieut. Paul R. Hawkins, Springfield, (see biography, Vol. I., p. 623), joined this year.

The 254th anniversary, June 6, 1892, was especially signalized by a visit from the Troy Citizens' Corps (Sixth Separate Company, N. Y., N. G.) organized in 1835. They were received by the Ancients on Saturday, June 4, escorted to the American House, entertained over Sunday, and were interested spectators of Monday's services. Rev. George A. Gordon of the New Old South preached the election sermon. The banquet filled Faneuil Hall with exquisite decorations, a splendid feast and a host of distinguished guests and members of the Ancients. Captain Samuel Hichborn of Boston was elected commander. Governor William E. Russell commissioned the officers elect. Over two hundred rank and file exclusive of guests and music paraded. The Troy visitors were entertained; many at supper in Faneuil Hall and others by members of the corps and other friends. On Tuesday, June 7, the Ancients and their guests enjoyed an excursion in Boston Harbor, visiting the Charlestown Navy Yard, Fort Warren and Nantasket, where a fish-dinner was served at the Rockland Cafe.

On August 8, the commander and officers of the Ancients met at the American House, Colonel F. N. Mann, Lieutenant C. W. Tillinghast, and Sergeant W. R. Bridges of the Troy Citizens' Corps, who in their behalf presented a splendid silver loving cup fifteen inches in height, and standing on an ebony base of six inches, elegantly ornamented in repousse work, with etchings showing the Troy Citizens' Corps in camp at Peekskill.

The fall field day, October 3, initiated an excursion to New York City, the Company arriving at New York on the 4th, where in the evening the usual banquet was served.

The first smoke talk was held at the Quincy House, Boston, November 16; the second, December 18; the third at the American House, January 17, 1893; the fourth, at the Quincy House, March 17, 1893. Washington's birthday was duly commemorated February 22, 1893, by a dinner at the American House.

At the first meeting of the Ancients, in April, 1893, \$100 was donated by the Company toward a fund for the reception of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, June 28.

The 255th annual parade, June 5, 1893, was marked by a strong muster, over 220 members parading, in very pleasant weather. The after-dinner remarks were of great interest, and full of tender, patriotic and generous as well as general sentiment, and Governor Russell inducted Captain Jacob Fottler of Boston and his fellow officers. The fall field days, October 2 and 3, were spent by 116 rank and file at Pittsfield, Mass., where the usual banquet was held in Burbank Hall on Monday evening. Six smoke talks were held in November and December, 1893, and January, February 22, March 17, and April 19, 1894, all of which were largely attended.

Forty-three members were admitted, in 1893, among them Lieut.-Col. Chas. H. Prescott, Sergt.-Major Henry W. Patterson, and George H. Innis.

The 256th anniversary, June 4, 1894, was favored with fine weather, and 218 officers and members were in line at the parade, besides guests and the band. Governor Greenhalge commissioned Colonel Sidney M. Hedges of Roxbury, captain elect, and the other officers.

The fall field days, October 1, 2, 3 and 4, were spent in a trip to Washington, where the Ancients were received by a detachment of the Washington Light Infantry. Wednesday forenoon was given to a survey of the capitol city, and an excursion down the Potomac to Mount Vernon preceded the banquet at the Arlington.

At the regular June business meeting, Commander Hedges laid before the members for their consideration a plan for a summer trip to England, visiting many points of interest, and finally meeting at London. The estimated cost for such a trip of thirty-five days, in 1895 or 1896, was \$213.00 each. A committee, of which Commander Hedges was chairman, was appointed to report upon the proposed trip.

Commander Hedges informed the Earl of Denbigh, then commanding the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company of London, of the proposed trip, announcing the fact that the Ancients proposed to give a banquet complimentary to the London Company, and intimating that an escort and admission to the Finsbury Armory would be courtesies greatly appreciated.

To this the Right Honourable Lord Colville, of Culross, their president, having laid the matter before the Court of Assistants, replied "I am desired by the court to inform you that it will afford the Honourable Artillery Company the greatest pleasure to welcome their American comrades on their arrival in the old country, and that no efforts will be spared to make their visit a pleasant and agreeable one. Such a gathering would not only be unique in this country, but an historical event of considerable interest and importance."

To this was added the assurance that the Court of Assistants would

at all times be pleased to learn such details as would aid them in preparing for the reception of the Boston Company.

The War Office, having been properly approached, assured Major C. Woolmer Williams of the Honourables, that the visitors, if duly recommended by the President of the United States, would be allowed to land, and to parade in uniform with arms and colors.

Smoke talks in Faneuil Hall took place in November and December, 1894, and January, 1895. Others celebrated February 22, March 17, and April 19, 1895, the first and third being held at the Quincy House and the second at the Revere.

Suitable memorial resolutions were reported to the society, October 30, 1894, in honor of Past Commander General Nathaniel P. Banks, who died at Waltham, September 1, 1894, and on December 10, 1894, in honor of Honorable Robert C. Winthrop, of Boston, deceased November 15, 1854.

During the year 1894-5, 101 recruits were added, including the following: Lieut.-Col. Horace E. Marion (see biography, Vol. II.), Col. Henry Hastings (see biography, Vol. I., p. 678), Major William L. Sage, Lieut. Frank C. Brownell, Col. Geo. B. Billings, Lieut. E. Dwight Hill, M. D., Col. Charles Kenny (see biography, Vol. I., p. 507), Col. Embury P. Clark (see biography, Vol. I., p. 501), Sergt. Fred Bolton, Col. James A. Lakin, Lieut. William S. Gillespie, Capt. Lawrence J. Ford, Lieut.-Col. Albert A. Pope, Col. J. H. Cunningham, Lieut. Benjamin F. Barnard, Major William S. Cogswell, Major Francis S. Washburn, Lieut. Henry L. Kincaide, Lieut.-Col. William A. Gile, Col. Adams T. Pierce, Lieut.-Col. Isaiah K. Stetson, Lieut. James B. Cherry, Col. Henry Parsons (see biography, Vol. I., p. 564), Hon. John Q. A. Brackett, Sergt. Wm. Lewis Coon, Lieut. Walter Burns, Sergt. Jos. Henry Hartley, Major Perlle A. Dyar.

The 257th annual parade, June 3, 1895, turned out 238 officers and men besides their guests and the Salem Brass Band and First Regiment Drum and Fife Corps. Many of the men wore the new uniform of blue and red—practically that of the U. S. A. Artillery, except that the stripe on the trousers was widened to an inch and a half, and a Prussian helmet with a red plume and no cord was substituted for the regular helmet.

The dinner was so largely attended that extra tables were set in the galleries. Commander Hedges in his address announced that the first volume of the Company History, by Oliver Ayer Roberts, covering the first hundred years of its record, would be published early in the summer, as also a catalogue of membership including over 5,000 names. Professor N. S. Shaler of Harvard, among other reminiscences, told of a squad of twenty men, all of whom had been artillerymen in the War of 1812, which reported to him at Cincinnati in 1862, when General Bragg menaced the city. They had got an old iron six-pounder, blacklead the gun, painted the trail, and got together thirty or forty rounds of ammunition, and came in to take part in the defense of the city. Major C. Woolmer Williams, of the London Company, was also present, and in the name of the mother-association offered the following toast: "May the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts flourish root and branch forever; may

the best blood of Massachusetts ever be in its ranks; and may its best traditions and its inestimable rights and privileges be upheld for centuries to come, as they have been safeguarded for two hundred and fifty-seven years past."

The sermon, by Rev. Percy Browne, on the text, "A citizen of no mean city" (Acts xxi. 37), was a thoughtful protest against the purely mercenary idea of "a greater Boston," then in the ascendant. Governor Greenhalge commissioned Captain Thomas J. Olys as commander and the other officers-elect.

The fall Field Day outing, October 5, 6, 7, 8 and 9, was devoted to a trip to Richmond, Va., via. Fall River, New York, Jersey City, Philadelphia, Washington and Fredericksburg. At Richmond they were received and escorted by the First Regiment, the Richmond Blues, Stuart Horse Guard, Henrico Troop, etc., to the First Baptist Church, founded in 1780, whose pastor, the Rev. George Cooper, gave them welcome. On Monday morning about forty officers and members, under Major William Hatch Jones, decorated the graves of the Confederate dead at Hollywood Cemetery, while Past Department Commander Innis paid the like honor to the Union dead in the National Cemetery.

The Company paraded in the afternoon, escorted by the Richmond Blues, and were reviewed by Governor O'Ferrall. A hearty reception and collation at the armory of the Blues closed the events of the day. The banquet in the Masonic Temple was preceded by an informal reception, and the Company did not get seated until 10.30 P. M. The speeches and toasts were of the most impressive and fraternal complexion. On Tuesday the day was devoted to sightseeing around Richmond and along the James, which was traversed by the visitors as far north as Harrison's Landing. Governor O'Ferrall gave a reception at the executive mansion in the evening. The Company started for home Wednesday, October 9, arriving in Boston October 10, at 9.15 A. M.

The November and December smoke talks in 1895, and that in January of 1896 were held in Faneuil Hall. Three hundred men sat down to the banquet on February 22, at the Quincy House. The presentation of a magnificent gold badge set with diamonds to M. Jean Missud, the leader of the Salem Cadet Band, was an unexpected surprise. Generous subscriptions were made toward the cost of the proposed invasion of England in 1896. The fourth smoke talk, March 13, the date being changed because of the discovery that the charter was really conferred on March 13, instead of March 17, 1638, was held at the Revere House. About 200 were present. The Company were assured that the Prince of Wales would attend the banquet to be given in London by the Ancients.

April 19, 1896 being Sunday, the sixth of the smoke talks took place on Monday, April 20, at the American House. Two hundred and

eighty-two members and guests attended. Memorial resolutions in honor of Quartermaster and Armorer George P. May, who died at Swampscott, September 17, 1895, were passed and recorded. Also similar honors to Governor Frederick T. Greenhalge, who died at Lowell, March 5, 1896. A delegation consisting of the Company officers, non-commissioned officers and eight members attended the funeral and the colors were draped for thirty days.

There were 142 recruits mustered in 1895-96, among them: Lieut. John O. Patten, Capt. Martin Jones, Capt. John G. Warner (see biography, Vol. I., p. 617), Rev. Adolph A. Berle, Col. Chas. C. Burrill, Lieut.-Col. C. A. Leighton, Capt. C. H. C. Brown, Col. Wm. D. Ewing (see biography, Vol. I., p. 604), Brig.-Gen. Benjamin F. Bridges (see biography, Vol. II.) Lieut. Harrison Hume, Capt. Elisha S. Shaw, Col. Watson J. Miller.

The 258th annual parade, Monday, June 1, 1896, was gratifyingly large, exceeding two hundred men in line including many members wearing the new uniform chosen for the coming European trip. The sermon, by Rev. A. A. Berle, a member of the Company, was from the text "Peace be within thy walls, and prosperity within thy palaces." The dinner was very largely attended, the approaching visit of the Company to England being the chief theme of the speeches which succeeded it. Colonel Henry Walker was elected commander, and with the other officers elect was commissioned by Governor Wolcott.

The visit of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts to its mother association, the Honourable Artillery Company of London, was undoubtedly largely due to the acceptance, in 1857, of an honorary membership in the Massachusetts Company by H. R. H. Prince Albert of Saxe Coburg Gotha, Prince Consort and Captain-General and Colonel of the Honourable Artillery at that time. This membership, proposed by Honorable Marshall P. Wilder, then commanding, he was pleased to hold until his death in 1861, and it is claimed that, in that crisis of our great national trial, his sympathy and just comprehension of the real issues involved, shared by his loving wife and queen, were of incalculable benefit to the Union cause. A medallion in marble, representing in bas relief the profile face of Prince Albert, upon whose pillow the hand of the queen is strewing roses, the gift of Mayor W. R. Park, of London, perpetuates not only the generosity of the donor, but the memory of a prince whom every true American can worthily lament and honor.

On June 3, 1878, his eldest son, H. R. H. Edward, Prince of Wales, and heir apparent to the English throne, also became an honorary member of the Boston Company. Many friendly and pleasant communications passed between the two companies and individual members thereof and Captain Albert A. Folsom, in 1871, as chairman of a committee of twenty-five, made investigations which warranted a report, April 1, 1872, that suitable arrangements could be made for the trip, and that a hearty wel-

come from the London Company was assured. A date in June, 1873, had been decided upon, when the great Boston fire, November 9, 1872, and the financial reverses which followed so great a public calamity prevented the proposed visit. On June 11, 1894, Colonel Sidney M. Hedges, then commanding, brought the matter formally before the society, and a committee of thirty-five members was chosen, of which Colonel Hedges was chairman.

The Honourable Artillery Company, on its part, appointed committees, on which the first gentlemen of England were proud to serve with the Prince of Wales, the Earl of Denbigh and Desmond, Lord Colville of Culross, and the other officers of the association.

It was decided to take the steamer "Servia," specially detached to sail from Boston to Liverpool, and to return from Liverpool to Boston, at such days as the Company might determine, the whole excursion to occupy thirty-five days, five of which were to be spent in London and the twelve following, wherever the choice of each member should dictate. To reduce the assessment to be laid upon those members actually participating in the visit, \$17,007.51 was subscribed by members of the Company, the whole amount raised and accounted for by the treasurer aggregating nearly \$75,000.

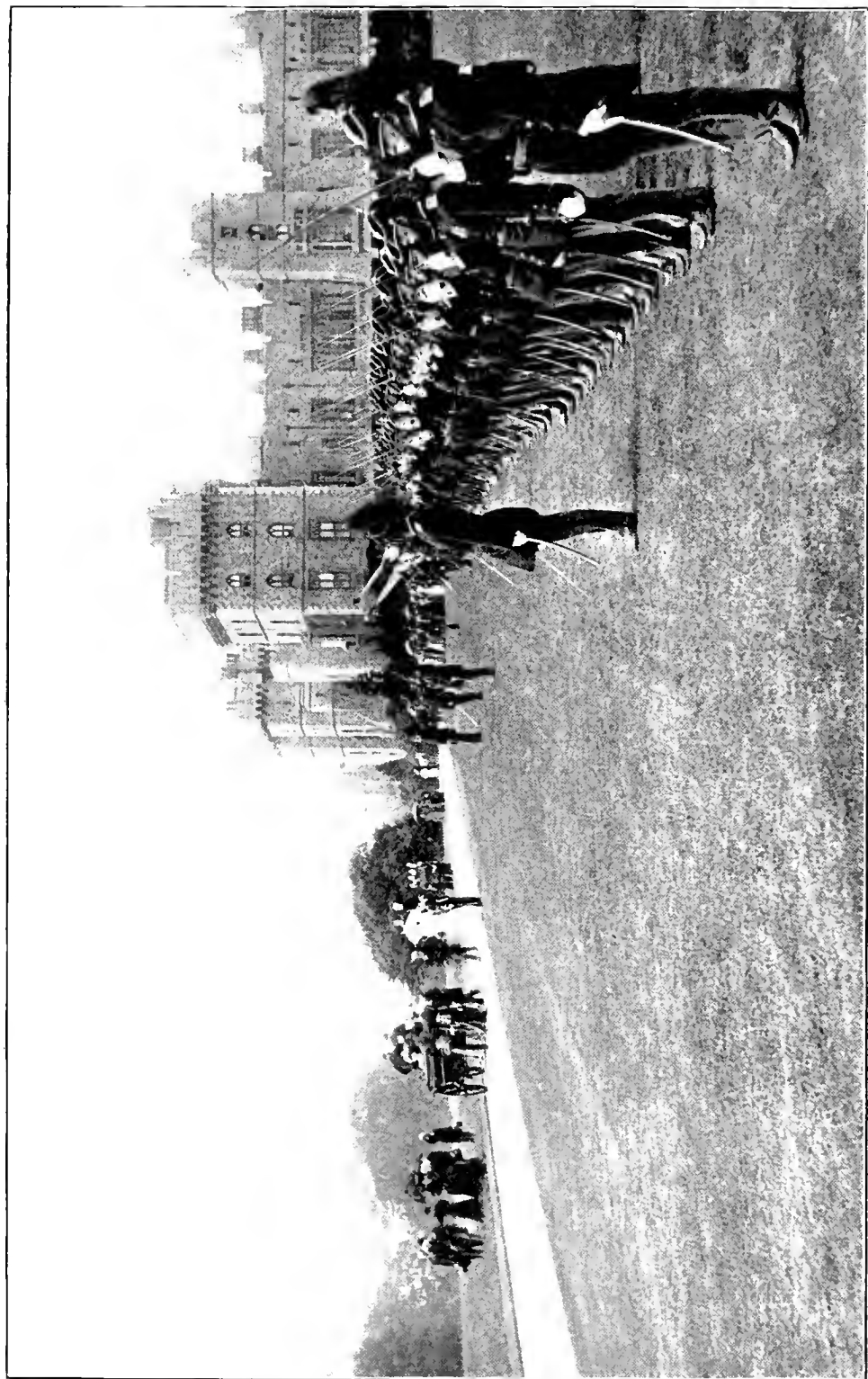
The miscellaneous variety of uniforms, for which the Company had long been notable, were evidently not suitable for such a visit, and the uniform of the United States artillery was made the basis of the new dress. Artillery sabres and the espontons and halberds of the officers were carried. A new system of drill, recently introduced into the United States service, modified to retain the ancient system of single rank platoons, was practiced by most of the members every week in the South Armory, under the direction of Major Perlie A. Dyar, First Heavy Artillery, M. V. M.; Captain Quimby, Lieutenants Howes, Dana and Nostrom, and several non-commissioned officers, who voluntarily exerted themselves to bring the Company up to a high degree of efficiency. During the last month, on every week day evening, the Company armory was devoted to drill.

Application was made to the British government, through the State Department at Washington, for permission to land in Great Britain, arms in hand, which was promptly granted.

The Salem Cadet Band, thirty pieces, under the leadership of M. Jean Missud was taken, to the general satisfaction and credit of all concerned.

One hundred and seventy-one members participated in this excursion, including the oldest member, Mr. Thomas Cahill, aged eighty-five, and the youngest, Mr. J. Fiske Hooker, aged twenty-three. One hundred and thirty-seven paraded in the new uniform, most of the others affecting citizens' dress. Sixty-five ladies accompanied the party.





*Photo. copied by Col. J. Payson Bradley.*

THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF MASSACHUSETTS PRESENTATION TO HER MAJESTY QUEEN VICTORIA AT WINDSOR CASTLE



Escorted by the Second Battalion, First Regiment, Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., Charlestown City Guard, Captain Meredith, and a strong battalion of their comrades under Captain William Hatch Jones, the London detachment, under Colonel Henry Walker, marched, June 29, 1896, through crowded streets, to the State House, where Governor Wolcott, then acting governor and commander-in-chief M. V. M., reviewed them.

He, in fitting words, on behalf of the merchants of Boston, presented a splendid stand of national and state colors to the Ancients through Colonel Walker, who received them at the hands of Adjutant-General Dalton, and committed the national flag to the keeping of Lieutenant J. Payson Bradley, and the state flag to Captain Walter S. Sampson, both veterans of the Civil War.

The London detachment was then escorted to the South Ferry, receiving a perfect ovation all the way, and went on board the "Servia," which sailed at noon. Her passage down the harbor was greeted with displays of bunting from the wharves and salutes of every kind from a host of steamships, yachts, tugs, launches, etc., and last, but not least, by a salute of twenty-one guns from Fort Warren, fired upon his own responsibility by Lieutenant-Colonel Woodruff, whose action was later approved by the war department, with directions to repeat the salute on the return of the "Servia."

The voyage was pleasant, and in a certain sense uneventful, but July 4, was fittingly observed, closing with a dinner served in the main saloon, at which the speeches and toasts were full of British loyalty and American patriotism, of the kind which recognizes past mistakes and present friendship.

On the arrival of the "Servia" at Liverpool, Tuesday, July 7, the party were received by the Earl of Derby, Lord Mayor of Liverpool, and his retinue, and a committee of the Honourable Artillery Company of London, Lieutenant-Colonel George A. Raikes commanding, with a military escort consisting of the First, Second, Fourth and Sixth Lancashire Volunteer Artillery, First Lancashire Volunteer Engineers, Mersey Division Submarine Miners, the First, Fourth, Fifth and Sixth Liverpool Regiments of Infantry, and the First Cadet Battalion, Liverpool Regiment. The lateness of the hour alone prevented the Company from making a parade in the streets of Liverpool, escorted by thousands of volunteers, and receiving an ovation. As it was, after an exchange of military courtesies and being reviewed by Lord Derby, the Company entrained for London, over the London & North-Western. Two engines, the "President Lincoln" and "President Garfield," decorated with the Stars and Stripes and the Union Jack, drew the train which was fitted with everything which could add to the pleasure of the trip, including an exquisite collation. The run of 202 miles was made in three hours and forty-five minutes.

At the station thousands had waited to greet the Americans, although delay and storm had disappointed them of the elaborate military parade anticipated. At the armory of their hosts, the officers and members received the hearty greeting of the Earl of Denbigh, lieutenant-colonel commanding, his staff and comrades. The banquet which promptly followed was, it is needless to say, inimitable in its menu, perfect in its cookery, and royal in its wine and liquor list. Most memorable of all, however, were the warm greetings, perfect courtesy and generous sentiments which succeeded the dessert, and still make that princely night of welcome a memory that can never fade in the hearts of those who participated therein.

At the close of the banquet the Ancients were conveyed to the Hotel Cecil, which, facing the Thames embankment, has a spacious courtyard in the rear, communicating with the Strand. Here the Ancients formed whenever about to parade, and Missud's band delighted the habits of the Cecil and a host of visitors.

On July 8 the Company left the Hotel Cecil for Windsor, arriving at 11 A. M., to be received by Mayor Westlake of Windsor and his retinue. An engrossed address of welcome on behalf of the borough referred, among other things, to the fact that the founder of the Ancients, Captain Robert Keayne, was a native of Windsor. Colonel Walker responded fittingly to the address, after which the Company was escorted to the Castle, which it entered at the Henry VIII. gate, the guard, a detachment of the Second Grenadier Guards, presenting arms. Within they were received on the North Terrace by Lord Edward Pelham-Clinton, master of the royal household, Sir Fleetwood Edwards, Major-General Sir John McNeil, V. C., and other officials, and were conducted over such parts of the Castle as are deemed of interest.

The queen had directed that the review take place on the East Terrace. A small number of members of the royal household and a party of the Knights of Windsor, veteran officers in scarlet uniforms and wearing blue chapeaux, were present.

The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company were drawn up in order on the exquisitely shorn lawn; behind them the Castle, ancient and storied, bore on high the royal standard, within whose domain a foreign flag had never before intruded for centuries. Close to the right of the line gathered the ladies of the detachment.

An out-rider approached, followed by an open carriage drawn by a pair of handsome gray horses, which stopped in front of the Company colors. Queen Victoria, bowing with kindly smiles, acknowledged the salute of seven score American sabres and of the Stars and Stripes, and the white flag of Massachusetts, and with punctilious discipline the Company marched past the carriage in review, and returning, stood at attention.

The Master of the Household presented to Her Majesty, the Earl of Denbigh, Colonel Walker and Adjutant Lawrence N. Duchesney. To the colonel the queen gave a simple womanly welcome, saying, "I trust you have had a pleasant voyage across, and I am glad to see you here." Again the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts saluted, and the queen's carriage was driven slowly away, the ladies of the party saluting as she passed.

A collation was served in the Orangery by footmen in the scarlet royal livery, under the direction of the lord steward's department. While awaiting the arrival of Her Majesty, the Company was photographed on the tennis ground, which, as will be seen, is commanded by a saluting battery—once one of the defenses of the ancient castle.

In the evening, the Company, divided into three detachments, attempted to respond to at least a part of the many invitations extended it. Colonel Walker, Adjutant Duchesney, Surgeon Graves, Sergeants Kincaide, Coon and Huckins, Captain A. A. Folsom and Mr. Freeman A. Walker attended a dinner given by the Ancient Guild of Fishmongers in its ancient and luxurious Guild hall near London bridge.

Lieutenants Savage and Lovett, Assistant Surgeons Galloupe and Hill, Paymaster Emery Grover and Sergeants McDonald, Foster and Best, accompanied by the Earl of Denbigh, attended a dinner given in honor of the Company by the Royal Artillerymen at Woolwich, at which Lieutenant-Colonel Lockhart, R. A., presided. The other members, with the ladies of the party, attended a dinner at the Criterion, given by the Honorable Artillery Company, after which the party visited Irma Kiralfy's India and Ceylon exhibition at Earl's Court, and a performance of "India" at the Empress Theatre.

On Friday, July 9, the Company visited Aldershott, and at the Waterloo station were met by Field Marshal Lord Wolseley, K. G., commander-in-chief, General Sir Redvers Buller, adjutant-general, Lieutenant-General Sir Evelyn Wood, the Earl of Errol and other members of the headquarter's staff, Hon. Thomas Bayard, United States Ambassador, and other notables. Major-General H. R. H. Arthur Duke of Connaught, with his staff and a detachment of the Fifteenth Hussars, met the Ancients at Farnborough station, whence they were driven to Aldershott and were posted on Bridge's Hill, where the manoeuvres were overlooked by Lord Wolseley, Prince Alfred, umpire-in-chief, and Major-General J. Alleyne, C. B., senior umpire. The field of operations included hills, valleys, ravines, woods and bridged streams, upon which nearly 9,000 men with 2,500 horses, 60 field and 20 machine guns, divided into the armies of the North and South, were playing the exciting mimic war game of modern tactics. The Northern army, under Major-General L. V. Swaine, C. B., finally drove the army of the South, under Major-General H. M. Bengough,

down to the plain where the review was held. At the saluting point a small inclosure was reserved for the Duchess of Connaught, who with her daughters, the Princesses Margaret and Victoria Patricia, and members of her suite, were seated in a carriage. Lord Wolseley and staff, Mr. Bayard, Earl Denbigh and other distinguished officers, with Colonel Walker and several other officers, also occupied this point of vantage. Colonel Walker was complimented by Lord Wolseley, who requested him to stand in front of the colors at the saluting base. On the left of the inclosure a number of draped army wagons were filled with chairs for the Ancients.

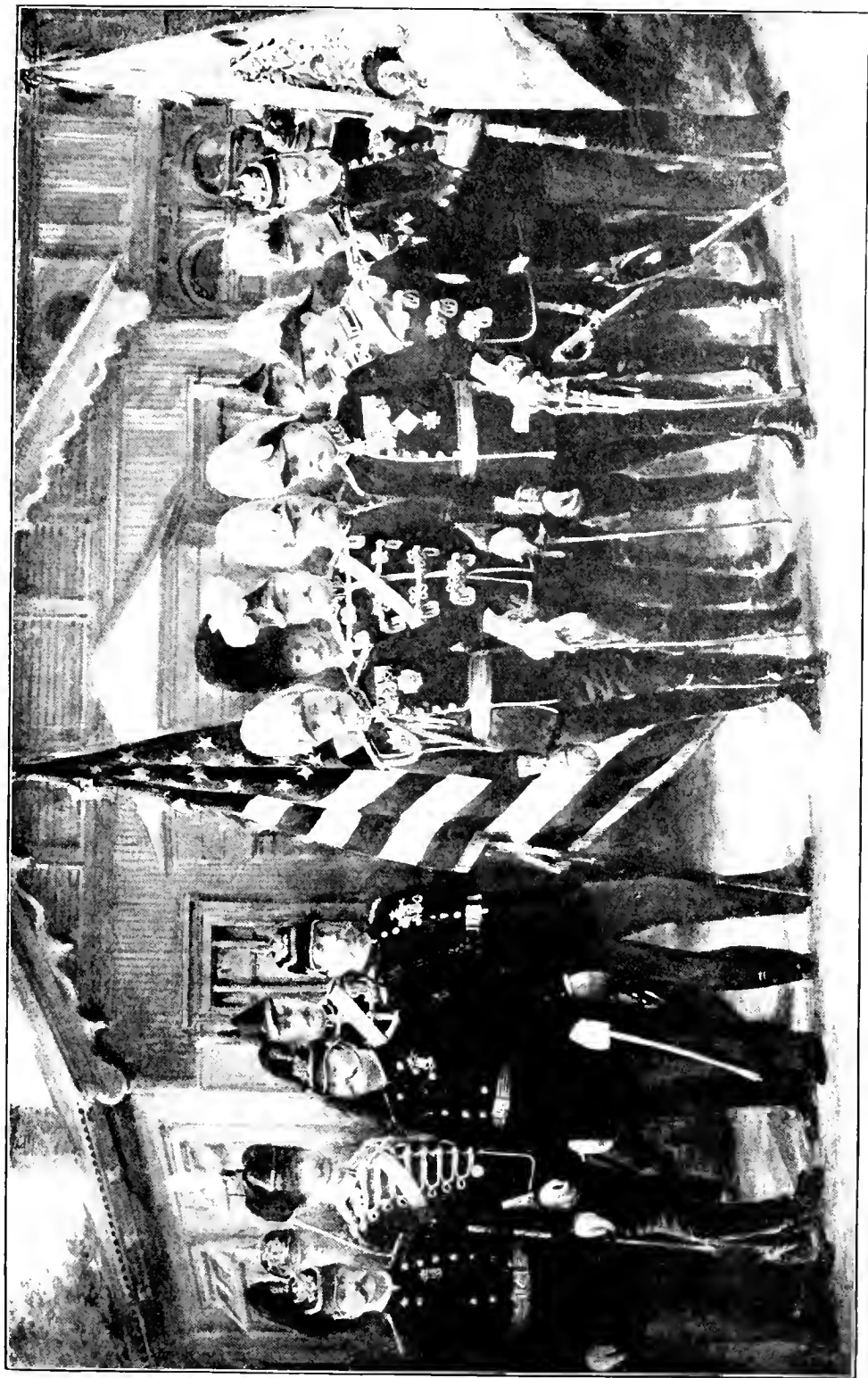
The review, led by the Duke of Connaught and his staff, included the Royal Engineers, three companies; the Royal Horse Artillery, four batteries; the King's Own Hussars, Royal Scots Grey's Dragoons and Queen's Own Lancers; Mounted Infantry, three companies; Field Artillery, nine batteries; 1st Brigade Infantry, including the 2nd Bedfordshire, 2nd East Lancashire, 1st Manchester, 1st Royal Scotch Fusileers, and 2nd Rifle Brigade; the 2nd Brigade Infantry, including the Fourth, King's Royal Rifle Corps, Second Leicestershire, First Argyle, and Sutherland Highlanders; First Border Regiment, 4th Rifle Brigade and the 3d Brigade, consisting of the Second Norfolk, Second South Wales Borderers and the First Seaforth Highlanders.

The troops marched in columns of double company front, the infantry carrying their arms a port, excepting the rifles and engineers, who carried theirs at the trail.

After the march past the infantry resumed its first position, while the Cavalry Brigade, headed by the Horse Artillery and followed by the Light Artillery, commanded by General Talbot, passed again in review at a trot and then reforming, swept by at the gallop, left in front, the artillery by batteries, and the cavalry by squadrons, the Ninth Lancers leading.

The cavalry then formed in line of battle in front of the infantry, the Scots Greys in the centre, and charged, sabre in hand and lance in rest, toward the saluting base, halting when only a few feet from the enclosure. The spectacle was a most impressive and interesting one and greatly enjoyed by the visitors.

After the review the Company was taken to the Officers' Club, where a collation had been prepared by order of Lord Lansdowne, secretary of state for war. Field Marshal Lord Wolseley, Prince Alfred and Lord Denbigh and many other distinguished gentlemen joined in the festivities. On this occasion Prince Alfred personally requested that he be photographed under the American flag, with the result elsewhere illustrated. This review was especially ordered in honor of the visit of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and nothing was left undone to demonstrate the esteem and respect of the rulers and people of England for the American people, by them represented.



*Photo loaned by Col. J. Pearson Bradley*

H. R. H. PRINCE ARTHUR, DUKE OF CONNAUGHT, UNDER THE STARS AND STRIPES TAKEN AT HIS SPECIAL REQUEST AT ALDERSHOT, ENGLAND, JULY, 1896





On the same evening the Massachusetts Company gave a dinner at King's Hall, Holborn Restaurant, in honor of H. R. H. the Prince of Wales, Captain-General and Colonel, Lieutenant-Colonel the Earl of Denbigh and the officers and members of the Honourable Artillery Company of London. The hall, finished in white and gold, illuminated by many-colored electric lights, its galleries profusely decorated with flowers and plants and crowded with the fairest women of England and America, was set with tables for over five hundred guests, whose uniforms and decorations blazed and glittered along the exquisitely laid and decorated tables. It is needless to say that the repast was princely, and that there was no limit to the hospitality of the Massachusetts Company. Its members showed that the simple citizens of a republic could entertain prince and noble like kings.

There was, however, no unworthy rivalry, and when Colonel Walker, on the part of the Massachusetts Company, gracefully and eloquently welcomed the distinguished guests of the Ancients, he thus introduced and proposed the first regular toast:

"To Her Majesty, whose womanliness as queen, and queenliness as woman has for nearly three score years clothed both throne and home with dignity, purity and honor, winning the respect and admiration of true manhood and womanhood everywhere, whose acts and words have ever been for honorable peace between our two English-speaking nations, we tender our sincere good wishes.

"The gracious act of Her Majesty, yesterday, in which we take great pride, will awaken a response on the other side of the Atlantic, where our thanks will be renewed by a whole people. I know that you will all respond most heartily to the toast I now give you. I ask you all to drink to the health and prosperity of 'Her Majesty, the Queen.'"

Men say, who were present on that occasion, that, in the memory of living man, there has never been at a banquet of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, a scene of more universal and complete enthusiasm and earnest chivalry than was presented, when in the King's Hall this toast was drank by 500 gallant gentlemen of the greatest empire and the greatest republic of the world. All rose to their feet, the two great bands playing in unison "God Save the Queen," and upon the toast followed cheer upon cheer, that deep-throated "hurrah" which the men of both nations have for centuries thundered forth, in battle and at feast, whenever a generous word is said or a gallant deed to be done.

In return, the Prince of Wales acknowledged the toast to his loved and honored mother, and pledged the President of the United States. The third toast, "H. R. H. the Prince of Wales, captain-general and colonel of the Honourable Artillery Company; Her Royal Highness the Princess of Wales, and the Honourable Artillery Company of London,"

ingeniously coupled with the Company and its commander, the individuality of the heir apparent to the English throne and his amiable wife. The answer of the Prince of Wales to this toast was creditable both to his head and heart, and in closing he gave the toast "Colonel Walker and the Ancients," to which Colonel Walker eloquently responded, in words which no American, however exacting, can fail to recognize as instinct with the spirit of a great, brave, free-hearted and independent people.

H. R. H. Prince Alfred, Duke of Connaught, responded to the toast, "The Navy, Army and Auxilliary Forces, and their Representative here, H. R. H. General, the Duke of Connaught." Lord Landsdowne, secretary of state for war, followed, and after referring to the fact that the "unprecedented request" of the United States government to allow the landing of an armed force in England, had been promptly granted, proposed "The Ambassador of the United States."

Honorable Thomas F. Bayard, responded for himself, in terms which clearly set forth that his diplomacy and that of the English statesmen with whom he dealt, had no diplomatic secrets. "I wish to say," he declared, "that the language of *finesse* and the still poorer language of menace is unfitted to two such peoples as I believe our two peoples to be."

He called attention to the fact that "For four thousand miles between the dominions of Great Britain and of the United States, there has not been for nearly a century, the presence of one regiment of armed men or of one armed vessel worthy of the name of a man-of-war," and in eloquent terms declared that "Plain intent and truth must be supreme in the relations of the two lands."

An original ode by Captain William T.W. Ball followed, and Colonel Walker closed the exercises by saying: "Our hour of parting has come. It will be a parting of the flesh, but not of the spirit. We of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company will soon follow the setting sun westward to our homes, but the sunshine of the last few days will never set for any of us. It will shine on while life is ours, and clothing our memories with perennial beauty, will warm into life a rich harvest of affection, the seeds of which the boundless hospitality we have received has planted within us. Taps must now sound the close of this feast and of our visit.

*"But ere the order comes to march, a toast must intervene:*

*Long live our Mother England, and again, 'God Save the Queen!'"*

The whole audience rose to its feet in an instant, and cheer upon cheer and the sharp, deep rattle of the "artillery fire" mingled in a storm of applause, enthusiasm and interchange of mutual, personal and international good wishes and parting regrets.

Colonel Walker, with due courtesy, accompanied the Prince of Wales to his carriage, where they parted, and returning, wished his departing guests goodnight.

On July 10, the members of the Company spent the forenoon in seeing London. In the afternoon a guard of honor of 100 infantry of the Honourable Artillery, under Captain William Evans, escorted it to Marlborough House, where the Horse Artillery, under Lieutenant A. A. Lowe, and the Field Battery, Lieutenant H. C. Ducum, had furnished detachments for guarding the grounds. Here the Prince of Wales reviewed the Companies, which later marched in review, after which Colonel Walker was presented to the Princess of Wales, the Duke and Duchess of York, the Princess Louise and other members of the royal family. The Massachusetts Company then formed three sides of a square, and the officers, advancing to the front and centre, were presented to the Prince and Princess of Wales. The Prince then welcomed the Company as follows:

"Officers and men of the Boston Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company: It gives the Princess and myself great pleasure to receive you here to-day. We hope that the visit you are making will be as agreeable to you as your coming has been to us; and I hope that you will carry back to your homes in the United States agreeable remembrances of your visit and a good idea of what you have seen here. The Princess joins me in welcoming you to our London house, and I am most happy to have the honor of receiving you here."

Colonel Walker having suitably acknowledged the courtesy of the Prince, the Company broke ranks and spent one of the most enjoyable hours of its English visit. A collation was provided in a large marquee, and the beautiful grounds presented a brilliant and lively spectacle. The Prince of Wales received many members personally, and the Princess was no less courteous and tactful, among other things expressing a wish to inspect the Company colors, which were submitted and explained to her by the respective colorbearers, Captains J. Payson Bradley and Walter S. Sampson. At 5.30 o'clock the Company reformed, and giving a marching salute to their royal hosts, marched back to their hotel. In the evening the Company attended a smoking concert at the armory of the Honourable Artillery Company. Lieutenant-Colonel the Earl of Denbigh presided, and among the principal guests were the Duke of York, the Duke of Connaught, the Duke of Teck, the Prince of Saxe Weimar, Major-General Lord Methuen and many noble and gallant gentlemen. The programme of some fifty numbers, included the most popular performers of the London stage.

On the afternoon of July 11, an inspection and review of the Honourable Artillery Company at its armory, was attended by many members. Lord Methuen inspected the command, which turned out four companies of infantry 300 strong, which passed the reviewing stand with a front of twenty-six files, first in open column and then in column at quarter distance. It was preceded by the Field Artillery, Captain Bell, and followed

by the Horse Artillery under Major McMeeking. The artillery afterward passed at a trot, and an advance in line, ended by a general salute, closed the review. Colonel Walker was here also asked by Lord Methuen to step to the front and receive the salute, a marked and unusual courtesy.

After a collation, good-byes were said, and the Company separated on various tours of pleasure and interest. Colonel Walker remained in London to attend a garden party given at Buckingham Palace, July 13, to celebrate the coming marriage of the Princess Maude to Prince Charles of Denmark, which marriage was duly solemnized July 15.

On July 23, the "Servia" being about to sail, a large delegation of the officers of the Volunteer Association of Manchester and District, headed by President Colonel Robert Bridgford, C. B. V. D., came on board and with due ceremony presented to the Company a magnificently engrossed and illuminated address in a costly gold frame. After the presentation toasts were exchanged, the last being "The Stars and Stripes and the Union Jack: unconquerable apart, invincible united."

At 4.35 P. M. the last good-byes were said and the "Servia" sailed for Boston, where it arrived July 31, at 6.35 A. M. Although the early arrival of the "Servia" diminished the brilliancy of the reception which had been organized, the Company was nevertheless properly escorted to the State House by their comrades of the Ancients, under Captain Wm. Hatch Jones, the Charlestown City Guard, Captain Francis Meredith, the Fusileer Veterans, Captain J. F. Sellon, the National Lanciers, Captain Oscar E. Jones, and Post 200, G. A. R., J. B. Ridlon commanding. Governor Wolcott in fitting terms welcomed them back to Massachusetts, and Mayor Quincy at Faneuil Hall re-echoed the welcome for the city of Boston.

The fall field days, October 5-9, 1896, were given to an excursion to Baltimore, where on the 6th they were received by representatives of the city government and escorted by the Fourth Regiment Maryland National Guard and the First Naval Battalion to the Carrollton Hotel, where they were presented with a splendid memorial trophy by the Veteran Volunteer Firemen's Association. In the evening they attended a theatre party as the guests of the city. On the 7th, Annapolis was visited, and in the evening the Ancients gave their friends a banquet at Hazazar's Hall. Nearly 340 men took part in this excursion.

On April 27, 1897, the Ancients took part in that great memorial parade which celebrated the completion of the mausoleum of General U. S. Grant, at Riverside Park, New York City. On arriving in New York they were received at the station by the officers of the Old Guard, who escorted them to the Murray Hill Hotel, where a collation awaited them. On the 27th they marched the ten-mile course of that grand parade, having in line eighty officers and men, and the same night returned to Boston.

Six smoke talks were held in 1896-97: At Faneuil Hall, November 23, December 22 and March 15; at the Revere House, January 26, the Quincy House, February 22 and at the American House, April 19. Fifty-four new members were admitted.

At the 259th anniversary, June 7, 1897, the Company paraded 200 strong. Rev. Stephen H. Rollin, D.D., preached at the New Old South Church from Matt. v. 34: "I came not to bring peace but a sword." The dinner at Faneuil Hall was naturally made memorable by many and eloquent references to the visit of the Company to the Honourable Artillery Company of London. At the election Colonel J. Payson Bradley, of Boston, was elected captain.

The first event of 1897-98 was the escort tendered the sailors and marines of H. M. S. "Pallas" and the veterans of the British army and navy attending the Victorian Diamond Jubilee Festival at Mechanics' Building, June 21, 1897. The Company paraded about 280 men, and escorted some ninety British seamen and a detachment of the Royal Marines up State and Court Streets to the armory of the National Lancers, where 123 rank and file of the British Navy and Army Veterans Association joined the parade. The banquet, at which Colonel Curtis Guild gracefully presided, was a great success. This courtesy paid by the Ancients to her naval officers and seamen and veterans of the British service was personally acknowledged by Queen Victoria through Her Majesty's Secretary of State, saying, "The queen was especially gratified, that the Ancient and Honourable Company should have afforded an escort to the sailors and marines of H. M. S. 'Pallas' on their progress through the streets of Boston, amid the cordial greetings of its citizens."

On the 260th field day, October 4-7, 1897, the Company visited Buffalo, N. Y. On the way the Forty-First Unattached Company, New York National Guard of Syracuse received them with due honor, and the supper which followed was a most enjoyable occasion. At Buffalo they were escorted by the Sixty-Fifth and Seventy-Fourth Regiments, New York National Guard, and put up at the Iroquois, where a notable banquet took place on the evening of the 6th.

The smoke talks of 1897-98 were held at the Quincy House, November 18, December 28, January 20, and February 22, 1898. The latter was notable for the feeling excited by the recent destruction of the "Maine." A friendly cable despatch from the London Company was read at this meeting:

"Members of Honourable Artillery Company wish to convey to their comrades in Boston, and to the whole of your great nation, their deep sympathy in the great calamity which has befallen you, by the untimely death of so many of your gallant officers and seamen by the sad disaster when on duty."

The preservation of Faneuil Hall was brought up by a letter from Governor Wolcott, and also elicited discussion, as did the impending war with Spain. The fifth smoke talk was very fully attended, a proposition to form a battery for service in case of war with Spain was made and discussed. The sixth, on April 19, 1898, also held at the Quincy House, brought together some four hundred men. There was much patriotism in all the utterances of the evening.

When war became inevitable, Commander Bradley canvassed the Company to ascertain how many members would volunteer to form a battery for coast defense. One hundred and twenty-five members, seventy-three of whom had seen service in the United States navy or army, or the militia of Massachusetts, volunteered to serve in this capacity. No artillery was taken from Massachusetts, and the project was perforce abandoned.

The following members, however, served in the Spanish-American War:—

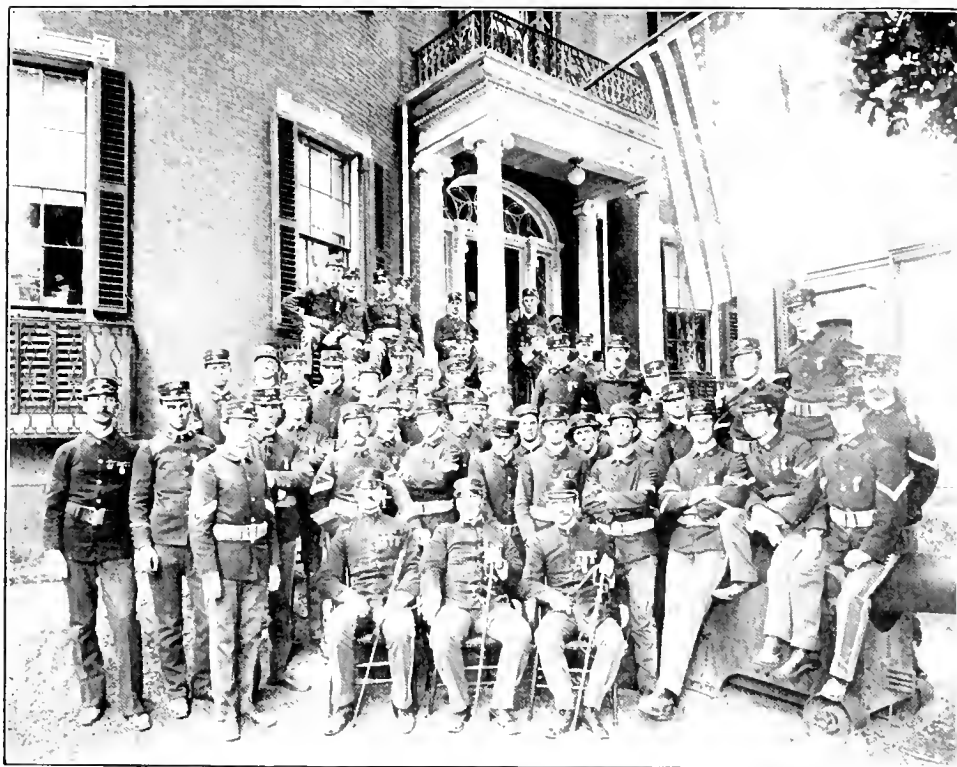
Col. Embury P. Clark, 2d Regt. Mass. Infantry, U. S. V., advance on Santiago, Cuba, etc. (see biography, Vol. I., p. 501); Lieut.-Col. Edwin P. Bailey, 8th Mass. Infantry, U. S. V., Matanzas, Cuba; Maj. Perlle A. Dyar, 1st Regt. Mass. Heavy Artillery, U. S. V.; Capt. Fred McDonald, 5th Mass. Infantry, U. S. V.; Capt. Henry L. Kincaide, 5th Mass. Infantry, U. S. V.; Paymaster Rufus Coffin, U. S. N.; Lieut. Albert A. Gleason, 1st Mass. Heavy Artillery, U. S. V.

On May 9, 1898, a formal invitation to the Honourable Artillery Company of London to visit Boston in 1900 was drafted and forwarded, and the reception thereof was duly acknowledged by Lord Colville of Culross.

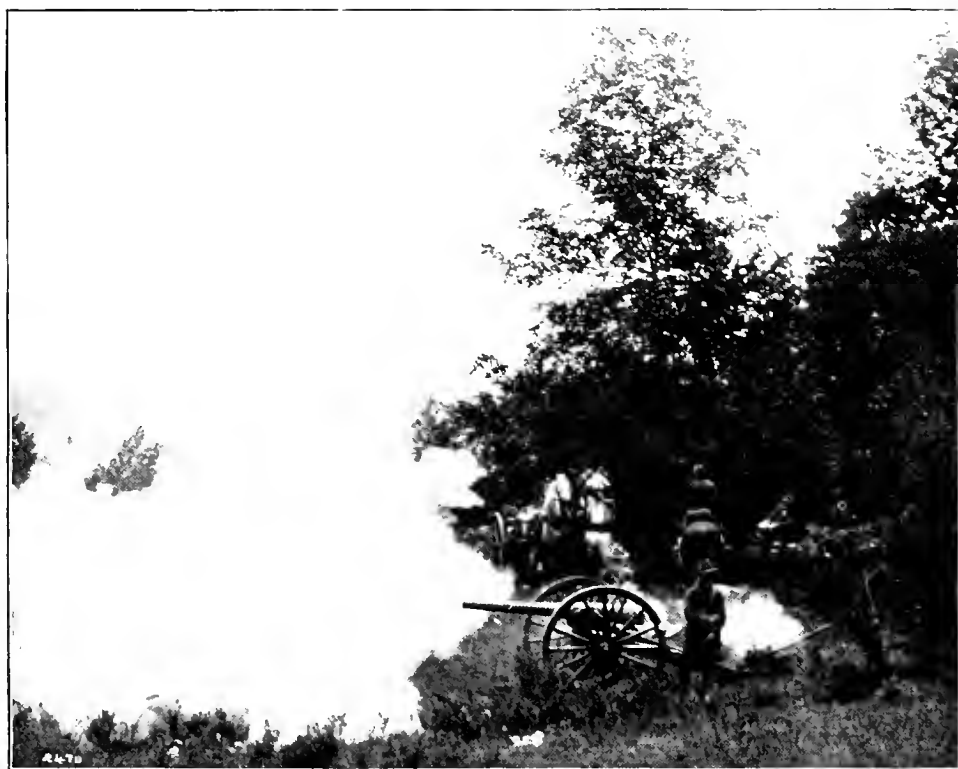
At the 260th anniversary, Monday, June 6, 1898, 260 rank and file paraded. Rev. R. R. Meredith, at the New Old South Church, preached from Romans xii. 18: "If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men." His sermon was full of that expansionist fervor which was born of the destruction of the Spanish fleets by Dewey and Schley, and the collapse of the war power of Spain. The banquet, at which Commander Bradley presided, was a memorable occasion. Major Lawrence Duchesney was elected captain.

On February 2, 1898, Commander Bradley and others had petitioned Mayor Quincy to have Faneuil Hall made fireproof. A great deal of discussion followed, but the marketmen generously backed up the Ancients, and the city finally appropriated \$80,000, with which the building was strengthened and made practically fireproof, the work being finally completed in 1899. Thirty-three members were admitted in 1897-98.

The fall Field Days were celebrated October 3-6, 1898, by a visit 250 strong to the fortress city of Quebec. Arriving at Point Lewis in the evening, the Ancients saw, in answer to their signal rockets, Dufferin Terrace, illuminated with lanterns and fireworks, and the lights of dis-



COMPANY D, SECOND CORPS CADETS. CAPTAIN P. F. PACKARD.



*Photo by Marr.*

FIRST BATTALION LIGHT ARTILLERY FIELD MANEVRES, FIRST BRIGADE.  
MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY AND ARTILLERY, 1900.





tant Quebec, whither they were conveyed in the steamer "Polaris," and were escorted to their quarters at the Frontenac. The evening was passed informally in receiving Canadian and English gentlemen at the Frontenac; and by other members at the Garrison Club, which had hospitably thrown open its doors to the Ancients.

On Tuesday, October 4, the Company marched to the Citadel, where Major-General Edward H. Hutton, A. D. C. to H. R. M. the Queen, commanding the troops in Canada, with his staff, a guard of honor, a company of the Royal Canadian Garrison Artillery and a section of field artillery received them. The usual military courtesies were exchanged, and General Hutton welcomed the Ancients to the Citadel. A little later the Governor-General of Canada, the Earl of Aberdeen, with Lady Marjorie Gordon, accompanied by Lord Herschell, Major Dennison and other gentlemen, entered, having come by special train from Montreal. He was saluted with nineteen guns and the usual formalities, and he then declared the Ancients "welcome to Canada, welcome to Quebec."

Captain Duchesney answered in soldierly wise, and the formalities being over, the ranks were broken amid loud cheering for the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Lord Aberdeen, the Canadian troops, the President of the United States and Queen Victoria. The visitors then viewed from the ramparts scenes famous in ancient sieges and battles, where Phips, Frontenac, Wolfe and Montcalm, Montgomery, Arnold, Morgan and other brave leaders, French, English and American, had fearlessly sought "glory or a grave." Meanwhile the officers, with distinguished guests, were entertained at luncheon by the Earl of Aberdeen and his lady, after which the officers of the several organizations were photographed with the Governor-General.

The banquet given by the Ancients on the evening of the 4th, at the Chateau Frontenac, was enjoyed by over 400 people, including most of the statesmen of Canada and many prominent Americans. Commander Duchesney presided with feeling and dignity, reminding his hearers with soldierly frankness of his own Canadian birth:

"I may be excused this evening if I have a personal pride in presiding at this board, for I was born in the Province of Quebec, near Kingsey, close to the St. Francis River. When a boy—over forty years ago—I drifted to Massachusetts, later becoming a citizen of the United States, and serving four years in its army in the War of the Rebellion. Now, I return to visit my fatherland, as the commander of the oldest and proudest military organization in America."

The speeches of the Earl of Aberdeen, Senator Fairbanks, of Indiana; Sir Wilfred Laurier, Lieutenant Thomas Savage, the Hon. F. G. Marchand, premier of the province of Quebec; Major-General E. H. Hutton, of the Dominion forces; Captain Thomas Y. Olys, Captain McCalla, of the U. S. S. "Marblehead"; Lieutenant-Colonel J. Frank

Supplee, of Maryland; Lieutenant-Colonel J. F. Wilson, commanding the garrison of Quebec; Colonel Henry Walker and Colonel S. J. Duchesney, of the Garrison Club, were all full of interest. Englishman, Frenchman, American, statesman, soldier, naval officer, civilian; all tuned their eloquence to one common chord, the close brotherhood of blood and community of interest, which demanded that peace and generosity should forever keep in the bonds of concord, England, Canada and the United States.

October 5 was spent in seeing the sights of Quebec, the Falls of Montmorency, the Shrine of Ste Anne de Beaupre and other localities. The company returned here on the 6th.

Six smoke talks, all at the Quincy House, took place on November 21 and December 14, 1898, January 19, February 22, March 13, and February 19, 1899. At these the topics of expansion, English-American alliance, and the proposed visit of the Honourable Company in 1900, were prominent topics. During this period increased attention was paid to the discipline of the Company; and the thorough reconstruction of Faneuil Hall and the armory promised to give the Company a broader and wider field of action and usefulness. The acceptance of the invitation to visit Boston, by the London Company, was followed by the appointment of committees, to carry out this most interesting international event. Unfortunately, the outbreak of war with the Dutch republic of South Africa made it impossible to realize the hopes and wishes of these gallant organizations. Sterner duties called to the desperate and fatal warfare of the African veldt and mountains the soldierly and generous hosts of "the London detachment."

The 261st anniversary, June 5, 1899, found the Company, for the first time in several generations, shut out from Faneuil Hall. They met in the armory of the National Lancers in the morning, and escorted Governor Wolcott from his residence on Commonwealth Avenue to the Old South Church, where Rev. William K. Hall, D. D., of Newburgh, N. Y., preached from Matthew x., 34, "I came not to bring peace, but a sword."

Lieutenant Edward P. Cramm, of Boston, was elected commander, and with the other officers-elect was commissioned by Governor Wolcott. Including the honorary staff and excluding the music, there were nearly 800 officers and men in the parade. During this year the old-style muzzle-loading 55-100ths calibre Springfield rifles, so long carried by the Ancients, were exchanged for breech-loading Springfields, with rod bayonet.

At the 262d anniversary, June 5, 1900, Colonel Alexander Marsh Ferris, (1890) of Newton, in 1861, captain Company K, Thirtieth Massachusetts Volunteers, and in 1864, provost marshal, on the staff of General William Emery, 1st Division, 19th Army Corps, was

elected captain. Governor W. Murray Crane commissioned the officers. The election sermon was preached by Rev. Roswell D. Hoes, late chaplain of the U. S. battleship Iowa.

During the administration of Colonel Ferris the drill of the corps has been much more persistent and effective than usual, and to this extent the Ancients follow more closely the purposes of their founders, than at other periods of their existence as a company. As a prominent factor in the study and practice of the military art, and representative of the best thought and purpose of the militia of the State, it can hardly claim to be fulfilling the original practical purpose of its founders. It would seem, even to a friendly critic, that it needs more members who are officers in the State militia, desirous of maintaining and increasing its efficiency.

On the other hand, the visits of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company to other states and alien cities, their generous hospitality, the noble and patriotic sentiments which characterize their utterances, their courtesy, self-respect and tact, have reflected great credit, not only upon their ancient association, but upon the city, state and nation, which they have so often and so fittingly represented.

An hundred ambassadors, and myriads of despatches and communications, could never have appealed to the hearts of the English rulers and people with a tithe of the effect created by the visit of the "London detachment" in 1896; for under the flags of the republic and the Old Bay State, in "effeir of war and under arms," they met a body of American citizens, patriotic, independent in spirit, generous and hospitable beyond limit, who, nevertheless, could appreciate and reflect the spirit of British loyalty and patriotism, and meet the first gentlemen of Europe on an equal footing of dignity, eloquence and chivalrous courtesy.

The Queen, who sacrificed something of the traditional prestige of her royal house to welcome the flags and arms of an alien people, and in her old age and growing infirmities of the body, willingly received them in all courtesy and honor, lies dead while we write. The heir apparent, whose name has been so long borne on the rolls of the Massachusetts Company as an honorary member, and who has enjoyed and reciprocated their hospitality, is now King of Great Britain and Emperor of India. Many who then met in such generous wise are dead, or have seen stern service and met with loss and bereavements remediless. Like associations attach to their American and Canadian excursions.

Out of these and like proud and pleasurable memories, and sadder reflections, have grown many subtle and potent bonds, which are to-day an influence for a closer ties of love and peace at home, and of a more generous and liberal concord with our Canadian neighbors and that great and free English people, of which, although under another form of government, we are a part.

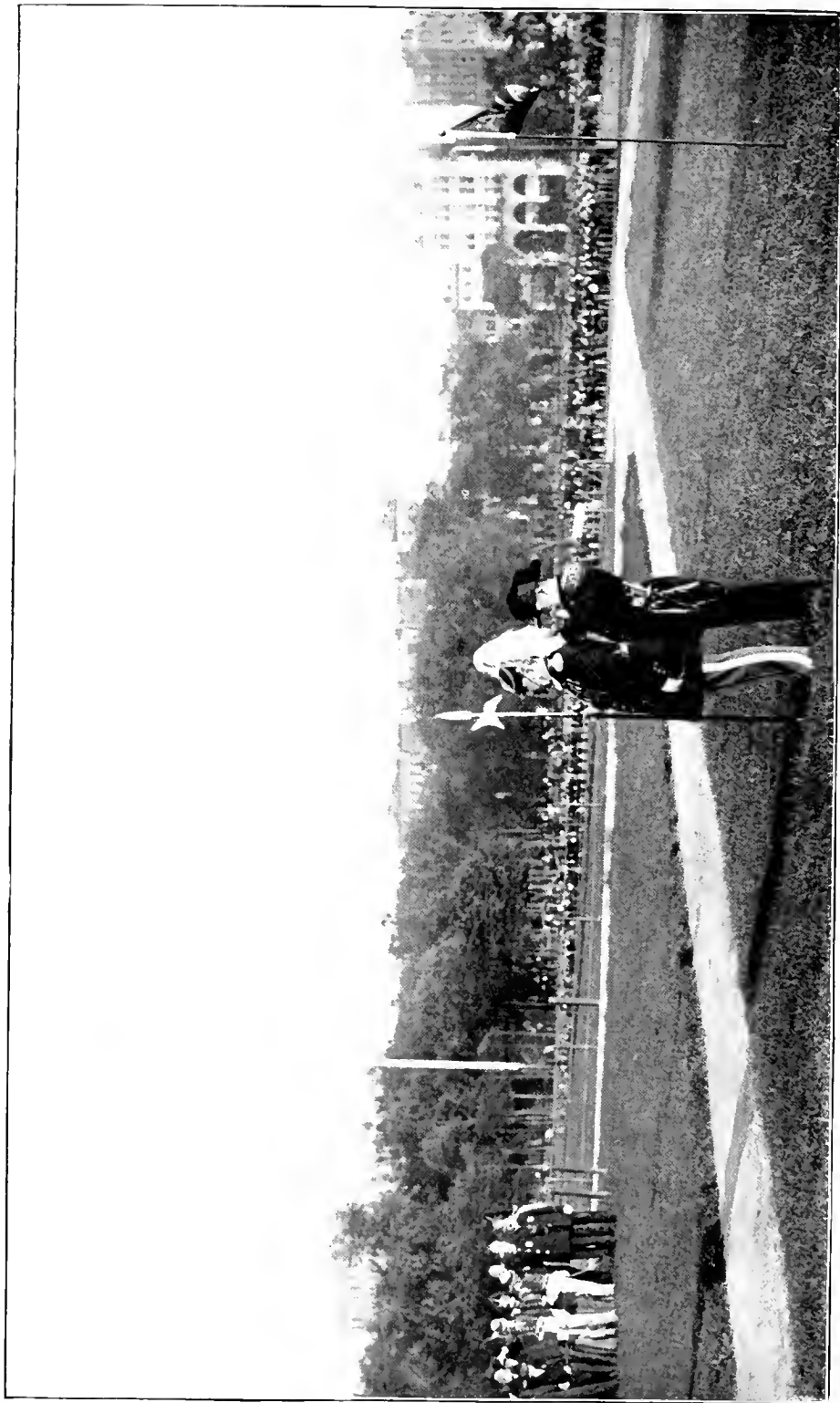
The frequent smoke talks and other gatherings of the Company at home, have been constant reminders of the past services and sacrifices of its soldier members, by land and sea, and in many and distant realms, in former days, for the honor, glory and liberty of the English people, and later for the Great Republic.

The mystical haze of tradition and antiquity, and remnants of the ceremony of more ancient days, give to their annual parade, religious services and drum-head election, a never-failing interest; and the historians of the corps, Whitman, who first, with infinite pains, constructed the foundation; and Roberts, whose immense labors have built upon it a splendid superstructure, rich in historical and biographical lore, have made it possible for the scholar and genealogist to study and appreciate the past of a company, whose membership for 262 years has embraced so many, who in their day and generation were not only brave and wise, successful and famous, but were also generous, genial and lovable gentlemen.

Colonel Ferris' year of command (1900-1901) was notable for a great change in the Company in regard to drill. The new United States tactics were adopted as the basis of company tactics. Khaki drill uniforms were provided and regular drill nights were appointed, Colonel Ferris being energetically supported by his officers and sergeants in his endeavor to increase military efficiency. Each company of infantry and artillery drilled once every two weeks during the winter, and each Monday a drill was held for the benefit of such members as could not identify themselves with any of the various sub-divisions and for such members as had been obliged to be absent on the regular drill nights. This work, then only partially completed for the year, resulted in a report by Colonel Ferris in March, that 110 members had been drilled regularly during the winter, forty or more of them being then really proficient.

The year was also especially notable for the large list of applications for membership, among them those of Congressman Samuel L. Powers, State Senators Post, Fales and Huntress, and ex-Mayor Bruce of Lawrence.

In the October (1900) fall field days the Company made its second visit to Montreal, and while there was given an escort and shown other courtesies by the Canadian military stationed in that city. On the way home it was received and escorted at Burlington, Vt., by the local company of the Vermont National Guard. Arriving in Boston on its return, a battalion of the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery was found waiting to escort it to Faneuil Hall. This friendly spirit between the two organizations, which had begun four years earlier in the drilling of the London contingent by officers of the First Heavy Artillery, was fostered during the winter following, Colonel Frye tendering a review to Colonel Ferris



INSTALLATION OF COMMANDER FERRIS, ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, 1900. ADJUTANT-GENERAL DALTON FASTENING THE GORGET.



at a battalion drill, and several of his officers adding their names to the list of those who already held membership in the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

Upon the occasion of the services at Trinity Church in February in memory of Queen Victoria, the Company paraded as escort to Consul-General Blunt. Suitable resolutions, expressive of the genuine sorrow felt by the members of the Company, were passed and duly forwarded to the son and successor of the great and good queen who had so gracefully and generously received and honored the London detachment.

\*            \*            \*            \*            \*

Some account of the annual parade, election and installation of officers which have for so many generations been observed by the Company follows:

#### FORMS AND CEREMONIES OBSERVED ON ANNIVERSARIES OF THE COMPANY.

At sunrise on the morning of the Anniversary Field Day, a sufficient number of drummers and fifers, detailed by the adjutant, repair to the residence of such commissioned officers and past commanders as are within a reasonable distance of the armory, and beat the reveille; the musicians receive a collation on their return to the armory.

The members assemble in full uniform at the armory, at the hour appointed, a light breakfast being provided by the committee of arrangements.

At such hour as the commander may direct, the line is formed by the adjutant, the staff having first preceded the commander from the armory to their position on the right.

The company is turned over to the captain by the adjutant with the usual ceremonies, and the line of march taken to the State House, where his Excellency the Governor and staff, with the invited guests, are received, and thence escorted to the church to listen to the annual sermon.

After the services, the governor and other guests are escorted to Faneuil Hall, where the annual dinner is served.

The captain presides, sitting in the center of the platform table; on his right is seated the President of the United States, if present; on his left the mayor of the city of Boston. On the right of the President, His Excellency the Governor of the Commonwealth (with his adjutant-general or chief of staff); on the left of the mayor the president of Harvard College, and next the chaplain of the day, who invokes the divine blessing. Farther to the right and left, the persons selected to respond to the various sentiments (usually thirteen in number) in the order thereof. Any additional seats or vacancies may be filled as the captain directs.

In the absence of the President, His Excellency the Governor occupies the seat next on the right of the captain.

The first lieutenant presides at the head of the centre table, at which military guests are seated; the second lieutenant at the next table to the right devoted to civic guests; and the adjutant that to the left; at additional tables staff officers highest in rank preside, and the sergeants sit at the foot of the tables, to the right and left from the center in the order of their rank. The adjutant acts as toast-master. After din-

ner the company is re-formed, and escorts His Excellency the Governor to the parade ground on the Common; but if he has retired before the end of the services, he is again received at the State House, and escorted from thence. As the Governor enters the parade ground, an artillery salute of seventeen guns is fired; his Excellency, staff, and invited guests leave the column, and are escorted to the pavilion.

The staff and other military guests form upon the left of his Excellency, the civic guests upon his right. The company then proceeds to a position opposite the Governor, and line is formed for review.

The reviewing officer now approaches a few yards toward the captain and halts, when the captain faces about and commands: Present, Arms. The officers and men present arms; the captain faces about and salutes. The colors also salute and the music sounds a march. The reviewing officer acknowledges the salute, after which the captain faces about and brings the company to carry arms.

The captain, with his sword at a carry, then joins the reviewing officer, who proceeds to the right of the band, and passing in front of the officers to the left of the line, returns to the right, passing in rear of the rear rank and band. The latter plays in quick time, commencing when the captain joins the reviewing officer and ceasing when he leaves the right of the band to return to his station. The captain returns to his post and the rear line closes in close order.

The reviewing officer having taken his position, the captain commands: 1. Companies, right wheel, 2. March. At the second command the company breaks into columns of companies, being promptly dressed to the left; the official staff (excepting the adjutant) place themselves in the order of rank from right to left, on a line equal to the front of the column, and the honorary staff are formed in the rear, the whole six yards in front of the leading sergeant; the first lieutenant on a line with the leading company; the second lieutenant on a line with the first company of the left wing; the adjutant on a line with the second company from the front; the sergeant-major on a line with the rear company, each six yards from the left flank of the column. The non-commissioned staff (excepting the sergeant-major) place themselves in the order of rank from right to left on a line equal to the front of the column, six yards in rear of the rear company; the band wheels to the right and takes post twelve yards in front of the staff.

The captain then commands: "Pass in review. Forward. Guide right. March!" At the fourth command the column steps off, the officers remaining in the positions above prescribed, the band playing, the column changes direction without command from the captain at the points indicated, the captain taking his place six yards in front of the staff immediately after the second change; the band, having passed the reviewing officer, wheels to the left out of the column and takes post in front of and facing the reviewing officer, where it remains till the rear of the column has passed, when it countermarches and returns by the most direct route to its place before the review, ceasing to play as the company arrives at its original position.

The company and staff (except the adjutant) salute together when the captain is at six yards from the reviewing officer and return to the carry again when the captain has marched six yards beyond him.

The other officers, the non-commissioned staff and the sergeants in command of companies, salute as prescribed for the captain. Staff and non-commissioned staff without swords, do not salute. All officers and non-commissioned officers who salute look toward the reviewing officer. The colors salute when at six yards from the reviewing officer and are raised when six yards beyond him; as the colors salute the trumpeters or field music sound a march, flourishes or ruffles, according to his rank, the band continuing to play.



The reviewing officer acknowledges only the salute of the captain and colors.

The captain, having saluted, places himself on the right of the reviewing officer, where he remains till the company has passed, when he rejoins the company. The head of the column having executed a second change of direction to the left, after having passed the reviewing officer, the captain commands, *Guide left*; and when it arrives on the original ground: 1. *Left into line wheel*. 2. *March*; opens the ranks as in the previous case, presents arms and salutes. The acknowledgment of the salute by the reviewing officer terminates the review.

#### ELECTION OF OFFICERS.

The review completed, three or four right companies are wheeled as a division to the left, and a like number on the left are wheeled to the right, thus forming three sides of a square; the company then proceeds to elect officers for the ensuing year, the ballots being deposited on the head of a drum, which the adjutant has caused to be placed in the centre of the square.

The votes are counted by the adjutant, and as the election is declared, that officer causes the drums to beat three rolls for the captain, two for the first lieutenant, and one each for the second lieutenant and adjutant.

The adjutant announces the result of the election, and repairs to his Excellency, requesting his confirmation, which he announces on his return to the captain.

During the absence of the adjutant, company line is again formed, the captain gives the command, *order arms*; resumes his front and immediately proceeds across the parade ground and resigns his insignia of office; the first lieutenant faces to the left and proceeds to the centre of the company to assume command. At the same time the newly elected captain, being properly equipped, proceeds from the right, in rear of the line of sergeants, to the centre, where he takes position in line with the sergeants. The captain arriving at six yards from his Excellency, halts and salutes; then advances two paces, addresses the Governor and tenders his resignation with his insignia of office. He then remains at attention, and covered (unless his Excellency should uncover), and listens to such remarks as the Governor may please to address to him.

He then faces to the right about, and proceeds towards the line. At the moment when the retiring captain advances from his Excellency, the newly chosen captain proceeds from his position toward the Governor; the two officers salute as they meet midway the field, passing to the right, and the retiring captain passes through the line and takes his place in the ranks. The captain elect, on arriving at six yards from his Excellency, halts, salutes, and advancing two paces, stands at attention, while the Governor addresses him, concluding by directing the adjutant-general to confer the insignia of his office and commission. The captain makes a suitable reply, and on concluding salutes, faces to the right about and proceeds toward the company; he passes to the right of the retiring first lieutenant, whom he meets, both saluting, and at twenty paces from the line he halts.

When the newly elected captain leaves the line to march to the Governor, the adjutant proceeds from the right, in rear of the line of sergeants, to the centre, and takes post in the line of sergeants immediately in the rear of the first lieutenant then in command of the company.

When the newly commissioned captain faces about to leave his Excellency, the first lieutenant comes to the right about, gives the command, *carry arms*, again faces about and at once proceeds from his position directly to the front, passing to the right of and saluting the captain, whom he meets; the adjutant at once steps into the position vacated by the first lieutenant.

When the new captain comes to a halt the adjutant faces about, and commands, *present arms*, resumes his front and salutes; the salute being acknowledged, the adjutant faces about and returns, by rear of the line of sergeants, to his position on the right. The captain then gives the commands, *carry arms*, *order arms*, and faces to the front.

The first lieutenant, on arriving within six yards of his Excellency, halts, salutes, and advances two paces; he then resigns his commission and tenders the delivery of his esponton, which being accepted he faces about, returns to and through the line, and again takes position in the ranks.

When the captain has faced to the front after accepting the salute, the newly elected first lieutenant, being properly equipped, proceeds from the right, by rear of the line of sergeants, to the centre, taking position in line with the sergeants.

When the retiring first lieutenant leaves the Governor, the newly chosen officer proceeds directly to the front, the ceremony being completed as before.

When the newly commissioned first lieutenant leaves his Excellency the captain faces about and commands *carry arms*, and then resumes his front. When the first lieutenant arrives within four yards of the captain, he halts; the captain faces about and commands, *present arms*, faces about and salutes; the salute being acknowledged, the captain faces about, commands *carry arms*, *order arms*, and resumes his front.

The lieutenant proceeds by rear of the line of sergeants to his position.

In like manner the second lieutenant and adjutant resign their insignia of office, and their successors are duly commissioned by the Governor.

The newly elected officers receive an artillery salute as they come forward, the commander being greeted with three guns, the first lieutenant with two and the second lieutenant and adjutant with one each.



Photo by Marr.

AFTER TAPS, FIRST BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1900.



*Frank M. Huntington.*  
Brig. Gen. U. S. A.  
Commanding General Mass.



## CHAPTER XVII.

### THE COMMISSARIAT IN 1900.

By Brigadier-General Fred W. Wellington, Commissary-General of Massachusetts.

UNTIL the present year, there has never been any practical solution of the important problem of rationing the state militia, in a way which should not only be satisfactory to officers and men while in camp, but could be carried into the field, and increase the comfort, health, morale and efficiency of Massachusetts troops.

The importance of nutritious, healthful, varied and appetizing food to the soldier, when on distant service, has only of late been recognized even by military and medical experts; and the history of the commissariat of nearly every war is a record of coarse, and too often half-spoiled provisions, with inferior bread, issued to incapable cooks, and eaten without any sense of pleasure, except that hunger is for the time appeased.

The camps of the Massachusetts militia, until now, on the other hand, have been for the most part characterized by repasts, always costly, often unsatisfactory, and rarely or never in keeping with the main purpose of these tours of duty; the attainment of complete and practical preparation for active service in the field in time of war.

The general practice for years has been to engage a caterer for the regiment, battalion, troop or company, who contracted to supply so many men at prices varying from \$1.25 to \$2.00 per day per man, and from fifty to seventy-five cents per meal extra for each guest. The whole state pay of a private soldier is \$2.00 per day, including rations, a sum which has been insufficient to pay the cost of his subsistence and incidental expenses during his annual tour of camp duty. At the close of 1889 these conditions had been somewhat modified, by the issuance of Buzzacott ovens and complete cooking kits to each company, and the personal efforts of sundry officers to attain for their special commands a more economical, practical and military system.

In 1897, Inspector-General J. L. Carter, in his yearly report, had made the following commentary on the unmilitary and costly methods still prevailing:

"XI. I deem it of the first importance that radical changes be made in the manner of feeding the troops at camp. This whole branch of the soldier's training should be under the charge of military officers, for it is military work as much as any other. If the troops are not properly fed three times a day, of what use are they for service? There should be a staff of officers learning and teaching how to feed the troops.

"The system of rationing used by the Naval Brigade seems to me to be as near the model as we have got. The cost per man, per day, on the last tour of duty of that

command was one dollar, and the food entirely satisfactory both in quality and quantity. I believe that good and plentiful rations could be furnished the troops at the annual encampments for a considerably lower price than this, under proper management."

Colonel Jacob Kline, of the Twenty-First Infantry, U. S. A., who in 1897 inspected the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, embodied the following in his report:

23. Subsistence — Rations, Component parts of — How furnished? How prepared?

"In the brigade camps, companies provided their messes, employing a caterer. The (First) regiment and First Corps of Cadets had the general mess system, employing a caterer: Second Corps of Cadets, general mess, but the catering was done by the battalion quartermaster.

"The rationing of troops by the State is now being considered, the men to do the cooking. If brought about it will greatly add to their efficiency, as they will have to be prepared for it in service."

Adjutant-General Dalton, in his report of the same year, thus reverted to this important matter:

"Now that the grounds are supplied with mess-rooms, the question of rationing troops by the State is receiving consideration. I refer you to the report of Brigadier-General Francis H. Appleton (then commissary-general) on this subject. In my opinion, the issue of rations should not be made until the subject has received all the attention its importance demands. Troops should be fed the coming year by one caterer, or at least one to each battalion, and gradually a proper plan can be formulated for State supervision."

Brigadier-General Appleton's report (as commissary-general) contained the following conclusions, arrived at after an inspection of the various methods of providing and serving food in the several State encampments, and investigation of methods elsewhere prevailing:

"I respectfully conclude, that if the State camp ground is to continue at South Framingham, an improved plan of kitchen and surroundings should be promptly provided.

"I incline to the belief that it would be advantageous to the State and to the troops, to have the State, at some future day, feed the troops in camp. At present, it seems best to direct that all the troops be fed under the directions of the officers of each regiment, battalion or separate company or organization, and with such menu as they shall select, subject to wise regulation by the State to a wholesome menu, and such as shall secure only the best foods of the kind selected.

"I would suggest that it may prove best for the State to provide and issue food in quantity, upon requisition made previously to camp, from cold and other storage provided by the State.

"It would be wise to have at least one or more kitchens, with pantries attached, provided in simple but thoroughly practical form, for each regimental mess hall, and one for each battalion or other mess hall in each brigade, and of practical size.

"I would strongly advise that each kitchen be placed upon a floor, to be made continuous from the mess halls to the road in rear, upon which water from a hose can

be freely and wisely shed. The kitchens should be completely separated from the mess halls.

"The space between mess halls and kitchens should be covered with canvas during encampments, to protect the food and employees from both sun and rain, and to afford good ventilation for mess halls and kitchens.

"I would suggest that the road in the rear of the mess halls be asphalted continuously. The arrangement of asphaltting would protect the kitchens, mess halls and encampment from the dust of said road in dry weather, and especially the kitchen, mess halls and employees from troublesome mud in rainy weather.

"I advise that a suitable system of drainage be established, that shall carry off the waste and rainfall from the asphalt or floors under and around the kitchens.

"The present satisfactory mess halls have replaced the troublesome and uncomfortable large tents, and the present kitchens are a relic that was an accompaniment of those tents. The present kitchens should be immediately abolished.

"I would recommend that the proper officers of each organization, inform themselves as to the methods employed by the regular army when in the field, and instruct their men.

"I earnestly commend these opinions for the next Legislature's careful consideration, in the hope that a reasonable and sufficient appropriation will be made therefor."

These recommendations were not generally carried out in 1898 for obvious reasons, as all the regiments went into the United States service, and fully realized therein the disadvantages of a training and commissariat methods, which perforce were abandoned, in actual service. As Adjutant-General Dalton expressed it:

"The camp at the State camp ground was in readiness for the arrival of the troops, and in the absence of provision by the war department, the regiments were ordered to ration themselves until such time as the general government was ready to issue rations, and the expense of rations was paid for by the Commonwealth. As soon as mustered into the service of the United States, commissaries had been appointed by the war department, and the issue of rations began."

Every militiaman who has ever exchanged the pleasant experiences of State camp for the realities of active service knows what this change means to new troops. General Benjamin F. Butler thus relates a like experience of the Eighth Regiment at Annapolis, Md., in 1861:

"Meanwhile, Commodore Blake furnished me with such provisions as he could spare from the Academy; but cooking their own rations was not one of the exercises in which my men had been drilled, and when so many pounds of salt beef and hard bread were doled out to them, and a few cords of wood distributed among them to cook the rations with, their condition of entire uncertainty as to what they could or would do was one of the most laughable incidents of the war. Further, it shows the folly of the system of holding State encampments of militia regiments to prepare the men for duties in war, while permitting them to hire a caterer to furnish and cook their rations elsewhere—a very ludicrous and useless performance. If a regiment of volunteer militia is put into camp the men should have their utensils for cooking and be taught how to cook and prepare their food."

## Bill of Fare

### Second Brigade, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia

In Camp at South Framingham, July 14 to 21, 1900.

#### SATURDAY, July 14, 1900.

##### DINNER.

Boiled new Potatoes	Beef Steak and Fried Onions	Turnips
	Fried Potatoes	
	Boiled Rice and Syrup	
	Bread	
Tea	Coffee	Milk

##### SUPPER.

Beef Stew and Dumplin	Lamb Stew and Dumplin
Bread	Fried new Potatoes
Tea	Coffee
	Milk

#### SUNDAY, July 15, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Baked Beans	Lamb Chops	Fish Balls
Eggs	Fried new Potatoes	Fried new Potatoes
Tea	Brown Bread	White Bread
	Coffee	Milk

##### DINNER.

Beets	Roast Beef	Turnips
Lettuce	Boiled new Potatoes	
White Bread	Boiled Onions	Squash
Tea	Coffee	Rice Pudding
		Milk

##### SUPPER.

Bacon and Fried Eggs	Fried new Potatoes	Rice
Tea	Bread	Cold Roast Beef
	Coffee	Milk

#### MONDAY, July 16, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Lamb Chops	Fried new Potatoes
Poached Eggs	Boiled Eggs
Tea	Bread
	Coffee
	Milk

##### DINNER.

Cabbage	Beets	Turnips	Onions	New Potatoes
Tea		Coffee		Milk

##### SUPPER.

Cold Ham	Cold Corned Beef	Corned Beef Hash
Tea	Bread	Milk
	Coffee	

#### TUESDAY, July 17, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Ham and Eggs	Boiled new Potatoes	Liver and Bacon
Tea	Coffee	Bread
		Milk

##### DINNER.

Beets	Roast Lamb	Boiled new Potatoes
Turnips	Lettuce	Boiled Rice and Syrup
Tea	Bread	Milk
	Coffee	

##### SUPPER.

Beef Stew and Dumplings	Lamb Stew and Dumplings
Tea	Bread
	Coffee
	Milk

#### WEDNESDAY, July 18, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Lamb Chops	Poached Eggs	Fried Eggs
Tea	Fried new Potatoes	Bread
	Coffee	Milk

##### DINNER.

Roast Beef	Boiled new Potatoes	Beets	Turnips
Tea	Lettuce	Bread	Milk
	Coffee		

##### SUPPER.

Fried Potatoes	Beef Stew and Dumplin	Turnips
Tea	Beets	
	Coffee	Boiled Rice
		Milk

#### THURSDAY, July 19, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Ham and Eggs	Fried new Potatoes	Bacon and Eggs
Tea	Bread	Milk
	Coffee	

##### DINNER.

Onions	Roast Spring Lamb—Mint Sauce	Beets	Turnips
Tea	Boiled new Potatoes	Bread	Milk
	Coffee		

##### SUPPER.

Beef Steak and Onions	Boiled new Potatoes	Cold Corned Beef
Tea	Bread	Milk
	Coffee	

#### FRIDAY, July 20, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Fried Mackerel	Lamb Chops	Fried new Potatoes
Tea	Bread	Milk
	Coffee	

##### DINNER.

Roast Rib of Beef	Boiled Salmon and Green Peas	Egg Sauce
Onions	Lettuce	Squash
Bread	Beets	Fish Hash
Tea	Rice Pudding	Turnips
	Coffee	Milk

##### SUPPER.

Boiled new Potatoes	Roast Lamb	Cold Corned Beef
Fish Hash	Eggs	Bread
Tea	Coffee	Milk

#### SATURDAY, July 21, 1900.

##### BREAKFAST.

Beef Steak and Onions	Fried new Potatoes	Scrambled Eggs
Tea	Bread	Milk
	Coffee	

BILL OF FARE, SECOND BRIGADE, M. V. M., JULY 14-21, 1900.

“The militia regiments of to-day (1892) if brought into the field now would be as helpless about their food in camp as was the Eighth Regiment on the parade ground of the Naval Academy in 1861.”





*From an old time war sketch.*

THE OPEN MARKET AT BEAUFORT, S. C., 1861-63.



*From an old time war sketch.*

FEDERAL FORAGERS RAIDING THE SEA ISLANDS, S. C., 1862-63.

REGULAR AND IRREGULAR SOURCES OF COMMISSARIAT SUPPLY IN THE CIVIL WAR.



The experiences of the several regiments in their camps and campaigning in 1898-99 emphasized the recommendations and warnings which for over a generation had sought to prepare the Massachusetts active militia for actual service, and to secure for it a self-centered and satisfactory commissariat which, in war, should provide from a practical service ration, well-cooked, appetizing, and nutritious food. In Janu-

Form No. 4, Substituted for Form No. 1.

No. —

Commissary Department, M. V. M.

**DAILY COMPANY RATION RETURN**

Of Company

Regiment Infantry, Stationed at

For One Day, Date,

190

Number to be present for rations,

From G. O. No. 7, A. G. O. July 1, 1899.		ARTICLES.		Quantities per ration.		No. of Men.		Total Amount required.	
				Ounces	Gills			Lbs	Ozcs
		MEAT COMPONENTS.		20					
		Or fresh mutton, when the cost does not exceed that of beef.		20					
		Or pork.		12					
		Or bacon.		12					
		Or salt beef.		22					
		Or, when meat cannot be furnished, dried fish.		14					
		Or pickled fish.		18					
		Or fresh fish.		18					
		Or salmon (canned).		18					
		BREAD COMPONENTS.		18					
		Or soft bread.		18					
		Or hard bread.		16					
		Or corn meal.		20					
		Baking powder (for troops in the field, when necessary, to enable them to bake their own bread).		18					
		VEGETABLE COMPONENTS.		24					
		Beans.		24					
		Or peas.		24					
		Or rice.		12					
		Or hominy.		12					
		Potatoes.		16					
		Or potatoes, 12½ ounces, and onions, 11 ounces; or potatoes, 11½ ounces, and canned tomatoes, 14 ounces; or 14 ounces of other fresh vegetables not canned, when they can be obtained in the vicinity of the post or transported in a wholesome condition from a distance.		16					
		COFFEE AND SUGAR COMPONENTS.		12					
		Coffee, green.		12					
		Or roasted coffee.		12½					
		Or tea, green or black.		24					
		Sugar.		24					
		Or molasses.		—					
		Or cane syrup.		—					
		SEASONING COMPONENTS.		—					
		Vinegar.		—					
		Salt.		18					
		Pepper, black.		2					
		Butter.		—					
		Milk.		—					
		Eggs.		—					

Colonel Commanding.

Captain Commanding.

DAILY COMPANY RATION RETURN. FORM NO. 4, SUBSTITUTED FOR FORM NO. 1.

ary, 1900, in order to make a beginning toward bringing about a much-needed change in rationing the troops composing the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, it was decided to abolish the old method of company catering and adopt a system as nearly as possible like that now existing in the United States service as our present laws would permit. Accordingly, in the early part of the present year, the following order was issued from the adjutant-general's office:

## COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

Adjutant-General's Office, Boston, Feb. 28, 1900.

Special Orders No. 17.

1. A board of officers consisting of the commissary-general, and three acting commissary officers of the Volunteer Militia, will convene at the State House, Boston, on Wednesday, March 7, at 2 o'clock p. m., and at such other times as may best serve the interests of the Commonwealth, for the purpose of formulating a plan to be submitted to the commander-in-chief, with recommendations for the issue of rations to the Volunteer Militia, as authorized by law.

2. The Board will also consider and report upon the advisability of furnishing the cook houses at the State camp ground with camp stoves.

Detail for the Board: Colonel Fred W. Wellington, commissary-general; Captain Herbert A. Clark, Fifth Regiment Infantry, acting commissary; Captain Stanwood G. Sweetser, Sixth Regiment Infantry, acting commissary; Lieutenant John C. Kerrison, First Battalion Cavalry, acting commissary.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief,

SAMUEL DALTON, Adjutant-General.

In accordance with the above special order, the Board met at the place and date therein given, and at frequent intervals from that time until the last meeting held by them in June, and it was through the hard work and close attention of this Board that the plans were formulated, and the proper requisition papers necessary were originated, which were adopted with some slight changes, for the rationing of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. Copies of the requisition blanks and "bill of fare" adopted and used in the Massachusetts Militia camps of 1900 are shown herewith.

At the date of this order the commissary-general ranked as colonel, but by due legislation in May, 1900, his rank was restored to brigadier-general, as had been the rule prior and up to January, 1900, the date of his appointment; a change which demonstrated the importance with which the legislature and the chief executive invested the problems about to be solved.

The service ration of the United States army was adopted in full, with the addition only of two ounces of butter, one half-pint of milk and three eggs, which adds greatly to the flavor of the regular service ration, and permits of many changes in the methods of cookery without greatly increasing the expense. These articles are procurable in quantity almost anywhere within the limits of the United States.

General Order No. 9, series of 1900, A. G. O., contained the following sections relating to the proposed commissariat reforms:

"XV. The recommendations of the Commissary Board are hereby adopted and the following instructions relative to rations and their issue will be observed:

"The commissary general is hereby authorized to purchase commissary supplies in accordance with the ration table as adopted in General Orders, No. 7, 1899, and to charge the actual cost to all organizations drawing rations, to collect from the

pay the amount charged, and to pay bills for rations purchased. The headquarters and company commanders to fill out and forward to the regimental and battalion commissary, unattached companies to brigade commissary, two weeks before a tour of

No.

Form No. 5 Substituted for Form No. 2

## Daily Consolidated Regimental Ration Return

Of		Regiment										M. V. M. for one day.										Date		190				
		Number of Men	Number of Companies	Number of Rations	Fresh Beef	Mutton or Lamb	Salt Pork	Bacon or Ham	Corned Beef	Salt Fish	Fresh Fish	Soft Bread	Dry Beans	Hominy and Rice	Peas	Collage Potatoes	Turnips	Roasted Coffee	Tea	Sugar	Syrup	Molasses	Vinegar	Salt	Pepper	Butter	Milk	Eggs
Field and Staff																												
N. C. Staff																												
Band																												
C. O. A.																												
E.																												
C.																												
D.																												
F.																												
G.																												
H.																												
I.																												
K.																												
L.																												
M.																												
Totals																												

Date . . . . . 190

Regt. Commissary.

Col. commanding.

DAILY CONSOLIDATED REGIMENTAL RATION RETURN. FORM No. 5, SUBSTITUTED FOR FORM No. 2.

duty, Ration Return No. 1. The regimental commissary returns these on Form No. 2, and forwards same to brigade commissary. The brigade commissary to consolidate these returns on Form No. 3, and forward to commissary-general.

"XVI. The commissary-general will then arrange the issue with the brigade commissary. All rations required for will be paid for out of the money received for duty performed, and officers who have had pay of officers and men assigned to them, will assign the amount due for rations through paymasters to the commissary-general, with an addition of ten per cent, over estimated cost, but only the actual cost of rations will be deducted from money received and the balance returned to the paymaster.

"XVII. Companies will furnish their fuel for cooking, but it can be furnished by the quartermasters of each command, he collecting the cost of the same, for commands.

"Buildings will be erected for the issue of rations.

"XVIII. The superintendent of the Arsenal will issue one cooking-range for each cook house, one 'ration hand cart' and one 'ration issue chest' with tools, to the commissary of regiments, battalions or unattached commands, who will receipt for the same. Commissary officers will see that cook houses are turned back clean, that ranges and utensils are cleaned and packed, and then left in ration building, with hand cart, after being inspected by the commissary-general, or officer representing him, and this order having been complied with, he will turn over the kit to ration building and require for his receipt.

"XIX. Blank forms for ration requisites and consolidation blanks will be forwarded to each command, and these requisitions with the consolidated return must be forwarded by brigade commanders two weeks before camp, to admit of purchase of supplies.

"XX. The commissary-general and the commissaries of all commands will report for duty at the camps two days before the tour of duty, and rations will be issued on arrival of troops in camp.

"XXI. Companies owning crockery may be allowed to use the same, and the manner of issue of cooked rations to enlisted men from the cook houses will be regulated by regimental, battalion, and unattached commanding officers.

"XXII. Paymasters will see that a regularly appointed company cook performs his duty as a cook, that it is so stated on the pay-rolls, and that the duty was performed by the regularly enlisted cook. The cook's pay will not be allowed unless so certified on rolls."

The following circular was issued early in the spring, in order to give all officers interested a full knowledge of the proposed changes and sufficient time for preparation:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

Commissary-General's Office, Boston, May 24, 1900.

*Circular*

"The following is published for the information of the commissary officers and commissaries of the First and Second Brigades, M. V. M.:

"Art. I. One ration return, No. 1, Form 1, will be filled out by headquarters and company commanders, based on the number of men who will attend the annual encampment.

"Signal and ambulance corps commanders will forward returns of rations to the brigade commissary. These will be forwarded as by instructions in General Order No. 9, current series, A. G. O.

"The number of officers and a conservative estimate of the number of guests expected may be added, if the officers so desire.

"This return will be numbered 1, in the upper lefthand corner, and will indicate the total number of rations required for the brigade for the entire tour of duty, without going into details of what each company's rations shall consist.

"This information is necessary in order that supplies may be purchased in advance.

"Art. II. Each company's commissary will be furnished with one blank ration return, Form No. 1, for use each day during the tour of duty, and those who have not already received said blank in sufficient numbers will be provided with the balance, or the whole number, on their arrival at camp.



"FALL IN FOR DINNER" AMERICUS, GA.



THE CRACK TEAM AT CHICKAMAUGA  
COMMISSARIAT, EIGHTH REGIMENT MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. A., 1898





"Art. III. All the commissary officers of the First Brigade will meet at the quarters of the commissary-general at State headquarters, camp at Framingham, on Thursday morning, June 14, 1900, at 10 o'clock, and those of the Second Brigade will meet at the same time and place on Thursday, July 12, 1900.

"Art. IV. Prior to 1 o'clock on Friday, the brigade commissary will cause all vegetable components (not perishable), such as beans, potatoes, and onions, as well as coffee, vinegar, sugar, salt, and pepper, to be issued and delivered to each company's commissary in quantities sufficient for the entire tour of duty.

"Art. V. At 2 o'clock in the afternoon of the same day all company commissaries will report at the storehouse of the regimental commissary, each one with Ration Return No. 2, Form No. 1, properly filled out in detail, for the amount of rations suffi-

*Form No. 6, Substituted for Form #3*

No.

### Daily Consolidated Brigade Ration Return

Of	Brigade	M. V. M. for one day.	Date	190
Number of Men				
Number of Companies				
Fresh Beef				
Mutton or Lamb				
Salt Pork				
Bacon or Ham				
Corned Beef				
Salt Fish				
Fresh Fish				
Salt Bread				
Dry Beans				
Harney and Rice				
Potatoes				
Cabbage and Onions				
Turnips				
Peas				
Carrots				
Tea				
Sugar				
Soap				
Molasses				
Vinegar				
Salt				
Pepper				
Butter				
Milk				
Eggs				
Reg't				
Reg't				
Reg't				
Battalion				
Unattached				
Signal Corps				
Ambulance Corps				
Total				

Consolidated from the approved Regimental Ration Return this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_ 1900

*Brig. Gen. commanding.*

*Brigade Commissary*

DAILY CONSOLIDATED BRIGADE RATION RETURN. FORM NO. 6, SUBSTITUTED FOR FORM NO. 3.

cient for his company for twenty-four hours, beginning Saturday morning, June 16, 1900, and July 14, 1900, respectively, the said amount to be stated in pounds and ounces, in plain figures, in the margin at the left of name of articles on printed ration, Form No. 1. State on dotted line whether meats are for roast, for steak, or for stew.

"Art. VI. Each company commissary can require for any part of, or the equivalent of, the fresh meat ration, viz.:

"10 ounces fresh beef to roast, for steak, or stew, one meal.

"5 ounces lamb chops, one meal.

"5 1-2 ounces corned beef, one meal.

"Above equals one ration of the meat component for one man, one day, and the bill of fare can be easily varied each day.

"In the purchase of supplies in advance, the rule adopted in the army will be followed as nearly as possible, viz: four days fresh meat, two days salt meat, and one day fresh fish.

"Art. VII. On Saturday morning all commissaries will report at the storehouse of the regimental commissary at 9 o'clock, to receive the rations required for on Blank No. 2, Form 1, the previous afternoon; also will at this time deliver to the regi-

mental commissary Return No. 3, Form No. 1, filled out in detail the same as Return No. 2. The regimental commissary will forward this return to the brigade commissary, in order that he may arrange with the contractor for the distribution of the same.

"Art. VIII. All company commissaries will report at the same place at 9 o'clock each succeeding morning during the tour of duty, receive the companies' rations for the day, and deliver requisitions for the day following, which will be forwarded same as Return No. 3.

"Art. IX. Arrangements will be made by the brigade commissary with the contractor to have the perishable portions of the rations for each company, such as meat, fish, soft bread and fresh vegetable components, carefully packed in a separate box, plainly marked with the regimental number and the company letter.

"He will also arrange to have all such boxes delivered by the contractor, prior to nine o'clock each morning, to the commissary store-house of each regiment, separate battalion, unattached company and the signal and ambulance corps.

"Art. X. In addition to each ration, as printed on the ration return, Form No. 1, there will be allowed and issued, but not over, two ounces; milk, one pint; and eggs one-fourth of a dozen. Sugar-cured hams will be furnished in lieu of bacon, if desired.

"Art. XI. In making requisitions, company commissaries are authorized to require for spring lamb in lieu of mutton, and arrangements will be made to furnish the same quantity of lamb, per ration, as of fresh beef.

"Art. XII. Attention of company commissaries is again called to the importance of specifying on requisitions whether the meat component is for roasts, steaks or stews, and every effort will be made to procure suitable cuts.

"Art. XIII. Each ration will be weighed by, or under the supervision of a commissioned commissary officer, duly authorized, and each regimental, separate battalion, unattached company, Signal and Ambulance Corps commissary will receipt in duplicate for all supplies received, one receipt to be forwarded to the commissary-general through the brigade commissary, and the second to be retained by the contractor as his voucher.

"Art. XIV. It is estimated that the sum of forty-eight cents will cover the cost of each ration, and paymasters are authorized to accept order from headquarters and company commanders for that amount, plus ten per cent, or fifty-three cents, as sufficient to cover same.

"Art. XV. The blank attached to Ration Return No. 1, Form No. 1, will be filled out for the total estimated amount due for rations for the entire tour of duty, and signed by the company commander, or the person to whom the pay is assigned by members of the company.

"This is the only assignment blank of pay that should be filled out.

By order of the commander-in-chief,

FRED W. WELLINGTON, Colonel and Commissary-General.  
Official: SAMUEL DALTON, Adjutant-General.

The rations thus established were drawn in the following manner. The captain of each company, troop or battery, made out his requisition on Form No. 4 published herewith, giving the number of men present for duty, and placing in the proper columns the aggregate weights and measures of the several foods required. These company reports, delivered to the regimental commissaries by nine o'clock a. m., on the day before issue, were by them made the basis of regimental or battalion requisitions, which together with those of headquarters, and unattached companies

were filed with the brigade commissary, at eleven o'clock a. m., who from them filled out a requisition for the whole brigade. This was placed in the hands of the commissary-general at 12 o'clock (noon) and by him given to the contractor.

The rations thus ordered were delivered to the regimental commissaries by five o'clock a. m. of the following day, put up in convenient boxes, ready for delivery to each company detail, which deposited the rations at the company cook house.

There, an enlisted man, generally a professional cook, enlisted as such, and paid (\$4 per day) for his services, prepared the food, with the cooking kit and ranges supplied by the State.

The commissary-general was authorized at the beginning of the season to expend fifty-three cents per day for each officer and man present for duty. The First Brigade, M. V. M., at the yearly encampment at South Framingham was supplied at the rate of thirty-five cents per ration. The Second Brigade, owing to the increased cost of certain articles, more especially milk, expended thirty-six and a quarter cents on each ration furnished. Officers and men alike lived on the food thus provided, and all expressed their satisfaction with the quality and variety of the menu, an exact copy of which appears herewith.

The steaks served were all choice rump or sirloin cuts; the lamb for chops, etc., was of first-class quality, as was the fish, ham, corned beef, bacon, etc. The vegetables were especially fine, and the whole menu was fully equal in quality to the same articles as served in a first-class restaurant or hotel.

There was no attempt to attain cheapness by sacrificing quality in the least degree, and every contractor knew that any attempt to substitute inferior viands would certainly prove disastrous, inasmuch as I reserved the right to place a competent inspector over each article furnished.

Buying in this way, however, for over 5000 men for cash, enabled me to secure everything at wholesale prices, and in most things to do a little better than the average retail dealer; and the knowledge that some 5500 to 6000 men were to be subsisted made it an object to deal fairly and liberally with us. At least fifty thousand dollars (\$50,000) were saved to the militia of the Commonwealth, all of which at the close of the annual camp was in the company treasuries, instead of being in the hands of caterers.

The First Regiment Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., encamped at Fort Rodman, New Bedford, and was supplied with food at a cost of thirty-six cents per ration. The following letter from Colonel James A. Frye, commanding this fine regiment, is the best testimony to the success of the new system, and concisely expresses the testimony of many other officers:

HEADQUARTERS  
FIRST REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY, MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEER MILITIA.

South Armory, Boston, Sept. 10, 1900.

Brigadier-General F. W. Wellington, Commissary-General, Massachusetts.

Sir: Permit me to express to you my appreciation of the work of your department, under your personal supervision, during the late camp of instruction of this command at Fort Rodman, New Bedford, August 4-11. The results attained under the system inaugurated by you have proved eminently satisfactory.

Your conduct of the department has demonstrated the complete feasibility of rationing by State issue. It has resulted in a great saving of money, and in the issue of a ration far in advance, so far as concerns quality, of that provided under the earlier system of company messes and contract catering.

I wish officially to acknowledge the obligation of my command to you for the marked improvement in commissary conditions which prevailed during its late tour.

Very respectfully,

JAMES A. FRYE, Colonel First Artillery, M.V.M.

The Naval Brigade was also rationed at an average cost of thirty-six and a quarter cents per ration. The First Corps Cadets, at Hingham, and the Second Corps Cadets, at Boxford, rationed themselves, as did Battery A, Light Artillery, with a considerable saving as compared with former expenditures, at a cost ranging from sixty to seventy cents per day.

These results are especially satisfactory, in that they have demonstrated, not only that the Massachusetts Militia can feed itself in camp or on the field as well and effectively as the regular army, but that it can do better with the same resources.

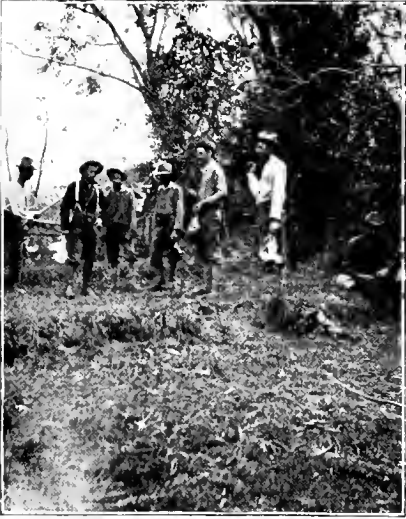
It seemed almost like a new revelation, when the cleanly, appetizing, well cooked and well served food, first appeared on the company and officers' mess tables of the First Brigade, and it was realized that such varied and bounteous meals could be purchased, prepared and served at a cost of twelve cents each, and that, too, with a practically close adherence to the army ration, hitherto only associated with memories of "salt horse, musty bacon and hard tack," with occasional regales of stewed beef, soft bread, and rice and molasses.

It is with great thankfulness that the writer feels that he has been permitted to secure the successful adoption and perfection of a reform which so many military men have advocated and hoped for in days past, yet have almost despaired of attaining. Many such have had a share in preparing the way for this reform, and among them I would again acknowledge the services of my associates of the Board: Captain Herbert A. Clark, acting commissary Fifth Regiment Infantry; Captain Stanwood G. Sweetser, acting commissary, Sixth Regiment Infantry; and Lieutenant John C. Kerrison, acting commissary First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M.

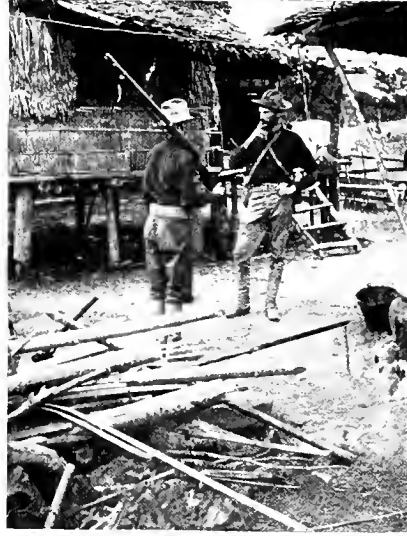
I feel that such a success cannot fail to impress itself upon the authorities controlling the active militia of other states, and induce them to imitate, and, if possible, surpass the results here detailed; nor is it

impossible that again, as more than once before in the past, the regular army may find something new, and worthy of approval and adoption, in the ever improving administration of the active militia of Massachusetts.

Never before in war have the condition and morale of the individual soldier become so vital and indispensable to the safety and success of nations, and the spirit of the age and its necessities cannot endure the



YANKEE FORAGERS.



THE COMMISSARIAT GUARD.

IN THE PHILIPPINES.

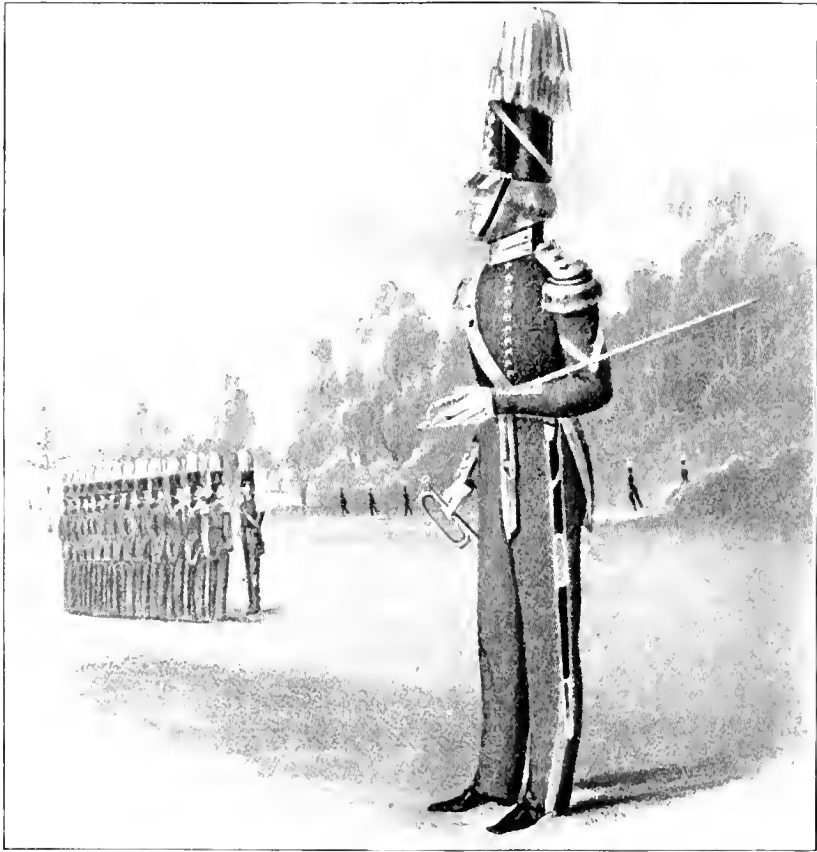
old, wasteful, unhealthful commissariat methods, which enriched contractors, depleted armies, and made the experience of the average soldier en campaign, "a dog's life."

On the other hand, it is obvious that the old methods of feeding men in camp were a farce and unworthy of men seriously bent upon fitting a citizen soldiery for active service. It is well that we have demonstrated beyond question, that the army rations honestly and properly purveyed, and prepared as they should be, can be made the basis of a menu far more varied than the samples published, and grateful and satisfactory to officer and enlisted man alike.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### THE WORCESTER CITY GUARDS.

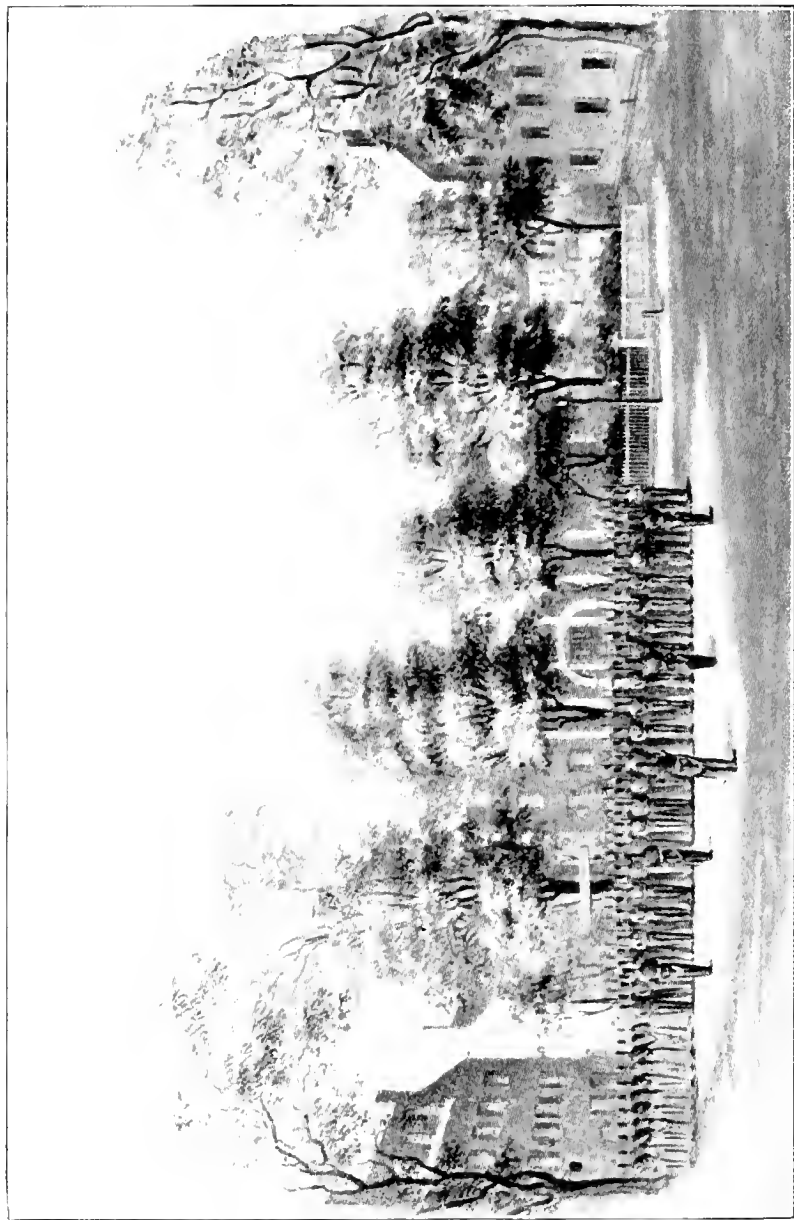
THE Worcester City Guards were born, as an organization, of the rampant partisanship of the great political contest of 1840. The Whigs and Democrats then composing the Worcester Light Infantry were unable to tolerate each other, and party feeling ran so high that all the Whigs withdrew from the company except its captain, D. Waldo Lincoln. The crisis was reached when both the rival political



*From Lithographed Trth. Paper, Ireland's "Newton Quickstep."*

CAPTAIN J. LINCOLN NEWTON, WORCESTER CITY GUARDS, 1844-47.

parties of the town invited the Light Infantry to act as escort at their Fourth of July procession. Each party was arranging for a grand demonstration, and each desired the services of the company, it being then the only military organization in town. The Whigs sent a verbal invitation



WORCESTER CITY GUARDS, FIRST PARADE, 1840.





through Colonel John W. Lincoln, and the Democrats, or Locofocos, as they were then called, sent a formal invitation by a committee. The company was nearly equally divided in political sentiment, and the receipt of the two invitations gave rise to an exciting discussion as to which should be accepted. The Democrats had a slight majority in the company, and so secured a vote to accept the invitation of their party. The Whig members, however, were so indignant that they refused to parade, either on that occasion or afterwards, and applied for and received their discharges from the company. Captain Lincoln, although a staunch Whig, decided to remain, and the places of the seceders were promptly filled by thoroughly Jacksonian Democrats. This stirred up the Whigs who had left the company, and they determined to have a company composed of men of their own political faith, and soon had the requisite number of names on their rolls.

The name of the new company was the first serious question to be settled. Some zealous partisans favored calling the company the "Worcester Harrison Independent Guards," the initials of which spelled the word "Whig," but that title was deemed by the majority rather long and ponderous, and the name "Worcester Guards" was adopted, and retained for ten years, when it was changed to the "Worcester City Guards," by which the company has ever since been known. Lieutenant Samuel Hathaway, now of Enfield, Ct., has recently published a history of the company, from which this sketch is largely compiled.

The first officers of the company were: captain, George Bowen; first lieutenant, George Hobbs; second lieutenant, Leonard Poole; third lieutenant, George W. Richardson; first sergeant and clerk, Hiram Gould; sergeants, Joshua R. Bigelow, Samuel T. Lamb, Eldridge G. Pratt, Chas. Blanchard, the latter being also color-bearer. The formal organization was effected in September of that year, and on the 19th day of that month the new company made its first parade, escorted by the Boston Brigade Band.

#### ROLL OF THE WORCESTER GUARDS, 1843.

Enlisted July, 1840: George Hobbs, promoted; Gardiner Paine, discharged; L. Lincoln Newton; James Eaton, left town; Samuel Jennison, Jr.; Dennis F. Witherbee; Samuel Hathaway; Nathaniel Tead; Francis H. Kinnicutt; Charles Blanchard, promoted; Charles P. Chapin; Frederick A. Paige, left town; William F. Emerson; George A. Barber; George A. Chamberlain; Ithamar S. Coes, deceased; Edwin W. Nye; Milton Homer, excused by surgeon; Edwin L. Heywood; Samuel T. Lamb, discharged; Henry Adams; Elbridge G. Pratt; Henry H. Edgerton, discharged; Leonard Poole; Nathaniel D. Coe; George Geer, excused by surgeon; Luther Slater; John G. Coes; George B. Conklin, discharged; George S. Putnam, honorary member; George Bower, discharged; Loammi Harrington, deceased; Stephen T. Coe; Charles P. Nichols, Jr.; Windsor Hatch, left town; George E. Wyman; Francis E. Bigelow, discharged; Joshua R. Bigelow, left town; George W. Richardson, promoted; Hiram Gould, left town; George C. Trumbull, left town; Francis W. Eaton, left town; Lewis H. Nye, deceased; George W. Adams, left town; Harrison Bliss; Joel Nourse, discharged; Edward F. Dixie; Julius L. Clark; Charles Paine, honorary member; Joseph Boyden; Samuel V. Stone; Artemus Ward, 2d, discharged; George W. Capron, under

age; Lewis Boyden; John Metcalf, discharged; Russell R. Shepard, discharged; Joseph Pratt, discharged; George Dryden, discharged; David J. Baker; Jonathan H. Knights; Horatio N. Tower; Theophilus Brown, discharged; Edwin I. Howe; George F. Ramsdell, discharged; David E. Merriman, left town; Samuel Lees; Leonard White, discharged; Barzillian Spencer, left town; Leonard Gates; George A. Brown; George H. Merriman, discharged; Charles S. Ellis, honorary member; Charles N. Oliver, discharged; Danforth H. Bundy, discharged; Edwin Eaton; Erastus B. Rice. Enlisted May 8, 1841: William W. Ward, discharged; Samuel R. Leland; Hiram W. Shepard, discharged. May 11, 1841: Allen Billings, deceased, buried under arms. Nov. 8, 1841: Luther H. Goulding; James G. Henderson. Dec. 17, 1842: G. Wyman Rockford; Charles C. Chamberlain; Thomas Kellogg; Harlow M. Guild; Lewis Thompson. Enlisted April 27, 1843, John B. Wyman; Jan. 15, 1843, William C. Head; Sept. 13, 1843, J. Crawford Wyman; Sept. 22, 1843, Amos C. Rathbone.

Only three of the above-named are now living, namely: Hon. Julius L. Clarke, of Newton, and Samuel Hathaway and David J. Baker, of Worcester, Mass.

#### ROLL OF OFFICERS, 1840-1900.

The officers of the company from its organization to the present time (1900) have been as follows:

**Captains.**—George Bowen, George Hobbs, Leonard Poole, George B. Conklin, L. Lincoln Newton, Edwin Eaton, Charles W. Longley, John H. Goodhue, George H. Ward, A. B. R. Sprague, R. H. Chamberlain, Joseph A. Titus, Wm. H. King, E. R. Shumway, George H. Cleveland, Wm. D. Preston, Wm. A. Condy, and Edwin G. Barrett.

**First lieutenants.**—George Hobbs, Leonard Poole, George B. Conklin, Levi L. Newton, Edwin Eaton, Elbridge G. Pratt, Daniel W. Lincoln, Samuel H. Leonard, Geo. H. Ward, A. B. R. Sprague, Edwin A. Wood, Josiah Pickett, Edward W. Adams, John W. Sanderson, Joseph A. Long, Frank L. R. Coes, W. H. King, Frank A. Harrington, Chas. H. Parker, Forbes B. Fay, W. J. Stamp, Geo. H. Cleveland, Jas. Early, Frank S. Hoyt, and Moses H. Tisdale.

**Second lieutenants.**—Leonard Poole, George W. Richardson, Geo. B. Conklin, John Metcalf, Edwin Eaton, Elbridge G. Pratt, John B. Wyman, Ebenezer Harrington, George H. Ward, A. B. R. Sprague, Samuel V. Stone, Edwin A. Wood, Josiah Pickett, Geo. C. Joslin, Calvin N. Harrington, Joseph A. Titus, Frank L. R. Coes, W. H. King, Frank E. Hall, Justin B. Willard, Everett A. Morse, Edwin R. Shumway, James F. Meech, Forbes B. Fay, W. J. Stamp, Geo. H. Cleveland, Frank W. Barrett, W. D. Preston, Frank S. Hoyt, W. A. Condy, Moses H. Tisdell, and Frederic H. Lucke.

The offices of third and fourth lieutenants existed from the date of organization until 1861. Third lieutenants during that period: Geo. W. Richardson, Geo. B. Conklin, John Metcalf, Levi L. Newton, Edwin Eaton, J. Baker Wyman, Charles C. Chamberlain, Ebenezer Harrington, George H. Ward, A. B. R. Sprague, Samuel V. Stone, Samuel Hathaway, and Orson Moulton.

**Fourth lieutenants.**—Sewell Thompson, Samuel H. Leonard, George H. Ward, Wm. A. Smith, Geo. G. Burbank, Samuel Hathaway, E. W. Adams, Francis Wayland, Jr., Edwin P. Woodward, Geo. C. Joslin, and Elijah A. Harkness.

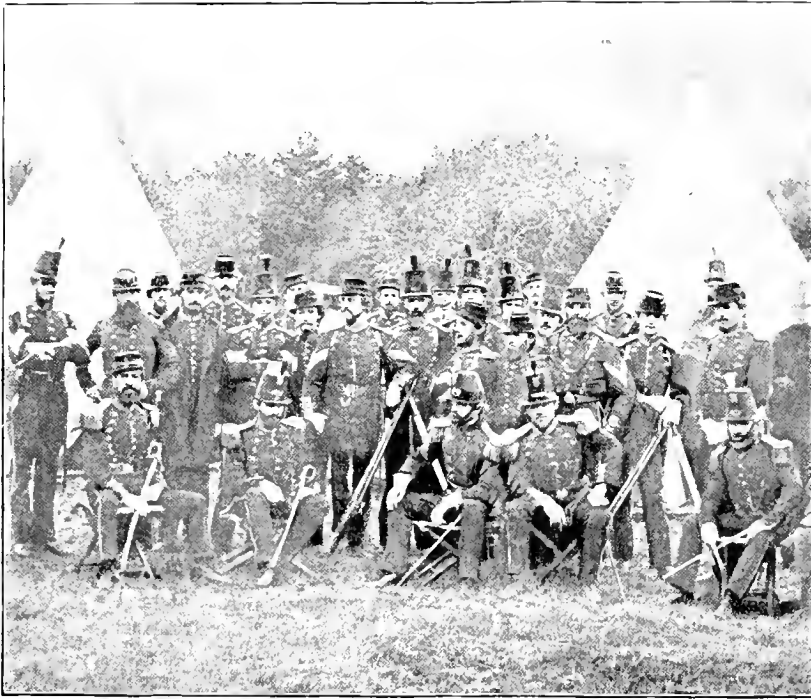
#### COMPANY ARMORIES.

The first armory was in the second story of the old Town Hall, from which it was removed after a few years to the third story of a wooden building on Thomas Street, near Slater's Court. The third was the attic of Dr. Green's building, where the Five Cents Savings Bank was for many years afterwards located. The Waldo block was also occupied until the Worcester Bank block was built, when an armory for the Guards was fitted up therein. The company next removed to old Brinley Hall, remaining there until about 1863-64, when it leased the upper story of Taylor's block. This armory was burned out in 1875. The armory on

Waldo Street, built by the city, was then nearly completed, and the Guards occupied it with the other Worcester militia companies until the building was condemned, in 1885, when the company removed to Clarke's block on Front Street, and in 1887 to Kennedy's block on Mechanic Street. At the latter place it remained until the completion of the new State armory at the junction of Grove and Salisbury Streets.

## ENCAMPMENTS AND PARADES.

The first encampment attended by the company was at Worcester in 1840. The second was at West Boylston, where the band was accom-



*Photo by Mick & Batchelder.*

*Favor of General Josiah Pickett.*

COMPANY STREET, WORCESTER CITY GUARDS, CAMP FIFTH BRIGADE, M. V. M.,  
LEOMINSTER, MASS., 1860.

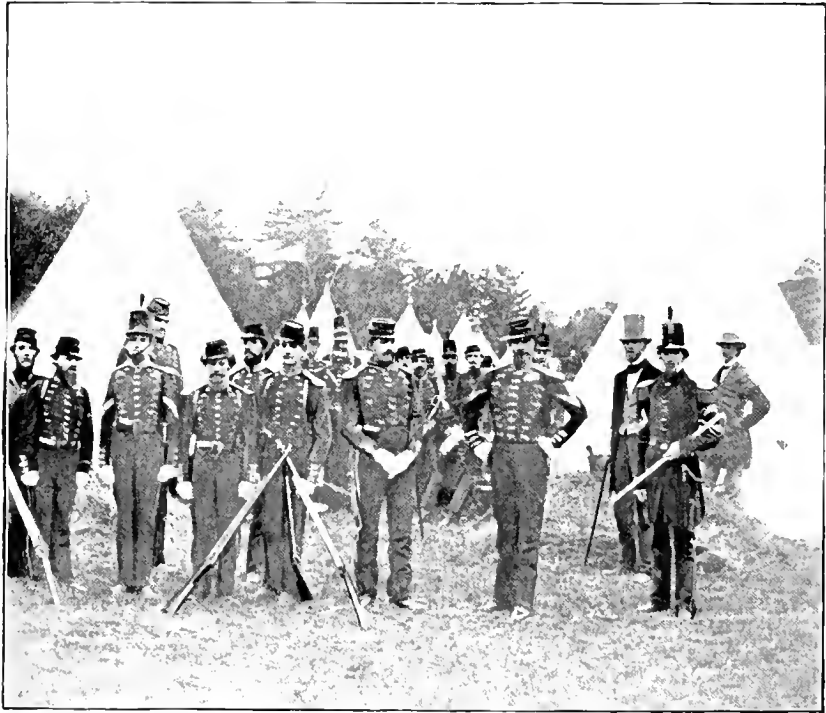
panied by the famous "Ned" Kendall, whose silver bugle was claimed at the time, to have been a present from Queen Victoria. The Guards were then quite proficient in drill, and were detailed to exhibit Scott's Tactics, then just adopted, to the field officers. The company declined somewhat afterwards, and when Captain John M. Goodhue took command, there were but twenty-four names on the roll, and the company equipage consisted of three old tents, bought of the Sterling company, and a jacket for each man. But when Captain Goodhue resigned, three years later, the company mustered over sixty men, had several hundred dollars worth of property, and stood at the head of the militia of the State in drill and

discipline. A new uniform was procured in 1861, of white cloth with red facings, bear-skin caps and side hangers, with black belts. The members paid for their own outfit, their friends contributing \$400 for the hangers, or short swords, and belts.

The Guards attended the dedication of the Bunker Hill monument, June 17, 1842, and did guard duty while Daniel Webster delivered his great oration.

#### THE ORR RIOT.

In 1854, John S. Orr, an enthusiast, who called himself by the high-sounding title of the "Angel Gabriel," appeared in the streets of Worcester. He was a powerful man, with long hair, unkempt beard, and wore a black jappanned hat, curiously ornamented with brass. He carried a brass trumpet, giving furious blasts from time to time, and then addressed the curious crowds collected, denouncing the Roman Catholic



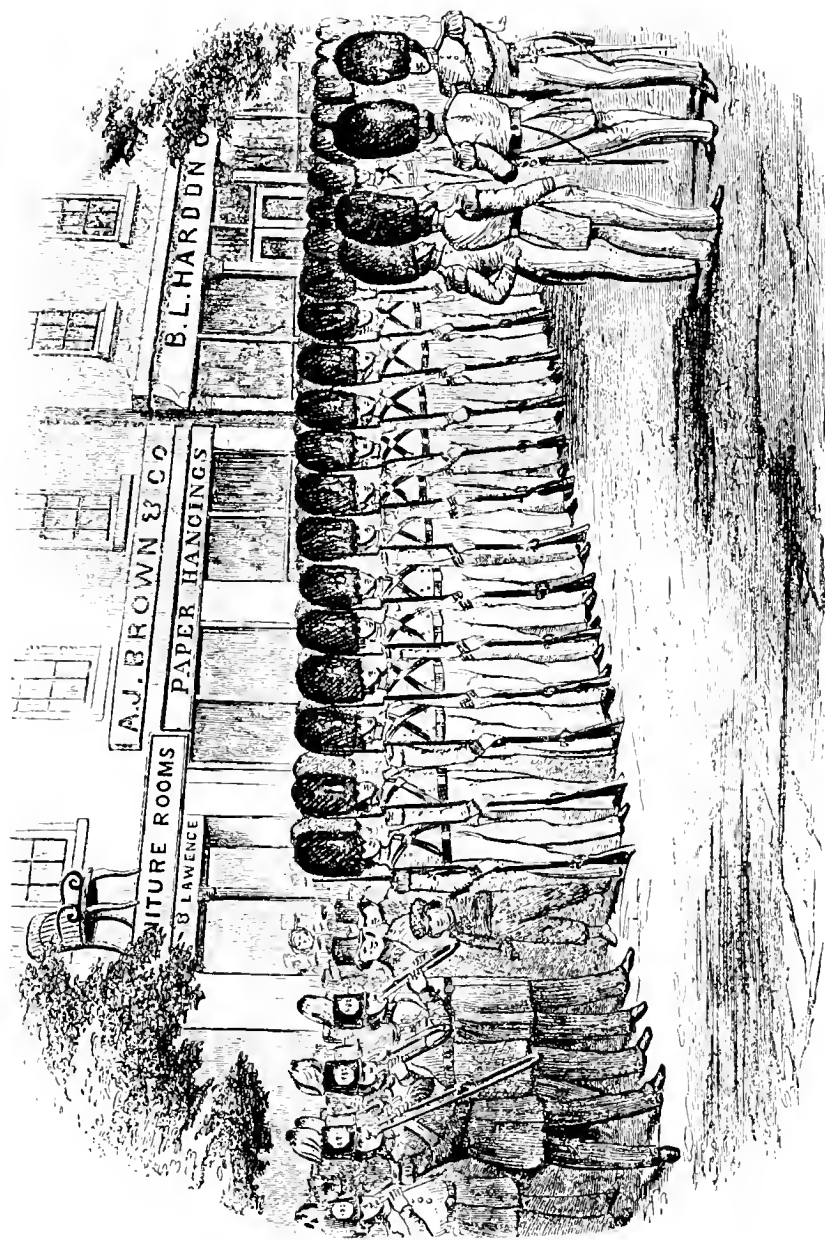
*Photo by Mack & Batchelder.*

*Favor General Josiah Pickett.*

HEADQUARTERS WORCESTER CITY GUARDS. CAMP OF FIFTH BRIGADE, M. V. M.,  
LEOMINSTER, MASS., 1860

faith, and predicting dire calamity to the country, writing here and there the word "Gabriel" on the sidewalks.

On the second day he marched about the city blowing his trumpet, drawing about him a crowd of excited men and boys, and obstructing the streets. At last the police felt obliged to interfere and took both him and



*From an old wood cut*

WORCESTER CITY GUARDS. PARADE IN WHITE UNIFORM, 1851.



his trumpet to the station house. Here he was kept for a while, and allowed to depart on condition that he would leave the city and not return.

About a week after this, May 18, 1854, Orr came back to Worcester and again began his walks and riotous talks about the city, and again the police deemed it their duty to arrest him. He was taken to the police



*Favor of General Josiah Pickett*

FIELD AND STAFF, FIFTH BRIGADE, M. V. M., CAMP AT LEOMINSTER, MASS., 1860.

office about seven o'clock p. m. A great crowd gathered, demanding his release, and crying, "Take him out! Take him out!"

His Honor, Mayor J. S. C. Knowlton, was called to the police office by Chief Marshal Lovell Baker, and he quietly but earnestly requested the crowd to disperse, saying that it was his duty to see that the man was safely kept to answer the charges against him, but without effect. Stones were thrown at the building and windows were broken. The crowd increased and became more clamorous and excited. The mayor, in order to prepare for any emergency that might arise, sent word to Captain George H. Ward of the City Guards, then considered one of the best-disciplined military organizations in the State, requesting him to assemble his command at once and to await orders from him.

Mayor Knowlton then read the Riot Act, and commanded all persons present, who were disposed to sustain the supremacy of the law,

to return immediately to their homes. The sheriff of the county, George W. Richardson, was also present and tried to persuade the crowd to disperse. While on the sidewalk near the police office, the sheriff was struck with a paving-stone thrown by one of the rioters, but he succeeded in arresting his assailant and taking him to the lock-up.

The mayor ordered Captain Ward to report himself and his command forthwith at the City Hall, provided with ball cartridges. As was to be expected, and from what we now know of the prompt readiness of this command for more serious fighting seven years later, they at once marched to the police office, and, having drawn up in line, were ordered by Captain Ward to "Load with ball cartridge! Load!" an order which at once had a sedative effect on the leaders of the mob. Their presence and that of the police soon had their effect upon the more reasonable men, and the crowd began to disperse. Several of the most excited were arrested, and by eleven o'clock the streets were cleared and good order prevailed. The militia were quartered for the night in the City Hall.

The officers of the City Guards present at this time were Captain George H. Ward, First Lieutenant A. B. R. Sprague, Second Lieutenant S. V. Stone, and Third Lieutenant Samuel Hathaway.

In thirty minutes after Captain Ward received his orders from the mayor, a goodly number of the command were in the armory prepared for duty. At about midnight, the Guards marched to their armory, deposited their arms, and then, by invitation of the mayor, partook of a collation at the American Temperance House.

The company assembled the next morning, but were not called upon for further service. They were visited during the forenoon by several prominent citizens, including the sheriff and ex-United States Marshal Charles Devens. The mayor made a short speech to the company, thanking them for their services and prompt response to his call.

The muskets being loaded, it was necessary to withdraw the charges, and it was decided to have a little target practice. In the afternoon the Guards marched to the "Jo Bill" road, and fired three rounds each at a target there provided.

For the facts of this episode we are indebted to a paper read before the Society of Antiquity, by Nathaniel Paine, Esq., April 1, 1884.

#### THE CITY GUARDS IN THE REBELLION.

Early in the spring of 1861, the Worcester City Guards were without a captain, Lieutenant Edwin A. Wood commanding. About forty names were borne upon the roll.

When the militia was called into active service, A. B. R. Sprague, an old Guard, then brigade-major of the Fifth Brigade, was unanimously elected captain, and assumed command on the 17th day of April. The



ranks were promptly filled, and many applicants for membership failed to secure admission.

Second Lieutenant Josiah Pickett was elected first lieutenant, Geo. C. Joslin, second lieutenant, Orson Houlton, third lieutenant, Elisha A. Harkness, fourth lieutenant.

On the 18th day of April, Captain Sprague was ordered forthwith to muster the company. On April 19, it entered the United States service as a part of the Third Battalion of Rifles, M. V. M., Major Chas. Devens, Jr., commanding. It was not formally mustered, however, until May 20, to date its service from April 19, 1861.

The partial destruction of the railroad bridges between Baltimore and Havre de Grace closed that route to the capital, and the command embarked at New York on the steamer "Ariel," and landed at Annapolis, Md., on April 24. On the 3d of May following, they reached Fort McHenry to re-inforce the garrison, which consisted of only two companies of regular artillery, Major W. W. Morris commanding the post.

Their three months' service was fully occupied in infantry and artillery drill, in mounting heavy guns, and on expeditions down the Chesapeake. The command suffered much from overwork, but only one death occurred—that of Amos H. Gilbert, of Boston, Mass., who came to Maryland to enlist. During their term they served under Generals Patterson, Banks, Cadwallader, Dix, and Butler, and were mustered out of service August 3, the company having volunteered to serve two weeks after the expiration of their term of service, owing to the exigencies of the situation and at the request of Major-General John A. Dix.

#### MUSTER ROLL, COMPANY A, WORCESTER CITY GUARDS.

United States Service, April 19, 1861, to August 2, 1861.

Captain, A. B. R. Sprague; 1st lieutenant, Josiah Pickett; 2d lieutenant, George C. Joslin; 3d lieutenant, Orson Moulton; 4th lieutenant, E. A. Harkness.

Sergeants: Elbridge G. Watkins, Walter S. Bugbee, George A. Johnson, Charles A. Ward.

Corporals: James M. Hervey, Horace W. Poole, Calvin N. Harrington, George Burr.

Musicians: William H. Heywood, James Stewart.

Privates: Edward W. Adams, William H. Aldrich, Francis Bacon, Charles S. Bartlett, Merritt B. Bessey, George P. Bigelow, Luther H. Bigelow, Charles H. Bond, Bramley A. Bottomly, Harry T. Bradish, Theodore Burdick, George S. Campbell, Lowell Caswell, Lewis C. Champney, John M. Cheney, Frank L. R. Coes, James M. Cummings, Hermon E. Cunningham, John A. Thompson, Louis Wageley, Melville E. Walker, George E. Warren, C. A. Wesson, John Wheeler, 2d, William B. White, William H. Wood, George M. Curtis, Charles B. Cutler, Elmer Cutting, Henry W. Daniels, Charles Davis, Edwin L. Dodge, Silas R. Dunn, Charles F. Fairbanks, Jerome H. Fuller, Arthur Goodell, Thomas Gleason, Joel W. Greene, George W. Hatch, Charles Henry, J. M. Heywood, Edward E. Howe, Herbert J. Kendall, Nathaniel S. Liscomb, Albert A. Livermore, Henry Matthews, Henry Mellen, Henry R. Moen, Edwin Morse, Charles H. Munroe, David H. McIver, James J. McLane, William L. Newton, Amos M. Parker, Francis J. Plummer, John W. Pomroy, Chester B. Shaw, James S. Slocum, Samuel A. Slocum, Welcome W. Sprague, William Starr, William R. Steele, Charles K. Stoddard.

As a company it was never again called into the service of the United States, but fifty-six of its members re-enlisted to follow the fortunes of the old flag, and were represented in fifteen regiments. Seven members served as field officers, and five commanded regiments, namely: the Fifteenth, Twenty-Fifth, Thirty-Sixth, and Fifty-First Infantry and the Second Heavy Artillery. Others became line officers in the Twenty-First, Twenty-Second, and Thirty-Fourth Massachusetts, Seventh Connecticut, Seventh Maine, One-Hundred-and-Second New York, United States Infantry, the Ira Harris Cavalry, the First North Carolina (white) Volunteers, and the United States Colored Troops.

ROLL OF HONOR,  
WORCESTER CITY GUARDS, IN THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.

Many of the following commissioned officers served as privates and non-commissioned officers in the organizations specified, their highest rank being given in the last organization in which they served.

Generals: S. H. Leonard, 5th Brigade M. V. M., colonel 13th Mass., wounded at Gettysburg; Geo. H. Ward, lieutenant-colonel and colonel 15th Mass., lost leg at Ball's Bluff, killed at Gettysburg; John B. Wyman, colonel 13th Illinois, killed before Vicksburg; A. B. R. Sprague, captain Co. A 3d Batt. Rifles, lieutenant-colonel 25th Mass., colonel 51st Infantry and 2d Mass. H. A.; Josiah Pickett, first lieutenant 3d Batt. Rifles, captain, major and colonel 25th Mass., wounded at Cold Harbor; A. A. Goodell, adjutant 3d Batt. Rifles, captain and lieutenant-colonel 36th Mass., wounded at Knoxville.

Colonels: J. M. Goodhue, adjutant 3d Batt. Rifles, captain and major 11th U. S. Infantry, wounded at Gettysburg; Geo. C. Joslin, lieutenant 3d Batt. Rifles, captain, major and lieutenant-colonel 15th Mass., wounded at Antietam and taken prisoner at Mine Run, Va.; J. M. Coe, captain 3d Batt. and 11th U. S. Infantry.

Lieut.-Colonels: Walter N. Batchelder, 13th Mass.; Homer B. Sprague, 13th Conn., wounded, Dept. of the Gulf; Orson Moulton, second lieutenant, 3d Batt. Rifles, captain and lieutenant-colonel 25th Mass., taken prisoner at Cold Harbor; D. M. Woodward, lieutenant 25th Mass., lieutenant-colonel 60th Mass.; J. M. Tucker, Co. A 25th Mass., lieutenant, captain, major and lieutenant-colonel 57th Mass., wounded at Petersburg; Jas. H. Corbin, Conn. Vols.

Majors: Geo. M. Curtis, 3d Batt. Rifles, N. Y. Vols.; E. A. Harkness, lieutenant Co. A, 3d Batt. Rifles, adjutant 25th Mass., major 51st Mass.

Captains: F. E. Goodwin, lieutenant and captain 25th Mass., wounded at Petersburg; G. W. Rockwood, 15th Mass., prisoner at Ball's Bluff; L. Wageley, 25th Mass.; J. C. Wyman, 33d Mass.; Wm. Emery, lieutenant and captain 25th Mass.; James J. McLane, 3d Batt. Rifles and 25th Mass.; lieutenant and captain 1st N. C. Union Vols., wounded; C. B. Shaw, 3d Batt. Rifles, and 9th Maine, killed at Fort Wagner; E. A. Morse, 25th Mass., lieutenant and captain 36th Mass., wounded in the Wilderness; John Gibbs, 3d Batt. Rifles, 1st U. S. artillery, wounded; E. P. Woodward, lieutenant and captain 15th Mass.; Jas. M. Hervey, 25th Mass., lieutenant and captain 1st N. C. Vols., died at Newbern; Melville Walker, 3d Batt. Rifles, lieutenant and captain 34th Mass.; O. F. Stebbins, 7th N. H. Vols.; E. A. Wood, 51st Mass.; Horace Hobbs, 51st Mass.; T. R. Burdick, 3d Batt. Rifles, 7th Conn., killed at Fort Wagner; Edw. E. Howe, 3d Batt. Rifles, lieutenant and captain 21st Mass.; Jalaam Gates, 3d Batt. Rifles, captain 2d N. C. Colored Troops, wounded at Olustee; M. B. Bessey, 3d Batt. Rifles, lieutenant and captain 25th Mass., wounded at Petersburg; John W. Davis, lieutenant and captain 25th Mass., wounded at Petersburg; R. H. Chamberlain, 51st Mass. and 60th Mass.; Wm. R. Steele, 3d Batt. Rifles and 15th Mass.; J. W. Pomeroy, 12th Maine; Joseph M. Richards, 10th Ohio Vols.; Lebbeus Brown, N. Y. Vols.; Eugene T. Miles, 53d Mass.; J. B. Goodell, 51st Mass.; Frank Bacon, 3d Batt. Rifles, 102d N. Y., killed at Chancellorsville.

Lieutenants: Chas. B. Cutler, 34th Mass.; Geo. H. Spaulding, 25th Mass.; George Burr, 3d Batt. Rifles and 25th Mass., wounded at Cold Harbor; Henry M. Mathews, 3d Batt. Rifles, 25th Mass., killed at Cold Harbor; H. M. Daniels, 3d Batt. Rifles, 34th Mass., killed in the Wilderness; Dwight Newbury, adjutant 15th Mass., killed at Mine Run, Va.; Chas. K. Stoddard, 3d Batt. Rifles, 21st Mass., killed in service; Chas. H. Pelton, 3d Batt. Rifles, 25th Mass., killed at Cold Harbor; Geo. A. Johnson, 3d Batt. Rifles, 25th Mass. and 61st Mass., wounded at Cold Harbor; L. Caswell, 3d Batt. Rifles and 11th Maine; C. N. Harrington, 3d Batt. Rifles and 51st Mass.; W. Cheney, U. S. Colored Troops; A. A. Livermore, 3d Batt. Rifles, 21st Mass.; Harry T. Bradish, 3d Batt. Rifles, 51st Mass.; C. B. Kendall, 3d Batt. Rifles, adjutant 25th Mass.; L. H. Bigelow, 3d Batt. and 51st Mass.

The following members served in the war as non-commissioned officers and privates: E. W. Adams, first sergeant Co. A, 3d Batt. Rifles; E. G. Watkins, commissary sergeant 25th Regt.; A. Patterson, sergeant 21st Regt., wounded at Newbern; Walter S. Bugbee, sergeant 25th Regt., prisoner at Andersonville; E. A. Rice, sergeant 15th Regt.; Chas. Ward, 3d Batt. Rifles; Henry S. Baker, 15th Regt., wounded; George E. Patch, 57th Regt., wounded at Spottsylvania; Wm. R. Chapman, 25th Regt., died at Millen, Ga., prisoner; F. L. R. Coes, sergeant 25th Regt.; Herbert J. Kendall, sergeant 51st N. Y. Regt., killed at Newbern; G. N. Ayer, 1st Regt. H. A., wounded at Petersburg; Horace Poole, 3d Batt. Rifles; John Gaffeny, 15th Regt.; W. W. Sprague, corporal 25th Regt.; James Taylor, 15th Regt.; Joel W. Green, sergeant 1st Mass. Cavalry, died in service; Chas. H. Munroe, corporal 25th Regt.; W. H. Aldrich, 3d Batt.; D. H. Melver, sergeant 34th Regt.; Geo. P. Bigelow, 3d Batt.; J. H. Fuller, corporal 25th Regt.; W. H. Wood, 56th Regt.; James Stewart, 3d Batt. 25th Regt.; Lewis C. Champney, 25th Regt.; Geo. E. Warren, sergeant 34th Regt.; William H. Heywood, 3d Batt. N. H. Regt.; John A. Thompson, 25th Regt.; Wm. L. Newton, 3d Batt.; Edwin L. Dodge, sergeant 51st Regt.; N. S. Liscomb, sergeant-major 3d Batt.; C. S. Bartlett, 3d Batt. corporal 25th Regt., wounded at Roanoke; C. H. Bond, 25th Regt.; John Savage, 25th Regt., died prisoner, Richmond; A. M. Parker, 3d Batt.; H. E. Cunningham, 3d Batt.; E. Cutting, 3d Batt.; James S. Slocum, 3d Batt.; Henry Mellen, 3d Batt.; C. A. Wesson, 3d Batt., sergeant 25th Regt.; James M. Cummings, 3d Batt.; Thomas Gleason, 3d Batt. sergeant 25th Regt.; B. A. Bottomly, 3d Batt.; G. W. Hatch, 3d Batt.; Chas. Davis, 15th Regt., died in service; S. A. Slocumb, 3d Batt.; G. Wakefield, 3d Batt.; John Wheeler, 3d Batt.; Preston A. Champney, 25th Regt., died a prisoner; Chas. F. Fairbanks, 3d Batt.; John M. Cheney, 3d Batt., sergeant 51st Regt.; Wm. E. Starr, 3d Batt.; Chas. Henry, 3d Batt., 25th Regt.; Edwin A. Moody, 25th Regt., wounded at Cold Harbor; Henry Waters, 25th Regt.; Francis J. Plummer, 3d Batt.; J. Frank Alden, 3d Batt.; Amos H. Gilbert, 3d Batt., died at Fort McHenry; Chas. Rugg, 34th Regt.; Wm. H. Wardwell, 25th Regt.; Geo. L. Bliss, corporal 51st Regt.; Geo. P. Harlow, hospital steward, 51st Regt.; H. A. Moen, 3d Batt.; D. E. Denny, 42d Mass.; Wm. B. White, 3d Batt. Rifles.

Officers commissioned in the Militia since the War, and who served in the War: General R. H. Chamberlain, captain of the Guards, major and colonel 10th Infantry and brigadier-general 3d Brigade M. V. M.; Major E. R. Shumway, 7th Vt., captain of the Guards, major 2d Infantry, M. V. M.; Colonel J. A. Titus, 42d and 60th Mass., captain of the Guards, lieutenant-colonel and assistant adjutant-general 3d Brigade M. V. M.; captain W. H. King, 36th Mass., captain of the Guards, major 10th Infantry, M. V. M.; lieutenant F. C. Thayer, 51st Mass., lieutenant of the Guards; lieutenant Jas. Long, 60th Mass., lieutenant of the Guards; lieutenant Jas. F. Meech, 14th Conn., lieutenant of the Guards; lieutenant J. B. Willard, 42d Mass., lieutenant of the Guards.

Members who have held civil positions of honor and trust: General Hobbs, alderman; L. Lincoln Newton, cashier Worcester Bank; George C. Bigelow, cashier Central Bank; S. V. Stone, superintendent of public schools; John A. Dana, clerk of court; William A. Smith, assistant clerk of court and secretary Mechanics' Association; Harry B. Wilder, registrar of deeds; A. M. Parker, assessor of taxes; Captain F. E. Goodwin, deputy U. S. Collector; Colonel J. M. Tucker, custom house; Captain W. B. Steele, member of Congress; W. W. Sprague, Massachusetts Legislature; Stephen P. Twiss, Massachusetts Legislature, later judge in Kansas; Samuel Hathaway, Common Council and Board of Education; General Josiah Pickett, custom house, postmaster of Worcester, State armory commissioner and license commissioner; Lieutenant Francis Wayland, professor at Yale; J. C. B. Davis, assistant secretary of state of the

United States; A. B. R. Sprague, collector of internal revenue, Eighth Massachusetts dist., sheriff Worcester county, president Mechanics' Savings Bank, alderman, Common Council, city marshal and mayor of Worcester, 1896-97; Orson Moulton, deputy United States surveyor, custom house, Boston; George C. Joslin, deputy United States appraiser, custom house, Boston; G. W. Richardson, sheriff Worcester county and mayor of Worcester; General R. H. Chamberlain, superintendent of sewers, city of Worcester, sheriff of Worcester county; Julius Clarke, auditor state of Massachusetts, insurance commissioner; Francis A. Harrington, alderman and mayor of Worcester; Eugene T. Miles, mayor of Fitchburg; Frank P. Goulding, city solicitor of Worcester.

The Worcester City Guards have been attached to the following organizations:

As Company C, 8th Regiment, 5th Brigade, 3d Division, 1840-58.

Company A, 3d Batt. Rifles, 5th Brigade, 3d Division, 1858-64.

Company A, 1st Batt. Infantry, 1st Brigade, 1st Division, 1864.

Company A, 10th Regiment, 5th Brigade, 1866.

Company A, 2nd Regiment, December 3, 1878 to 1900.

#### THE WORCESTER CITY GUARDS, VETERAN ASSOCIATION.

The Worcester City Guards Veteran Association was formed February 19, 1886, for the purpose of cultivating and perpetuating the friendly relations between past and present members, to celebrate the anniversaries of the company, and to assist in sustaining the past honorable name and record of the Worcester City Guards. Colonel John M. Goodhue was unanimously elected president, but owing to ill health, declined the honor, and General A. B. R. Sprague was elected president; Generals Josiah Pickett, R. H. Chamberlain and E. R. Shumway, vice-presidents; Captain E. A. Wood, secretary; C. B. Whiting, treasurer.

In 1890, the fiftieth anniversary, General Josiah Pickett was elected president, and the veterans gave a banquet to the young Guards and other guests, at the banquet hall in the armory building, which was finely decorated for the occasion. About two hundred and seventy members and guests were present. General Pickett, as president, made a few introductory remarks of welcome, and paid a feeling tribute to General Goodhue. He then announced General Sprague as presiding officer for the evening, who performed the duties with his usual graceful eloquence and tact.

General Charles Devens responded to the first toast, "the United States," and gave a short history of the Third Battalion in the service of the United States, which speech was, alas, his farewell to the Guards. Colonel Frederick W. Wellington responded to "The State of Massachusetts," eulogizing the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. Colonel Ivers Phillips, then of Colorado, but captain of the Worcester Light Infantry in 1841, recalled many old time reminiscences, and especially the "collation of peace" tendered to the Guards in 1841, when both companies paraded on the same day, and banqueted at the Worcester House, when



THE OLD WORCESTER CITY GUARDS.

- |                         |                     |                     |                      |                        |
|-------------------------|---------------------|---------------------|----------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Henry Deary          | 21. J. C. Colburn   | 32. Augustus White  | 43. John H. Field    | 53. Thomas Garfield    |
| 2. S. W. Woodard        | 22. Wm. C. Smith    | 33. George Gates    | 44. Joseph Keyes     | 54. Joseph Keyes       |
| 3. Edward Brackett      | 23. George H. Bond  | 34. George Gates    | 45. Collins          | 55. Joseph Keyes       |
| 4. David M. Woodward    | 24. Willard F. Peck | 35. D. H. Eames     | 46. Stephen T. Twiss | 56. George E. Mann     |
| 5. Richard Fiske        | 25. A. J. Howe      | 36. E. A. Wood      | 47. Wm. Harrington   | 57. Eugene T. Miles    |
| 6. John to Chollar      | 26. Emmons Goldard  | 37. Eben Harrington | 48. Sewell Thompson  | 58. Chas. W. Longley   |
| 7. Truman G. Hameroff   | 27. E. P. Adams     | 38. Augustus Danson | 49. Lewis Thompson   | 59. Chas. E. Howe      |
| 8. John to Chollar      | 28. John M. May     | 39. Augustus Danson | 50. George Burbank   | 60. Joseph N. Richards |
| 9. N. Walter Batchelder | 29. George E. Wyman | 40. C. G. Lincoln   | 51. John B. Newman   | 61. John B. Newman     |
| 10. E. P. Woodward      | 30. Saml H. Leonard | 41. S. V. Stone     | 52. John B. Wyman    | 62. Lebbicus Brown     |
|                         | 31. Henry Phelps    | 42. Wm. A. Smith    |                      |                        |

words of conciliation were uttered which had a good effect in reuniting the two companies in that good fellowship, which has continued to the present time. Mayor F. A. Harrington spoke for "The City of Worcester," Captain T. G. Davis for "The Worcester Light Infantry," Captain George L. Allen for "Battery B," Captain W. Regan for "The Emmett Guards," Captain John Depire for "Post 10," and Captain Cody for "The Worcester City Guards." "Our Country and Our Flag," elicited an eloquent tribute to "Old Glory," by Colonel W. S. B. Hopkins. General R. H. Chamberlain spoke for "The Chamberlain Battery," now Battery B; Honorable Julius L. Clarke and Lieutenant Hathaway for "The Old Guards of 1840," and Colonel J. M. Goodhue, Honorable Stephen Salisbury, General S. H. Leonard, F. P. Goulding, Esq., and others spoke briefly.

#### IN THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR.

Captain Edwin C. Barrett, commanding the company during its service in Cuba, supplies the history of the Guards in the late war with Spain, as follows:

Company A, Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., at the request of the colonel commanding, first assembled to ascertain how many members would enlist for the war, Friday, April 29, 1898. All enrolled their names but four. One of these Captain Barrett would not enroll on account of his large family; another was physically unfit, and two others had large business interests which no one wished them to sacrifice. We could have secured every name on the rolls if we had desired to do so.

On Sunday, May 1, the company met in the armory to close up the business of Company A, Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M. All committee reports were ready and acted upon, and a board of trustees was appointed and empowered to take charge of the separate property of the company. Orders were ready, notifying every member to report at the armory May 3, 1898, at 7.30 A. M., in heavy marching order, and ready to perform any duty required of the company; it being understood that the guards would go into camp forthwith.

At the place and time appointed, the assembly was sounded, the company formed ranks, and was addressed by His Honor R. B. Dodge, Jr., Mayor of Worcester. Prayer was offered by Rev. Almore Gunnison. Escorted by the Worcester Brass band, Post No. 10, G. A. R., Companies A and C, Sons of Veterans, and other organizations, the company marched to the City Hall, where the line was reviewed by the Mayor and City Government, after which cars were taken for the State camping ground at South Framingham, where we arrived about 10 A. M.

Ten men were rejected by the medical examiners, but recruits were plentiful and the company was mustered into the U. S. service by Lieutenant Erasmus H. Weaver, U. S. A., at 9.50 A. M., May 10, 1898.

The State of Massachusetts ceased to cater for the regiment, and United States rations and company cooks gave us a foretaste of what awaited us.

ROSTER COMPANY A, SECOND REGIMENT MASSACHUSETTS INFANTRY, U. S. V.  
CITY OF WORCESTER, MASS., 1898.

Captain, Edwin G. Barrett; first lieutenant, Moses H. Tisdell; second lieutenant, William H. Plummer.

Non-commissioned officers: First sergeant, Walter H. Allison. Sergeants: Chas. A. Poland, Edward R. Riedl, John G. Gowans, Elbridge B. Sawyer and James T. Cruikshank. Corporals: Ralph L. Allison, Archie F. Murray, John G. Hagburg, Howard K. Hobbs, Herbert R. Fay, Alexander G. Thomson. Musicians: Fred C. Gagnon, Walter A. Traver. Artificer, Samuel E. Clapp. Wagoner, Walter T. Brusco.

Privates: George E. Allison, Herbert E. Abbott, Herbert A. Ballou, Charles A. Barton, Joseph H. Boardman, John T. Bruskey, 2d, Ralph H. Brigham, Philemon Brule, Wm. E. Cardin, Wm. G. Cornwall, Benj. Cooper, James A. Cole, Henry G. Coley, Elmer J. Christenson, Orlo W. Davis, George L. Forest, Frank L. Fairbanks, Lewis M. Fay, Charles A. Fischer, Quincy E. Fortier, Frank E. Gale, Ralph C. Green, Henry C. Grover, Frederic R. Hayes, Arthur L. Heywood, Thomas H. Hammond, Chas. S. Higginbotham, Ernest B. Hall, Simon Israel, Walter R. Johnson, Julius H. Lowell, Chas. F. Lamberton, Joseph T. Laflamme, Wm. H. Morse, Arthur C. Magee, Wm. E. Moody, Arthur G. Mills, Rufus J. Martin, Fred G. Newell, Albert J. Rheimbolt, Wm. W. Rice, Wm. M. Severy, James W. Smith, Wm. E. Sherman, Wm. G. Standish, Louis O. Standish, Walter E. Schofield, Arthur T. Squires, Quincy F. Thomas, Reinhard A. Torkelson, Wm. T. Turner, Samuel A. Wallace, Alfred M. Wills, Peter N. White, Carl W. Weiler, Bert E. Wheeler, Wm. S. Young.

Stricter discipline, active drills in the school of the soldier and company movements were initiated, and continued until May 11, when at 9.30 p. m. we received orders to break camp on the following morning. This being done, Governor Wolcott presented commissions to the staff and line officers, and at 5.40 p. m., we left camp, entrained at South Framingham, and arrived at Newport, R. I., at 10.30 p. m. At 11.15 we embarked on the steamer Plymouth and arrived at pier 18, North River, New York, May 13, at 8.15 a. m., were transferred to transport "Saratoga," and went to pier 17, East River, where we were detained all day taking on supplies. The "Saratoga" then anchored near the Statue of Liberty on Bedloe's Island for the night. On Saturday, May 14th, at 4.30 p. m., we arrived at J street pier, Jersey City, were transferred to trains in waiting, and at 9.30 p. m., left for the South. After being on the cars three nights and two days, we arrived at Lakeland, Fla., Tuesday, May 17, and went into camp at Lake Morton. On May 30, we removed to York City, Tampa, Fla., and on June 7, camp was again removed to Port Tampa, where on arriving about 10 p. m., the regiment bivouacked for the night on the wharves. On the morning of the 8th, we commenced to load the "Concho" Transport No. 14, after which we went on board and found quarters down in the hold, which was already occupied by part of the Fourth and Twenty-Fifth Regiments Infantry, U. S. A., making a total of 1308 men; but on Sunday, June 12, we were transferred to the "Knickerbocker,"

Transport No. 13. On Tuesday, June 14th, the "Knickerbocker" took her place in the line of transports, and at 4 p. m. the great expedition sailed with sealed orders for its unknown destination. When once clear of the land and in the open Gulf, the fleet formed in three lines, with the battle-ships leading and cruisers on the flanks and rear.

Our life on the transports was not very pleasant, as we were very much crowded and had poor ventilation. Our rations consisted of hardtack, canned meats, and a few cans of baked beans. The condensed water furnished was, as is usual, brackish, tinged with rust, and doled out as if the supply was far from sufficient; but there was little grumbling, all things considered. Land was first sighted on June 20, and the tropical shores of Cuba were a welcome, as well as a novel prospect, after our by no means pleasant voyage. On the 20th we were anchored off Siboney, and commenced to land through the surf; but the process was slow and somewhat dangerous, and part of the regiment did not get ashore until the 23d. We at once joined the advance on Santiago, and our first halt was at Siboney, where we had our first brush with the Spaniards. The Second bivouacked that night on a low piece of ground which was fairly overrun with land-crabs. Meanwhile, men and supplies were constantly coming up from the fleet, and on the afternoon of June 24, we drew four days' rations of hardtack, bacon, and canned tomatoes, and at 5.15 P. M. were again on the march. The country trails were rude and narrow, and we marched along in single file, like an Indian war party of the olden time. When the sun was up, these paths were fearfully hot and stifling, and at that season it rained every day, making the trails almost impassable. There was no transportation for extra food or ammunition, and at times, it seemed as though we would have to get along without anything to eat.

On the first night after leaving Siboney, we encamped on the battle-field of Las Guasimas, and around us lay the unburied dead of the Ninth and Tenth Cavalry, U. S. A., and of the First United States Volunteer Cavalry. From Las Guasimas we marched by day and bivouacked at night, through a land swept of everything eatable by Spaniard, Cuban and American foragers, and we had to depend wholly upon the commissariat department, as there was no chance to do any foraging.

On June 30, were issued the following rations, for two days, for seventy-seven men: One bar of soap, 1-2 lb. of tobacco, 50 lbs. of hardtack, 2 cups of beans, and one strip of bacon. At 6.45 P. M. the same evening, we moved toward El Caney, and went into camp at midnight by the roadside on the brow of a hill overlooking the Spanish position.

Here we made ourselves as comfortable as possible, being well aware that, with the earliest light of the following morning, we were to give battle to the enemy.



At 3.30 on the morning of July 1, the men were quietly aroused, breakfast was eaten, and everything prepared for the advance. At 6.42 A. M. the Fourth Artillery, U. S. A., opened fire on El Caney. The Second advanced, and the first member of Company A injured by the fire of the Spanish Mausers was Private Peter N. White, the bullet striking him in the shoulder. The regiment took position directly in front of the Spanish blockhouse, and on the right of the Eighth and Twenty-Second Infantry, U. S. A.

The fire was heavy, and our rifles inferior to those of the enemy; but we held this position until 3.30 P. M., when the village of El Caney was carried by our troops. Details were made to bury the dead, the lines were re-formed, and we marched upon San Juan Hill, the next position held in force by the enemy. It was a night march, and a wearisome one, but we arrived before the Spanish position about 6.30 A. M., and were assigned to support the Seventh Infantry, U. S. A. That night we were attacked, but the enemy was quickly repulsed with loss. Private Peter N. White, who although wounded had remained with the company, was again hit, the bullet going through his left lung. He was conveyed to the rear on a stretcher made of a blanket strung between two rifles.

After the affair at San Juan Hill, the siege was a somewhat monotonous affair. We marched and dug trenches, not infrequently under fire, until the city of Santiago was completely invested. On July 14, came the welcome news that the Spaniards had surrendered, and on the 17th the official surrender took place. This was a very beautiful sight. The troops were all aligned on the crest of the trenches, awaiting the signal to give three cheers, which they did with a will when the Stars and Stripes went up over Santiago.

After the surrender, the excitement and hardships of the siege began to tell on the men. Many came down with the fever, and it was hard to find men enough for the necessary guard and fatigue duty.

The supplies furnished us had been often insufficient, and by no means of the best quality, and it seemed as if we must lose many of our number without any benefit to the country.

On August 13, however, the welcome orders came, and in a few hours we were steaming out of Santiago and bound for home. We arrived at Montauk, August 18, on the 19th were examined, and on the 20th went into camp at Montauk Point.

On the morning of August 27, we left Montauk Point on the steamer "Block Island" for New London, where we boarded the train for home. On arriving at Worcester, we again formed in line and marched through the crowded streets to the company quarters, which we had left only a few weeks before. Happily there were none missing from our ranks, except those whose convalescence was assured, for in battle, siege and

hospital, death had passed us by, and there were none but happy tears to mingle with the greetings of our loved ones. Neither had we been so greatly enfeebled as our sister companies, for Company A was the only one whose members felt equal to the task of carrying their own blanket-rolls en route to the armory.

At the armory, the company was dismissed to their homes, and for the first time the remarkable fact became known that this was the only company, either regular or volunteer, that had brought every man back to the United States.

Company A was mustered out and paid off two months later, but was promptly reformed, all but two of those who served in Cuba signifying their intention of remaining in the company.

Company A has kept its ranks full ever since its return from the war. Eight of those members who saw service in Cuba are in the United



*Photo by Marr.*

ENCAMPMENT SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY. FIELD MANOEUVRES, FIRST BRIGADE, M. V. M., 1900.

States army; one, a first lieutenant, and the rest are enlisted men in the Twenty-Sixth Regiment, United States Volunteers, all of whom are maintaining, in the Philippines, the ancient record for valor and fidelity of the Worcester City Guard.

## CHAPTER XIX.

### THE WORCESTER CONTINENTALS.

By Lieutenant George H. Harlow, Clerk.

THE Worcester Continentals are thus described in their Charter:—  
“A body of men associated together for military organization, drill, discipline and parade, and the preservation of military associations and spirits.”

The seal of the corps carries a chapeau on crossed swords, within a heart-shaped wreath, and bears the Latin inscription, “*In memoriam rei publicae patrium.*”

The first meeting for organization was held April 10, 1876; the first public parade, July 4th, 1876. Chartered by Act of Legislature, Chap. 144, Acts of 1879. Uniform: Three-cornered chapeau, dark blue cutaway coat with buff facing, buff vest, black velveteen short pants, top boots, ruffled shirt bosom and sleeves, with cross and waist belts and sword—the whole being as nearly as possible a fac-simile of the uniform worn by the officers of the Continental Army.

From 1876 to 1879 the organization was officered by a captain, two first lieutenants and eight sergeants, a clerk and a treasurer ranking as staff sergeants, a color sergeant assigned to a company, and a quartermaster sergeant; the last four officers acting as a non-commissioned staff. The staff of the captain commanding consisted of an adjutant, surgeon, assistant surgeon, chaplain and quartermaster.

Upon receiving their charter, the command changed its formation to that of a battalion, commanded by a lieutenant colonel, with four captains, four first lieutenants, a clerk and a treasurer; the last two ranking as first lieutenants, and assigned to staff duty, all elected by the corps; and a staff appointed by the Commander consisting of a quartermaster, commissary, surgeon, assistant surgeon, judge advocate and chaplain; a non-commissioned staff of a sergeant major, quartermaster sergeant, commissary sergeant and hospital steward. In 1899, a major was added to the elective officers.

Between 1876 and 1898 the following persons have served as commanding officers: Lieutenant-Colonel W. S. B. Hopkins as captain and lieutenant-colonel, 1876 to 1886, and again 1889 to 1891; Lieutenant-Colonel Edward J. Russell, May to November, 1886; Lieutenant-Colonel Aaron S. Taft, 1891 to 1893; Lieutenant-Colonel Nathan Taylor, 1893 to 1894; Lieutenant-Colonel William A. Gile, 1894 to 1899, Lieutenant-Colonel Phineas L. Rider, 1899.

Each of these commanding officers, with the exception of Lieutenant-Colonel Taft, and Lieutenant-Colonel Rider, served in the war of the Re-

bellion. Other officers of long service with the command include Captain Edwin A. Wood, who served twelve years as adjutant, and George H. Harlow, the present clerk, who has served twenty-one years in that capacity.

Only five of the members who paraded July 4, 1876, are now active members of the company, these being Colonel Hopkins, Lieutenant Edward P. Pevey, Lieutenant Edward J. Putnam, Lieutenant George H. Harlow and Private George E. Fairbanks.

The present officers of the Worcester Continentals are as follows:—

*Field and Staff.*

Phineas L. Rider, Lieutenant-Colonel; Harry B. Fairbanks, Major; Frederic H. Lucke, First Lieutenant and Adjutant; Joseph G. Vaudreuil, First Lieutenant and Quartermaster; William W. Sargent, First Lieutenant and Commissary; Edward H. Trowbridge, M. D., Surgeon, rank of major; Perley P. Comey, M. D., Assistant Surgeon, rank of first lieutenant; Ernest H. Vaughan, Judge Advocate, rank of captain, Rev. Almon Gunnison, Chaplain, rank of captain; George H. Harlow, First Lieutenant and Clerk; Fred L. Hutchins, First Lieutenant and Treasurer.

*Honorary Staff.*

Lieutenant-Colonel W. S. B. Hopkins, Lieutenant Edward B. Dolliver, Lieutenant Edward P. Pevey, Lieutenant Edward J. Putnam.

*Line Officers.*

Captain Edwin G. Barrett, Captain Charles S. Holden, Captain Daniel W. Darling, Captain Moses Gross, First Lieutenant Fred M. Clark, Jr., First Lieutenant Wilfred L. Cheney, First Lieutenant C. Henry Colvin, First Lieutenant Charles D. Thayer.

*Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Henry A. Leslie, Sergeant-Major; J. Walter Flagg, Quartermaster-Sergeant; Charles A. Weaver, Commissary-Sergeant; Clarence W. Whitaker, M.D., Hospital Steward; Cornelius W. Walls, Color Sergeant, U. S. Colors; James I. Elliott, Color Sergeant, State Colors.

Lieutenant-Colonel Rider, Major Fairbanks, Captain Barrett, Captain Holden and Adjutant Lucke are at the present time officers in the Second Regiment, M. V. M., and Major Fairbanks, Captain Barrett, and Captain Holden also served as officers in the Second Massachusetts Regiment, U. S. Volunteers during the Spanish-American war in Cuba.

The corps has made many pilgrimages to other parts of New England and the Middle states on trips or excursions of from one to five days each, notably, to Newport, Providence, Rocky Point and Oakland Beach in Rhode Island; four trips to Saratoga Springs; two to Hartford, Conn.; to New York City as an objective point, and en route several times; Long Branch, N. J.; Philadelphia, Pa.; Albany, N. Y.; Manchester, N. H.; Boston, Mass., and other places.

Most of these excursions have been made in the fall of the year. The spring parade has usually been made upon the last Wednesday in May, until the year of 1892, when a triple alliance was made by the Putnam Phalanx of Hartford, Conn., the Amoskeag Veterans of Manchester,



REV. ALMON GANNISON  
Chaplain

DR. E. B. FLOWERIDGE,  
Major and Surgeon.

LIEUT. E. J. PUTNAM,  
Commissary.

LIEUT. A. J. MARBLE,  
Treasurer.

LIEUT. CHAS. F. MANN,  
Adjutant.

LIEUT. COL. D. HARLOW,  
Clark

LIEUT. COL. NATHAN TAYLOR,  
Past Commander

LIEUT. COL. WILLIAM A. GILL,  
Commander.

CAPT. DANIEL W. KING,  
Judge Advocate

# OFFICERS OF THE WORCESTER CONTINENTALS.



and the Worcester Continentals, and a joint celebration was held in Worcester on the 17th of June of that year and this was followed on the 17th of June, 1893, by a joint celebration at Manchester, and again on June 17, 1894, at Hartford.

In 1895 the three commands met in Boston on the 17th of June and paraded to Charlestown and Bunker Hill. The four last trips occupied two days each, with a parade and banquet on the first day.

The corps has come in contact with and been the recipient of courtesies from many military organizations, and on the other hand it has opened its hospitable doors to not only all local military organizations, but to all military guests who have visited Worcester since its organization. We cannot attempt to enumerate all, or to give a complete history in this short chapter, but will mention a few of the military companies with whom it has been particularly friendly, viz.: The Old Guard of New York, the State Fencibles of Philadelphia, the Albany Burgesses of Albany, N. Y., and the Saratoga Citizens Corps of Saratoga, N. Y.; the Hartford Foot Guard and Putnam Phalanx of Hartford, Conn., the First Light Infantry, Regiment of Providence, R. I., the Providence Light Infantry Veteran Association, and the United Train of Artillery of Providence, R. I.; the Newport Veteran Artillery Association, Newport, R. I.; the Newburyport Veteran Artillery Association, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Boston Light Infantry Veteran Association, Boston Light Infantry, the National Lancers of Boston, Amoskeag Veterans, Continental Guards of New Orleans, La., and Kansas City Veterans, of Kansas City, Mo.

In all its wanderings the organization has been fortunate in making friends, and few independent corps have built up a better or greater reputation as gentlemen and soldiers than the Worcester Continentals. From its foundation, its members have been composed of the business and professional men of the city, and its honorary corps of substantial citizens of the same class who were unable to do military duty.

At home, it has been the organization called upon to entertain military guests of the city, and in this it has been ably supplemented by the companies of the local militia, and George H. Ward Post 10, G. A. R., all of whom the Continentals have always been proud to consider their good friends, and have done all in their power to bring together in a social way, and to assist to unite the various elements found in such military bodies in the bonds of fraternal sympathy and good fellowship.

Among the active and honorary members have been found members of the President's Cabinet, members of Congress and of the Legislature, four mayors of the city, lawyers, physicians, clergymen, etc., and the city and the command have both good reason to be proud of its organization and membership.

## CHAPTER XX.

### ROXBURY CITY GUARDS.

(BATTERY D, FIRST REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY, M. V. M.)

By Captain Isaac P. Gragg.



AT the close of the Revolutionary War the condition of the militia became a matter of solicitude to Washington and the prominent men of the young republic. The long struggle for independence had left this, the only force to which the country could look for defense in time of danger, sadly demoralized. Major-General Heath, a close friend of Washington, returning from the service to his Roxbury farm imbued with these ideas, at once interested himself in the organization of a militia company for his town.

The company was recruited as an artillery company during the winter of 1783-84, and held its first meeting on March 22, 1784. After sundry adjournments the following officers were elected on April 12 ensuing: captain (with rank of major), John Jones Spooner; captain-lieutenant, Jonathan Warner; first lieutenant, Joseph Pierpont; second lieutenant, John Swift. Major Spooner was a young man of means and education, a merchant by occupation, had been captain of a Roxbury military company, and was a son-in-law of General Heath; Captain-Lieutenant Warner was a veteran of the Revolution, and many such veterans were enrolled in its ranks. The company was designated as the Roxbury Train of Artillery, and was attached to the Divisionary Corps of Artillery of the First Division, the uniform



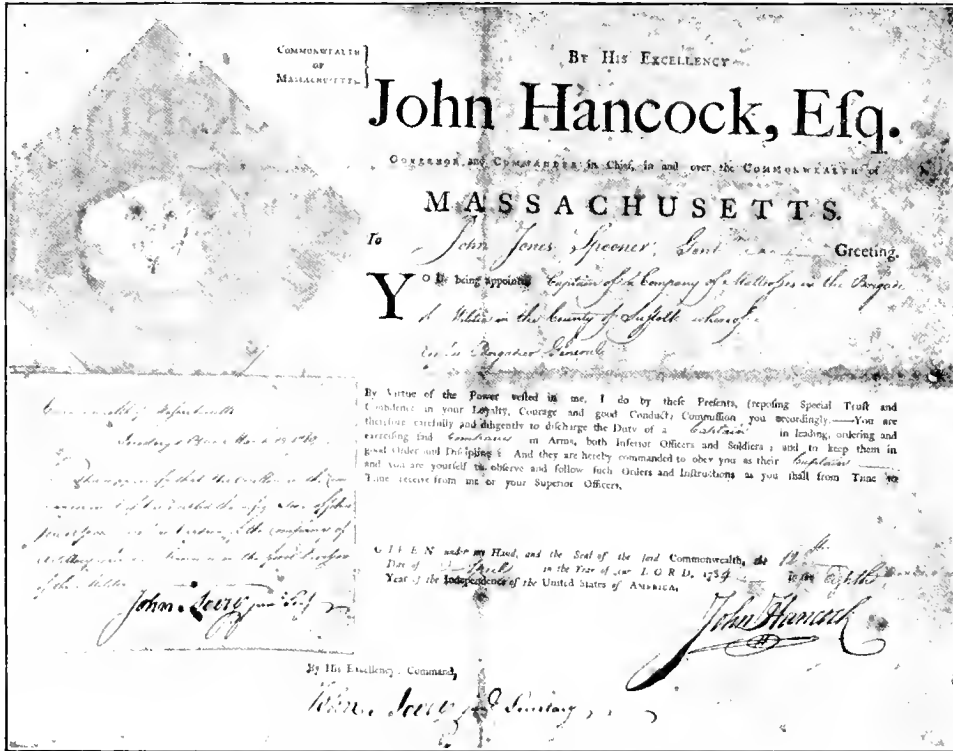
MAJOR JOHN JONES SPOONER.  
First Commander Roxbury City Guards, 1784.



being the same as that worn by the artillery of the Continental army. The commission of Major Spooner, under the bold signature of Governor Hancock, now hangs on the walls of the armory of the company.

The first parade was made on July 5, 1784. General Heath in his diary makes the following note of the event: "This day Major Spooner's new-raised company of artillery turned out for the first time. The company made a good appearance and performed their exercises well. They dined together and were joined by a number of gentlemen of this and some other towns."

October 15, 1784, the company fired a salute of thirteen guns in honor of Marquis Lafayette as he passed through Roxbury. October 19,



FROM ORIGINAL CHARTER, ROXBURY CITY GUARDS.

it paraded in Boston, together with the Boston Train of Artillery, in honor of the anniversary of the surrender of Cornwallis. No other companies in the vicinity being in condition for parade at this period, these two artillery companies performed escort duty for the governor and members of the General Court on July 4, 1785, and 1786.

The inspection report of 1787 gives the strength of the company as one captain, one captain-lieutenant, three lieutenants, four sergeants, four musicians, twenty-four cannoneers, eight pioneers and three drivers—

total, fifty-two—with two brass four-pounder cannon in their possession.

It would be impossible to compile in chronological order any detailed account of the many interesting events relating to this company, covering a period of over a century, in the space allotted to this article; therefore we can only group together under appropriate headings a concise statement of what appears to be most important to place on record or most interesting to the friends of the corps.

#### ARMORIES.

In October, 1784, the company petitioned the Legislature to be provided with a house in which to store their cannon. This resulted in an act granting \$100 to all artillery companies for such purpose. The first gun house was built on the parish green, to the east of the meeting-house, and faced what is now Roxbury street.

In later years it was enlarged and faced

on Putnam street, and the company made it their

military home until 1853, when they leased Guild Hall, but still continued to store their cannon in the gun house. During the absence of the company at the front, in 1863, the Roxbury city government, under authority from the state, gave up the armory, and in 1865 they occupied a portion of Bacon's Hall on Washington street. In 1869 they temporarily occupied the old gun house and the loft of the stone stable in Elliot square; but in 1870 they leased and handsomely furnished Webster Hall, now Oriental Hall, sub-letting it for parties, fairs, etc. In 1886 the company occupied Armory Hall, at the corner of Warren and Dudley streets, and from thence removed, in 1890, to the State



INFANTRY CAP 1850.  
Company D, Second Regiment Infantry.



INFANTRY CAP 1855.  
Company D, Second Regiment Infantry.

regimental armory on Irvington street, Boston, which it still occupies.



1827.

Roxbury Artillery, Company A, Artillery Battalion, 1st Regt.,  
1st Division.



1833

Roxbury Artillery, Company A, 2d Battalion Artillery (attached  
to 1st Regt. Infantry)



1843.

Company D, 5th Regiment Artillery



1849.

Company D, 5th Regiment Artillery.

ARTILLERY CAPS, ROXBURY ARTILLERY TRAIN AND CITY GUARDS



## UNIFORMS AND ARMS.

The first uniform, adopted in 1784, was that of the Continental artillery—dark blue with red facings and three-cornered hat with black and red pompons, sabres and belts, and two four-pounder cannon were issued to them. Later on leather leggings were adopted. In 1812 the hat was changed to the imposing chapeau-bras, with a black and red feather plume some thirty inches in length. In 1818 a more modern uniform took the place of the open front coat with its ruffled shirt: it was dark blue with few ornaments, coat buttoned up at the chin; what was known as the “Bona-parte hat” was adopted and the plumes shortened. In 1827 the new uniform adopted consisted of a dark blue dress coat with solid red breast, bell buttons and blue and red shoulder rolls, white pants, bell-crowned leather hat with the same long black and red plume; the sabre belt was of red leather embossed with gilt. In 1833 dark blue pantaloons were added and the hat changed to the leather bucket pattern, with imposing brass front ornament and mixed black and red fountain plume. In 1840 they wore the state regulation artillery uniform—dark blue trimmed with red facings and yellow worsted braid, yellow wings, and a less imposing leather hat with red pompon. In 1843 permission was granted to change the pompon for a red fountain plume and the worsted braid for gilt; the sabre was abandoned for a heavy artillery broadsword. The company also purchased a stand of smooth-bore carbines and began to drill as infantry, appearing with their cannon only on state duty. About this time new cannon were issued to them in place of the old ones. In 1846 the state issued to them the regular pattern of muskets. In 1848, again a new uniform—dark blue, red trimmings, shoulder pads with blue tops and red fringe. In 1849 light blue pants were substituted for dark, and bearskin hats with gilt tassels were adopted. In 1853 white cross belts and breast plates were adopted. In 1855, the company having been changed to infantry, another uniform became necessary, which consisted of a dark blue frock coat, white infantry trimmings, blue and white wings, black felt shako hat with white ball pompons. In 1859, new regimental uniform—gray swallow-tailed coats and pants with black facings, brass-bound wings with black tops and white fringe, new black shako hats with white oblong pompon. New Springfield rifled muskets were issued about this time, and the cannon were returned to the state in 1861. During the Civil War and until 1869, the company wore the army blue; then the regiment went back to the gray uniform with a new shako hat of black leather, surmounted by a white pompon tipped with blue. Spencer breech-loading rifles were issued about this time, and soon after replaced by the Peabody breech-loader, and later on by the Springfield. In 1870, black bearskin hats with white side plume were adopted. In 1875 an extra uniform for company parades was adopted: gray faced with red, brass

and red wings, gray pants with red stripes, white cross belts and breast-plates, with gray shako hat of an Austrian pattern, surmounted by a red pompon. In 1884, new state regulation uniform: dark blue coatee, full knee pants and leather gaiters, with spiked helmet. Since then the state has been continually making changes in the uniform, substituting white helmets for black, long pants for the zouave pants and leggings, followed by the United States army campaign felt hat, blouse and canvas leggings. In 1894 blue fatigue caps were added for full dress, and in 1897 the trimmings were changed to conform to the artillery branch of the service. For the Spanish War, canvas working suits and blue flannel shirts were issued; also improved Springfield breech-loading rifles. Previous to the Civil War, when all militia companies furnished their own uniforms, a military overcoat was seldom included in a company's outfit; since then the state has always furnished the United States regulation overcoat of light blue.

#### ASSIGNMENTS.

The Company was originally designated as the Roxbury Train of Artillery, and attached to the Divisionary Corps of Artillery of the First



CAPT. EBENEZER W. STONE.  
Company D, First Regiment Infantry, Mass. Vols.

Division. In 1788, the four companies of the Division were organized into a battalion. In 1793, the Roxbury, Dorchester and Weymouth Companies were formed into a battalion, the Roxbury company as Co. A, and attached to the First Brigade, First Division. In 1831, Co. A, Second Battalion Artillery, attached to the First Regiment of Infantry. In 1844, Co. D, Fifth Regiment of Artillery. In 1855, Co. D, Second Regiment of Infantry. In 1859, Co. D, First Regiment of Infantry. War companies, Co. D, First Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry and Co. D, Forty-Second Regiment Infantry, M.V.M. In 1866, Co. D, Tenth Regiment Infantry. Same year regiment designated as the First Regiment. In 1897, regiment changed to heavy

artillery, company to Battery D; after existing as foot artillery for seventy-one, and as an infantry company forty-two years it returned to its original arm—the artillery—though of a more modern type.

## MILITARY DISPLAYS AND EXCURSIONS.

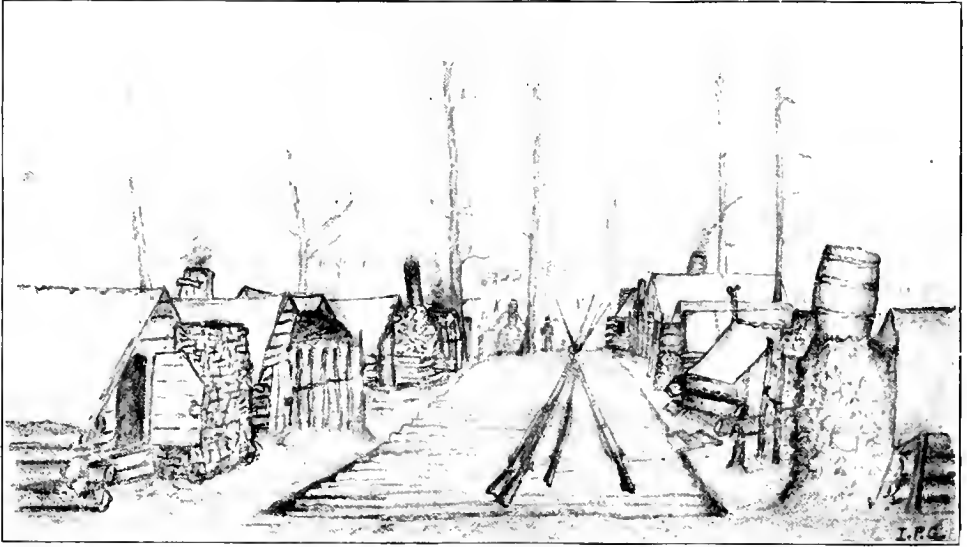
Scarcely any military event of importance has occurred in eastern Massachusetts in which the company has not participated. It was present at the receptions of Presidents Washington, Adams, Madison, Jackson, Polk, Pierce and Grant; of Marquis Lafayette, Kossuth, the Prince of Wales and General Sheridan; participated in the local obsequies in honor of Presidents Adams and Taylor, Governor Eustis and Daniel Webster; was present at the celebration of the ratification of the Federal Constitution, the railroad and water celebrations, the centennial parades at Lexington, Concord and Bunker Hill, the return of the Massachusetts Volunteers from Mexico and the Civil War, the dedication of the Soldiers' Monument on Boston Common and the return of the Spanish war colors.

It has made excursions to Portsmouth, N. H., Portland and Bangor, Me., Lexington, Lowell, Hingham, Worcester and Westboro, Mass., and to Philadelphia and New York City with the First Regiment. It has received the Norfolk Guards, Engine Company No. 3 of Portland, Me., Portland Light Infantry, Washington Grays of New York, the Washington Continentals of Albany and the Washington Light Infantry of Washington, D.C. It was prominent in carrying out Roxbury Centennial Day, for several years furnished the escort for Post 26, G. A. R. of Roxbury on Decoration Day, and has always been ready to assist in any patriotic occasion where its services were required.

## ACTIVE SERVICE.—SHAY'S REBELLION.

Hardly had the company fairly come into existence before it was called upon to respond to that important duty of a citizen soldier—the maintainance of law and order. The troubles in Massachusetts that culminated in what is known as Shay's Rebellion were then in full sway. On September 10, 1786, it paraded ready to march to the support of the courts at Concord, but the order was countermanded. September 20, the train attended an oration by Samuel Quincy, delivered in the Roxbury meeting-house, on the necessity for a well-organized militia. November 30, a portion of the company (mounted) joined in a reconnoissance to Shrewsbury to secure information of the movements of the malcontents. January 19, 1787, the company marched with the militia, under General Lincoln, for the suppression of the rebellion. Major Spooner commanded the artillery battalion composed of the Boston, Roxbury, Charlestown and Lexington companies. The Dorchester Artillery Company appears to have been consolidated with the Roxbury company for this tour of duty, with Captain-Lieutenant Thomas Williams of the Dorchester company in command, owing to Lieutenants Pierpont and Doggett having been detailed on Major Spooner's staff. The company shared in the labors and exposures of General Lincoln's short and vigorous campaign,

including the repulse of the insurgents at the Springfield arsenal, the march to Hadley, and a thirty-mile night march in a cold and driving snow storm, resulting in the surprise and scattering of Shay's forces on the heights of Petersham. The company arrived back at Roxbury on



*Drawing by Capt. Isaac P. Gragg.*

D COMPANY STREET, FIRST MASS. VOLS., BRANDY STATION, VA., 1863-64.

February 9, and while having experienced considerable hardship on this tour of duty, they happily were spared from casualties of a more serious nature.

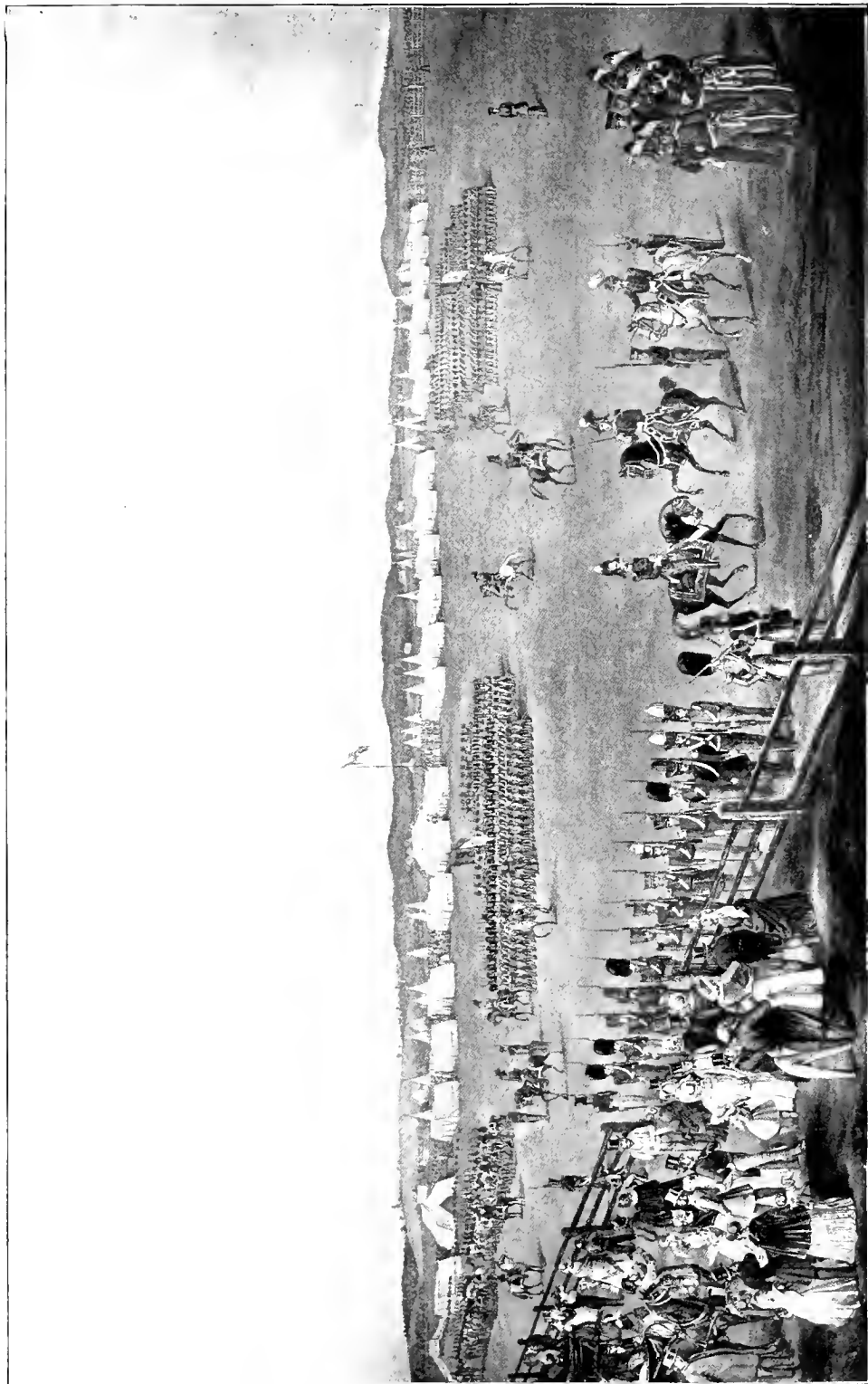
#### ANTHONY BURNS RIOT.

The excitement caused by the arrest and return of the fugitive slave, Anthony Burns, in 1854, made it necessary to call out a militia force to enforce the Federal Laws. It was a distasteful duty to a majority of the members of this and other companies, but it was a duty performed without hesitation and in the interests of law and order. Captain Burrell reported with full ranks, and the company was stationed for two days in the Boston City Hall, and on June 2 was on duty on State street when Burns was sent back to Virginia.

#### CIVIL WAR.

In common with all the militia companies of Massachusetts, this organization was prompt to offer its services to the Government, in the spring of 1861, when it became evident that the differences between the North and South must be submitted to the arbitrament of actual war. The First Regiment, to which it belonged, although anxious to take the field on the three months' call in April, was kept in reserve by the state authorities, and for two weeks the company were on duty in their armor-





NATIONAL LANCERS,  
Capt. Allen Gould

Fifth Regiment Artillery, Four Companies,  
Col. W. B. Perkins

First Regiment Infantry, Ten Companies,  
Col. Samuel Andrews

ENCAMPMENT FIRST BRIGADE, M. V. M., NEPONSET, DORCHESTER, BRIG.-GEN. B. F. EDMONDS COMMANDING, AUGUST 29, 1861.



ies drilling and making street parades. Upon the call for three-years' troops it promptly renewed its offer for service. At this time the company numbered about fifty members; the maximum strength of the war companies was 101. The organization furnished three war companies—Co. D, First Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry for three years' service, in which two-thirds of the militia members enlisted, Co. D, Forty-Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., for nine months' service, in which the remaining militia members enlisted, and Co. D, Forty-Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., for one hundred days' service, which was partly composed of members of the nine-months' company. In each company, the extra men required to fill them to the maximum were necessarily new men, who thus became identified with the corps.

Company D, First Massachusetts Volunteers, was sworn into the United States service in the armory at Roxbury on May 24, 1861, with Captain Ebenezer W. Stone, Jr., its commander, who served the entire three years in that capacity and who originally joined the corps in 1855. The history of this company is virtually the same as the history of the noble regiment of which it was a part. It left the State with 101 officers and men, received forty-five recruits, returning home in May, 1864, with fifty-one members, of whom only



BRIGADIER GENERAL ISAAC S. BURRELL.

twenty-nine were among the original 101; it was present at the battles of Blackburn's Ford, First Bull Run, Siege of Yorktown, Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, Savage's Station, Glendale, Malvern Hill, Bristow Station, Second Bull Run, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wapping Heights, Locust Grove, Mine Run, Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, and performed duty in New York harbor during the Draft Riots in 1863. All its experience was with the Army of the Potomac and most of it in the famous Third Army Corps, in General Hookers' original brigade and division.

Its casualties were killed 12, died 4, discharged for wounds and disability 58, promoted 9, transferred 7, deserted 5, discharged at expiration of service 51; 37 men were wounded in battle and 4 accidentally, 5 mem-

bers suffered amputation of an arm. On its return home it was received by the city government and people of Roxbury with honor and enthusiasm.

After the departure of the first war company, the members left at home recruited its ranks under Captain George W. Beach, and responded with full ranks on Boston Common May 25, 1862, under Captain Sherive, on what was known as the "Banks Retreat scare." On September 20, 1862, the second war company was mustered into service for nine months, as Company D, Forty-Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., with Captain George W. Sherive as commander, who joined the corps in 1842. The officers and nearly all the men were captured at Galveston, Texas, on January 1, 1863, with loss of one man mortally wounded and two dying later on in rebel prisons. The enlisted men were shortly afterward paroled and exchanged and served out their term with the regiment near New Orleans, La., but the commissioned officers were kept prisoners for twenty-one months; Colonel Burrell, a former commander of the company, was a fellow prisoner.

The third war company was mustered into service for 100 days on July 21, 1864, under Captain Samuel A. Waterman, who was first sergeant of the nine months' company, as Company D, Forty-Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M. The regiment served in the fortifications near Washington, D. C., and one man died during the term.

#### BOSTON FIRE.

During November, 1872, the company, under Captain Isaac P. Gragg, performed thirteen days' duty in preserving order and protecting property in the "burnt district" at Boston.

#### SPANISH WAR.

Upon the opening of the Spanish War the First Regiment Heavy Artillery, M. V. M., to which the company was attached, was ordered on duty and placed in the forti-



FORT PICKERING, SALEM, 1868.



BATTERY D, HEADQUARTERS 1868

cations of Boston harbor; the regiment volunteered for active service, and on May 9, 1898, was mustered into the United States service for two



THE PEARBODY TROPHY. PRESENTED BY THE PROVIDENCE TOOL CO.

years, to date from April 26. The company, as Battery D, under Captain Joseph H. Frothingham, from June until September, was stationed, with a detachment of the regiment, at Fort Pickering, Salem, Mass., and performed faithful and arduous service in strengthening that old work and mounting modern guns. The close of hostilities with Spain rendering further service unnecessary, the regiment was ordered to South Framingham and furloughed for thirty days, and finally mustered out of the United States service November 14. Had it been their fortune to have experienced service against the enemy, they would have undoubtedly made a most honorable record for themselves and their state.

#### RIFLE PRACTICE.

Both as artillery and infantry, the company made occasional efforts at target practice, but it was not until after the Civil War that rifle shooting in the militia was taken up in a serious and systematic manner. New York led the way with the establishment of the Creedmore Rifle Range, but Massachusetts did not early catch the shooting fever, and it is undoubtedly largely due to this company that general interest was infused into the Massachusetts militia

years, to date from April 26. The company, as Battery D, under Captain Joseph H. Frothingham, from June until September, was stationed, with a detachment of the regiment, at Fort Pickering, Salem, Mass., and performed faithful and arduous service in strengthening that old work and mounting modern guns. The close of hostilities with Spain rendering further service unnecessary, the regiment was ordered to South Framingham and furloughed for thirty days, and finally mustered out of the United States service November 14. Had it been their fortune to have experienced service against the



BATTERY D, COMPANY STREET, 1908.

as early as it was, in this most important branch of military training.

On October 7, 1875, Captain William A. Smith issued a circular to the militia companies of the State, calling upon them to send delegates to a meeting at the Parker House, Boston, on October 27, to take some action looking toward systematic instruction in rifle practice. The circular stated that the company claimed no proficiency in shooting and was anxious to improve its own record.

As a result of that meeting, the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia Rifle Association was formed, with Assistant Adjutant Isaac S. Kingsbury as executive officer and Captain Smith as secretary, and under the auspices of this association a competition was held, November 16, on the camp-ground at South Framingham, in which twenty-three companies participated. The programme laid out for this first effort was a modest one, the teams consisting of only five men and the firing being only at 200 yards; all the expenses being met by an assessment laid upon the companies represented. The Providence Tool Company, manufacturers of the Peabody rifle, with which a portion of the State militia was then armed, offered a first prize of a fine silver cup worth \$300, to be the property of the company that should win it in three annual competitions. This was won at this match by the Claflin Guards of Newton, the Roxbury City Guards being the thirteenth in the order of scores attained. The association conducted annual competitions for several years, the number of competing companies increasing each year, until, finally, through the interest aroused, the State officially took up the subject and, in 1880, held the first State Rifle Match, in which all companies were obliged to participate.

Under the foregoing circumstances it was not surprising that the company made special efforts to attain proficiency in shooting. It commenced by being the thirteenth in line, but soon forced its way to the front rank. In the 1875 match it stood No. 6, in 1877 it won the second place, and in 1879 stood No. 1, the Providence Tool Company's cup finally passing into its possession. It won the first prize at the state matches of 1880, 1881, 1882, 1884 and 1885. It had four men on the first state team that went to Creedmoor, in 1878, and seven men on the Creedmoor team of 1879; while two of its members won places on the Creedmoor team of 1886 that won the Inter-State match and also the Hilton trophy.

Among the noted riflemen it drew into its ranks were Colonel Horace T. Rockwell and Major Charles W. Hinman, who fired their first shots as militiamen, as privates in this company, and were afterwards members of the rifle teams that went to England in 1880, 1883 and 1888, Colonel Rockwell becoming state inspector of rifle practice and Major Hinman inspector of rifle practice of the First Brigade. Its representatives so frequently won first prizes for individual shooting in the competitions of commissioned officers and enlisted men, that there is not room in this

article to do justice to the record of high scores made by many members of the company.

In addition to the state competitions, the company was constantly arranging competitions with other companies, in order to increase the general interest. In 1877 and 1880, it held telegraphic matches with the Oakland Guards of California, losing the first match and winning the second. In 1879, it defeated the team of the First United States Artillery, at Fort Independence, Boston Harbor, in two competitions; but the regulars defeated them at Fort Warren in 1880. It also defeated Co. A, Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., at Wakefield, December 13, 1879.

After ten years of prominence and great service in assisting to establish rifle shooting in the Massachusetts militia on a sound basis, it



First Lieutenant Norman P. Cormack. Captain Joseph H. Frothingham. Second Lieutenant Fred Spenceley.  
OFFICERS, BATTERY D, FIRST HEAVY ARTILLERY, M. V. M., 1901.

slackened its efforts to keep at the head. Other companies became proficient and took the lead in making brilliant scores, but the company has constantly maintained a creditable record with the rifle.

#### DRILLS AND INSPECTION.

Under Captain Moses H. Webber, at the muster of 1850, the company won the prize for being the best drilled company in the Fifth Artillery, M. V. M. At the 1857 encampment the Boston Artillery won the first prize, the judges being a tie on the decision, between the Boston and Roxbury companies, and General Edmunds casting the deciding vote.

In 1868, the Montgomery Light Guards, then noted for their proficiency in drill, challenged any company in the state to a competitive drill, and the company, under Captain Jediah Jordan, accepted the challenge. The contest took place May 27, on Boston Common. It was, by a narrow margin, decided in favor of the Montgomery Guards, but the company earned much credit for being instrumental in reviving an interest in drill among the militia.

Under Captains Harry C. Gardner and Joseph H. Frothingham the company attained great excellence in drill and discipline and has passed some of the finest inspections on record, receiving high compliments at the hands of the inspectors. Captain Frothingham, the present commander, has been its captain since 1887, and senior captain of the State militia since 1899. He is most indefatigable in maintaining the general efficiency of the corps, and has not missed a drill or tour of duty during his entire connection with the company, which he joined in 1869.

#### THE 100th ANNIVERSARY.

The centennial of the date of the organization of the corps was March 22, 1884, but it was observed on July 4, the anniversary of its first parade.

The citizens of Roxbury were enthusiastic over the occasion and contributed nearly \$4,000 toward the expenses. Every commissioned officer in the State militia was invited to be present and a large number responded; a committee of forty, consisting of ten from the active, past and honorary members and ten citizens, with ex-Governor William Gaston as chairman, carried out the arrangements for the day.

The procession in the forenoon was composed as follows: General Isaac S. Burrell, chief marshal; Lieutenant-Colonel Solomon A. Bolster, chief of staff; Roxbury Horse Guards, Captain Thomas as escort, dismounted; Roxbury City Guard, Captain Harry C. Gardner; invited military guests under Major Thos. R. Mathews; guests in carriages in charge of L. Foster Morse, Esq., including Rev. A. H. Plumb, the chaplain, and Wm. H. Sayward, the poet of the occasion; Roxbury Artillery Veteran Association, Captain Isaac P. Gragg; section of Battery A, M. V. M., Lieutenant A. W. Carleton. The route of march passed the sites of the old armories and the residence of Major Spooner, the first commander, which were appropriately decorated and placarded, and the march ended at Franklin Park where an encampment was pitched and named "Camp Roxbury."

Dinner was served to nearly a thousand persons. Governor Gaston made an eloquent address, Lieutenant-Governor Ames represented the Commonwealth and Mayor Martin the City of Boston. Other speakers were Colonel A. C. Wellington, General N. A. M. Dudley, Captain John A. Scott, Captain I. P. Gragg, General John L. Swift, General I. S. Bur-



rell, L. Foster Morse, Esq., and the venerable city clerk of Roxbury, Joseph W. Tucker; in the evening a military levee was held at the armory in Webster Hall. The occasion will long be remembered with pride by the participants, and it was a substantial proof of the esteem and respect in which the Roxbury people held the long and honorable record of this historic corps.

## PROMOTIONS.

Three brigadier-generals of the Massachusetts militia commenced their military career in the ranks of the company, Generals Andrew Chase, Isaac S. Burrell and Thomas R. Mathews; also seven colonels, one lieutenant-colonel, twelve majors, six captains and fourteen lieutenants of other companies. In the regular army it has been represented by one colonel, two majors and three captains; to the Spanish War it contributed two captains and five lieutenants; for service in the Philippines one lieutenant.

During the Civil War the following commissioned officers formerly belonged to the corps or were promoted out of its ranks in the field: one brigadier-general, one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, two majors, fourteen captains, eleven first lieutenants and eight second lieutenants.

After the war one lieutenant-colonel, one major, two captains and four lieutenants of volunteers, enlisted in its ranks in encouragement of the militia.

## COMMANDERS.

The roster of captains who have commanded the company is as follows: John Jones Spooner, 1784; Jonathan Warner, 1789; Jesse Doggett, 1798; Humphrey Bicknell, 1804; Joseph Seaver, 1809; Isaac Gale, 1812; William Cobb, 1814; Calvin Warren, 1817; Joseph Hastings, 1818; Joseph May, 1821; Lewis Withington, 1824; Robert Stetson, 1827; Joseph B. Towle, 1828; John Webber, 1833; Andrew Chase, 1834; re-elected, 1840; Benjamin H. Burrell, 1843; John L. Stanton, 1845; Samuel S. Chase, 1847; Benjamin H. Burrell, 1848; Moses H. Webber, 1850; Isaac S. Burrell, 1853; Thomas L. D. Perkins, 1857; John J. Dyer, 1861; Ebenezer W. Stone, 1861; George W. Beach, 1862; George Sherive, 1862. (War companies: Ebenezer W. Stone, 1861; George Sherive, 1862; Samuel A. Waterman, 1864.) Jediah P. Jordan, 1865; Charles G. Burgess, 1868; Isaac P. Gragg, 1869; Charles G. Davis, 1873; William A. Smith, 1875; B. Read Wales, 1876; James R. Austin, 1877; Albert W. Hersey, 1878; Thomas R. Mathews, 1880; Horace T. Rockwell, 1882; Harry C. Gardner, 1884; Joseph H. Frothingham, 1887. Spanish War, Joseph H. Frothingham, 1898.

The reader will miss in the foregoing narrative the names of many meritorious officers and men of this noted company, mention of whom want of space absolutely prevents, but who were worthy representatives of that portion of the many citizens of Massachusetts, who have, each in his generation, unstintedly expended time, labor and money, in the interest of Law and Order, and in increasing the efficiency of the Militia; which is as yet an absolute necessity to a republican form of government, and to whose ranks the general government must look for the majority of the officers and non-commissioned officers for the greater volunteer armies it may be called upon to raise to maintain its honor and its interests throughout the world.



BIOGRAPHIES OF OFFICERS  
OF THE  
M. V. M.  
PAST AND PRESENT



## BRIG.-GEN. CHARLES C. FRY.

(Deceased.)

*(Portrait on page 15.)*

Brigadier-General Charles Coffin Fry, (retired) author of the "Second Brigade, M. V. M., was the son of Homer Fry, born in Bolton, Mass., and of Patience (Boyce) Fry, born in Lynn, Mass. Both his parents and all his grandparents were members of the Society of Friends.

General Fry was born in Lynn, Mass., May 31, 1842, where he was educated in the public schools. After graduating from the Lynn High School, he entered the shoe business, with which he was connected for a number of years. Later, he was employed by the Lynn Gas Light Company, and since 1880 was its treasurer, and later that of the Lynn Gas and Electric Light Company, until his decease, March 21, 1901.

He was very prominent in municipal affairs and was auditor of the city of Lynn in 1876, city marshal in 1877-78, a member of the common council in 1896, 1897 and 1898, president of the common council in 1897 and 1898, a member of the board of aldermen in 1899, 1900 and 1901, and president of the board of aldermen in 1901. He served five years on the committee on finance, and for various periods on the committees on education, ordinances, public grounds, water supply, licenses, and the police and fire departments.

His service in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia dated back to 1862, when he enlisted in the Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., was appointed corporal and served in the Department of North Carolina under General John C. Foster, and, later, with the Army of the Potomac in Maryland, until after the expiration of his term of service in 1863. After the war, he served as first lieutenant of Company I, Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., from 1865 to 1874; as adjutant of said regiment from 1874 to 1875; as major of the Seventh Battalion Infantry, M. V. M., 1876, 1877 and 1878; as adjutant of the Eighth Regiment in 1879, 1880 and 1881, and as assistant adjutant-general of the Second Brigade, M. V. M., from 1882 to 1897. Upon his own application he was retired, July 29, 1897, with the rank of brigadier-general, after thirty-two years of military service, including his war service in 1862 and 1863.

He was a prominent Mason and had held the following positions: master of Mount Carmel Lodge, 1876-77; eminent com-

mander of Olivet Commandery, 1882-83; right eminent grand commander of the Grand Commandery of Knights Templars of Massachusetts and Rhode Island in 1893 and 1894. He was president of the Massachusetts Union of Knights Templars Commanders in 1896-97. He was long a member of Mount Carmel Lodge, Sutton Chapter, Zebulun Council, Olivet Commandery; Boston LaFayette Lodge of Perfection; Giles F. Yates Council, Princes of Jerusalem; Mt. Olivet Chapter, Rose Croix, Massachusetts Consistory; Aleppo Temple, Mystic Shrine; a prominent member of the Grand Commandery of Knights Templars of Massachusetts and Rhode Island and the Grand Encampment of the United States, and an honorary member of the Mt. Supreme Council, Northern Masonic Jurisdiction, 33d Degree.

He was a member of the Park Club of Lynn, Mass., of which he was president in 1892, 1893 and 1894; of the Oxford Club of the same city, and of General Lander Post, 5, G. A. R. In politics he was and had always been a Republican. He was unmarried.

## MAJ.-GEN. BENJAMIN F. PEACH.

*(Portrait on Page 30)*

The subject of our sketch, General Benjamin Franklin Peach, was born in the quaint old town of Marblehead, Mass. He is a lineal descendant of John Peach, who was one of the earliest settlers of that town, and one of the seven men first chosen to manage the affairs of the town. His parents were Benjamin F. and Mercy M. (Thompson) Peach.

His education was obtained in the schools of his native town, and the stern patriotism of its people led him early to take up service in the volunteer militia of the State, and at the age of fourteen (tall for his years) he became a member of the Marblehead Light Infantry, which was then Co. C, of the Sixth Regiment, which by the reorganization of the militia in 1855, became Co. C, of the present Eighth Regiment of Infantry.

His diligent study of the details of military matters, and careful attention to the practice of them, won for him the position of sergeant in 1857, and in May of the following year he became first sergeant of the company.

He twice declined promotion to a lieutenancy, and on the breaking out of the Rebellion, in April, 1861, responded with his company for service in the United

States Army—the first of all the Massachusetts troops to report at the rendezvous in Boston, in obedience to orders from the Commonwealth's military headquarters.

He served his first term of enlistment as first sergeant, his ability being promptly recognized by his superior officers, by whom he was detailed as adjutant of the post, upon the seizure of the Annapolis Railroad on the memorable march from Annapolis to Washington. He was also detailed as one of the instructors of the Fourth Wisconsin Regiment, and for special duty in other responsible positions; was promoted first lieutenant of Co. C, Eighth Regiment, early in 1862, and as adjutant of the regiment in September of the same year; was detailed as post adjutant at New Berne, N. C., in December, 1862, and as acting assistant adjutant general of the Second Brigade, Fifth Division, Eighteenth Army Corps, in February, 1863.

He took part with his regiment in the various expeditions that left New Berne in different directions, and despite a sickness caused by exposure, kept with the regiment during its service in the Army of the Potomac, to which they were assigned early in July, 1863. Upon reaching the Rappahannock, orders were received to return to Massachusetts to be mustered out, which occurred August 7, 1863; Adjutant Peach being absent, sick with typhoid fever.

At the call for troops in July, 1864, Adjutant Peach was promoted to be colonel of the Eighth Regiment, then being but about twenty-five years old.

This service was near Baltimore, Md., where part of the time he commanded the troops guarding the railroad running north of that city against guerilla raids; later commanding the camp of drafted men and substitutes for the States of Maryland and Delaware. Here his ability as a commander was fully tested and shown to be of the first order, fewer men escaping from his charge and more reaching the army than previously from the same camp. He received the commendations of his brigade and division commanders when he was about to leave for Massachusetts at the completion of his third term of service.

Colonel Peach continued in command of the regiment, which still maintained its organization as a part of the volunteer militia of the Commonwealth for a period of more than seventeen years, but in January, 1882, he was promoted brigadier-general, and commanded the Second Brig-

ade until July 24, 1897, when at his own request he was retired with the rank of major-general, after a service of forty-four years.

A close student, he was always after the best; and the hold he had on his officers by his ability and discipline always put his commands in the front rank.

Modest and unassuming, he allowed his work to speak for him, and while a strict disciplinarian, he was always watchful of the welfare of his men—a qualification of the best and highest type of officer.

During his State service he served on the board of military examiners from February, 1883, and as its president from July 14, 1887, to the time of his retirement.

At rifle practice he won distinction as a sharpshooter, and is a qualified marksman with the revolver.

At the meeting which at last elected his successor in command of the brigade, in 1897, he was unanimously re-elected, but declined further service. His order to the troops on his retirement expresses his sense of appreciation of the efforts made by his brigade to attain the high standard maintained, and is as follows:

"Upon retiring from the active militia of the Commonwealth, the brigade commander desires to express to the members of his command his deep appreciation of the efforts of every officer and enlisted man of the Second Brigade to make this their commander's last tour of duty the most successful encampment in the history of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. Deeply sensible of the personal sacrifices which must in many cases have been made in order that the attendance might be of phenomenal strength, and impressed with the evidences of the esteem and love of all who by their exertions have contributed toward the remarkable success of the tour of duty now drawing to a close, he thanks most sincerely every member of his command, hoping and believing that, although he may no longer participate in the active duties of the volunteer militia, he may often meet in the fraternal manner which has been so characteristic of the past, the many officers with whom he has been so long associated and the enlisted men upon whom the safety of our Commonwealth depends.

"Foremost as does now stand the militia of this State, he sincerely hopes that with a new commander there may be greater progress, and that to him as commander of the Second Brigade may be extended that active, strong and intelligent support which it has been his privilege and honor

to receive for a period of more than fifteen years. May God bless and preserve the militia of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts!"

General Peach has shown the same forceful earnestness in civil life as in his military career.

At the age of twenty-one he was foreman in the department where he was employed, and at the close of the Rebellion resumed his position, and shortly after became one of the firm, remaining until his retirement from that business.

In 1879, he became treasurer of the city of Lynn, and was re-elected the succeeding six years, retiring in August, 1885, to become the United States Pension Agent, where his disbursements of many millions of dollars to the pensioners of the district was performed to the entire satisfaction of the government and the people.

January 1, 1889, he accepted the position of assistant treasurer of the Thomson-Houston Electric Co.; and later, upon the consolidation of the Thomson-Houston Co. and the Edison Electric Co. as the General Electric Co., became assistant treasurer of said company, and soon after became treasurer of the corporation, which position he filled until the latter part of 1894, when he resigned.

He still is one of the trustees of Series B, C and D of the Thomson-Houston trust securities; a trustee of two of the trust funds of the city of Lynn; a director in nine electric, insurance, mining and manufacturing companies, and holds the position of president of three and treasurer of two.

In politics, General Peach has always been a Democrat. He was a member of the Lynn city council in 1869, and once a candidate for mayor of that city.

He is a companion of the first class of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion of the United States, a comrade of General Lander, Post 5, G. A. R., a member of Mt. Carmel Lodge F. A. M., and of the Oxford Club of Lynn.

He was married, October 20, 1870, to Adelaide L., daughter of Colonel F. J. Coffin, of Newburyport. Four children have been born to them, of whom Mabel Adelaide, Frederick Coffin and Anna Louise survive, the second child, Lucy, having died in infancy.

#### SURG.-GEN. ROBERT ALLEN BLOOD

Brigadier-General Robert Allen Blood, surgeon-general of the Massachusetts

Volunteer Militia, and editor and author of "The Surgical and Medical History, M. V. M.," of this work, was born at New London, N. H., April 30, 1838. His father,



SURGEON-GENERAL ROBERT ALLEN BLOOD.

Luke W. Blood, was a native of Deering, N. H., and his mother, Mary Adams (Bickford) Blood, of New London in the same state.

His ancestors of the American branch of the Blood family originally came from Scotland and settled in Concord, Mass., in 1639. The Adamses, from whom his mother was descended on the maternal side, came from England at about the same date, and were the first settlers of New London, N. H.

His great-grandfather, Simeon Blood, of Hollis, N. H., with two brothers and other ancestors to the number of sixteen served in the war of the Revolution. Simeon Blood and his brothers fought at Bunker Hill and in most of the principal battles of the Seven Years' War. His grandfather, Ebenezer Blood, was a minuteman in the War of 1812, and his brother Simon died in the service.

General Blood was educated in the public schools of New London, N. H., and at the New London Literary and Scientific Institution, a school of considerable

prominence at that period. He studied medicine, graduating from the Harvard Medical School in 1870, and later, in 1873, began practice as a physician and surgeon at Charlestown, Mass., where he has long resided.

His military record began August 31, 1862, when he was mustered into the United States service in the Eleventh Regiment of Infantry, N. H. Vols. His service was cut short at Fredericksburg, Va., December 13, 1862, by a bullet which traversed the left groin. The wound was supposed at the time to be mortal, and for some weeks after it seemed impossible that he should survive. For nearly a year he was obliged to walk with crutches, and his recovery was slow and accompanied with much suffering.

He was appointed medical director, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Benj. F. Bridges commanding, May 2, 1895, and held that position until the sudden decease of Surgeon-General Forster, in 1896. He was appointed by Governor Wolcott surgeon-general of Massachusetts, with the rank of brigadier-general, May 28, 1896.

In this capacity, as is recorded elsewhere, he has sedulously endeavored not only to perform promptly and effectively the routine duties of his office, but to assist the commander-in-chief and all his military subordinates in maintaining and improving the lofty standard of physical condition and efficiency of the Massachusetts militia, and in those humane and beneficent labors which have always ameliorated the sufferings of such men of Massachusetts as have fallen in battle or by disease.

He is a member of the Association of Military Surgeons of the United States, of the Massachusetts Medical Society, the Medical Benevolent Society, the Boston Society for Medical Observation, the American Medical Association, and the Middlesex South District Medical Society. He is also a member of the Sons of the American Revolution.

He married Miss Elizabeth McCutchins of New London, N. H., November 26, 1872. Of this marriage was born a son, Robert McCutchins Blood.

#### BRIG.-GEN. JAMES LOWELL CARTER.

Brigadier-General James Lowell Carter, inspector-general of Massachusetts, was born in Cambridge, Mass., January 21,

1849. He is the son of Robert Carter, born at Albany, N. Y., February 15, 1819, and of Ann Augusta (Gray) Carter, born at Salem, Mass., in 1813.

His maternal great-great-grandfather was a cavalry officer who served in the British army under the Earl of Stair in the continental War of the Succession, and another of the family commanded the Island of Granada in the Caribbean Sea. His great-grandfather was a corporal in the Continental Army, and his grandfather was a second lieutenant in an Essex regiment during the same struggle.

General Carter was educated in the public and private schools of Cambridge,



BRIGADIER-GENERAL JAMES LOWELL CARTER.

Mass., and in Washington, D. C., and also studied at the Eagleswood Military Academy, N. J., the Highland Military Academy, Worcester, Mass., and the U. S. Naval Academy, Annapolis, Md. He entered business life in the employ of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy R. R. Co., in 1870, as a civil engineer, and has been connected with it ever since. He is now general transfer agent, with offices at 705 Sears Building, Boston, Mass.

General Carter was commissioned by Governor Andrew as second lieutenant in the Nineteenth Massachusetts Volunteer



Infantry during the Civil War, and shortly after was promoted to be first lieutenant of Company H, One Hundred and Fourth U. S. Colored Troops. He served as midshipman in the U. S. Navy, from 1866-1870. He was discharged February 5, 1866.

He enlisted in the First Corps Cadets, M. V. M., June 12, 1874; was made corporal, June 3, 1875; sergeant, April 13, 1876; and discharged at the end of his three years' term of service, June 12, 1877. He was one of the organizers of Company C, Naval Brigade, was commissioned lieutenant, junior grade, on its muster into the service, March 25, 1890, and promoted to be lieutenant commanding December 1, 1891. He was appointed assistant inspector-general on the staff of the commander-in-chief with the rank of colonel, January 13, 1892, and appointed inspector-general with the rank of brigadier-general, July 9, 1897.

During the Spanish-American War General Carter served on the Military Advisory Board, and in addition had full charge of the recruitment and organization of the Provisional Militia, as is elsewhere recorded; a work of infinite detail and activity, which, as shown by its results, was admirably performed. Anticipating the war with Spain, the regular inspections, begun in the early winter of 1898, were carried out with even more than ordinary care and minuteness by General Carter, and included the parade and inspection of the troops, as prepared for action and ready to take the field. The inspector-general's department made a critical examination of the manner in which the orders were carried out as to uniform, equipment, readiness to respond to sudden call and means of procuring emergency rations under such circumstances. The promptness and generally effective condition with which the Massachusetts levies took the field, bear witness to the faithful service of Inspector-General Carter and his assistants. Much extra work in aid of the mobilization of the troops and the care of returning sick and wounded soldiers was cheerfully and effectively performed.

Many practical and important changes in the organization, equipment and care of the State troops have been suggested and recommended by General Carter, most of which have, to a great extent, been adopted and carried out.

General Carter is a member of the Military Service Institution and of Post 113, G. A. R.

He married, in 1870, Miss Louise Helen Frost, of Worcester, Mass. Of this marriage were born, in Worcester, Anna Gray Carter and Morland Carter.

#### BRIG.-GEN. JOPHANUS H. WHITNEY.

*(Portrait on page 21)*

Brigadier-General Jophanus H. Whitney, of Medford, late colonel of the Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., is the son of Abram H. Whitney, of Phillips, Me., and Mary Whitney, of Durham, Me., and was born in Avon, Me., January 15, 1846.

His great-great-grandfather, Benjamin Whitney, and great-grandfather, Jacob Whitney, both served in the Continental Army during the Revolution. His grandfather, James M. Whitney, served in the United States army during the War of 1812 with England.

In 1848 his parents removed to Medford, Mass., and he received most of his education in the public schools of that town.

In 1858, although too young to enlist, he acted as marker attached to the Lawrence Light Guards, then Company E, Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M. On August 1, 1862, then sixteen years old, he enlisted in the United States service for three years, in the Lawrence Light Guards, which was assigned the letter C in the Thirty-Ninth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers; was made corporal, color sergeant and first sergeant and served in the defense of Washington, in the pursuit of General Lee's army after his defeat at Gettysburg, at the battle of Mine Run, the Wilderness, Weldon Railroad and the decisive struggle at Five Forks. In the latter action he was seriously and almost mortally wounded while carrying the colors of his regiment. Just prior to Five Forks he was mentioned in orders for meritorious conduct, and given a furlough to return the old colors to the State and procure a new set for the regiment. At the close of the war he was mustered out of service, June 20, 1865, and continued in the Massachusetts militia.

He was commissioned second lieutenant, Company E, Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., in January, 1867; elected first lieutenant, February 24, 1875; captain, January 24, 1876; and resigned August 3, 1881. He was again commissioned first lieutenant, June 22, 1883; promoted to be major, April 18, 1884; commissioned lieutenant-colonel, May 23, 1894; and colonel commanding the Fifth Regiment, August 6, 1897.

During the Spanish-American War he recruited the Fifth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., to the maximum strength of 1347 officers and men, was commissioned colonel, July 2, 1898; served at Camp Dalton, South Framingham, Mass., Camp Meade, Middleton, Pa., and Camp Wetherell, Greenville, S. C., and was mustered out of service with his regiment at the latter place, March 31, 1899, having lost by death only thirteen men. Not the least creditable part of his service was his success in bringing home his regiment in soldierly and orderly discipline, after their disbandment, marching them in review before Governor Wolcott and staff, over one thousand strong, and returning to the governor the colors presented to them by him when they entered the United States service.

On February 23, 1901, he was elected brigadier-general, commanding the Second Brigade, M. V. M., to succeed Brigadier-General Bancroft, retired.

General Whitney was chief of police of the city of Medford for a number of years, when he resigned upon being appointed a member of the Massachusetts State Police, November 17, 1887.

began with his enlistment in 1849 in the Second Corps Cadets, then commanded by Captain Samuel B. Foster, whose superiority in the nicer details of drill and discipline was generally conceded. From thence young Farrell went into the Massachusetts Rifle Club, which was rather an educational than a military body, but it gave many good officers to the army and the Massachusetts militia. In 1862 he recruited Company A, Forty-Eighth (nine months') Regiment, M. V. M., Colonel Ebenezer Stone commanding. On Feb. 8, 1865, he was commissioned captain of the Boston Columbian Artillery, or Columbian Guards, then the Fortieth Unattached Company, M. V. M., which, on May 18, 1866, was designated Company A, Ninth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., which designation it still retains. On May 19, 1866, he was elected lieutenant-colonel of the new Ninth Regiment, which position he held until his resignation, in 1869.

He married Miss Caroline A. Bickford of Newburgh, Me., in January, 1854. Of this marriage were born three children, John, Grace and Carrie Farrell, all natives of Boston, Mass.

#### LIEUT.-COL. JOHN R. FARRELL.

*(Portrait on page 65.)*

Lieutenant-Colonel John Ralph Farrell, who first held that rank in the present Ninth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., of which he was the organizer, is the son of John Farrell of Rathigan, County Kildare, Ireland, and of Mary (Frost) Farrell, a native of Sheffield, England, where Colonel Farrell was born December 16, 1830.

His parents settled in Lowell, Mass., about 1838, where he was educated in the public schools, and learned the trade of a custom tailor from his father, in which he has been continuously engaged ever since in Boston and other cities. He came to Boston in 1846 where for many years he carried on business over the old Boylston Market. Here he was largely patronized by officers and members of the active militia, independent companies and other uniformed associations, and still makes a specialty of this class of work at 705 Washington street, Boston.

He has never been an active politician, but represented his district two years, 1884-85 and 1885-86, in the State Legislature.

His service in the Massachusetts militia

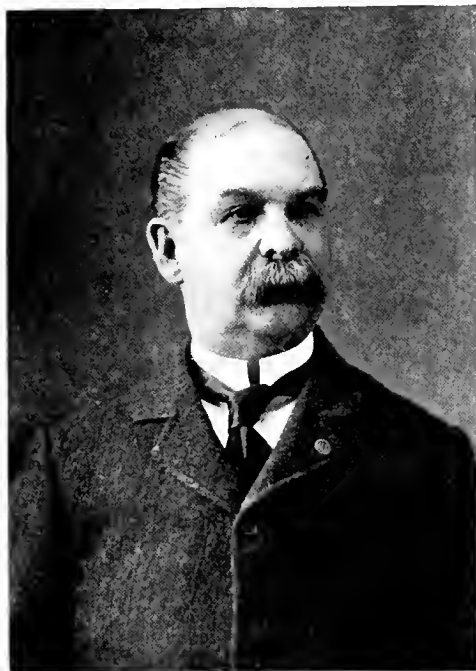
#### LIEUT.-COL. J. FRANK DALTON.

Lieutenant Colonel J. Frank Dalton, son of Joseph A. and Mary Fairfield Dalton, and author of the chapter entitled "The Second Corps Cadets," was born in 1842, at Salem, Mass., a town in which he received his education in the common and high schools. Here he has also continued to reside, with the exception of the war period, for the past fifty years, having been engaged in the insurance business during most of that period.

Colonel Dalton's military record is a notable one. During the War of the Rebellion he served in the United States Navy from the time when the first call came for volunteers to the moment when they were finally disbanded. He at first enlisted as a yeoman on board the United States gunboat "Katahdin," although at the expiration of his term of service he had risen to the position of captain's clerk on board of the United States Steamship "Oneida."

Since the war, from March, 1863, to June, 1891, Colonel Dalton was very closely associated with the Second Corps Cadets. In this body, by virtue of his military fitness and general excellence, he

had steadily risen from the rank of a private to that of lieutenant-colonel, commanding the corps from 1884 to 1891. In the interim he had creditably held the successive positions of corporal, sergeant-major, adjutant, first lieutenant,



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL J. FRANK DALTON.

captain and major. It was a cause of extreme regret to the corps, when in June, 1891, Colonel Dalton felt himself obliged to tender his resignation. He is an active member of the Veteran Cadet Association, of which he was elected commander in 1900-1901.

Colonel Dalton, in addition to his military connections, is an esteemed member of the G. A. R. Post 34 and also of the Essex Naval Veteran's Association. Colonel Dalton is also a trustee of the Salem Five Cents Savings Bank, on the Board of Directors of the Bertram Home for Aged Men, and Home for Aged Women, and a member of the State Council of Administration of the G. A. R. He was elected as representative to the State legislature from Salem in 1898-1899 and 1900.

In June, 1866, Colonel Dalton was united in marriage to Miss Eliza J. Trask, of Salem. Four children were born of this marriage: Grace G., Harry F., Elizabeth F. and Arthur T. The two sons, inheriting

from their father military inclinations, early became connected with the State militia. Harry F. Dalton is a second lieutenant in the Ninth Regiment Infantry, United States Army, serving in Manila since May, 1899; while Arthur T. Dalton, a corporal in the same regiment, was stationed at San Francisco, awaiting examination for a second lieutenant's commission, President McKinley having approved him as one of the three allotted to Massachusetts in March, 1899.

#### CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON.

(Portrait on page 95)

Captain Nathan Appleton, author of the history of Battery A, Light Artillery, M. V. M., youngest son of Nathan and Harriet Coffin (Sumner) Appleton, of Boston, was born in that city, February 2, 1843, and graduated from Harvard College in 1863.

He was commissioned second lieutenant of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery, July 30, 1863, and served in the autumn campaign of 1863 in Virginia. On May 25, 1864, he was severely wounded while Griffin's Division was operating along the line of the Virginia Central Railroad, south of the North Anna River. He was promoted to be first lieutenant, June 19, 1864, and later was breveted captain for gallantry, and served on the staff of Colonel Wainwright, chief of artillery, 5th Army Corps, Army of the Potomac, until the close of the war, being present at the decisive battle of Five Forks, and the surrender of Lee's Army of Virginia, at Appomattox.

He has been active not only as a soldier, but as a man of affairs, and a patron of art and literature. At the opening of the Suez canal he was present as a delegate of the Boston Board of Trade, being, with one exception, the only accredited representative of the American people on that occasion. He contributed largely to the completeness of the French representation at the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition in 1876, and was a director of the American Metric Bureau. At the Paris Exposition of 1878, he was an active delegate in several European congresses, representing the American Geographical Society at the Congress of Commercial Geography; the American society at the Congress for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals; taking part in the deliberations over the proposed Franco-American

treaty of commerce, and presenting a plan for unifying coinage, at the Congress for Weights, Measures and Coins.

In January, 1879, he represented the American Geographical Society, and the United States Board of Trade at the International Congress, called by M. De Lesseps, to decide upon the best route for an isthmian canal between the Gulf of Mexico and the Pacific ocean. He was made chairman of the Committee on Commercial Relations and voted with the seventy-eight delegates who favored the Panama route. In 1880, he accompanied M. De Lesseps from ocean to ocean, as interpreter and the exponent of his ideas.

Captain Appleton is a member of the Loyal Legion of the G. A. R., and ex-vice-president of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, and the Massachusetts Society of the Sons of the Revolution. An extensive traveler in Mexico, Central and South America, and the West Indies, he has contributed much to the practical knowledge and business development of American interests in those countries; has collected and presented to art and educational institutions many valuable gifts, and initiated and encouraged the Santo Domingo exhibit at the Chicago Exposition. As an author, he has contributed much to the discussion of popular questions and reforms, and as orator has delivered many public addresses at home and abroad. His oration at the Old South Meeting House, Boston, July 14, 1877, the centennial anniversary of the adoption of a national flag by Congress, and at the unveiling of the Columbus statue at Boston, October 21, 1892, received deserved and general commendation.

#### COXSWAIN WINTHROP PACKARD.

*(Portrait on page 208)*

Coxswain Winthrop Packard, author of the article on the Naval Brigade, is the son of Hiram Shepard Packard, born at Stoughton, Mass., in 1819, and of Maria (Blake) Packard, born at Canton, Mass., on September 28, 1834. They were married December 24, 1854.

His ancestry includes the following who served during the Revolutionary War. On the paternal side

Abiezer Packard, private, who marched from Stoughton at the Lexington alarm in Captain Peter Talbot's company, Colonel Lemuel Robinson's regiment. Benjamin Packard, private in Captain John

Porter's company, Colonel Michael Jackson's regiment of Plymouth Co., enlisted for the war. Later he was a sergeant in Captain Abel Holden's company, Lieutenant-Colonel Calvin Smith's regiment, and also served in Captain Wottle's company. He was with Washington's army at Valley Forge.

On the maternal side:

Aaron Blake, private in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment; later, in Captain Robert Swan's company and in Captain Timothy Mann's company. Served at the Lexington alarm and during the war.

Edward Blake, private in Captain Lyon's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment. Served during the war.

Nathaniel Blake, private in Captain John Bradley's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment. Joined the northern army at Manchester, Vt., August 14, 1777.

Stephen Blake, private in Captain Asahel Smith's company, Colonel Lemuel Robinson's regiment; later, corporal in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, serving at Moon Island in June, 1776, when the British fleet was driven from Boston Harbor.

Adam Blackman, private in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Lemuel Robinson's regiment, at the Lexington alarm; also in Captain Endicott's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, at the fortification of Dorchester Heights in 1776.

Elisha Blackman, private in Captain Asahel Smith's company, Colonel Lemuel Robinson's regiment, at the Lexington alarm.

Eleazer Blackman, served as private for six months during 1780.

George Blackman, private in Captain Asahel Smith's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, at the Lexington alarm; later, he was second lieutenant in the same company and regiment at Dorchester Heights.

George Blackman, Jr., private in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Wm. Mackintosh's regiment, in 1778.

John Blackman, private in Captain Robert Smith's company, Lieutenant-Colonel Symm's Company of Guards; later, corporal in Captain Clapp's Detachment of Guards at Dorchester Heights.

Oliver Blackman, private in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, at Dorchester Heights, 1776. Served later at Moon Island, when the British fleet was driven from Boston Harbor.

Samuel Blackman, private in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Lemuel Robinson's regiment, at the Lexington alarm. Served later in Captain Robert Swan's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment.

Samuel Blackman, Jr., private in Captain John Robinson's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, at Dorchester Heights, in 1776. Served later in Captain Seth Sumner's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, at Moon Island, when the British fleet was driven from Boston Harbor.

William Blackman, private in Captain James Endicott's company, Colonel Benjamin Gill's regiment, at the Lexington alarm. Served later in various other companies and regiments during the war.

Winthrop Packard was born in Boston, March 7, 1862, and was educated in the public schools of Canton, Mass., whither his parents removed during his boyhood and have ever since resided. He took a scientific course in the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and paid especial attention to the study of chemistry. He has also acquired more than usual skill in amateur photography.

He was employed as a manufacturing chemist from 1881 to 1885, and then entered the field of literature, in which he has since remained. In 1900, he left the editorial staff of the "Youths' Companion" to cruise with the Corwin Trading Company in the S.S. "Corwin" along the northern coasts of Alaska and Siberia. In this connection he voyaged thousands of miles, visiting all the principal ports and gold fields, exploring many unsettled points, trading with the native tribes, and collecting curios, fossils, and photographs of all kinds. The "Corwin" penetrated to 70 degrees north latitude in the vicinity of Point Barrow and made valuable discoveries of coal and mineral deposits.

His military record is brief but honorable and eventful, beginning with his enlistment in Company B, Naval Brigade, M. V. M., March, 1898, in which he had hardly learned the rudiments of his service when he, with most of his company, was mustered into the United States navy as an ordinary seaman, May 2, 1898. He served, until mustered out as an able seaman, September 29, 1898, on the S.S. "Prairie," whose cruise he has so well recorded in his article on the Naval Brigade. He is still a member of Company B, with the rank of coxswain.

Mr. Packard is an able and original writer, of splendid physique, and expert

in field sports and maritime accomplishments. His love of adventure and ability to note and comprehend men and things give great interest to his writings, and especially his short stories and pictures of adventurous life. His "Prairie Dog Tales," in "The National Magazine" of Boston, "The Race for Smithers," "The Battle of Scoops," and others in the "Youths' Companion," were illustrative of phases of sea life on the "Prairie," and of more than usual humor and ability.

Mr. Packard is unmarried, and when at home resides with his parents at Canton, Mass.

#### COLONEL WILLIAM A. PEW, Jr.

Colonel William A. Pew, Jr., commanding the Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., was born at Gloucester, Mass., November 30, 1858. He was educated at the Chauncy Hall School, Boston, and the Newton High School; graduated at Harvard College, 1880, and at Harvard Law School, 1884. Harvard degrees A. B.,



COLONEL WILLIAM A. PEW, Jr.

A. M. and L. L. B. He studied at Leipsic and Brunswick, Germany. He was admitted to the Massachusetts bar, and has since devoted himself to his profession, the law, residing at Salem.

His military record begins with his enlistment, March 28, 1883, in Company G, Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., of which he was elected second lieutenant, August 3, 1883, and first lieutenant, June 10, 1885, and discharged, on account of the disbandment of his company, December 2, 1885. He was commissioned captain, February 18, 1886; elected major, June 10, 1890; and chosen colonel commanding the Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., June 28, 1895, which command he still retains.

During the Spanish-American War he was selected by Governor Wolcott, to recruit and reorganize the Eighth for service, and was mustered into the United States service with his command, as colonel of the Eighth Regiment Infantry, U. S. V., May 11, 1899. Having secured for his regiment the most creditable record for military discipline, soldierly fitness and sanitary conditions, both in the great

camps of instruction at Chickamauga and Americus, Ga., and Lexington, Ky., and while on foreign service at Matanzas, Cuba, he brought it home with a minimum of loss, and in perfect condition for further service, and was mustered out with his command, April 28, 1899.

#### CAPTAIN ISAAC PAUL GRAGG.

Captain Isaac Paul Gragg was born at Roxbury, Mass., September 1, 1842. His father, Moses Gragg, was descended from Scotch-Irish stock, and his mother, Rebecca Newell Alden, from Hon. John Alden of the Plymouth colony; his earliest known ancestor on the paternal side was Captain David Gregg, born in Ayreshire, Scotland, who served under Oliver Cromwell and settled near Londonderry, Ireland, in 1655, his descendants emigrating to America in 1711. His grandfather, Samuel Gragg, of Groton, Mass., was a sergeant in the Revolution; his great-grandfather on the maternal side, Silas Alden, was a lieutenant of the Massachusetts militia, in active service at the siege of Boston; his father served a tour of duty with the Dedham Light Infantry during the war of 1812-15, was adjutant of the First Regiment, 2d Brigade, 1st Division, M. V. M., from 1817 to 1822, and a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

Captain Gragg early developed a taste for military matters, and was captain of a boys' company at 10 years of age. April 17, 1861, he joined the Roxbury City Guard, and volunteered with that organization for the three years' service, in Company D, First Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry; he was promoted corporal, and for ten months was detailed as ordnance sergeant of the 2d Division, 3d Army Corps. On his return home from the three years' service he assisted in recruiting the Sixty-First Massachusetts Volunteers; was commissioned second lieutenant, September 7, 1864, and first lieutenant, December 9, 1864, being detailed as acting adjutant until the organization became a full regiment in January, 1865, and was breveted captain U. S. Volunteers for gallantry at the capture



CAPTAIN ISAAC P. GRAGG.

of Fort Mahone, in front of Petersburg, Va., April 2, 1865. He was mustered out of service with his regiment the following July.

In March, 1868, he enlisted in the ranks of his old company, the Roxbury City Guards, in order to participate in the competitive drill between that company and the Montgomery Guards, which took place on Boston Common, May 27, 1868. He was elected captain of the company, March 30, 1869, and under his command the company performed its tour of duty of thirteen days, in connection with the Boston fire of 1872; he resigned his commission in June, 1873, and re-entered the ranks of the company, serving as private and sergeant until 1880, when he was discharged at his own request. He was very active in assisting to bring about the organization of the Massachusetts Militia Rifle Association in 1876, and was a member of the first State Rifle Team that entered in competition with the militia of other states, at Creedmoor, N. Y., in 1872. In April, 1898, he organized the Hooker Guards Regiment for the Spanish war, and kept it in condition to respond to any call for troops under which it could be accepted, until the following August, meanwhile furnishing a large number of partially drilled recruits to the volunteer regiments that entered the service.

Captain Gragg has been president of the First and Sixty-First Massachusetts Infantry Veteran Associations, president of the 3d Army Corps Union, and commander of the Roxbury Artillery Association. In 1871, 1872 and 1885, he was a member of the Boston Common Council, declining to run for other public offices, though very active in Roxbury and Boston local politics for twenty years. He is a charter member of Thomas G. Stephenson, Post 26, G. A. R. of Roxbury, a member of the Massachusetts Commandery of the Loyal Legion, Roxbury Historical Society, Warren Monument Association, 3d Army Corps Union, Society of the Army of the Potomac, Society of the Sons of the Revolution, First and Sixty-First Massachusetts Volunteers Veteran Associations, and an honorary member of Battery D, 1st Regt. Heavy Artillery, M. V. M.



CAPTAIN GEORGE M. TOMPSON.

He was educated in the public schools of Roxbury, graduating from the Roxbury English High School in 1857. After the war he was for eight years a member of the firm of Warren S. Davis & Co., retail dealers in fancy goods in Boston, and now is connected with copper mining enterprises in Cape Breton, N. S.

On January 6, 1874, he was united in marriage to Miss Eldora Olive Wait, of Roxbury. Their children are Alice Wait, Florence Alden, Elisabeth Fessenden, Marian Frances and Dora Pauline.

To Captain Gragg the publishers of "Regiments and Armories of Massachusetts" are indebted for the articles on the Hooker Guards and Roxbury City Guards, which appear in this volume.

CAPTAIN GEORGE M. TOMPSON.

Captain George M. Tompson, engineer on the staff of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M.,

Brigadier-General Thomas R. Mathews, commanding, was born at South Reading, Mass., November 11, 1852. Having first attended the South Reading public schools, he studied at the Granite State Military Institute, and later at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. He chose the profession of civil engineering, entering the office of T. & J. Dane, surveyors, Boston, Mass., where he remained one year, and has since been professionally connected with various railroads, as follows: Division engineer, construction department, Troy & Greenfield R. R., two years; first assistant engineer, Texas-Mexican R. R., three years; chief engineer and superintendent, Mexican Central Ry., four years; chief engineer, Washington & Potomac R. R., two years; chief engineer, Boston & Lowell R. R., three years; engineer, maintenance department, Norfolk & Western R. R., two years; first assistant engineer, construction department, N. Y., N. H. & H. R. R., two years; chief engineer, Boston, Revere Beach and Lynn R. R., during the construction of the East Boston tunnel, and terminals and new line at Crescent Beach, two years; engineer, construction department, Boston & Maine R. R., four years; in all, twenty-seven years.

During this period Captain Tompson had charge of the designing and execution of works necessitating the employment and handling of thousands of men, the knowledge and ability to cope with an infinite number of details, and the satisfactory expenditure of millions.

Faternally he is affiliated with King Solomon, Blue Lodge, and the Royal Arch Chapter of the Signet, F. A. M., of Charlestown, Mass. As a Knight Templar, he is a member of Coeur de Leon Commandery, Charlestown, and of Aleppo Shrine of Boston. He is at present a member of the board of selectmen, and of the sewer commissioners of Wakefield.

Captain Tompson enlisted in Company A, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., December 26, 1876; served as private, corporal and sergeant, and was elected second lieutenant, August 24, 1877, which position he resigned May 10, 1879. He re-enlisted the same year, but served only a few months, being called away by his business engagements. On August 19, 1897, he was appointed engineer with the rank of captain on the staff of the First Brigade, M. V. M.

During the Spanish-American war Captain Tompson was made a member of the

Board of Fortification and Ordnance, whose report of December 18, 1898, bears testimony both to the weakness of our defenses, and to the activity of the board of which Captain Tompson was senior engineer. Under his direction in May, 1897, the First Brigade constructed defensive earthworks at Plum Island, Newburyport and Bailey's Hill, Nahant.

Captain Tompson married Miss Emma A. Perkins, February 25, 1877. They have three children, Blanche, born at Lowell; G. M., Jr., and W. R. Tompson, born at Wakefield. They now reside at Parker Road, Wakefield, Mass.

#### COLONEL J. PAYSON BRADLEY.

Colonel J. Payson Bradley was born at Methuen, Mass., June 7, 1848. His father, Captain Leverett Bradley, was born at Haverhill, Mass., March 22, 1814, and his mother, Catherine C. (Frye) Bradley, at Methuen, Mass., June 19, 1817. Captain Leverett Bradley, who died in 1880, was formerly captain of the Warren Light Guard of Lawrence, Mass., attached to the Sixth Regiment, and in 1861 recruited two companies for the Fourteenth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, (afterward the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery) one of which, Company B, (of Methuen) he commanded during the first year of the Civil War.

Among other ancestors who have served under the Colonial and State flags are numbered his great-grandfather, Enoch Bradley, a soldier of the Revolution, and his grandfather, Captain Brickett Bradley, long a captain of dragoons in the State militia.

Colonel Bradley was educated in the public schools of Methuen and Lawrence, and previous to the war aided his father in caring for the old home farm at Methuen. After the Civil War he prepared for the profession of a mechanical engineer and draughtsman, but in 1868, with his cousin Edward E. Allen, entered the employment of the Downer Kerosene Oil Company. After twenty years service, he went into co-partnership with Captain Allen, under the firm name of Allen, Bradley & Co., producers of crude petroleum and dealers in oils, at No. 7 Central Wharf, Boston, Mass., controlling the output of The Boston Oil Company of Marietta, Ohio, of which Colonel Bradley is now president and Captain Allen treasurer. In 1894, they formed, in connection



with Messrs. Seccomb & Kehew, The Kehew-Bradley Company of Boston, in the same line of business, with offices at 24 Purchase street, Boston, Mass. He is also a trustee of the South Boston Savings Bank.

Colonel Bradley enlisted in Company B, Fourteenth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry when thirteen years, five months old, as a drummer in his father's company. His brother, Leverett, Jr., only two years older, enlisted as a private in the same company. The regiment was changed to the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, which was first posted in the forts around Washington, and later, his battery being ordered to Harper's Ferry, Md., joined the Army of the Potomac under General Grant. Colonel Bradley, as bugler, served with his regiment, which was acting as infantry, through the whole campaign, in the battles of the Wilderness, (in one engagement, May 19, 1864, they lost in one short hour 398 men, in killed and wounded) Cold Harbor, the siege of Petersburg, etc. During the operations in front of Petersburg, on the day of the fatal "crater" disaster, he distinguished himself by carrying water through a hailstorm of bullets to the Union wounded. Later, by special permission of Generals Meade and Hancock, he was permitted to return home, worn out by hardships and exposure. He was honorably discharged November 15, 1864, and was, in 1884, elected president of the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery Veteran Association.

He enlisted in the First Battalion of Light Artillery, M. V. M., serving as chief bugler, May 1, 1873, was appointed sergeant-major, December 4, 1875, and was discharged, by reason of expiration of term of service, May 15, 1876. He joined the First Battalion Cavalry, M. V. M., as sergeant-major August 31, 1876, and was commissioned adjutant with the rank of first lieutenant, January 27, 1877. This position he resigned May 17, 1877. He was appointed assistant adjutant-general with the rank of colonel, on the staff of Governor Wolcott, commander-in-chief, M. V. M., January 7, 1897, which position he held for three years. During the Spanish-American War the duties of this position, ordinarily of little moment, gave every member of the staff ample opportunity to promote the efficiency of the State levies, encourage enlistments, and receive and care for the returning volunteers. It is hardly necessary to say that Colonel Bradley was active and efficient

in these and in other duties of the hour.

Joining the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts in 1877, he was made fourth infantry sergeant in 1880, adjutant in 1888, and commander in 1897. During the visit of the Company to England, in 1896, Colonel Bradley, as color bearer of the national standard, committed to his keeping by Governor Wolcott, carried it through the inspiring and historical events of a visit which royalty itself joined with the English people to welcome and honor, and with his veteran comrade, Captain Walter S.



COLONEL J. PAYSON BRADLEY.

Sampson, bearer of the State colors, carried these flags at reception, parade and review, and by the invitation of Queen Victoria to the Company, into her royal castle of Windsor, itself.

On the 260th anniversary of the Company, March 15, 1898, while presiding at the banquet as its captain, Colonel Bradley proposed "that an active force be organized by the Ancients at this point in the nation's history," and also urged "that Faneuil Hall be preserved." It was then proposed to raise an active light artillery company, but as the militia law has never been amended so as to authorize the addition of such a company, the collapse of the Spanish-American War put an end to

this project for the time. The suggestion as to the reconstruction of Faneuil Hall, however, has resulted in the practical rebuilding of the edifice.

Colonel Bradley is a charter member, and was the third commander of Dahlgren, Post 2, G. A. R. During the National encampment at Boston, in 1890, he was acting assistant adjutant-general of the Department of Massachusetts, and was elected a member of the National Council of Administration for the ensuing year. He is president of the old Boston Congregational Club and of the Dahlgren Memorial Hall Association, a member of the Phillips Congregational church of Boston and superintendent of its Sunday school. He is also a member of the Bostonian Society, the Boston Young Men's Christian Union, the American Historical Association, the Military Historical Society of Massachusetts, of the old Dorchester and New Algonquin Clubs, and of Columbia Lodge, A. F. and A. M., of Boston.

He was married to Miss Emma Frances James, a descendant of one of the "Mayflower's" passengers, in 1872. Of this marriage were born Frances E., Fannie J., Marion and Mildred Bradley, all natives of Boston, Mass.

#### LIEUT.-COL. THOS. F. CORDIS.

Lieutenant-colonel Thomas F. Cordis (retired) is the son of Francis T. Cordis, a former member of the Boston Cadets, born January 16, 1817, and of Ruth A. (Prescott) Cordis, born November 9, 1819, both natives of Boston, Mass.

Thomas F. Cordis was born at Longmeadow, Mass., July 28, 1843, and was educated in the public schools of his native town and at Williston Seminary, Easthampton, Mass. He was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1876, but has never held any town or city office.

His military record opens during the Civil War, with his enlistment in Company A, Forty-Sixth Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M., in September, 1862. He was appointed sergeant after being mustered into the United States service, and his regiment was ordered to North Carolina, where it served with credit under General John G. Foster, and for most of the time was stationed at Newbern. It took part in the Goldsboro Expedition or raid from Newbern, which began December 11, 1862, captured Kinston, the Confederate center of operations in North

Carolina, December 14; dispersed an entrenched force at Whitehall, December 16; and destroyed the railroad bridge and many miles of the track, besides defeating the enemy with heavy losses at Goldsboro, December 17. It also took an active part



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL THOMAS F. CORDIS.

in the operations about Newbern and Little Washington, N. C., in March and April, 1863, caused by the Confederate attacks on these points.

Company A, in which Colonel Cordis had served in all these affairs, while on picket duty at Bateholder's Creek, was attacked, May 13, 1863, by a large force of Confederates, and without other support, held it in check for several hours, until reinforced by the Fifty-Eighth Pennsylvania Regiment, Colonel J. Richter Jones commanding. Colonel Jones was killed soon after reinforcing the company. After the death of Colonel Jones the Fifty-Eighth retired, leaving Company A at its post. Reports were sent into Newbern of the affair, stating that Company A had probably been all captured. A force was sent out from Newbern to find out the facts. The next morning Company A was discovered by the reconnoitering party, still at its post and without loss. He was mustered out with the regiment, July 29, 1863.

He was later appointed paymaster of the Second Battalion Infantry, M. V. M., with the rank of first lieutenant, August 29, 1876, and was honorably discharged, August 20, 1879. On March 8, 1880, he was elected second lieutenant of Company B, Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M.; made first lieutenant, February 11, 1889; was appointed captain and aide-de-camp on the staff of the First Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Bridges commanding, February 20, 1889, and promoted to be assistant inspector-general of rifle practice with the rank of major, and attached to said staff, January 12, 1894. He was retired August 11, 1897, under the law then existing, with the rank of major, having served continuously in the Massachusetts militia for over seventeen years.

During the Spanish-American War Major Cordis recruited and organized the Twenty-Seventh Company of Provisional Militia, of which he was elected captain, July 21, 1898. The company was a strong one, and Captain Cordis was not discharged until April 15, 1899. He was then again retired with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, May 27, 1899, under the provisions of Section 1, Chapter 302, of the Acts of 1899. He is a member of E. K. Wilcox Post 16, G. A. R., Springfield, Mass.

Lieutenant-Colonel Cordis married Miss Annie B. Colton of Philadelphia, Penn., November 13, 1867. Of this marriage were born two children, Grace T. Cordis, deceased, and Thomas E. Cordis, both natives of Longmeadow, Mass., where their parents have always resided.

#### LIEUT.-COL. JAMES G. WHITE.

Lieutenant-Colonel James Gardiner White, assistant inspector-general of Massachusetts, was born in San Francisco, Cal., May 22, 1860. He is the son of James W. White, born in Topsham, Me., October 23, 1824, who went to San Francisco, in 1849, becoming largely interested in the lumber and mining business, and was the first president of the famous Ophir Silver Mining Company.

His mother, Rebecca (Gardiner) White, was born at Gardiner, Me., October 23, 1831.

His maternal great-grandfather, Peter Libby, served as a lieutenant of Captain Richard Mayberry's company in Colonel Francis' Massachusetts regiment in the Revolutionary War.

Colonel White was connected with the wholesale and retail drug trade from 1880-83, when he entered the life and accident insurance business with the Travelers' Insurance Company, of Hartford, Conn. He has remained with this company ever since.

He enlisted in the First Corps Cadets, November 29, 1886, and was successively promoted to be corporal, sergeant, first sergeant and sergeant-major. He was especially active in everything which pertained to the welfare of the Cadets, and served as a member of the committee which so successfully conducted the series of theatrical productions, the financial results of which enabled the Corps to build its magnificent armory on Columbus avenue.

On May 20, 1899, he was appointed provost marshal with the rank of captain on the staff of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Thomas R. Mathews commanding, and on January 5, 1900, was promoted to be major and assistant-inspec-



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL JAMES G. WHITE.

tor-general of rifle practice attached to the brigade. He was again promoted to the staff of the commander-in-chief, as assistant inspector-general with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, May 5, 1900, which position he holds at the present time.

Colonel White is an honorary member of the First Corps Cadets, and a member of the Veteran Association of the same organization. He is vice-president of the Pine Tree State Club; a member of the Athletic and Exchange Clubs of Boston, and of the Newton Club; also a member of the Massachusetts Society Sons of the Revolution.

He married Margaret, daughter of General Charles P. Mattocks, of Portland, Me., September 17, 1896. Of this marriage have been born two daughters, Margaret, born at Boston, April 23, 1898, died July 22, 1899; and Charlotte Louise, born at Newton, Mass., September 9, 1899.

#### LIEUT.-COL. WALTER C. HAGAR.

Lieutenant-Colonel Walter C. Hagar, assistant adjutant-general of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., was born at Boston, Mass., November 23, 1857. He is a son of Professor Daniel B. Hagar, Ph. D., (who was



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WALTER C. HAGAR.

for thirty-one years principal of the State Normal School at Salem, and one of the most prominent educators of the country) and Mary Bradford (McKim) Hagar.

His education was obtained in the

public schools of Salem, and after graduating from the Classical High School of that city he entered the U. S. Naval Academy, at Annapolis, in September, 1873, being appointed by President Grant. In consequence of a prolonged attack of scarlet fever he resigned in June, 1874. Later he entered Trinity college, Hartford, and graduated in the class of 1879.

His life, since leaving college has been devoted to teaching. In March, 1879, he was called to the head of the mathematical department of the Chauncy Hall School, Boston, remaining until 1884, when he, with others, founded the Berkeley School. In 1896 they bought out the Chauncy Hall School and still conduct this famous Boston institution.

Colonel Hagar's military record dates back to May 7, 1888, when he enlisted in the First Corps Cadets. He was made corporal, June 6, 1891, and sergeant, May 19, 1892, serving in the last capacity until September 17, 1897, when he was honored by Brigadier-General Thomas R. Mathews, commanding the 1st Brigade, with an appointment as assistant adjutant-general on his staff. This very unusual promotion was largely due to the warm commendation given by the officers of the First Corps, and came to Colonel Hagar as a complete surprise.

He married, in 1884, Miss Edith A. Perkins, of Salem, and lives in Brookline.

#### COLONEL SMITH M. DECKER.

Colonel Smith M. Decker of Lawrence, Mass., was born at Swanton, Vt., October 15, 1843. His father, Jacob Decker, was born in Swanton, Vt., June 25, 1817, and his mother, Louise (Roberts) Decker, was a native of the same town.

In the Civil War Jacob Decker, his father, served in the Tenth Regiment of Infantry, Vt. Vols., two years and one month, being discharged for disability.

Three uncles and six cousins also served in the ranks. Three of his cousins served in the Sixth Vermont, two of whom were killed in battle. Two cousins served in New York regiments and one in the Fourteenth Regiment, Mass. Vols, afterwards the First Heavy Artillery.

In September, 1862, when a boy of eighteen, he enlisted in Co. K, Thirteenth Regiment, Vt. Vols. It was mustered into the United States service October 10, 1862; was sent to Washington, and with the Twelfth, Fourteenth, Fifteenth and Sixteenth (Vt.) Regiments constituted

the 2d (Vt.) Brigade, 2d Division, 1st Army Corps.

From November 1, 1862, to June 24, 1863, the brigade was chiefly engaged in garrison and picket duty at "Camp Vermont," Alexandria, Union Mills, Fairfax, C. H., Centreville, Wolf Run Shoals, and "Camp Widow Violet," Ocoquan, on the river of that name. Mosby's guerillas gave their service a spice of danger, but no serious engagement interrupted the continual drill, picket and guard duty, with which General Stannard, who had succeeded General Stoughton, their First Brigade commander, prepared his men for their final and crowning service. On June 25, they broke camp and made forced marches for six days and nights toward Gettysburg. On July 1, the first day of the battle of Gettysburg, they heard the tremendous cannonading when ten miles away, and preparing for battle, marched hastily on, arriving on the field just before sunset.

On July 2, the brigade was posted in the centre of the Union line, and during the constant fighting the Thirteenth not only stood fast with the rest of the brigade, but with it aided other regiments to rally—helped disabled artillery sections to fight their guns, and the like. Late in the day, five companies of the Thirteenth, under Colonel Randall, on their way to take position some distance to the left, charged into the valley on the heels of General Wright's repulsed Confederates and rescued and carried off four guns of Bigelow's Ninth Massachusetts Battery, which had been abandoned, and later captured nearly a hundred prisoners. Re-joining the Sixteenth and Fourteenth (Vt.) Regiments, the Thirteenth bivouacked for the night.

At 3.30 P. M. of July 3, the brigade was exposed to that tremendous fire which Lee's artillery with 138 guns directed against the 98 pieces with which Meade had crowned the heights and ridges behind them. The terrors of this gigantic artillery duel are said to have exceeded anything ever witnessed in the annals of field warfare. Battery after battery was disabled and replaced. Eleven caissons were exploded between Zeigler's Grove and Little Round Top, and five Union batteries on this part of the line lost 250 horses and over one-half of their men. Five cannon shots and as many exploding shells every second, with the screaming, rattling and crashing of every kind of missile colliding with men, animals and inanimate objects for nearly an hour and

a quarter thundered continuously, and under this storm the Vermont Brigade maintained its position. Then came Pickett's splendid charge and the advance of the covering Confederate batteries. The



COLONEL SMITH M. DECKER.

serried lines, 17,000 strong, moving in perfect order, with the long, swinging step of the Southern infantry, their arms flashing in the sunlight, their battle flags waving in the center of each veteran regiment, advanced into and across the valley. Then from the semi-circle of ridges, as if the Southern fire had been spent in vain, opened the Union artillery. Solid shot ricocheted through Pickett's column, cutting out here a file or two, further on plunging again into the serried ranks, and perhaps again splashing with bloody fragments the rear of his breaking army. Shells tore out squads and platoons, and the pitiless rifle hail picked out its hundreds from front and flanks. They came on wave on wave like a great sea of steel-tipped gray, to be broken here and there by that ceaseless storm of missiles, but reforming as often with a courage and discipline which can never be forgotten while military glory is honored among men. Then, as the line grew closer, canister and grape opened in those splendid lines great rents and gashes, marked by hun-

dreds of quivering corpses and writhing men; but that magnificent infantry still surged forward.

Then came the chance of the Vermont Brigade. Pettigrew ordered a change of direction to the left, and the brigades of Wilcox and Perry, failing to obey promptly, were separated from the main body. General Stannard at once advanced the Thirteenth and Fourteenth, and the Sixteenth until then on the skirmish line, fell back and formed on their left. The brigade opened a flanking fire at short range on the enemy's right, and later was moved by the right flank 200 yards nearer, and coming "by the right flank into line," poured its fire into the reeling array at scarcely fifty yards distance. Hall's and Webb's brigades of Massachusetts, New York and Pennsylvania regiments, were crushing their front. The Thirteenth and Fourteenth Vermont, at right angles to their line, broke in their flank, and finally the Thirteenth Vermont, swinging as on a hinge, enclosed the rear of the shattered force in its splendid death agony. Colonel Randall, at the risk of his own life, and with his back to the enemy, stopped the fire of the Vermont riflemen, mad with the terrible stress of the titanic struggle. Prisoners were taken by hundreds, and the Thirteenth Vermont, with its sister regiments, had gained undying renown. It took part in the pursuit of Lee back into Virginia and was mustered out July 21st, 1863.

Young Decker then attended the Franklin (Vermont) Academy for a year, and then went to Lawrence, Mass., arriving there at the time the Sixth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, was being recruited for the front. He enlisted in Company K, July 11, 1864. The regiment started for, and arriving in Washington July 12, went into camp on Arlington Heights, doing picket and guard duty, until August 23, when the regiment was ordered to Fort Delaware, where they went into barracks on Pea Patch Island and guarded nine thousand rebel prisoners.

After his return he remained in Company K, Sixth Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M., in which he was commissioned first lieutenant June 15, 1865, and captain March 7, 1866. He was elected major August 18, 1873, and commissioned lieutenant-colonel, Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., July 1, 1874. This commission he held until honorably discharged, on account of the general reorganization of the militia, April 28, 1876.

He was appointed provost marshal on the staff of the 1st Brigade, Brigadier-General Hobart Moore commanding, August 23, 1876, and later elected major of the Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., January 17, 1877, and commissioned colonel February 7, 1882. He resigned February 20, 1884, having served in the Massachusetts Militia twenty years.

Colonel Decker has been successful in business and is highly esteemed as a genial, generous and active citizen. He is a charter member of Post 39, G. A. R., a member of Grecian Lodge, F. A. M., of Mount Sinai Royal Arch Chapter, and Eminent Commander of Bethany Commandery, K. T.

#### COL. HARRY E. CONVERSE, A. Q. M. G.

Colonel Harry E. Converse, acting quartermaster-general for the state of Massachusetts, is the only surviving son of Elisha Slade Converse, born at Needham, Mass., July 28, 1820, and of Mary



COLONEL HARRY E. CONVERSE, A. Q. M. G.

Diana Edmands, daughter of Hosea and Ursula (Burgess) Edmands, born at Thompson, Conn., in 1825.

His father, Hon. Elisha S. Converse of Malden, Mass., president of the Boston Rubber Shoe Co., whose business reputation as head of a great manufacturing corporation is closely rivalled by the esteem of his fellow-townsmen, is directly descended from Deacon Edward Convers, who with his wife and three children, sailed for America with Governor John Winthrop's company, landing at Salem, June 12, 1630, and later settled at Charlestown, where he established a ferry to Boston in 1631, and was elected selectman in 1634. He was one of the first settlers of Woburn, where his descendants were long closely identified with the growth and development of their town and section. His second son, Samuel, was an officer in the militia. Edward Convers, his grandson, established the Convers Tavern, was an ensign in the Woburn company, and was succeeded in the fourth generation by Jonathan Convers, whose son, Deacon Jonathan Convers, was a soldier in the Revolutionary War. Elisha Convers or Converse, son of the above, who was a tavern-keeper, and married Betsey Wheaton, was the father of Elisha Slade, and the grandfather of Harry E. Converse.

The family name, variously spelled, Conyers, Convers and Converse, is readily traced back to Sir Roger de Coigneries, a knight of Normandy, who was one of the invading army of William the Norman, conqueror of Great Britain, who at the battle of Hastings, fought with and defeated King Harold of England.

Harry E. Converse was born at Malden, Mass., May 7, 1863, and was educated in the public schools of his native town. In 1882, when nineteen years old, he entered the employment of the Boston Rubber Shoe Co., in which he was steadily promoted. He is to-day manager of the Boston office, and a director of the company, and is also a director of the United States Rubber Company.

He married Miss Mary C. Parker of Malden, Mass., December 2, 1891. Of this marriage were born four children: Elisha Edmands, born at Malden, July 6, 1894; Margaret, born at Marblehead, August 15, 1896; Parker, born at Malden, October 25, 1897; and Roger Wolcott, born at Malden, March 26, 1900.

He has served for two years in the City Council of Malden, and is now serving his sixth year on the Board of Fire Commissioners. He is a member of the Masonic order, (Thirty-second Degree, S. R.) affiliated with Converse Lodge, Mal-

den, Mass., and a member of the Malden and Kenwood Clubs.

His military record begins with his appointment as quartermaster-sergeant on the non-commissioned staff of the Second Brigade, M. V. M., July 20, 1882. He was commissioned brigade quartermaster with the rank of captain, April 21, 1888, which position he resigned March 30, 1893. On January 7, 1897, he was appointed assistant quartermaster-general, with the rank of colonel, on the staff of Governor Wolcott, which position he held until the outbreak of the Spanish-American War, when it became necessary to relieve Adjutant-General Dalton of the immensely increased burden laid upon him as acting quartermaster-general.

At an early date Colonel Converse was made acting quartermaster-general, having previously made exhaustive inquiries and arrangements for the prompt supply of all materials, likely to be needed, should the Massachusetts troops be called into the service. His large experience and prestige as the manager of a great manufacturing interest enabled him to secure the co-operation of reputable contractors, and doubtless secured low prices, good material and workmanship, in all the extraordinary expenditures made by the State. The sacrifices of time, money, and physical and mental endurance cheerfully made by Colonel Converse during the war, can never be adequately recognized by the public at large; for such services, however vital and exhausting, do not impress the imagination, or receive the attention of the press as do the exigencies of active service in the field. These services, however, were nevertheless of the first importance, were patriotically and efficiently rendered, and greatly aided the Massachusetts troops to assume and retain that reputation for prompt mobilization and perfect equipment, which Washington recognized in the Revolution, and have ever since characterized her citizen-soldiers in war and in peace.

#### LIEUT.-COL. WALTER F. PECK.

Lieutenant-Colonel Walter F. Peck, twenty-ninth commander of the Second Corps Cadets, M. V. M., was born at Salem, Mass., February 14, 1854. He is the son of Freeman S. Peck, born November 10, 1818, at Irasburg, Vt., and of

Susan J. (Chesley) Peck, born at Wolfboro, N. H., June 17, 1819.

Lieutenant-Colonel Peck was educated in the common and high schools of Salem, and after graduating from the latter became a clerk in his father's clothing



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WALTER F. PECK.

store, where he was employed for fifteen years. In 1884, he engaged with the Philadelphia & Reading Coal & Iron Co., and in 1893, was made paymaster, which position he still retains.

While devoted to business, Colonel Peck has served his native city for two years as a member of the Common Council, and on the Water Board for one year. He is a member of the Winslow Lewis Commandery, A. F. & A. M.; of Essex Lodge, I. O. O. F., and of the Republican City Committee and Young Men's Republican Club of Salem, Mass.

His military record is one of long service in the Second Corps Cadets, in which he enlisted when nineteen years old, November 20, 1873, serving as private, sergeant and sergeant-major until elected second lieutenant, May 14, 1883. He was commissioned first lieutenant, June 9, 1883; chosen captain, July 1, 1887, and promoted to be major, July 10, 1895. On March 10, 1899, he was elected the twenty-ninth commander of the Second Corps

Cadets, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, which command he holds at the present writing.

He married Miss M. Alice Adams, of Salem, January 25, 1885. Of this marriage were born Helen C. and John A. Peck, both natives of Salem, where they still reside.

#### CAPT. FRANKLIN GUILLE BIXBY.

Captain Franklin Guile Bixby, the seventh and youngest son of Deacon Halcy Bixby, who was born at Thompson, Windham County, Conn., February 14, 1801, and of Esther (Tyler) Bixby, a native of Royalton, Vt., of the same age, was born at Thompson, Windham County, Conn., March 6, 1844. He attended the public schools of his native town until twelve years of age, when he was sent to a select and private school at East Woodstock, Conn., where under the careful tuition of Professors Hitchcock, Dr. Segur and Rev. Daniel Dochester, D. D., he studied several years. From thence he was transferred to Nichols Academy, Dudley, Mass., where under the excellent tutorship of Colonel Monroe Nichols, A. M., he finished his education.

Captain Bixby's ancestry included many who have faithfully served the colony and State in the past; his paternal and maternal grandfathers, Deacon Moses Bixby and Rufus Tyler, were both soldiers in the Revolution, and his father, Halcy Bixby, was a captain in the State militia at Thompson, Conn.

In July, 1862, when President Lincoln issued his famous call for 300,000 volunteers, Captain Bixby was teaching school at Putnam, Conn. He immediately resigned his position as principal of the large grammar school in district No. 6—and enlisted August 9, as a private in Company D, Eighteenth Connecticut Volunteer Infantry, familiarly known as "Buckingham's Pets," from the fact that War Governor Buckingham personally knew many of the boys, and always took great interest and pride in its department, and visited it several times in the field, at the front.

This regiment saw most of its severe service in the Shenandoah Valley, with Generals Milroy, Sigel, Hunter, Sullivan, Crook, Kelly, Hancock and Sheridan, participating in twenty-two battles—including the famous Hunter's raid—and the list of its casualties stands second to no other three years' regiment that left the State. Its muster rolls bear the names of 1170



officers and men. It lost 816. It is with commendable pride that Captain Bixby can refer to the fact that although one of the youngest boys of his company he received promotion through every grade to the captaincy, and was offered further advancement to go outside of his regiment, also to remain in the regular army.

His promotions and designations follow: third sergeant, August 14, 1862; orderly sergeant, November 10, 1862; second lieutenant, November 30, 1863; first lieutenant, October 17, 1864; captain, June 23, 1865.

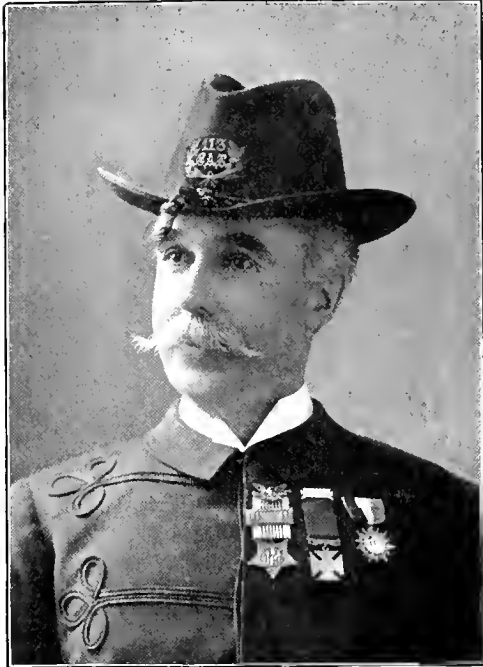
As soon as commissioned second lieutenant he was put in command of his company, and was ever afterward the company commander, and for more than one year he commanded three companies, C, D and G, and was one of three line officers present for duty during all this time. The other regimental officers were prisoners of war in Libby prison, captured at Winchester, Va., June 14, 1863.

It was at the battle of Piedmont, Va., June 5, 1864, that the Eighteenth Connecticut saw its severest battle and most decisive victory, losing in killed and wounded nearly one-half its number. Captain Bixby's command lost: Company D, 24 men; Company C, (color company) 22; Company G, 20; in all 66 men. All the color guard were either killed or wounded save one, and the flag riddled with bullets.

Fifteen hundred prisoners were captured, of which this regiment took more than three times its own number. Its other engagements were at Winchester, Summit's Point, New Market, Lynchburg, Cedar Creek, Berryville, Liberty, Quaker Church, Salem, Martinsburg, Opequan, Hallton, Charlestown and others.

During "Hunters' Raid" after the battle of Lynchburg, Va., June 18, 1864, General Jubal Early arrived on the field soon after dark, with over thirty thousand men, expecting to capture or annihilate General Hunter's command. A retreat was imperative, and it became necessary to sacrifice a part of the force to delay the pursuit which was sure to follow. The Eighteenth Connecticut was ordered by General Hunter to cover his retreat, and to Captain Bixby with three companies, was given the post of honor and of danger, the outer picket line. He ordered his men to throw everything away that could make a noise, excepting their rifles and ammunition, deployed them at close range, and ordering them to fire high, so as to avoid a

charge, kept up a desultory musketry fire nearly all night. At certain points in making his rounds, Captain Bixby could plainly hear the orders given in the enemy's lines, and the movements of the troops preparing to attack at sunrise. Just before daybreak a staff



CAPTAIN FRANKLIN G. BIXBY.

officer brought orders to withdraw the pickets, which was so skilfully performed that the enemy was completely deceived.

In his retreat, Captain Bixby led his men through the fields and woods where cavalry could not follow; and although a few men were made prisoners, rejoined the regiment with little loss. The Eighteenth skirmished more or less during the next day, but the lead secured and swift marching prevented any attack in force. This gallant and important service was noticed in orders by the general commanding.

Captain Bixby was severely wounded in the right side by a Minie ball July 18, 1864, at the battle of Snicker's Ford, Va., but returned to the command of his company in thirty days—and before its next engagement. He participated in every battle, and was never absent from his company, although many times detailed for special duty as provost marshal or post commander.

He was "officer of the day" at Charlestown, Va., September 17, 1864, when at his headquarters, General Grant and staff met General Sheridan and his subordinate generals, and Grant in person gave Sheridan his famous order to "pitch in." All the world knows how on the following day Sheridan did "pitch in," and sent Early and his forces flying up the Shenandoah Valley in utter confusion and defeat.

During the winter of 1864-65 he was assigned to special duty at division headquarters as recorder of court, also as judge advocate general on court martial at Martinsburg, Va., where many important cases were tried. He was serving on General Seward's staff at Martinsburg, Va., when his father, William Seward, secretary of state, was wounded, and President Lincoln was assassinated.

In July, 1865, the regiment returned home and was mustered out of the service at Hartford, Conn. Captain Bixby returned to his school at Putnam, Conn., and remained its teacher for two terms, when he was promoted to be principal of the High School, remaining ten terms, and resigned in 1870 to accept a position in the Boston Custom House, where as impost clerk he has ever since been located.

He was commissioned adjutant of the First Regiment, 1st Brigade, 1st Division, M. V. M., December 24, 1872, and was honorably discharged from this service April 18, 1876, agreeably to the provisions of Chapter 204, (Sec. 4), Acts of 1876, and Chapter 107, Acts of 1877, entitled "an Act to reduce the Expenses and re-organize the Militia;" having served as adjutant of the First Regiment three years and four months. He is a member of the F. A. M. fraternity and of Edward W. Kinsley Post No. 113, G. A. R., Department of Massachusetts, and was adjutant of the latter organization for some ten years.

#### LIEUT.-COL. DAVID W. LOW.

Lieutenant-Colonel David W. Low (retired), the son of Frederick Gilman Low, who was born at Gloucester, Mass., December 6, 1789, and Eliza (Davis) Low, of the same town, born September 3, 1790, was born in Gloucester, November 27, 1833. He is descended from Captain John Low, of the ship "Ambrose," rear admiral of the fleet which in 1630 brought over Winthrop's Massachusetts colonists.

Thomas Low, 1st, settled at Ipswich in 1643, or earlier, whose son, Thomas Low, 2d, served in King Philip's War, in 1675, and a grandson, Thomas Low, 3d, settled at Gloucester about 1692.

Colonel John Low, a colonel in the Revolution, and a selectman of Gloucester for thirty-five years; Isaac Somes, first lieutenant of artillery, later master of the early and successful privateer "Union," but afterwards lost in the new letter-of-marque "Tempest," in a terrible squall in the Gulf Stream; and Eliphalet Davis, a soldier in the Continental army, and later a brigadier-general of the Massachusetts militia, were all especially active and fearless actors in the drama of the Revolutionary struggle.

His father, Frederick Gilman Low, a typical Yankee mariner, was a cabin boy at fourteen, master of an Indiaman at twenty-one, executive officer of privateers in the War of 1812; was twice captured by English frigates, and held as a prisoner three months at Halifax, N. S., and seven months at Dartmoor prison, Eng. In 1820, he commanded an expedition with a ship and brig after seals to newly discovered land in the Antarctic Ocean south of Cape Horn. Only one previous voyage had been made there, and they kept "mum" about it. With what he picked up he guessed where it was and marked it on his chart, and hit it within five miles (so he said). In 1849, he became collector of customs for the port of Gloucester.

Mr. Low began his business life as a bookkeeper in March, 1848; was appointed record clerk in the Gloucester Custom House in 1851; studied and practiced engineering in 1853-54; was in the grocery trade in 1855, a steamboat clerk in 1859, and was engaged in the fishing business, 1860-63. He was a surveyor and conveyancer from 1864 to 1873. Since 1893 he has been in the real estate business, and has for many years been treasurer of the Gloucester Gas Light Co. He was town clerk of Gloucester from 1868 to 1873; postmaster of Gloucester from 1873 to 1886, and a county commissioner of Essex County from 1887 to 1893.

His military record runs as follows: In 1852, he enlisted in the Gloucester Artillery Company, then Company E, Second Regiment Artillery, M. V. M.; was elected fourth lieutenant in 1857, and second lieutenant of Company G, Eighth Regiment Infantry, in 1859; and, leaving his fishing business, responded April 15, 1861, to Governor Andrew's call; aided Captain

Center in summoning his men, and was mustered into the United States service as first lieutenant of Company G, Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., April 30, 1861, in Washington, D. C.; was stationed at the Capitol at Washington and Camp Andrew, near Relay House, Md., and was mustered out August 1, 1861. He was promoted captain March 17, 1862, and at Governor Andrew's call of May 26, 1862, reported at Boston with fifty-nine men in Company G, but was detained there on duty only two or three days. On September 12, 1862, he went into Camp Stanton, at Boxford, with his company, G, 101 strong; mustered into the United States service for nine months, September 15, 1862, served in North Carolina, Maryland and Virginia, and was mustered out August 7, 1863. He again led Company G, 85 strong, to camp at Readville, July 14, 1864; was mustered in for 100 days' service July 16, on the 25th, was discharged as captain and mustered again as major July 26, and with four companies detached, did duty in command of a rendezvous of recruits, substitutes and drafted men of Delaware and Maryland at Camp Bradford, Md., and was mustered out November 16, 1864. During his after-service as major he received the following commendation from Major-General B. F. Butler commanding, for his tour of duty at Concord in 1870:—

Headquarter's Division, M. V. M.,

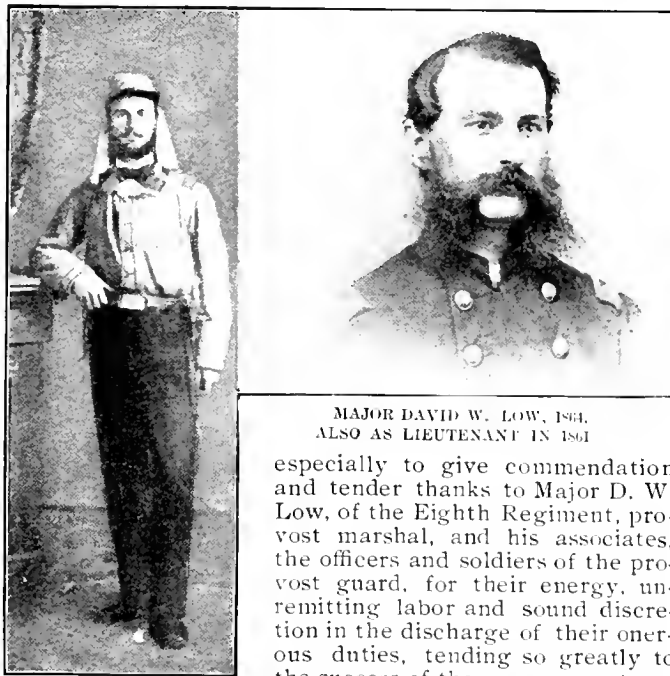
Camp Andrew, Concord, Sept. 10, 1870.  
General Order No. 8.

"The provost guard introduced for the first time at the encampment of the Massachusetts militia, composed of selected officers and soldiers permanently detailed for the encampment, especially charged with the preservation of order within and outside the lines, has proved a success in the preservation of quiet and order, as the good citizens of Concord and Acton have abundantly testified.

"It is hoped this guard will be established

in future encampments of all bodies of troops, however large or small.

"The honorable mention of some when all have done so well would seem invidious, save that the general commanding may be permitted to notice those who come under his eye, having been on duty near his quarters. He desires, therefore,



MAJOR DAVID W. LOW, 1861.  
ALSO AS LIEUTENANT IN 1861

especially to give commendation and tender thanks to Major D. W. Low, of the Eighth Regiment, provost marshal, and his associates, the officers and soldiers of the provost guard, for their energy, unremitting labor and sound discretion in the discharge of their onerous duties, tending so greatly to the success of the encampment.

"By command of Major-General

Butler,

E. J. Sherman, Asst. Adjt.-Gen'l, chief of staff."

He resigned as major of the Eighth Regiment to become provost marshal on the staff of the Second Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General George H. Peirson commanding, July 25, 1874, and served until discharged by virtue of an Act of the Legislature to Reorganize the Militia, April 15, 1876. On May 6, 1876, he was appointed assistant inspector general with the rank of lieutenant-colonel on the staff of Governor Alexander H. Rice, commander-in-chief, and assisted in reorganizing the militia until discharged (at his own request) December 26, 1876, having continuously served in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia a quarter of a century.

Besides his other duties, he was instrumental in obtaining the use of fish as a ration in the army, the government pur-

chasing from the latter part of 1863 to close of war 11,111,234 pounds of fish, at a cost of \$765,347. He designed and installed the Gloucester exhibit, illustrating the fisheries, at the Centennial Exposition of 1876, and again at the Columbian Exposition of 1893. In 1877, at the special request of the counsel for the United States, he collected testimony and appeared as a witness before the Fishery Commission held at Halifax, receiving therefor no compensation, except the very hearty commendation of the United States counsel. From 1885 to 1890 he was secretary of the Essex Agricultural Society, and in 1886 a special agent of the State Census Bureau on Fisheries and Manufactures in Barnstable and Essex Counties.

Fraternally he is affiliated with Tyrian Lodge, E. A. I., (has been Marshal and Junior Warden); William Ferson Royal Arch Chapter (Captain of the Host and Scribe); Cape Ann Scientific and Literary Association (treasurer); Military Order of the Loyal Legion; Commandery of Massachusetts; Cape Ann Historical Society, etc.

He married Miss Amanda Friend, of Gloucester, Mass., May 13, 1860. Of this marriage six children were born: Frank Dale, November 7, 1861; Julia Friend, June 5, 1864; Ellen Pearce, February 9, 1866; David Wilbur, February 10, 1868; Amanda Davis, March 17, 1870; and Fred-eric Friend Low, January 10, 1872—all natives of Gloucester, Mass.

#### MAJOR GEORGE H. TAYLOR.

Major George H. Taylor was born in Somerville, Mass., July 22, 1860, and was chiefly educated in the public schools of Hyde Park, Mass., whither his parents removed shortly after his birth. His father, Robert Taylor, was born at Inverness, Invernesshire, Scotland, October 8, 1818, and his mother, Mary (Lamb) Taylor, was a native of the same place. Both inherited the honesty, industry and piety which have in so marked a degree characterized the Scottish people at home and abroad.

Their son took up the calling of plumber and fitter of heating apparatus, and today is at the head of a thriving business in these lines and a good wholesale and retail trade in general hardware, paints and oils, with stores at Wakefield and Melrose, Mass.

Over twenty years ago he became a member of the Massachusetts Militia, en-

listing in Company A, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., March 20, 1880. He served as private, corporal and sergeant until April 17, 1883, when he was elected second lieutenant; was promoted to be first lieutenant, August 25, 1884; and made captain of his company, May 14, 1888. On July 2, 1890, he was elected major, which position he held until he resigned the same, January 3, 1899, having served as private and officer nearly nineteen



MAJOR GEORGE H. TAYLOR

years. In the Spanish-American War he was commissioned major of the Sixth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., May 13, 1898, and resigned the same August 5, 1898, for reasons more fully set forth by Lieutenant-Colonel Chaffin in the first volume of this history.

He has long been affiliated with Golden Rule Lodge, F. A. and A. M.; with Souhegan Lodge No. 38, I. O. O. F., Wakefield, Mass., and has always been esteemed as a public spirited and generous citizen, and genial associate.

He married in 1888 Miss Abbie L. Dennett of Wakefield, Mass., where Major Taylor has ever since resided. They have two children, Paul Huse Taylor, born August 21, 1892, and Ruth G. Taylor, born December 25, 1896.

## FRANK B. STEVENS.

Frank B. Stevens—born in Dover, N. H., 1861; graduated Phillips Exeter Academy and Yale College; colonel and aide-de-camp on Governor Wolcott's staff, 1897, 1898 and 1899; first lieutenant and



COLONEL FRANK B. STEVENS.

aide-de-camp, First Regiment, Heavy Artillery, 1900; married; two children, both living; residence, Newtonville, Mass.; business, newspaper advertising.

## MAJOR WALTER E. MORRISON.

Major Walter E. Morrison, born at Braintree, Mass., May 16, 1864, is the son of Alva S. Morrison, born at Braintree, November 9, 1835, and of Lizzie A. (Curtis) Morrison, born at Weymouth, Mass., June 12, 1838. He was educated in the public schools of Braintree, and at Chauncy Hall School, Boston, Mass. He began his business life in the woollen manufacture at Braintree, Mass., but in



MAJOR WALTER E. MORRISON.

1898 became president of the Dow Portable Electric Assistant Company, with offices at 218 Tremont St., Boston, Mass. Descended from Alice Southworth, second wife of Governor Bradford, of the Plymouth colony, and other early settlers, he numbers many military men among his ancestors, and among them Captain Consider Atherton, Captain Jedediah Southworth, and Robert Morrison, who served in the Revolutionary War, and Colonel Consider Southworth and Colonel Ira Curtis of the Massachusetts militia.

His own military service began with his enlistment in the Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., as a member and first captain of the new (Braintree) Company K, mustered in November 21, 1887, the

date of his commission. After commanding the company nearly ten years, he was elected major of the Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., August 6, 1897, which position he still retains. In the Spanish-American War he was commissioned major of the Fifth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., July 1, 1898. During the extended service of this regiment he commanded the Second Battalion, detached from the regiment at Camp Meade, Pa., from September 28 to November 1, 1898, and "rendered valuable service to the quartermaster and commissary department; in handling and guarding the quartermaster's and commissary supplies of the corps."

At Greenville, S. C., he commanded the first battalion, detailed for provost duty, January 12-22. Of this tour the Greenville Daily News said: "This is the second term of the Massachusetts men, and they have again won the respect of our city. From all parts of the city come remarks, commending their good work. The men are a fine-looking body, neat and careful, and they always make a good impression. Their officers are painstaking and considerate, and the provost work under them always runs smoothly." In January, 1899, Major Morrison commanded the regiment for some weeks while Colonel Whitney was acting brigadier-general, and Lieutenant-Colonel Weaver was detached as acting inspector-general. He was mustered out with his regiment, March 31, 1899.

Major Morrison is a member of Rural Lodge, F. A. M., Quincy Mass., and of Monatiquot Lodge, K. of P., Braintree; also president of the Officers' Association, Fifth Regiment, U. S. V., Naval and Military Order, Spanish-American War.

He married, June 14, 1887, Miss Edith Follansbee. Of this marriage were born Ibrahim F. Morrison, February 9, 1889; Harold M. Morrison, October 22, 1890, and Walter E. Morrison, Jr., May 23, 1892.

#### MAJOR ELIJAH GEORGE, A. I. G. R. P.

Major Elijah George (retired) late assistant inspector-general of rifle practice, on the staff of the 2d Brigade, M. V. M., is of Huguenot descent and was born at New Rochelle, N. Y., September 6, 1850. He is the son of William E. George, a native of England, and of Elizabeth (Deveau) George, born at New Rochelle, N. Y., 1819. His mother's grandfather, Abel DeVoe (the name was variously

spelled as DeVeau, Deveau, DeVeaux, Deveaux, deVaux, Devove, Devone, Devaue, or Davoe) served in the American army during the Revolutionary War.

Major George was educated in the Grammar schools of New York city, and later graduated from the Law School of Boston University, with the degree of L. L. B. He was admitted to the Suffolk bar in 1875, and later to the bar of the Supreme Court of the United States. In 1877 he was elected register of probate



MAJOR ELIJAH GEORGE, A. I. G. R. P.

and insolvency for Suffolk county, which position he has continuously occupied to the present time.

He joined the First Corps Cadets, M. V. M., February 5, 1880, but on July 13, 1881, was appointed judge advocate, with the rank of captain, on the staff of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Hobart Moore commanding, which position he resigned February 24, 1882. On August 12, 1882, he was appointed judge advocate, with the rank of captain, on the staff of the 2d Brigade, Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Peach, Jr., commanding, which position he filled until June 7, 1894, when he was promoted to be assistant inspector-general of rifle practice, with the rank of major, and attached to the

same brigade. The duties of this new station he performed for over three years, but owing to his official duties, he deemed it best to withdraw from the State service, in which he had taken a keen interest. He was retired with the rank of major, July 24, 1897, having served over seventeen years.

Major George is a member of many associations, among which are the Union, University and Athletic Clubs of Boston, the Bostonian and Beacon Societies.

He married Miss Susan Virginia Howard of Baltimore, June 25, 1876. Of this marriage have been born three sons, Elijah Howard, William Leigh and Ernest George, all natives of Boston, Mass.

#### LIEUT.-COL. EDW. J. GIHON, A. I. G.

Lieutenant-Colonel Edward J. Gihon, assistant inspector-general Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, the son of Edward and Helen (Lyons) Gihon was born at Wakefield, Mass., February 5, 1865. His father, Corporal Edward Gihon, served in the Twenty-Eighth Massachusetts Volunteers during the Civil War, and his maternal uncle, John W. Lyons, in the Twenty-Eighth Massachusetts Volunteers and Third Massachusetts Heavy Artillery during the same struggle. His great-uncle, Robert Martin, was a commissioned officer of the British army, and served at the famous battle of Waterloo.

He was educated in the public schools of Wakefield, Mass., where he has always resided, and was elected a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1899, 1900 and 1901.

His military record began when he was seventeen years old, with his enlistment in the Richardson Light Guard of Wakefield, (Company A, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M.), September 6, 1882, which enlistment was renewed September 6, 1885, September 6, 1886, September 6, 1887 and September 8, 1888. During this period he first served as private; was appointed corporal in 1883, sergeant in 1885 and first sergeant in 1888. He was elected second lieutenant, November 1, 1888; first lieutenant, July 14, 1890, and made captain, January 3, 1893.

While first lieutenant he was detailed by Adjutant-General Dalton, March 5, 1891, to re-organize Company L, (colored) Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., which duty he successfully performed. He early attained the highest grade (Distinguished Marksman) of skill with the military rifle, and is a member of the famous

"Company A, Sixth Regiment, Rifle Team," which for eight years held the championship of New England. He was also a member of the Sixth Regiment Rifle Team from 1891 to 1899, and was its captain in several successful competitions.

While captain of Company A, he carried a full enrolment into camp, and qualified every man as a marksman for six successive years.

During the Spanish-American War he was commissioned captain, Company A,



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL EDWARD J. GIHON.

Sixth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers, May 12, 1898, and accompanied the expedition under General Miles to Santiago and Porto Rico.

In the early morning of Tuesday, July 26, Company A, then acting as advanced guard of the outposts near Guanica, was fired upon by the enemy. Captain Gihon was severely wounded, but remained on duty until the skirmish was over. General Garretson, in an order issued soon after this affair, "commended for gallantry and coolness under fire Captain E. J. Gihon, Sixth Massachusetts Volunteers, who was painfully wounded early in the action, and remained in command of his company until it reached camp." Later he was commissioned major, October 1,

1898, served until the regiment returned to Massachusetts, and was mustered out January 21, 1899. Then he was commissioned captain in the Twenty-Sixth Regiment, U. S. Volunteers, for service in the Philippines, but declined the honor, owing to the severe illness of Mrs. Gihon.

After the regiment rejoined the State militia he resumed command of Company A, but was promoted to be major, May 22, 1899. He was appointed assistant inspector-general, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, on the staff of W. Murray Crane, governor and commander-in-chief, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, January, 1900.

Lieutenant-Colonel Gihon was formerly a captain of the Sons of Veterans, and is a member of the Naval and Military Order of the Spanish-American War, of the Richardson Light Guard Veteran Association, Porto Rico Campaign; honorary and fine member of the Richardson Light Guard, and National Association of Spanish War Veterans.

Lieutenant-Colonel Gihon was married to Miss Minnie F. Skulley, of Wakefield in November, 1894.

#### BRIGADIER-GENERAL BENJAMIN F. BRIDGES.

Brigadier-General Benjamin Franklin Bridges, late commanding the First Brigade, M. V. M., was born at Deerfield, Mass., April 30, 1836. His father, Benjamin Franklin Bridges, and his mother, Harriet A. (Hubbard) Bridges, were both natives of Deerfield, and came of families connected with the militia of the Massachusetts Colony, Province and State, in all the wars of the last three centuries, by the faithful service of many members.

In his boyhood he worked upon his father's farm during the busy season and attended school in the winter.

In 1856 he went West, where he remained for some time.

Returning to Massachusetts he engaged in the dry good business in Greenfield, but later was successfully associated with B. R. Hamilton in the manufacture of pocket books at South Deerfield, under the firm name and style of Hamilton & Bridges.

Some years later he became the head of the firm of J. B. Bridges & Co., millers and dealers in flour, grain and farming implements, in which business he was engaged when appointed warden of the Massachusetts State Prison at Charles-

town, by the late Governor William E. Russell, in March, 1893.

In 1852, when only sixteen years old, he enlisted in Company H, Tenth Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M., and served therein



BRIGADIER-GENERAL BENJAMIN F. BRIDGES

until 1856, when he left the state. In 1871 a new Company H for the Second Regiment of Infantry was raised in South Deerfield, and he was elected first lieutenant November 28, 1871. His promotion was steady and deserved. He was chosen captain March 15, 1875, elected major August 3, 1876, promoted to be lieutenant-colonel January 25, 1879, and commissioned colonel August 7, 1879. Under his command the Second became one of the best disciplined and most efficient regiments in the state, a character which it has ever since retained. Strict in his ideas of military discipline and service, Colonel Bridges secured the esteem and confidence of his subordinates and associates, and was chosen brigadier-general, First Brigade, M. V. M., January 5, 1889. His record in this new sphere of duty and action is most fully set forth in the monograph history of the First Brigade, contributed by Colonel Bowdoin S.



Parker, his adjutant general and chief of staff, in the first volume of this work.

It suffices to say here that, after having aided in strengthening and improving the First Brigade and its component organizations, he was retired with the rank of brigadier-general July 9, 1897, having served nearly thirty years.

He has long been a Mason, but has been too busy to become affiliated with other organizations.

He married in 1859 Miss Harriet R. Eaton, of South Deerfield. There were three sons by this marriage, Corril Ellsworth, whose military record appears in this volume, Leon Frank and Clifton Ross. His first wife having died soon after the birth of the last named son, he married Jennie E. Taylor January 8, 1866. One son, Eugene T., is the only child of this marriage. He also has given considerable time to the militia. He was a lieutenant for several years in Company H of the Second Regiment, when that company was located in South Deerfield, and he made an enviable record as a military marksman.

#### CAPTAIN CORRIL E. BRIDGES.

Captain Corril Ellsworth Bridges was born at Greenfield, Mass., August 22, 1861. He is the son of (General) Benjamin F. Bridges, born at Deerfield, Mass., April 30, 1836, and of Harriet R. (Eaton) Bridges, born in the same town in 1836. His ancestry (which is ancient in the American sense) records the names of many stout and valiant soldiers who served the colony, province and state in contests with Indian, Frenchman and Briton and in the wars of the republic.

Captain Bridges was educated in the public schools of Deerfield, at Deerfield Academy and Dickinson High School and the Powers Institute at Bernardston, Mass. In 1887 he graduated with the degree of LL. B. from the Albany Law School, Union University. He has long been associated in business with his father, but since his removal to Boston has been preparing to practice his profession.

He has long been affiliated with the I. O. O. F., and with the Knights of Honor. In the latter society he is a past dictator, and a member of the Grand Lodge.

He enlisted in Company H, Second Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., August 2, 1878. He served as private, sergeant and sergeant-major, and was commis-

sioned first lieutenant and adjutant of the Second Regiment, January 8, 1887. He was made brigade sergeant-major of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Benjamin F. Bridges commanding, April 3, 1889; brigade engineer with the rank of captain March 15, 1891, and aide-de-camp with the rank of captain March 17, 1894. This latter position he resigned August 11, 1897. In 1898, with Captain Henry Pitman, and others of Somerville,



CAPTAIN CORRIL E. BRIDGES.

he aided in recruiting and organizing the Third Company of Provisional Militia, and was commissioned second lieutenant thereof, June 14, 1898. This company served until relieved from duty by General Order No. 2, February 11, 1899.

Captain Bridges married Miss Katharine G. White, of Albany, N. Y., April 27, 1887. They have two children, Corril Benjamin Bridges, born at So. Deerfield, Mass., April 4, 1888, and Constance Bridges, born at Charlestown, Mass., June 7, 1896. Present residence, Somerville, Mass.

#### LIEUT.-COL. H. E. MARION.

Lieutenant-Colonel and Surgeon Horace Eugene Marion, late medical director on the staff of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M.,

Brigadier-General Hobart Moore commanding, was born at Burlington, (formerly a part of Woburn, Mass.) August 3, 1843. His father, Abner Marion, was born at Burlington, in 1810, and his mother, Sarah Elizabeth (Prescott) Marion, at Concord, Mass., February 25, 1810. Both were descendants of early settlers of the Bay Colony.

On the paternal side, he is a great-great-grandson of Isaac Marion of Boston, a brother of that General Francis Marion, "the Swamp Fox," hated of Tory marauders and English redcoats in South Carolinian revolutionary days.

On his mother's side he is descended from Captain Jonathan Prescott, born in 1677, a brother of Jonas Prescott, born in 1674, from whom descended Colonel William Prescott, whose cool and dauntless skill directed that deadly musketry, which until the last grain of powder was burned, heaped up the British dead before the redoubt at Bunker Hill. His great-



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL HORACE E. MARION.

grandfather, John Prescott, was a brother of Dr. Samuel Prescott, who took part with Paul Revere in his famous ride.

He was brought up on his father's farm at Burlington, and obtained his elementary education at Warren Academy, Woburn, Mass., the Howe School at Bille-

rica, Mass., and at the Atkinson Academy, Atkinson, N. H. He was admitted to Amherst College, class 1866, but before the college year commenced, however, he enlisted with the "nine months" men in the Civil War. After his nine months' service in 1863, he entered Dartmouth, leaving it in turn for one hundred days' service in 1864, and after his return resumed his studies, and graduated from the scientific department, in 1866.

He began the study of medicine under Drs. Dixie Crosby and A. B. Crosby, of Hanover, N. H., both eminent surgeons, and continued under their preceptorship while attending the Dartmouth Medical College, from which he graduated in 1869. On January 1, 1870, he began the practice of medicine in Brighton, Mass., since annexed to the city of Boston. During a part of the years 1878-1879 he took special courses in medicine at the Universities of Berlin and Vienna. He enjoys a large and lucrative practice, was for some years coronor in the Brighton district, and for twenty years physician to the Overseers of the Poor in Boston.

He is a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, the Boston Society of Medical Science, the Obstetrical Society of Boston, the Cambridge Medical Society, an ex-president of the South District Medical Society, and an ex-member of the Boston Medical Improvement Society. He was for two years commander of Francis Washburn Post, 92, later a member of Edward Kingsley Post, 113, G. A. R., and of the National Past Officers Association, G. A. R., having served on the staff of several of the national commanders-in-chief. A prominent Free Mason, he belongs to Bethesda Lodge, F. A. M., of Brighton, Cambridge R. A. Chapter, of Cambridge; and De Molay Commandery, of Boston, holding the rank of past district deputy grand master. He is also a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, of Boston, and University and St. Botolph's Clubs of that city.

He began his military service when nineteen years old, enlisting in Company G, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M., which was sent to Newbern, N. C., in 1862, and served for nine months, under Major-General John G. Foster, commanding the 18th Army Corps. The service of the Fifth Regiment, more fully told elsewhere, included hard marching and sharp service in the Goldsboro Raid, December 11-22, 1862, and other expeditions, and young Marion did his full duty in all, and was

honorably mustered out with his regiment, July 2, 1863. In the summer of 1864, the Fifth was again called into service for one hundred days, in which he bore a part, this time as a sergeant. The Fifth was a part of the 8th Army Corps, stationed in Maryland, and was mustered out November 10, 1864.

On May 6, 1867, he was commissioned second lieutenant, Company G, Fifth Regiment, M. V. M. He was appointed assistant surgeon of his regiment, July 26, 1876; surgeon of the Fourth Battalion of Infantry, M. V. M., September 4, 1876; and medical director on the staff of the 1st Brigade, M. V. M., Brigadier-General Hobart Moore commanding, August 23, 1879. This last position he held until honorably discharged by those legal limitations which ended the command of General Hobart Moore in 1882.

He married Miss Catherine Louise Sparhawk, of Boston, January 14, 1880. Of this marriage were born three children Eva Prescott, Gardiner Sparhawk, and Benjamin Cobb Marion, all natives of Brighton, Mass.

#### CAPTAIN GEORGE E. WORTHEN.

Captain George E. Worthen is the son of Ezekiel B. Worthen, who was born at Bridgewater, N. H., October 29, 1817, and of Emeline S. (Draper) Worthen, born at Plymouth, N. H., September 15, 1818. Among his ancestors who served in the wars of the Bay Colony was his paternal great-grandfather, Ensign Ezekiel Worthen, who served under Sir William Pepperell at the capture of Louisburg, in 1745-1746, and later took part in the Crown Point expedition of 1756. During the Revolutionary War he was a captain of engineers in the Continental army, closing his services by the construction of defensive works in Rhode Island in 1778. His maternal grandfather, Renben Draper, of Campton, N. H., served in the War of 1812, being stationed at Portsmouth, N. H.

Captain Worthen was born at Lowell, Mass., May 26, 1843, where after being educated in the public schools he was engaged in the grocery business from August 1, 1865, to October, 1881. He was superintendent of the Lowell works of the Globe Gas Co. of Boston from August 1, 1883, to March, 1886; overseer with the United States Cartridge Co. of Lowell from April, 1886, to December, 1887, and inspector and clerk with the Lowell Water Works from January 1, 1888, to the present time. He has never been

an active politician or held a state or city office.

His military career began during the great Civil War, at Plymouth, N. H., August 14, 1862, when as a boy of nineteen he enlisted in Company E, Twelfth Regiment, N. H. Vols., later attached to



CAPTAIN GEORGE E. WORTHEN.

the Army of the Potomac. He was in every engagement in which his regiment took part, including Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wapping Heights, Front Royal, Swift Creek, Drewry's Bluff, Waltham Junction, Coal Harbor, Petersburg, (siege and mine explosion) Fort Harrison and the capture of Richmond, April 3, 1865, and was never wounded, although he had many narrow escapes. At Gettysburg he was severely hit by a spent ball, and after taking the colors a rifle ball cut his trousers just below the left knee. He was made corporal July 5, 1863, for gallant service in the field of Gettysburg, and sergeant at Point Lookout, Md., April, 1864, where for the first and only time he was off duty for a single week, although not in hospital. At Chancellorsville a bullet passed through his blanket roll, a second perforated his canteen, erasing the middle initial of his name, while a third cut through his hav-

ersack. He was commissioned first lieutenant October 18, 1864, at Fort Harrison, Va., was for some time acting commissary and later post commissary at Manchester and Danville, Va., and was honorably discharged at Richmond, Va., June 21, 1865.

His record in the Massachusetts militia is as follows: First enlistment, as private in Company G, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., February 9, 1881; discharged as sergeant, February 9, 1884. Second enlistment, as private in Company C, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., April 4, 1884; was made corporal and elected first lieutenant, March 23, 1887; resigned, March 10, 1891. Third enlistment, as private in Company D, Second Corps Cadets, April 16, 1891; became corporal, sergeant, first sergeant; was elected second lieutenant, October 12, 1893; promoted first lieutenant, January 26, 1894, and resigned June 22, 1898. Fourth enlistment: On June 22, 1898, Lieutenant Worthen enlisted as a private in the Ninth Company, Massachusetts Provisional Militia; was elected captain and discharged in September, 1899. The company was a strong and efficient body, and was disbanded by executive order (General Order No. 5), April 14, 1899, which order took effect April 15, 1899.

He held from 1888 to 1897 a record as sharpshooter and distinguished marksman, and was for several years leader of the Lowell team.

Fraternally he is affiliated with the A. O. U. W. and the American Benefit Society, was commander of Post 42, G. A. R., Lowell, in 1881, and has been adjutant thereof from 1885 to the present time.

He married Miss Lizzie W. Nutter of Portsmouth, N. H., September 6, 1866. Of this marriage have been born eight children: Lucy E., born at Portsmouth, N. H., and Lizzie M., George E., Jr., Walter E., Julia N., Laura D., Ralph E. and Florence E. Worthen, natives of Lowell, Mass.

George E., Jr., in 1898, then twenty-three years old, but a sharpshooter and distinguished marksman, enlisted in Company C, Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Vols., while his brother, Walter E., nineteen years old, a first-class marksman, went in Company G. Both served in Porto Rico until the close of the Spanish-American War, and with their respective companies were engaged in the skirmish at Juanica with the 25th Spanish Regulars and Porto Rican Volunteers, who there contested the advance, Aug. 28, 1898.

#### CAPTAIN WILLIAM L. FOX.

Captain William Long Fox is the son of Edward Sanborn Fox, born in 1825 at Centre Harbor, N. H., and of Elizabeth Willis (Long) Fox, born at St. George, Me., April 10, 1830.

His ancestry on both sides includes men prominent in the military annals of New England. His paternal great grandfather, Edward Fox, served under General Stark at the battle of Bennington, was present at the battle of Saratoga and the investment and surrender of Burgoyne's army, and later was one of the four settlers who founded the town of Meredith, N. H. On his mother's side he is a direct descendant of that Robert Long who opened the first tavern in Charlestown in 1633; was a warm friend of Captain Robert Keayne of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and joined the latter in 1639.

Captain Fox was born at Charlestown, Mass., October 18, 1857, and was educated in the common and high public schools of Charlestown and Boston, Mass. He at first engaged in the Fire Insurance business, which he followed for ten years and later for five years, was proprietor of a hotel in Boston, and another in Winthrop, and is now in the bakery business.

His military record began, when a boy of seventeen, with his enlistment as musician in Company I, First Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., July 17, 1875, and he became musician in Company B, Fourth Battalion Infantry, M. V. M., September 23, 1876. This company was transferred with the battalion to the First Regiment of Infantry, December 13, 1878, and Captain Fox served as musician until 1880, and as private, until elected second lieutenant January 12, 1881. He was promoted to be first lieutenant, March 30, 1881, and made captain April 30, 1883. While captain of Company B he was one of the first to take up the study of heavy artillery, and on November 12, 1883, his detachment was awarded the prize offered by the State of Massachusetts for the best drilled squad in heavy artillery duty. The judges were artillery officers from the regular army, and the adjutant general's report for 1883 thus comments on their award:

"The prize for this duty was awarded to Company B, Captain Fox, of Cambridge, the judges, in awarding the prizes, through Major Egan, stating that they had never seen the manual of the piece, as exemplified by Company B, excelled outside of West Point."

He resigned and was discharged January 10, 1884, but enlisted the same day in his old company. At the request of Colonel A. C. Wellington he was transferred to Company G, of Natick, a new company just being organized, and was made first sergeant the same day, May 26, 1884. Captain Fox acted as instructor and organizer, and in two weeks the company went to camp with the First Regiment and performed its duties so well that Col. (now General) A. C. M. Pennington of the regular army, who inspected the camp for the War Department, in his report says, "Company G, First Regiment, though only organized two weeks before coming to camp, made a very creditable appearance on drill and parade, and furnished an example of what intelligence, earnestness and zeal will effect for a command."

In March, 1885, Company L, Sixth Regiment Infantry, was pronounced by an inspector to be in a very unsatisfactory state and liable to be disbanded. Captain Fox was given thirty days to reorganize the company, and when at the end of the month it was inspected, the company passed a most creditable inspection and is to-day one of the best companies in the State.

On May 4, 1885, he was again elected first lieutenant, and paraded with his regiment at the funeral of General Grant. In January, 1886, he was detailed by Colonel A. C. Wellington to reorganize Company E, of New Bedford, then without officers and in poor condition. In May, Company E had a full complement of officers and was on a satisfactory basis.

On May 16, 1887, he was elected captain of Company G, and in September led it on its visit to Philadelphia with full ranks.

On March 8, 1888, he was commissioned captain of Company H, Fifth Regiment, of Charlestown, at that time weak in numbers and discipline. He went into camp in July with a full complement of officers and men, and a dozen members on the waiting list. He led his company, with every officer and man present for duty, when the Fifth visited New York in May, 1889.

Captain Fox resigned June 23, 1892, after seventeen years of continuous service, during which he had never missed a tour of duty and but very few ordinary drills, and in one year (1887) had traveled over 7,000 miles on military duty and work.

Captain Fox has at various times been

instructor in military drill in the high schools of Woburn, Reading and Wilmington, Mass.; at Lascelle Seminary, Auburndale; the North Bennett Street



CAPTAIN WILLIAM L. FOX.

Industrial School, Boston, and two or three private schools, besides giving private instruction to many commissioned and non-commissioned officers.

When he first anticipated a war with Spain, Captain Fox tendered his services to Governor Wolcott, and again repeated his offer when war was declared. In May, 1898, aided by John A. Andrew Post 15, G. A. R., he organized Company I of the Hooker Guard and became its captain, drilling his men three times a week in the old Franklin school house. He enlisted and drilled over 200 men, most of whom enlisted later with the regiments sent to the front or in the regular army, furnishing over thirty to one organization. Some of his men are still in service in the Philippines and China; one or two hold commissions, two were wounded at San Juan, and one died at Greenville, S. C.

Captain Fox married Miss Blanche S. Colby, of Boston, Mass., April 28, 1888. Of this marriage were born four children: Harrison Colby, Frances E., Edward L. and Marian Mendum Fox.

## SERGT. W. S. BEST, A. &amp; H. A. Co.

William Stuart Best of Boston, Mass., was sergeant of the Fourth Company of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery in 1897. He was born at Medford, Mass., February 28, 1857. His father, the Reverend Edward Stuart Best, was born at Newry, County Brown, Province of Ulster, in the north of Ireland, September 2, 1825, and his mother, Lizzie C. (Farnum) Best, was born December 20, 1833, a native of New Gloucester, Me.

His ancestors, on his mother's side, (she was a lineal descendant from Thomas



SERGEANT W. S. BEST.

Cushman of the Mayflower's first company) were many of them active in the service of colony, province and state in the Indian, French and Revolutionary Wars.

His father has been an active clergyman in the New England conference of the Methodist Episcopal church for fifty years, and claims descent from English and Scottish ancestors of repute in Great Britain and later in the north of Ireland, where some of their representatives settled after the succession of Cromwell to the rulership of Great Britain.

Sergeant Best, on account of an injury to his knee, caused by an accident, was obliged to leave school at an early age and

when fourteen started in the printing business as an amateur, in which he has ever since been continually engaged, and now is the head of the printing house of W. S. Best & Co., 530 Atlantic avenue, an establishment well known in the city of Boston.

He became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, May 31, 1892, was also a member of the detachment which visited London in 1896, and has been active on committees etc.

He is a member of Washington Lodge, F. A. M., of the Master Printers Club of Boston, the old Dorchester Club, the Corinthian Yacht Club of Marblehead, the Trade Club and other social organizations.

He married Miss Sarah M. Squier of Monson, Mass., June 12, 1884. They reside in Brookline, Mass.

## CAPTAIN JOSEPH S. HART.

Captain Joseph Storer Hart, now commanding Company I, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., is the son of Joseph Storer Hart, born at Kennebunk, Me., November 16, 1810, and of Mary Jennie (Murray) Hart, born at Campbellton, N. B., April 3, 1847.

He is descended on his father's side from Thomas Hart of Newton, Wiltshire, England, who with his wife Alice, settled at Ipswich about 1638. They had two sons, Thomas, Jr., and Samuel. The former, born in 1640, was a soldier in Colonel Gallop's regiment, in Sir William Phips' Canadian Expedition of 1690, and later represented Ipswich in the colonial legislature in 1693-94. His son Samuel Hart, born 1674, became a blacksmith, was styled "Captain" in the old records, and removed, about 1700, to Portsmouth in the Hampshire grants. His son, John Hart, born 1705, was a lieutenant in Colonel Samuel Moore's regiment, and took part in the first siege of Louisburg, 1745-46. Later he was lieutenant-colonel of Colonel Nathaniel Meserve's regiment in 1757-58 when the second siege of Louisburg was decided upon, and served as colonel under General Lord Amherst at the reduction of that city in 1758. Henry Hart, son of the foregoing, born in 1744, died 1806, was styled "Colonel" in the old local records and on his tombstone at Wells, Me., whither he removed about 1789. His seven brothers, George, John, William, Joseph Savell, Benjamin, Ed-

ward and Oliver all served in the War of the Revolution.

John Hart, born at Ipswich, October, 1751, joined Prescott's regiment 1775-76; was surgeon in Bailey's Second Massachusetts Regiment 1776-83, and in Jackson's Reserve Regiment 1783-84, serving in all nine years and three months.

A son of William, William Hart, Jr., served in the War of 1812.

Henry Hart's son, Samuel, married Susannah Miller May 4, 1800. Of this marriage were born six children, among



CAPTAIN JOSEPH S. HART.

them Joseph Storer Hart, father of the subject of this sketch.

Captain Hart was born at Charlestown, Mass., March 16, 1883, and was educated at the Lincoln public schools and at the Chauncy Hall School, Boston, Mass. After leaving the latter he studied medicine at the Harvard Medical School, and is by profession a physician.

Since its organization, in 1894, he has been a member of the Board of Health of Lincoln, Mass., and has also served on the Board of Water Commissioners and on various committees.

His military record begins with his enlistment in Company I, Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., January 24, 1889, for three years, which was followed by one year

enlistments at the following dates: January 24, 1892, January 24, 1893, January 24, 1894, January 24, 1895, February 24, 1896; during which service he passed through the grades of corporal and sergeant, and was elected first lieutenant, March 23, 1896. During the war with Spain he was commissioned first lieutenant in the Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. V., May 12, 1898, appointed acting regimental ordnance officer, accompanied the expedition to Porto Rico, and was mustered out with his regiment January 21, 1899. He again took up his militia duties, and upon the election of Captain Cook as major, was elected captain of Company I, Sixth Regiment, M. V. M., June 13, 1899, which position he still retains.

He is a member of Corinthian Lodge, A. F. and A. M., of Concord, Mass., and of the Military and Naval Order of the Spanish-American War, besides other minor associations.

He married Miss Helen Weston of Lincoln, Mass., May 16, 1898. They reside in Lincoln, Mass.

#### CAPTAIN JAMES H. WADE.

Captain James H. Wade, a prominent citizen of Revere, was born November 9, 1839, in Quincy, Mass., a son of Shadrach Wade and a descendant, in the seventh generation, from Nicholas Wade, who was one of the first of the brave pioneers to take up land in Scituate, where he took the oath of fidelity in 1638. His will, dated in 1683, is preserved in the family records.

Nicholas Wade, Jr., through whom the line was continued, was born in 1660, being the seventh child of the parent household. Nathaniel Wade, the succeeding ancestor, also the fourth child in order of birth, was born in 1694. He married Hannah Vinal, and their son, Stephen Wade, the next in line of descent, was born in 1755, and married Mary Pierce. Shadrach Wade, Sr., whose name next appears on the family record, was the grandfather of Captain Wade. He was born in Scituate in 1784, and having succeeded to the ownership of the old ancestral homestead, which Nicholas Wade, Sr., hewed, as it were, from the forest, was there engaged in agricultural pursuits during his active life. He married Mabel Merritt, November 21, 1811, and their son, Shadrach Wade, Jr., was Captain Wade's father.

Shadrach Wade, Jr., was born in Scitua-

ate, Mass., January 11, 1813. In 1855 he removed with his family to Boston, where he was appointed surveyor and lumber inspector, an office that he filled most ably until his death, August 2, 1883. December 11, 1838, he married Caroline P. Forrister, who was born January 4, 1814, in Boston, Mass., a daughter of Captain William Forrister.

Captain James H. Wade received a practical education in the public schools of Quincy and Boston, and began life on his own account as a shipping clerk for J. C. Howe & Company, a firm with which he was connected from 1856 until 1861. Resigning his position in that year, he recruited a company for the Thirty-Eighth Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry, with which he went to Louisiana in the Bank's expedition as captain of his company. In 1864 the captain raised the Nineteenth Unattached Company of Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, and in October of that year, with three hundred true

his arduous and successful labors. His company, with others, was afterward submerged into the Fourth Regiment of Heavy Artillery, of which he was senior captain and acting major, as such having command of Fort Ward, Va., until the close of the war, when, on July 17, 1865, he was mustered out of service. He was subsequently engaged in the cypress shingle business in North Carolina for awhile, but in 1867 returned to Boston, where he was appointed deputy surveyor of lumber, a position that he filled sixteen consecutive years. In 1884 Captain Wade entered the office of the Old Colony Railroad Company, and during that year served as clerk of the Board of Appraisers of the Northern New Hampshire Railroad. When the Boston & Providence road was leased to the Old Colony Railroad Company in 1888, he was employed in a similar capacity, and likewise served as clerk of the Board of Appraisers when the Boston & Maine Railroad turned over the property of the Boston, Concord & Montreal Railroad, in 1888, and was again chosen, on July 20, 1896, to the same position by the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad Company, which had leased the Old Colony Railroad in 1893; also, in 1896, served as clerk of the Board on the appraisal of the New England Railroad. The captain is still connected with the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad Company, being now employed in its motive power office. In 1874 he removed with his family to Revere, and has since been actively identified with its best interests. In 1879 he was elected to the town board of selectmen, on which he served until 1882, when, owing to business pressures, he was obliged to decline a re-nomination.

Fraternally Captain Wade is prominent in masonic and military circles, being a member of St. John's Lodge, A. F. and A. M., of Boston; of St. Matthew's Chapter, R. A. M., of South Boston; of St. Omer Commandery, K. T., of South Boston; and of Dahlgren Post, No. 2, G. A. R., of South Boston, of which he is a charter member. From 1873 until 1876 he was captain of Company K, First Regiment, State Militia, and he also served as commander of N. B. Shurtleff, Jr., Post, No. 125, G. A. R.

Captain Wade married, February 10, 1869, Miss Ella J. Davis, daughter of George H. Davis of Concord, N. H. The Captain and Mrs. Wade have three children, all living at home, as follows: Stella C., Maud F., a graduate of the Chelsea



CAPTAIN JAMES H. WADE.

and tried men under his command, he was sent to Fort Buffalo, Va., to guard a large amount of quartermaster's supplies stored near by, which General Mosby had planned to seize. Through Captain Wade's prompt and efficient measures, however, the general's purpose was frustrated, and the captain was highly complimented by the military authorities for



High School and now a teacher in the Revere School; and James Arthur, a New England salesman of the Revere Rubber Company.

#### CAPTAIN SAMUEL D. PARKER.

Captain Samuel D. Parker, now commanding Battery A, Light Artillery, M. V. M., son of Charles Henry and Laura



CAPTAIN SAMUEL D. PARKER.

Wolcott (Jackson) Parker, was born at Milton, Mass., September 9, 1868, and received his education at the Hopkinson school, Boston, and at Harvard College in the class of 1891.

His military record begins with his enlistment in the First Corps Cadets, M. V. M., in March, 1889, in which he served until December 3, 1893. He was appointed sergeant in Battery A, Light Artillery M. V. M., April 25, 1895, and soon won the favorable opinion of his officers and comrades, by constant attendance at drill, and strict attention to duty. He was elected first lieutenant of the battery March 17, and commissioned March 22, 1897; and upon the resignation of Captain J. C. R. Peabody, was chosen captain commanding, July 18, 1898.

Since his election Battery A has gained in numbers, and esprit de corps, both through the energy and enthusiasm of Captain Parker and his subordinates, and through the encouragement given this important arm of the service, by the recent issuance of four splendid breech-loading rifles, of great range and accuracy.

Captain Parker is a close student of the recent developments of modern warfare, and not only recognizes the important part which artillery must hereafter play in attack and defense, but the immense changes in length of range, exposure to infantry fire, and other conditions, which must now be understood by the modern artillerist.

He is engaged in business as a real estate broker, with offices at 50 State St., Boston, Mass.

#### CAPTAIN FRANK E. GRAY.

Captain Frank Edison Gray, now commanding Company A, Sixth Regiment



CAPTAIN FRANK E. GRAY.

Infantry, M. V. M., is the son of Charles Gilson Gray, born at Sackville, N. B., November 5, 1838, and of Mary Lucinda (Dobson) Gray, born in Westmoreland Co., N. B., December 17, 1842.

Captain Gray was born in Sackville, N. B., January 25, 1868, and was educated in the public schools and at Mount Allison Academy of Sackville. Shortly after leaving school he came to the United States, and has resided in Wakefield the greater part of his life.

He enlisted in Company A, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., January 19, 1886, was made corporal, May 30, 1890, sergeant, February 6, 1893, and elected second lieutenant, January 18, 1897. May 6, 1898, he enlisted with his comrades in the Sixth Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, U. S. Volunteers; was mustered in as second lieutenant, May 12, 1898, and at Camp Alger, July 5, 1898, was promoted to be first lieutenant. On July 26, he was engaged in the skirmish between Guanica and Yanco, in which Captain Gihon of Company A was severely, and several others slightly wounded. At the first volley from the Spaniards Lieutenant Langhorn called for volunteers to clear the hill on the Spanish left, and Lieutenant Gray, with twelve men of Company A, volunteered and accomplished the service; the American loss was four men wounded, the Spanish two killed and forty-five wounded.

After Colonel Rice succeeded to the command of the Sixth, Lieutenant Gray was appointed adjutant, and later recommended for the captaincy of Company K, vice Captain Goodell resigned. He was commissioned captain, September 2, 1898, and on October 13, left Arecibo for Barcelonita, which Company K garrisoned from October 13-18, when they left for San Juan to embark for the United States. He was mustered out as captain U. S. Volunteers, January 25, 1899. On the return and discharge of the Sixth Volunteers, Captain Gray again resumed his position as second lieutenant of Company A, but was promoted to be first lieutenant, April 14, 1899. Upon the promotion of Captain Edw. J. Gihon to the majority, Lieutenant Gray was elected captain in his place, June 12, 1899.

Captain Gray's skill with the rifle is universally recognized among the Massachusetts militia. He became a member of the Company A team in 1891, and in 1897, was made captain of both the company and the regimental teams. He has won over thirty prizes in various competitions.

He is a member of the I. O. O. F., and is generally esteemed by his fellow members, his comrades-in-arms, and the people of his adopted city.

#### CAPTAIN WILLIAM H. WINSHIP.

Captain William Henry Winship, born at Malden, Mass., September 20, 1867, is the son of William Wallace Winship, born in Boston, January 2, 1832, and of Charlotte Josephine (Edmonds) Winship, born at Charlestown, Mass., May 15, 1841.

Captain Winship is a direct descendant of Lieutenant Edward Winship, who at first settled in Cambridge, and later at Lexington about 1635, and was elected lieutenant in the Ancient and Honorable



CAPTAIN WILLIAM H. WINSHIP.

Artillery in 1638. He is also a great-grandson of Ensign John Winship, one of the sixty minutemen, under Captain John Parker, who faced 800 British soldiers on Lexington Common, April 19, 1775. He is also directly descended from Lieutenant Hananiah Parker, who settled in Lexington in 1652. On his mother's side he is a direct descendant of Walter Edmonds, who settled in Charlestown, Mass., 1639; also of Joseph Hills, one of the first settlers of Malden, who, without doubt, gave Malden her name, and was also speaker of the House of Representatives in 1647; of William Frothingham who settled in Charlestown in 1630, and of the Rev. Michael Wigglesworth of Malden.

Captain Winship's great-grandfather, David Edmonds, served at the Battle of Bunker Hill, in Captain Chadwick's company of Colonel Gridley's regiment.

Captain Winship graduated from the Malden Centre Grammar School in 1883, and from the Malden High School, with the class of '87. While in the high school he was elected second lieutenant of the High School Cadets in 1885, and captain in 1886. In 1887 he organized the High School Battalion, and was elected its first major, and in 1895 was elected president of the Malden High School Alumni Association. After leaving school he entered the trunk, bag and military furnishings business with his uncle, H. A. Winship, of Boston.

Soon after the breaking out of the Spanish-American War, he recruited and organized the Thirty-Third Company, Infantry, M. P. M., and was elected captain, August 9, 1898, commanding the company until February 11, 1899, when, by General Order, No. 2, A. G. O., 1899, the company was retired from duty. He was honorably discharged April 10, 1899.

When Malden celebrated her 250th anniversary in May, 1899, Captain Winship served as secretary of the Promenade Concert and Ball Committee, and chairman of the Sub-Committee on Water and Golf Sports. He is a director in the Kenwood Club of Malden, and at present chairman of the Entertainment Committee; a member of Converse Lodge, F. A. & A. M.; of the Massachusetts Republican Club; Boquet Club, of the Malden Historical Society, and the Beverly Yacht Club. He is also a member of the Society of Colonial Wars, (in right of descent from twenty-six direct ancestors who served in the colonial wars) and a member of the Sons of American Revolution, having ten grandfathers and great-grandfathers who served in the Revolution.

#### ADJUTANT D. AUSTIN BROWN.

Lieutenant and Adjutant D. Austin Brown, formerly of the Fourth Battalion of Infantry, Major Austin C. Wellington commanding, is the son of the late Daniel Jacobs Brown, who was born at Lyndeboro, N. H., September 1, 1815, and of Anna Woodward (Trowbridge) Brown, who was born at Newton, Mass., December 3, 1820.

His father was directly descended from Edward Brown, who came from England previous to 1838 and settled at Ipswich,

Mass.; and the family records include the names of Deputy Governor Symonds, the Rev. Francis Higginson, the first settled minister at Salem, and registers alliances with the Epes, Gardners, Prescotts, and other families prominent in the social, political and military history of Massachusetts.

His mother was a descendant of Lieutenant James Trowbridge, and his wife, Margaret Jackson, daughter of Deacon John Jackson, who are recorded among the first settlers of Newton, Mass.; and the ancient colonial and revolutionary muster rolls of the colony, province and



ADJUTANT D. AUSTIN BROWN.

state of Massachusetts bear the names of many of his ancestors who defended their country against the Indians, French and English.

Adjutant Brown was born at Roxbury, Mass., June 6, 1850, and was educated in the public schools of his native town, graduating from the Roxbury High School in 1866. In July of the same year, he entered the employment of J. Ireson &

Sons, boot and shoe jobbers on Pearl St., Boston, but in September was engaged by the Boston Sugar Refinery, and remained with them until in 1877 he became secretary of the Asbestos Packing Co., of which he later on was president. While under his management, in 1891, the company consolidated with the H. W. Johns Mfg. Co., the Chalmers Spence Co. of New York, the Shields and Brown Co. of Chicago, and the C. W. Trainer Co., as the H. W. Johns Mfg. Co., of which he became general manager of the eastern branch, with offices at 119 Federal St., and later at 77-79 Pearl St., Boston. From 1882 to 1889 he was also treasurer of the Asbestos Paper Co.

In 1888, he became the American agent of the Bells Asbestos Co. (Limited) of London, Eng., who own and operate the largest asbestos mines in Canada, producing the finest grades of this material known. In 1897, he relinquished the New England management of the H. W. Johns Mfg. Co. to devote his entire attention to the rapidly increasing business of the Bells Asbestos Co. (Limited), whose American interests he has so long represented.

He entered the Massachusetts militia in 1872, as a private in Co. A, Captain A. C. Wellington, First Battalion of Infantry; August 1, 1873, was appointed hospital steward of the Fourth Battalion, Major A. C. Wellington commanding; was made sergeant-major, December 18, 1873; lieutenant and quartermaster, August 29, 1874; discharged, April 28, 1876, and re-appointed, August 10, 1876. He was commissioned adjutant, July 13, 1877, and resigned.

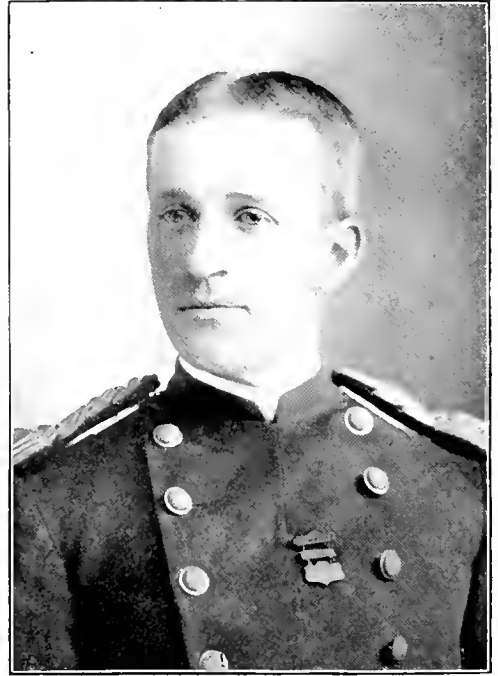
He is a member of the Massachusetts Society, Sons of the American Revolution, the Society of Colonial Wars, New England Historic Genealogical Society, the Boston Art Club, Boston Athletic Association, New Algonquin Club, the Canadian Mining Institute, etc.

He married Miss Anna M. Davis of Chicago. They have three children: Caroline Trowbridge (Lewis), Louise Colbourne and Marion Vincent Brown.

#### LIEUTENANT LEWIS H. SWIFT.

Lieutenant Lewis Henry Swift, son of Albert B. and Helen (Moulton) Swift, was born at Brooklyn, New York, June 16, 1869. He removed at an early age to Lowell, Mass., where he received his education in the public schools. His business

connections have undergone no change in character since they were first formed. Upon the completion of his education, he entered, as a clerk, the counting room of



LIEUTENANT LEWIS H. SWIFT.

the Hamilton Manufacturing Co., serving that company six years. In 1891 he accepted the position of head bookkeeper of the Merchants Bank of Lowell, which he still retains.

The military experience of Lieutenant Swift had its beginning in the Lowell High School, where he was a member of the school battalion. Some years later, July 29, 1888, he enlisted in Company D, Second Corps Cadets, and at the time of his resignation, which occurred July 22, 1891, had risen to the grade of corporal. For the following five years Lieutenant Swift remained in civil life, but on March 25, 1896, he enlisted as private, and was elected, March 21, second lieutenant, and on May 18, first lieutenant, Company C, of the Sixth Regiment. This position he held until his resignation, March 9, 1898. During this service he became an expert with the military rifle, ranking as first class marksman in 1896, and a sharpshooter in 1897.

He was married to Miss Mabel Harriet Stevens, a daughter of Solon Stevens, Esq., at Lowell, Mass., October 25, 1894.

Of this marriage was born a son, Richmond Stevens Swift, and a daughter, Ethel Moulton Swift.

#### LIEUT. FRANK GETCHELL ROSE.

Lieutenant Frank Getchell Rose was born in Philadelphia, Pa., in 1876, whence his family removed to Brooklyn, N. Y., in 1892 or 1893.

Here he joined the cadet corps of the Twenty-Third Regiment of Infantry, New York National Guard, in which he served about two years—until in 1895, when he was of full age, he was admitted as a member of Company H of the same regiment. On his second drill night the regiment was ordered out to maintain law and order during the great Brooklyn Street Railway strike, during which over 8,000 troops of all arms were kept on duty for fifteen days during January and February in most inclement and trying weather. This experience, however, besides somewhat inuring him and his comrades to the hardships of a trying service, also presented valuable object lessons in the movements and use of troops in a great city when riots were of daily occurrence.

In 1898, at the outbreak of the Spanish-American War, Lieutenant Rose had been made senior corporal, and as such had been for several months attached to the regimental recruiting squad, and engaged in drilling men for the anticipated call to active service.

He was offered a lieutenantcy in the Fourteenth (Brooklyn) Regiment, but as he was then completing his senior year at college he decided to stay until he could graduate at the close of the term.

When he graduated, the Fourteenth Regiment had been for some weeks in service. The Twenty-Third Regiment had promptly and repeatedly offered to volunteer, but was not allowed to do so by Governor Black, who wished to retain a part of the National Guard in the state. Lieutenant Rose therefore enlisted as a private, and in charge of thirty-two recruits joined the Fourteenth at Chickamauga, Ga. On the third day after his arrival he was made corporal in Company E, and detailed to drill a platoon of recruits under the supervision of a West Point officer. Later he was made a sergeant and assigned to the quartermaster's department, but shortly after rejoined Company E as first sergeant, which position he retained until mustered out November 5, 1898.

The Fourteenth saw no foreign service and went no farther from home than Chickamauga, Ga., and Anniston, Ala.; but its service was very trying, owing to the unhealthiness and miserable sanitary



LIEUTENANT FRANK G. ROSE.

condition of the Chickamauga camp, as the heavy mortality of this and other regiments amply testifies.

Lieutenant Rose removed to Lowell, Mass., in November, 1898, and enlisted in Company C, Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., of which he was elected second lieutenant July 14, 1899.

He is a Mason and a member of many college and social fraternities and associations.

#### LIEUTENANT FRED'K W. TURNER.

Lieutenant Frederick Warren Turner, now instructor in the Manual Training School at Cambridge, Mass., was born at Newton, Mass., April 6, 1864. His father, Robert Turner, a native of the same town, was born in 1833. His mother, Emma F. (Edes) Turner, was born at Roxbury, Mass., in 1843.

Lieutenant Turner was educated in the public schools of Newton, graduating from the Newton High School in 1881,

and in the same year entered the employ of Moses G. Crane. In 1886, he became connected with the Garmewell Fire Alarm Telegraph Company of Newton, and in 1891, with the Municipal Fire and Police Telegraph Company. In 1895, he became instructor in the Cambridge Manual Training School, which position he still holds.

He was elected a member of the Common Council of the city of Newton in 1893.

His record of service began with his enlistment in Company C, Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., November 19, 1883, in which he served over seven years.

He was appointed corporal, January 15, 1886; a sergeant later in the same year, and was elected second lieutenant, September 26, 1887. This commission he resigned in 1888. He re-enlisted as a private in the same company, March 4, 1888; was appointed sergeant, and later first sergeant, which position he held when discharged by reason of expiration



LIUTENANT FREDERICK W. TURNER.

of his term of service, March 4, 1890. During his service, Lieutenant Turner acquired great skill with the military rifle, being rated for four years as a first-class marksman, and later as a sharpshooter, and was a permanent member of

the company rifle team. He also won the state and regimental prize for enlisted men in 1886. For superior proficiency in the manual of arms, he was awarded the Pulsifer medal in 1886.

He is a member of Mizpah Lodge, A. F. & A. M., Cambridge, Mass., and is a P. G. of Dunster Lodge, I. O. O. F., Cambridge.

He married Miss Eva E. Brackett of Charlestown, Mass., in 1894. Of this marriage have been born two sons, Carleton F. and Frank B. Turner, both natives of Cambridge, Mass., their present place of residence.

#### CAPTAIN PHILO F. PACKARD.

Captain Philo Frank Packard, son of Philo Willey and Annie Elizabeth (Watson) Packard, was born at Charlestown, Mass., July 30, 1865. He is a direct descendant in the ninth generation from John Alden of Plymouth and others of the first passengers of the "Mayflower," whose descendants served in the Indian and French wars, and fifth in descent from Benjamin Smith, his father's great-grandfather, who fought the French from 1754 to 1763. His father's grandfather, Joseph Lane, Jr., fought in Colonel Ebenezer Bridge's regiment at Bunker Hill, in the company of Captain John Rowe, Jr., and married his sister Rachael, daughter of John Rowe, Sr., a veteran of the French wars.

His maternal great-grandfather, Dr. John Hall of Tewksbury, was a minuteman April 19, 1775, in Lieutenant Thomas Clarke's company, Colonel Green's regiment; enlisted April 28, 1775, in Captain Benjamin Walker's company of Bridge's regiment, and was engaged at Bunker Hill, where he was wounded. Later he became a surgeon in the Continental army.

His maternal great-great-grandfather, Samuel Brett, was a private in Captain Josiah Hayden's company in Colonel Bailey's regiment of minutemen which marched from North Bridgewater April 19, 1775, and was probably engaged during the latter part of the British retreat from Lexington. A paternal great-great-grandfather, Jonas Packard, served in Captain Snell's company of Colonel Mitchell's Massachusetts regiment in the Rhode Island expedition of December, 1776. His grandfather, Cyrus Watson, served in the War of 1812-1814.

His mother's brother, Colonel Benjamin Franklin Watson, was paymaster of the Sixth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., in 1855; quartermaster in 1856, and major April 27, 1857. As major of the Sixth, on April 19, 1861, he led the four detached companies in their desperate fight, forcing a passage through Baltimore; was commissioned lieutenant-colonel May 17, mustered out with the regiment August 21, 1861, and commissioned major and additional paymaster U. S. Vols. September 5, 1862. He became disabled by accident and resigned October, 1864, declining a lieutenant-colonelcy in the Veteran Reserve Corps, but was breveted colonel "for gallant and meritorious service" (at Baltimore), to take rank from March 13, 1865.

Captain Packard was educated in the common schools of Medford, Everett and Salem, Mass., graduating from the Salem High School, where he received the gold medal for proficiency in military drill, June 2, 1883.

He was employed as clerk in the woolen jobbing business, and later by a Boston tea and coffee firm; but has for some years been a dealer in leather remnants and manufacturer of uppers for ladies' and children's shoes.

He is an active member of the Military Service Institution, U. S. A., of the L. A. W., and is at present sir knight commander, Emmanuel Commandery, No. 270, Knights of Malta, Salem, Mass.

He enlisted in Company A, Second Corps Cadets, M. V. M., September 17, 1886, was made corporal, July 22, 1887; was transferred to Company C, (same corps), and made sergeant August 4, 1888, first sergeant, July 31, 1889; and sergeant major, May 5, 1893. He was elected second lieutenant of Company B, May 23, 1893; first lieutenant of Company C, January 26, 1894, and resigned April 10, 1894, and on the same day he enlisted in Company D, (Lynn) Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M. On January 30, 1895, he was transferred to Company B, (Cambridge) First Regiment Infantry; was appointed corporal, then sergeant, and later battalion sergeant-major. He was transferred to Company C, First Infantry, December 9, 1895; made first sergeant; and on February 8, 1897, was elected second lieutenant of Company K. In June, 1897, the regiment became the First Regiment, Heavy Artillery. He was elected first lieutenant of Battery K, October 25, 1897.

During the Spanish-American War, he was commissioned first lieutenant, Battery K, First Regiment of Massachusetts

Heavy Artillery, U. S. V., April 26, 1898, was stationed with the regiment at Fort Warren, Boston harbor; with Battery K, at Stage Fort, Gloucester; and later with the regiment at South Framingham, Mass. He was detailed to serve with Battery H,



CAPTAIN PHILO F. PACKARD.

Fifth U. S. Artillery at Fort Columbus, New York harbor, July 19, to September 15, 1898. During this service with regular troops Lieutenant Packard served as summary courtmartial of the post, post treasurer, officer in charge of the post exchange and bakery; was the recorder of the board of survey appointed to examine and determine the responsibility for the damaged condition and non-delivery of the cargoes of transports S. S. "Breakwater" and "La Grande Duchesse"; and from September 5 to 15, during the absence of Captain H. L. Harris, U. S. A., commanded the post at Fort Columbus. He was mustered out of the U. S. service with his regiment, November 14, 1898.

In the summer of 1899 he was appointed first lieutenant Forty-Sixth Infantry, U. S. Vols., but for good reasons declined the commission. He was appointed first lieutenant and adjutant Second Corps Cadets, M. V. M., April 22, 1899, and on June 2, 1899, was elected captain of Co. D, formerly of Lowell, and disbanded in 1898, but then about to be reorganized. Captain Packard reorganized it as a Salem company July 7, 1899, and at the annual encampment, August 12 to 18, every man was present for duty except two absent on furlough. On the annual field day, October 14, 1899, every officer and man was present except one who was on sick furlough.

At every tour of duty during his command Co. D received the 100 per cent. mark as follows: Rifle qualifications, 1899, 3 officers and 51 men, 100 per cent.; revolver, 3 officers, 100 per cent.; attendance annual inspection, April 4, 1900, 3 officers, 52 men, 100 per cent.; attendance annual camp, August 11-17, 1900, 3 officers, 51 men, 100 per cent.; attendance annual field drill, August 12, 1900, 3 officers, 51 men, 100 per cent. This record of four successive returns of 100 per cent. has never been equalled in this corps.

On October 16, 1900, he was elected captain of Company I, Salem, Eighth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., commission to date from June 2, 1899. The company (formerly of Lynn) had been disbanded a few months before. He organized the new company with 48 enlisted men, October 16, 1900, and on October 22, entered a team of ten men for the Eighth Infantry rifle competition at the Walnut Hill range. The team ranked fourth out of twelve, with 345 points out of a possible 500. On Thanksgiving Day, November 29, 1900, the company team of ten men, competed at the Lynn range, with teams from Company D, Eighth Infantry, Company E, Naval Brigade, and one of picked marksmen of active and ex-members of the militia generally. The Company I team was second to the picked team, with 387 out of 500 points. At the end of the season of rifle qualification for 1900, the new company, only ten days after its organization, had qualified with the rifle, forty-six officers and men out of one officer and fifty-four men or 83.6 per cent. It now has two officers and fifty-seven men on the rolls.

Captain Packard qualified in 1886, '87 and '88 as a first-class marksman, and in

every year since, (except 1892) and in 1898 (when in the United States service) as a sharpshooter. He was a member of the battalion and regimental rifle teams of the Second Cadets, First and Eighth Infantry, and First Heavy Artillery, when shooting for the state trophy and at other competitions, and was a substitute member of the First Infantry team at the national competition at Sea Girt, N. J., in 1896.

As a military instructor Captain Packard has had marked success, and received the commendation of the commanding officers of every brigade and organization with which he has been connected. In 1898, Lieutenant-Colonel Erasmus M. Weaver, U. S. Vols., and captain U. S. Artillery, in resigning his position as military instructor of the Boston public schools, took the unusual step of recommending Lieutenant P. F. Packard as his successor, and he was duly nominated by Superintendent Seaver. That he was not appointed was due to the fact that he was not at the time a resident of Boston. His opponents, while conceding his unquestioned ability, refused to ratify the appointment of any but a Boston man.

#### LIEUTENANT WILLARD K. DeLUE.

Lieutenant Willard K. DeLue, born at Eastport, Me., January 28, 1858, was the son of Christopher and Mary (Hawkins) DeLue, then resident at Eastport, where Lieutenant DeLue attended the public schools. Later they removed to Boston, Mass., where he finished his education in the Boston High and Latin schools. When seventeen years old, in 1875, he entered the employment of J. V. Kettell, dealers in watches, jewelry, etc., later of the firm of Kettell & Blake, which latter firm was succeeded by William K. DeLue & Co., 373 Washington Street, Boston, Mass.

Lieutenant DeLue entered the State militia when twenty years of age. He enlisted in Company C, Fourth Battalion of Infantry, M. V. M., March 9, 1878, which company was transferred to the First Regiment of Infantry December 3, 1878. He was made corporal August 30, 1880, and discharged March 10, 1881. He at once re-enlisted for one year; was appointed sergeant September 7, 1881, and discharged March 24, 1882. Enlisting a third time, he was made first sergeant,



June 5, 1882; discharged and re-enlisted March 30, 1883; reappointed first sergeant April 5, 1883; discharged and re-enlisted April 3, 1884. He was elected and commissioned second lieutenant May 1, 1884, which commission he resigned May 13, 1887, having served nine years.

During this service, he attained unusual proficiency in drill, and in many competitions was never defeated. He received no less than fourteen gold medals, besides ten valuable prizes in competitions of this kind.

As a marksman he was hardly less notable, and won during his service six first prizes, and several of the second class.

He has long been an active member of Lodge No. 97, Mount Sinai Encampment No. 49, I. O. O. F., and Canton Mascot, First Regiment Post Militant.

He was married July 16, 1887, to Miss Nellie T. Murthy. They have three children, Willard, Ethel and Mildred DeLue. They reside at Dorchester, Mass.

#### LIEUTENANT JAMES H. SMYTH.

Lieutenant James H. Smyth was born in Boston, Mass., September 1, 1873, the son of Thomas and Amy Smyth, both of whom were natives of New York state. He was educated in the public schools of Boston, and after completing his studies he learned the printers' trade and worked in several establishments before becoming associated with the "Boston Globe", which concern now employs him as a linotype operator.

He joined the Massachusetts militia March 18, 1896, enlisting in Company (now Battery) A, First Regiment Infantry, (now First Heavy Artillery). He at once became distinguished for his attention to duty and for an alert, soldierly bearing. On January 3, 1898, he was appointed corporal and was enrolled as corporal in Battery A, First Massachusetts Artillery, U. S. V., on May 9, 1898, and served throughout the Spanish-American War at Fort Warren, Nahant and Fort Pickering, Salem, being mustered out November 14, 1898, with his regiment. He at once re-entered the militia, and on August 9, 1899, was appointed sergeant. He served in this grade until November 22, 1899, when he was elected second lieutenant, that being his present rank.

Lieutenant Smyth has been distinguished for his skill with the rifle ever since joining the militia. He has served on his company team every year since

1896, and in the regimental competition of 1900 he made the second highest individual score. He is a member of the



LIEUTENANT JAMES H. SMYTH

Boston Press Rifle Association and Massachusetts Rifle Association, and in the competitions of the former he has always taken high rank, being a member of the "Globe" team for the past four years. In that time he has twice won the Boston Theatre silver cup, offered by Eugene Tompkins for the highest single score in teams, beside many individual prizes.

He was married in 1898 to Miss Prudence M. Reafuse of Boston, and his home is in Allston, Mass.

#### CAPTAIN CHARLES C. DOTEN.

Captain Charles Carroll Doten, born at Plymouth, Mass., April 9, 1833, is the son of Captain Samuel Doten, born July 11, 1783, and of Rebecca (Bradford) Doten, born February 14, 1788, both natives of Plymouth, Mass. On his mother's side he is directly descended in the seventh generation from the "Mayflower" Pilgrim, William Bradford, for many years governor of Plymouth Colony,

whose world-famous manuscript history of the Plymouth Plantation carried to England by the British during the Revolution, has recently been returned and is now one of the priceless treasures of the library of the Commonwealth at the State House in Boston. Major William Bradford, son of the governor, who was a noted military leader, and whose quaint epitaph reads:

*"He lived long and still was doing good  
And in his country's service lost much blood;  
After a life well spent he is now at rest,  
His very name and memory is blest."*

was a progenitor, through his third wife, of this line of descent.

Sir Edward Doten of the British navy was an ancestor on the paternal side, and others served in the militia of the Plymouth Colony, the Royal Province of Massachusetts Bay, and the later Commonwealth. His maternal grandfather, Nathaniel Bradford, was a soldier of the Revolution, in Captain Hudson's Company of the Coast Guard at Plymouth, and his father, Captain Samuel Doten, was first lieutenant

of a civil engineer, in which capacity, in 1857, he was engaged in surveying on public lands in Minnesota, then a territory and largely occupied by the Sioux or Dakotas, at that time a very war-like and numerous people. This experience abounded in all the hardships, romance and dangers which accompanied the rapid development of American civilization in the Northwest. On his return to Massachusetts he took up telegraphy, in which, as operator and manager he was engaged from 1858 to 1872. At the latter date, with a partner, he entered the printing business and purchased the Old Colony Memorial, the leading newspaper of Plymouth and south-eastern Massachusetts, and has ever since been its editor, being now its sole proprietor.

He was elected from the Plymouth district to the Massachusetts legislature in 1865 and 1866, serving both years on the Committee on Military Affairs.

In February, 1898, he was appointed by the late Governor Roger Wolcott, a member of the State Board of Harbor and Land Commissioners, a position for which he was well fitted by education and experience. On July 1, 1899, he was re-appointed by Governor Wolcott for the full term of three years.

His military record began in 1852, with his enlistment in the "Standish Guards" of Plymouth, (then Company B, Third Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M.) in which he was at once appointed sergeant, and in 1859 elected first lieutenant. He commanded the company, April 16, 1861, when at three o'clock in the morning he received written orders to muster every available man, to answer President Lincoln's urgent call for troops to defend the government. By early train on the same morning he left for Boston with his command, and four days later, on April 20, with the other companies of the Third Regiment, which had been sent to Fortress Monroe, aided in the destruction of the Norfolk Navy Yard, and the rescue of the United States frigate "Cumberland"; the Third Massachusetts Infantry being the first troops of any state to pass within the territory of the new-born Southern Confederacy, confront rebel batteries and commit acts of war, on the soil of a Southern state. On April 22, 1861, he was commissioned captain by Governor Andrew, and at the end of their term of service the company was duly mustered out, July 22, 1861. After returning home, he remained in command of the Standish Guards until, in 1862, he



CAPTAIN CHARLES C. DOTEN.

ant of the privateer brig "George Little," of Boston, in the war of 1812.

Captain Doten was educated in the public, private and high schools of Plymouth, Mass., and when twenty years of age, in 1853, began to learn the profes-

raised Company G, of the Thirty-Eighth Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry, of which he was commissioned captain, August 22, 1862. The Thirty-Eighth served in the Department of the Gulf, and at the battle of Bisland, La., Captain Doten lost one-third of his company in killed and wounded, and received special commendation for courage and coolness from Major-General N. P. Banks, corps commander, and Brigadier-General Emory, commanding the division. Later, at Opelousas, La., he was detailed to the Department Telegraphic Service, but owing to a pulmonary attack was honorably discharged, May 20, 1863.

He is a prominent member of the Masons, Knights Templars, Odd Fellows, Knights of Honor, Pilgrim Fathers, Minute-Men of 1861, Post 76, G. A. R., and a past high priest of the Royal Arch Masons.

He married Miss Mary A. Bartlett of Plymouth, June 19, 1860. Of this marriage were born Charles Monroe, Mary Carroll, May Carroll, Lizzie Francis, Mabel Willard and Alfred Russell Doten, all natives of Plymouth, Mass.

#### ADJUTANT CHARLES W. REED.

Adjutant and Lieutenant Charles Wellington Reed, artist and delineator, a most exact and faithful American reproducer of incidents and actions of the great Civil War, is the son of the late Joseph Reed, born, September 9, 1787, died in 1868; and of Roxanna (Richardson) Reed, born in December, 1806; both natives of Charlestown, Mass., where Adjutant Reed was born April 1, 1841.

Swithern Reed, great-grandfather of Adjutant Reed, emigrated from England in the early part of the 18th century, and settled in Boston, residing at the corner of Salem and Prince streets. From thence he removed to Woburn, and later resided in the south part of what afterward became the town of Burlington. At his table, on the morning of the battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775, Hancock and Adams, then pursued by the British soldiery, took breakfast. His eldest son, James, married Elizabeth Wellington of Cambridge, September 24, 1778. Of this marriage were born eight children, the fifth of whom was Joseph Reed, the father of the subject of this sketch. He served in the war with Mexico, 1847-48. He was twice married, first to Marah S. Walker, who died shortly after their marriage, and

later to Roxanna Richardson, whose father, Isaac Richardson, was wounded at Lexington.

Adjutant Reed was educated in the public schools of Charlestown and Boston.



ADJUTANT CHARLES W. REED.

and while very young developed that gift of drawing from the life around him which he has so long, enthusiastically and faithfully exercised.

On August 2, 1862, he enlisted in the Ninth Light Battery, Massachusetts Volunteers, and served through the war, until honorably discharged June 10, 1865. At Gettysburg, July 2, 1863, he acted as volunteer aid for Colonel F. McGilvery, chief of the reserve artillery, when not on duty with the Ninth Massachusetts Battery, Captain John Bigelow, which with Phillip's Fifth Massachusetts and other batteries, were placed to enfilade the column of Confederates which, under Generals Barksdale, Kershaw, Anderson, Wofford and Semmes had attacked Sickles' corps, near the Peach Orchard. Their concentrated fire was so fierce and incessant that it necessitated a change of front by the enemy who charged the batteries home and flanked them, necessitating their withdrawal, which was with difficulty effected by all but Bigelow's Ninth Battery, which was ordered to cover their re-

treat. The Ninth retired some five hundred yards, firing by prolonge as it went, until impeded by an angle of stone wall, and almost surrounded by the enemy. First Lieutenant Erickson and many men had been killed, with most of the horses; but two guns escaped over the walls while the other four were perforce abandoned. Captain Bigelow, shot through the body, was placed on his orderly's horse, and young Reed supported him in his saddle, and directed both horses toward a second line of batteries which had been posted to contest the Confederate advance. Heading for the interval between two guns, they passed through the fire of the Federal batteries, and the young bugler cared for his wounded captain, who finally recovered. For this service, Adjutant Reed, long years after, received the medal of valor. On November 19, 1864, he was attached to the staff of General Gouverneur K. Warren, 5th Army Corps, and as assistant topographical engineer served until after the decisive battle of Five Forks, when he returned to his battery and was mustered out in 1865. He was present at the battles of Gettysburg, Mine Run, Wilderness, Laurel Hill, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Bethesda Church, Tolopotomy, Petersburg, Weldon Railroad, Hatchers Run, Rowanty Creek, capture of Petersburg, Five Forks, Lee's surrender.

During this service he delineated many localities, actions, incidents of soldier life, etc., which he was fortunately able to preserve, and are of the greatest interest to all who study the history of the War of the Rebellion and the services of the volunteer forces of the republic.

He was commissioned second lieutenant of the Third Light Battery, M. V. M., July 20, 1869, and discharged July 15, 1870, and was made second lieutenant Battery B, First Battalion Light Artillery, M. V. M., July 26, 1870, which position he held until his resignation, December 30, 1876. Shortly afterward he was appointed sergeant-major of the First Battalion of Cavalry, and elected adjutant of the same February 2, 1878. This position he held for four years, resigning January 30, 1882.

He is a member of the Apollo Club of Boston, and of E. W. Kingsley, Post No. 113, G. A. R., Boston, Mass. He has been present at, and has illustrated numberless events of social, sporting and public interest in almost every section of the United States. His spirited pictures of the "Massachusetts Artillery at Gettysburg" and "Storming the Narragansett Swamp

Fort," the greatest Indian fight of King Philip's War, embellish this volume, and a copy of his painting, depicting the rescue of Captain Bigelow at Gettysburg, will be found on page 467 of Volume I.

He married Rebecca Francis Farwell, of Boston, November 29, 1869. They reside at Atlantic, Mass.

#### LIEUTENANT JOHN E. DAY.

Lieutenant John E. Day is the son of John Flint Day, born at Strong, Me., April 16, 1821, and Sybil S. (Robbins) Day, born at Carlisle, Mass., May 18, 1828.

His great-grandfather, Ephraim Robbins, served in the Revolution, and his father, John F. Day, in the Fourth Regiment Massachusetts Cavalry, and died in the service during the Civil War.

He was born at Brighton, Mass., October 5, 1855, educated in the public schools,



LIEUTENANT JOHN E. DAY.

and entered the postal service as a letter carrier, which position he still retains.

His military experience began with his enlistment in Company B, Fifth Regiment Infantry, M. V. M., September 5, 1881, from which he was discharged, December 29, 1879. He enlisted in Com-

pany B, First Regiment Infantry, September 20, 1880. He was made corporal in May, 1886, and sergeant on July 1, 1886. He served as first sergeant of his company from September 9, 1887, until promoted. He was commissioned second lieutenant, August 13, 1891, and promoted to be first lieutenant September 22, 1891. During the Spanish-American War he served as first lieutenant of Company B, First Regiment of Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, U. S. Vols., from May 9 to November 14, 1898.

He is affiliated with the Masons, Odd Fellows and Royal Arcanum. He married Miss Annie Vose of Brighton, Mass., where they still reside.

#### LIEUT.-COL. ALEX. M. FERRIS.

Lieutenant-Colonel Alexander Marsh Ferris, the present commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts, born at Whiting, Vermont, April 6, 1839, is the son of Robert Hammond Ferris, farmer and contractor, and of Fanny Rogers (Tarbell) Ferris, both of the same town. His ancestors on both sides were of old colonial stock, and many of them served in the early French and Indian wars, and the Revolution.

Young Ferris received his education in the public schools of Lowell, and later entered the employment of Gardner, Pratt & McIntire, importers, Franklin street, Boston, as a bookkeeper, but in 1861 gave up his position, and for several months devoted himself to study at the military school of Professor Salignac, entering the Federal service in October of that year.

After his return from service in the Civil War, he was engaged in mercantile, and later in the banking business, in which he is still prominent.

He was mustered into the United States service as captain of Company D, Thirtieth Regiment of Infantry, Massachu-

setts Volunteers, in October, 1861. He recruited his company in Boston, and was the senior captain of his regiment, which was ordered to the Department of the Gulf. He took part in the battles of Baton Rouge; Plains Store, where he led the line of skirmishers who opened the fight; the siege of Port Hudson, where he was wounded, and Donaldsonville. He was for a time provost-marshal on the staff of Major-General William M. Emory, commanding the 1st Division, 19th Army Corps, but returned home with his regiment in 1864.

While in camp at Baton Rouge, Va., Captain Ferris' company was selected by Generals Weitzel and N. A. M. Dudley to drill in competition with a company of United States marines, under Captain Philip Fontenoy, from the S. S. Mississippi. The contest, which excited great interest, took place in the presence of three brigades of troops, and many officers of high rank in the army and navy



LIEUTENANT-COLONEL ALEX. M. FERRIS.

services, and the referees chosen were all officers of the regular army. Captain

Ferris, with Company D. Thirtieth Regiment of Infantry, Massachusetts Volunteers, carried off the honors.

Shortly after his return home he assisted in organizing the Seventh Regiment of Infantry, M. V. M., of which the old Boston Light Infantry (the "Tigers") were the nucleus. He was elected captain of Company A in November, 1865, and commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the regiment by Governor John A. Andrew, in November, 1866. This rank he held until in 1868 he removed to Chicago, where he remained until 1889. In 1874 he became interested in the organization of the First Regiment of the Illinois State Guard, and for some time prior to the completion of the regimental organization, was senior captain of the undesignated companies.

Colonel Ferris joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts in 1890, during the captaincy of Edward E. Allen, and became sergeant under Captain Samuel Hichborn in

1892. He was elected commander of this ancient association in 1900, and at once devoted himself to recruiting new members, and promoting the military discipline and efficiency of those who may be considered the active members of the company. As is elsewhere recorded in the history of the company, his efforts met with great success.

He is a member of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion; a comrade of Edward W. Kinsley, Post 113, G. A. R.; president of the Volunteer Veteran Association of the Thirtieth Massachusetts Volunteers; member of the Society of Colonial Wars, and Sons of the Revolution; a 32d Degree and Knight Templar Mason, and vice-president of the Newton Club.

Lieutenant-Colonel Ferris married Miss Emma J. Fowler of Boston, January 17, 1861. Of this marriage was born a son, William Marsh Ferris, a native of Maplewood, Mass. They now reside at Newton, Mass.

## INDEX TO BIOGRAPHIES

---

Appleton, Nathan . . . . .	513	Hagar, Walter C. . . . .	522
Best, William Stuart . . . . .	540	Hart, Joseph Stover . . . . .	540
Bixby, Franklin Guile . . . . .	526	Low, David W. . . . .	528
Blood, Robert Allen . . . . .	509	Marion, Horace Eugene . . . . .	235
Bradley, J. Payson . . . . .	518	Morrison, Walter E. . . . .	531
Bridges, Benjamin Franklin . . . . .	534	Packard, Philo Frank . . . . .	548
Bridges, Corril Ellsworth . . . . .	535	Packard, Winthrop . . . . .	514
Brown, D. Austin . . . . .	545	Parker, Samuel D. . . . .	543
Carter, James Lowell . . . . .	510	Peach, Benjamin Franklin . . . . .	507
Converse, Harry E. . . . .	524	Peck, Walter F. . . . .	525
Cordis, Thomas F. . . . .	520	Pew, William A., Jr. . . . .	515
Dalton, Joseph Frank . . . . .	512	Reed, Charles W. . . . .	553
Day, John E. . . . .	554	Rose, Frank Getchell . . . . .	547
Decker, Smith M. . . . .	522	Smyth, James H. . . . .	551
DeLue, Willard K. . . . .	550	Stevens, Frank B. . . . .	531
Doten, Charles C. . . . .	551	Swift, Lewis Henry . . . . .	546
Farrell, John Ralph . . . . .	512	Taylor, George H. . . . .	530
Ferris, Alexander M. . . . .	555	Tompson, George M. . . . .	517
Fox, William Long . . . . .	538	Turner, Frederick Warner . . . . .	547
Fry, Charles Coffin . . . . .	507	Wade, James H. . . . .	541
George, Elijah . . . . .	532	White, James Gardiner . . . . .	521
Gihon, Edward J. . . . .	533	Whitney, Jophanus H. . . . .	511
Gragg, Isaac Paul . . . . .	516	Winship, William Henry . . . . .	544
Gray, Frank Edison . . . . .	543	Worthen, George E. . . . .	537

# The Organized Militia of the United States, 1900

Compiled from the latest returns received at the office of the Adjutant-General, U. S. A., and other information

States and Territories	Official Designation	General Staff				Cavalry		Light Artillery		Machine Gun Batteries		Heavy Artillery		Signal Service		Hospital Service		Engl. and Corps		TOTALS	
		Commissioned Officers	Non-Coms and Men	Regiments	Separate Battalions	Separate Companies	Regiments	Separate Battalions	Separate Batteries	Officers and Men	Batteries	Separate Battalions	Regiments	Companies	Officers and Men	Companies	Officers and Men	Officers and Men	Officers and Men	Field Guns Estimated	Machine Guns Estimated
Alabama	Nat. Guard	24	...	3	...	1	1,949	...	1	12	1	...	...	1	19	1	...	...	2,922	12	...
Arkansas	State	63	...	4	...	...	1,041	...	...	140	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,022	8	...	...
California	Nat.	48	...	3	...	...	5,620	...	...	40	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	4,151	4	...	...
Colorado	...	18	...	...	...	...	877	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,142	4	...	...
Connecticut	...	11	...	...	...	...	2,149	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,234	4	...	...
Delaware	...	14	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	406	...	...	...
Florida	State Troops	...	...	...	...	...	1,167	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,208	...	...	...
Georgia	Volunteers	15	...	6	...	...	5,402	...	...	189	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	6,572	10	...	...
Idaho	Nat. Guard	6	...	...	...	...	206	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Illinois	...	39	...	1	...	...	6,365	...	...	200	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	7,295	8	...	...
Indiana	...	13	...	4	...	...	2,501	...	...	141	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,721	12	...	...
Iowa	...	26	...	2	...	...	1,780	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,879	4	...	...
Kansas	...	7	...	...	...	...	1,000	...	...	36	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,089	...	...	...
Kentucky	State Guard	54	...	...	...	...	1,762	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,769	...	...	...
Louisiana	Nat. Guard	...	...	...	...	...	1,745	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,512	...	...	...
Maine	...	6	...	...	...	...	1,201	...	...	675	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,298	...	...	...
Maryland	...	22	...	...	...	...	3,761	...	...	267	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,802	...	...	...
Massachusetts	Vol. Militia	...	...	...	...	...	2,800	...	...	138	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,186	...	...	...
Michigan	Nat. Guard	20	...	3	...	...	2,322	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,390	...	...	...
Minnesota	...	28	...	3	...	...	3,347	...	...	129	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,374	...	...	...
Missouri	...	10	...	...	...	...	2,347	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,077	...	...	...
Montana	...	...	...	...	...	...	492	...	...	63	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	136	...	...	...
Nebraska	...	1	...	...	...	...	361	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,421	...	...	...
Nevada	...	...	...	...	...	...	165	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
New Hampshire	...	10	...	...	...	...	1,262	...	...	72	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,421	...	...	...
New Jersey	...	43	...	...	...	...	3,348	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	11,250	...	...	...
New York	...	12	...	...	...	...	1,115	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,128	...	...	...
North Carolina	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,385	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,258	...	...	...
North Dakota	State Guard	9	...	...	...	...	1,567	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,277	...	...	...
Ohio	Nat. Guard	20	...	6	...	...	3,807	...	...	179	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3,497	...	...	...
Oregon	...	16	...	...	...	...	1,194	...	...	47	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,445	...	...	...
Pennsylvania	...	47	...	...	...	...	1,194	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	10,036	...	...	...
Rhode Island	Vol. Militia	19	...	...	...	...	9,334	...	...	284	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3,628	...	...	...
S. Carolina	State Vol.	...	...	...	...	...	710	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	963	...	...	...
S. Dakota	Nat. Guard	...	...	...	...	...	2,058	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,482	...	...	...
Tennessee	...	...	...	...	...	...	530	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3,248	...	...	...
Texas	Tex. Vol. Mil.	...	...	...	...	...	1,480	...	...	20	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	468	...	...	...
Utah	Nat. Guard	41	...	...	...	...	2,632	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,147	...	...	...
Vermont	...	17	...	...	...	...	577	...	...	157	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,147	...	...	...
Virginia	Volunteers	10	...	...	...	...	2,200	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	985	...	...	...
Washington	Nat. Guard	...	...	...	...	...	609	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,806	...	...	...
West Virginia	...	...	...	...	...	...	911	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Wisconsin	...	20	...	...	...	...	2,092	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2,806	...	...	...
Wyoming	...	8	...	...	...	...	348	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	348	...	...	...



TERRITORIES																										
	Nat. Guard	6	1	4	163																					
Alaska.....	"	3	1		382																		169			
Arizona.....	"	5			274																		398			
New Mex.....	"	5	1		498				1														403		2	
Oklahoma.....	"	5	1		115																		1,306		4	
Dist. of Col.....	"	14	9	2	1,143					1	111												16			
Grand Aggregate.....	858	266	160	27	64	104,179	5	10	33	4,392		11	33	4,476	6	270	2	1,039	27	698	52	824	279	114,824	254	22
=																										
Regular Army of the U. S.,		239	1,263	25		36,584	10				12,555		14	*2,240		7		*9,089	7	*7,720		813	6,08,082	84		
Oct. 20, 1900, Report of	Adjutant-General.....																									
Infantry.....																										
U. S. Volunteers, Oct. 20,	1900, Report of Adjutant-	263		24							1,075													31,253		
General.....																										
Native Troops, U. S. V.....				1		310		1		406														1,376		
Total Regulars and U. S. V.....	502	1,263	50			67,407	11	1		14,066		11	*2,240		7		*9,089	7	7,720				813	6,103,383	84	

a The Hospital Corps is counted as part of the enlisted force.

b Hospital Corps included.

\* about.

† From report of 1st08—being reorganized.

# TOTAL ORGANIZED MILITARY STRENGTH OF THE UNITED STATES, 1900 United States Regular Army, United States Volunteer Army, and National Guards of the States

## STRENGTH AND ORGANIZATION OF THE NAVAL RESERVE, 1900 Compiled from the Latest Information Obtainable

STATE	ORGANIZATION	OFFICERS	SEEN	OFFICERS AND MEN
California.....	1 Battalion of 7 Divisions	41	380	
Connecticut.....	1 " " 3 " "	18	136	
Florida.....	1 " " 3 " "	28	227	
Georgia.....	1 " " 4 " "	18	521	
Illinois.....	1 " " 5 " "	25	347	
Louisiana.....	1 " " 4 " "	23	277	
Maryland.....	1 Brigade of 2 Battalions, 10 div.	38	441	
Massachusetts.....	1 Battalion of 3 Divisions	19	167	
Michigan.....	2 " " 3 " "	26	378	
New Jersey.....	2 " " 4 " "	48	472	
New York.....	1 Battalion of 2 Divisions and 1 separate division	26	254	
North Carolina.....	2 " " 4 " "	17	206	
Pennsylvania.....	2 " " 4 " "	17	206	
Rhode Island.....	1 " " 3 " "	16	130	
South Carolina.....	1 " " 3 " "	20	168	
Virginia.....	1 " " 4 " "	12	157	
TOTAL.....	23 Battalions, 1 sep. div., or 96 Div.	439	4,081	

TOTAL..... (340 field guns).....

218,216

## BOOKS ON MILITARY AND NAVAL SCIENCE.

### Recommended to Members of the M. V. M. For Study and Reference.

\*Books thus marked are especially recommended.

#### For Reference.

U. S. Army Regulations.  
U. S. Army Register.  
Military Laws of U. S., 1898.  
Drill Regulations:  
  Infantry.  
  Light Artillery.  
  Siege Artillery.  
  Coast Artillery.  
  Cavalry.  
  Hospital Corps.  
  Signal Corps.

#### Manuals:

  Guard Duty.  
  Quartermaster's Department.  
  Pay Department.  
  Subsistence Department.  
  Medical Department.

Handbook of Subsistence Stores.  
Organized Militia (Annual).  
Regulations for Troops in Campaign.  
Powell: Customs of the Service.

U. S. Navy Regulations.  
U. S. Navy Register (Annual).  
\*Naval Pocket Book (Annual).  
Brassey: Naval Annual.  
Regulations Coast Signal Service.

#### Descriptive.

Walton: Army and Navy of U. S.  
\*Various: Armies of To-day.  
Miles: Military Europe.  
Van Koppen: Armies of Europe.  
\*War Department: German Army in 1893.  
Von Schellendorf: Duties of the General Staff.  
\*Robinson: U. S. Militia (1895).  
Congress: Late Militia Bills.  
Smith: Naval Reserves and Naval Volunteers.

#### Naval History, etc.

Torr: Ancient Ships.  
Parker: Fleets of the Galley Period.  
Robinson: The British Fleet.  
Eardley-Wilmot: Development of Navies.  
Stenzel: The British Navy.  
Kelley: Our Navy.

Smith: Torpedo-Boat Policy.  
Armstrong: Torpedos and Torpedo Vessels.  
Oldknow: Mechanisms of Man-of War.  
Jane: The Torpedo in Peace and War.  
Jane: Blake of the Rattlesnake.  
Arnold-Foster: In a Conning Tower.  
Laird-Clowes: The Captain of the Mary Rose.  
Shippen: Naval Battles of Ancient and Modern Times.  
\*Corbett: Drake and the Tudor Navy.  
Spears: History of the U. S. Navy.  
Roosevelt: Naval War of 1812.

#### The Navy in the Civil War:

  \*Soley: Blockade and Cruisers.  
  \*Ammen: Atlantic Coast.  
  \*Mahan: Gulf and Inland Waters.  
\*Mahan: Life of Farragut.  
  "  Life of Nelson.  
  "  Influence of Sea Power on History.  
  "  Influence of Sea Power on the French Revolution.  
  "  Hawaii and Sea Power.  
  "  Sea Power and America.  
Hannay: History of the British Navy.  
Laughton: Naval Studies.  
\*Colomb: Naval Warfare.  
Callwell: Maritime Command Since Waterloo.  
\*Wilson: Ironclads in Action.  
Collum: History of Marine Corps.

War Department: Report of General Miles, 1898.

Miley: In Cuba with Shafter.  
Wheeler: Santiago.  
Parker: The Gatling Guns at Santiago.  
Navy Department: Naval Operations in War with Spain.  
Spears: The Navy in Spanish War.  
Vivian: With Dewey at Manila.  
Goode: With Sampson Through the War.  
Mahan: War on the Sea and Lessons Therefrom.

(McClure's Magazine, beginning Dec., 1898)

#### The Art of War.

\*Pettit: Elements of Military Science.  
\*Calif: Notes on Military Science.

## REGIMENTS AND ARMORIES

Wheeler: Elements of the Art and Science of War.

Mercur: Elements of the Art of War.  
Clausewitz: On War.

\*Hamley: Operations of War.

Von der Goltz: The Nation in Arms.

Von der Goltz: The Conduct of War.

\*Derrecagaix: Modern War.

Maurice: War.

\*Jomini: The Art of War.

### Organization, Tactics, Strategy.

\*Wagner: Organization and Tactics.

\*Wagner: The Service of Security and Information.

Maude: Letters on Organization and Tactics.

Hohenlohe: Letters on Infantry.

" Letters on Artillery.

" Letters on Cavalry.

" Letters on Strategy.

\*Bigelow: Strategy.

Brack: Cavalry Outpost Duties.

Furse: Lines of Communication.

Parker: Machine Guns in the Field.

\*Wilkinson: The Brain of an Army.

Hoenig: Tactics of the Future.

Maurice: National Defence.

Hoff: Elements of Naval Tactics.

### Military Engineering, Submarine Mining, Coast Defence.

Mahan: Permanent Fortifications.

Wheeler: Field Fortifications and Art of War.

Clarke: Fortification.

Brackenbury: Field Works.

British War Office: Fortification and Military Engineering.

\*Beach: Military Field Engineering.

Haupt: Military Bridges.

War Department: Bridge Equipment.

Mercur: Attack of Fortified Places.

Maguire: Attack and Defence of Coast Fortifications.

\*Sleeman: Torpedoes and Torpedo Warfare.

Barnes: Submarine Mines.

Bucknill: Submarine Mines.

\*Abbott: Defence of Sea Coast.

War Department: Report of Endicott Board, 1886, U. S. Document, 1328.

(In Harvard College Library.)

### Ordnance and Gunnery.

\*Bruff: Ordnance and Gunnery.

Metcalfe: Ordnance and Gunnery.

\*Morrison and Ayres: Modern Guns and Mortars.

War Department: Thirty-Calibre Rifle and Carbine.

Greener: The Gun and Its Development.

Ingersoll: Ordnance and Gunnery.

\*Radford: Naval Gunnery.

Garbett: Naval Gunnery.

### Historical.

\*Creasy: Fifteen Decisive Battles.

Knox: Decisive Battles Since Waterloo.

\*Oman: Art of War in Middle Ages.

\* " History of the Art of War.

Carrington: Washington, the Soldier.

\*Ropes: Napoleon.

\* " Waterloo.

\* " Civil War.

\*Dodge: Civil War.

Hamley: War in the Crimea.

\*Gillmore: Operations against Charleston.

Hooper: Sedan.

\*Greene: Russo-Turkish War.

King: Story of the British Army.

Fitchett: Fights for the Flag.

### Miscellaneous.

Ingalls: Exterior Ballistics.

Andrews: Hints to Commissioned Officers on Their Military Duties.

Barnard: Notes on Sea Coast Defence.

Barnes: Submarine Warfare.

Ordnance Instructions for the U. S. Navy.









BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 06173 561 7





